00043478

THE
ASIATIC SOCIETY OF BOMBAY
Town Hall, Bombay.

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018

English Dialect Society.

The objects of the "English Dialect Society" are:—(1) to bring together all those who have made a study of any of the Provincial Dialects of England, or who are interested in the subject of Provincial English; (2) to combine the labours of collectors of Provincial English words by providing a common centre to which they may be sent, so as to gather material for a general record of all such words; (3) to publish (subject to proper revision) such collections of Provincial English words as [illegible] present only in manuscript; and (4) to supply references [illegible] sources of information which may be of material assistance to word-collectors, students, and all who have a general or particular interest in the subject. Much information may be found scattered up and down the pages of such publications as Notes and Queries; many provincial glossaries (especially the smaller ones) are so scarce as to be hardly attainable; and it must have occurred to every one who has studied the subject that the work has materially suffered from the extremely desultory way in which word-lists have been published, at all sorts of times [illegible] places, on no uniform plan, and with total irregularity as to [illegible] shape, and arrangement. The chief book of reference is [illegible] known Dictionary of Archaic and Provincial English by [illegible] ll, in which the preservation of archaisms was the [illegible] although fortunately the editor "thought the incor[illegible] [illegible] ssary of provincialisms would render the work a [illegible] than one restricted to known archaisms" (5th [illegible] accordingly, took great pains to render his [illegible] [illegible] ect as was possible.

There are many collateral objects towards which the Society can render good service; as *e. g.* by publishing a new list, to complete the "Bibliographical List of the works that have been published towards illustrating the Provincial Dialects of England," published by Mr J. Russell Smith in 1839; since which time many important glossaries have appeared, such as Atkinson's Glossary of the Cleveland Dialect, Peacock's Glossary of the Dialect of the hundred of Lonsdale, &c. Even Hartshorne's Salopia Antiqua was only mentioned in Mr Smith's list as being "in the press." Moreover, some of the county glossaries require verification, amplification, and correction of a thorough and systematic character. Even the words in Halliwell require verification, and that the district to which they belong should be more exactly defined; in many cases it would be desirable to trace exactly from what authorities the given information was derived.

The first definite suggestion of a Society such as the English Dialect Society was made by Mr Aldis Wright in the number of Notes and Queries for March 12, 1870 (1 S. v. 271) in the following words:—

"It has long been my conviction that some systematic effort ought to be made for the collection and preservation of our provincial words. *In a few years it will be too late.* Railroads and certificated teachers are doing their work. Not a year passes but some words pass beyond the reach of recovery. Much, no doubt, has been done by such glossaries as those of Moor, Forby, and Nall for East Anglia; by Atkinson, Carr, Hunter, Robinson, and others, for the various dialects of Yorkshire; by Miss Baker for Northamptonshire, and the like; but some counties are alm[illegible] unrepresented, and, so far as I am aware, nothing like a syst[illegible] attempt has yet been made to sweep into one complete [illegible] all the provincialisms in England. That such a colle[illegible] be made I think every one will admit, but it can [illegible] a division of labour . . . . . Let each provincial [illegible] a word, be recorded, with an example of its ap[illegible] and a note of the place where it is so used [illegible] collectors beware. From my exper[illegible]

dotes with regard to etymology would be the same that Cæsar gave with regard to an unusual word, that it was to be avoided *tanquam scopulum*.

"While we have our *Early English Text Society*, our *Chaucer Society*, and our *Philological Society*, why should we not have a Society for collecting and preserving provincial words? In such a work I shall be glad to give the best help in my power.

"WILLIAM ALDIS WRIGHT.

"*Trin. Coll., Cambridge.*"

This was followed by a letter from the Rev. W. W. Skeat (4 S. v. 303), containing hints to collectors, but suggesting that perhaps the work could be done without the *immediate* formation of a Society for this express purpose; an opinion which has proved to be incorrect. Next followed a letter of approval from F. C. H. (4 S. v. 361); then one from Mr J. Payne (4 S. v. 363), whose hint "that it would be very desirable that the exact locality, the *habitat* of each word should be noted, and not merely the general area" must on no account be lost sight of. Also a letter from Mr J. C. Atkinson (4 S. v. 363), containing several useful practical hints. A sixth letter came from Mr G. F. Blandford, who suggested the very practical idea of procuring a county glossary, and adding any words to it which it did not contain. "In this way," says Mr Blandford, "I have added not a few words to Mr Akerman's Glossary of the Wiltshire Dialect." A seventh letter from Mr L. Jewitt, F.S.A., gave information about a glossary of words used in Derbyshire; and several others followed. Amongst them was one (4 S. v. 442) from Mr A. J. Ellis, now President of the London Philological Society, shortly explaining his Glossic Orthography, which would enable all dialects to be written without any new letters. This is more fully explained in the Introduction to Part III of his "Early English Pronunciation," on p. xli of which, Feb., 1871, he proposed the formation of an *English Dialect* [illegible] under this name. This Introduction was afterwards [illegible] distribution, and the names of several supporters [illegible] were these additional words to be found?

Attached. Unfortunately, however the idea ultimately dropped through at the time, only to be now revived after a lapse of three valuable years. The words of Mr Aldis Wright, that "in a few years it will be too late," now apply with increased force. All who can do so are now invited to add their names as subscribers to the *English Dialect Society* without delay, as this is, from the nature of the case, the *last* appeal on behalf of the preservation of our provincial words that can ever be made,—the *last* chance of saving the fast-fading relics of those forms of archaic English which have lingered on in country places.

The Society, in addition to its publications, will issue a *Report* at the commencement of each year, containing a record of all the work done during the year preceding, with a statement of the work proposed to be accomplished during the year current.

All the publications of the Society will be of a uniform size, viz. demy 8vo, to range with the publications of the Early English Text Society, the Chaucer Society, and the Philological Society's Transactions. The publishers are Messrs Trübner & Co. (of 57 and 59, Ludgate Hill, London, E.C.), who are also the publishers for the first two of the above-named Societies. **Every member who has paid his subscription will be entitled to one copy of every publication issued by the Society during the year.**

With the hope of largely increasing the number of the members of the Society, **the subscription is limited to half-a-guinea per annum**, [or 13*s*., which includes postage, for subscribers residing in America,] which should be paid, in the present year, at the earliest convenient date, to the Treasurer, the Rev. J. W. Cartmell, Christ's College, Cambridge, either by cheque or by post-office order (made payable at the Cambridge post-office); or to the account at the Society's bankers, J. Mortlock and Co., Cambridge, whose London agents are Messrs Smith, Payne, and Smiths. In 1874 and succeeding years, the subscription will be due, in advance, on the 1st of January.

All other communications should be addressed to the Secretary, the Rev. W. W. Skeat, Christ's College, Cambridge, or

will supply, to all who are desirous of rendering direct help, printed rules of directions as to the way in which words should be collected and recorded. Members may give such help in various ways, either by contributing such uncommon words as they happen to know (written out in accordance with the rules supplied), by making additions to the existing county glossaries, or by making a complete alphabetical list of all words found in a certain district. The Secretary will also be glad to receive the names of such Members as have the means and leisure for assisting in the labour of copying out and making compilations from various printed sources of information.

Many pamphlets and books exhibiting specimens of dialects, although inexpensive, are by no means easily procured. Donations of spare copies will be thankfully accepted, and should be forwarded to the Secretary by Book-post.

One of the earliest publications of the Society will be, as already suggested, a new Bibliographical List of works that in any way illustrate the various dialects, or contain county glossaries. Many of these have been published locally, and sometimes contain only a few pages. In order that the titles of such works may be properly sorted, all Members who communicate information concerning them must adhere strictly to the *indispensable* rule, that every title must be written on one side only of a half-sheet of note-paper of the most common size, *viz.*, about 7 inches by 4½ inches. Not more than *one* title may be written on one piece of paper. This rule has long been adopted by the workers for the London Philological Society's Dictionary, and every departure from it occasions a great deal of trouble, frequently rendering the information useless. Now that five quires of ordinary note-paper can be had for six-pence or nine-pence, this involves no real expense; for five quires will supply enough paper for 240 slips. Three specimens of the manner in which the titles should be written out are here subjoined.

(1) *Lancashire.*

Waugh, Edwin. Lancashire Songs. 12mo., pp. 71. London, Simpkin, Marshall, and Co., 1865.

(2) *Dorset.*

A Glossary of Provincial Words used in the county of Dorset; pp. 8. London; J. C. Bell, 1851.

(3) *Scotland* (*Banffshire*).

The dialect of Banffshire, with a Glossary of words not in Jamieson's Scottish Dictionary. By the Rev. Walter Gregor. Demy 8vo, pp. 232. Published for the Philological Society. London and Berlin; Asher & Co., 1866.

The names of the books will be arranged, as far as practicable, under the names of the counties to which they refer; the Lowland-Scotch ones being entered under the heading 'Scotland.'

When several slips have been thus written out, they can easily be tied together and forwarded by post.

The publications of the Society will be of four kinds, to be issued in separate series. Each series will be divided into parts, to be continued from year to year as seems most advisable.

Series A. Bibliographical; a list of all the works which illustrate the English provincial dialects. To commence with those which relate to the counties of England, the counties to be arranged in alphabetical order.

Series B. Reprints of old glossaries, chiefly from large or scarce volumes.

In this series the following are in course of preparation, and can certainly be issued this year, probably with several additions.

1. A Glossary of North-of-England words, from "A Tour to the Caves," &c. by J. H., 2nd ed.; London, 1781.

2. A Glossary of the Provincialisms of East Yorkshire, from Marshall's Rural Economy of Yorkshire; London, 1796.

3. A Glossary of Mid-England words, from Marshall's Rural Economy of the Midland Counties; London, 1790.

With others of a similar character.

Series C. Original Glossography. Glossaries from MSS. hitherto unpublished. Amongst these will be:—

1. A Glossary of Swaledale words, by Captain Harland, of Reeth.

2. A Glossary of Nidderdale words, by Mr C. Clough Robinson.

C. A Glossary of Hampshire words, by the late Sir F. Madden; to be edited, with additions, by the Rev. W. W. Skeat.

With as many more of a similar character as the funds of the Society can pay for.

Series D. Miscellaneous. In this series a first part will be published, containing short glossaries (whether reprinted or communicated) all thrown together under one alphabet. With other miscellaneous information.

The above shows the probable arrangement, but it may be necessary to alter this, and perhaps to substitute other glossaries in place of those here mentioned. The most necessary matter is that all subscribers who have not yet paid should do so, in order that the probable amount of funds may be more clearly known; and that all who have thoughts of subscribing should decide to do so at once.* The amount of material more or less ready for press is already in excess of what the present sum in hand can pay for.

LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS.

[*N.B. This List is complete up to the 1st of September*, 1873. *The names of Subscribers who join after this date will appear in the Annual Report, to be issued in January*, 1874.]

Addis, John, Esq., Jun., Rustington, Littlehampton, Sussex.
Advocate's Library, Edinburgh.
Alexander, J., Esq., 79, West Regent Street, Glasgow.
Armstrong, Rev. R. J., East Dereham Vicarage, Norfolk.
Atkinson, Rev. J. C., Danby-in-Cleveland, Yarm.
Axon, W. E. A., Esq., 4, Victoria Terrace, Rusholme.
Barnes, Rev. W., Caton Rectory, Dorchester.
Bell, G., Esq., 6, York Street, Covent Garden, W.C.
Bingham, Rev. C. W., Bingham's Melcombe, Dorchester.

* During the month of September in this year, subscriptions should be sent to the Secretary instead of the Treasurer; but not afterwards.

Binns, I., Esq., Birstall, Yorkshire.
Bleasdale, R. H., Esq., 93, Parliament Street, Derby.
Blind, Herr Karl, 8, Winchester Road, South Hampstead, London, N.W.
Bonaparte, Prince Louis Lucien.
Bosworth, Rev. Professor, 20, Beaumont Street, Oxford.
Beaut, E., Esq., Mount Horley, Sydenham Hill, S.E.
Bradshaw, H., Esq., King's College, Cambridge.
Caius College Library.
Carr, Rev. E. T. S., St Catharine's College, Cambridge.
Carillon, J. W., Esq., Wormhill, Buxton.
Cartmell, Rev. J. W., Christ's College, Cambridge (*Treasurer*).
Cartmell, Rev. Dr, Christ's College, Cambridge.
Casartelli, L. C., Esq., Egerton Terrace, Ardwick, Manchester.
Chicago Library, U.S. (per Mr Trübner).
Child, Prof. F. J., Harvard College, Cambridge, Mass., U.S.
Childs, Messrs J. & Son, Bungay.
Christ's College Library, Cambridge.
Clark, Rev. J. Mark, St Stephen's Parsonage, Dulwich, S.E.
Clarke, Hyde, Esq., 32, St George's Square, London, S.W.
Colfox, T., Esq., Rax, Bridport.
Cowell, Professor, Fitzwilliam Street, Cambridge.
Cox, C. J., Esq., Hazlewood, Belper, Derbyshire.
Coxe, Rev. H. O., Bodleian Library, Oxford.
Curteis, Miss Bessy C., Leasam, Rye, Sussex.
Cust, R., Esq., 64, St George's Square, London, S.W.
Daymas, Rev. E. A., Shillingstone Rectory, Dorset.
Deas, R. R., Esq., The Hall, Wallsend, Newcastle.
Dowsam, R., Esq., Shakespeare Street, Stockport Road, Manchester.
Downing, Mr W., New Street, Birmingham.
Dowson, Rev. R., Dalton Square, Manchester.
Drew, F., Esq., Claremont Road, Surbiton, S.W.
Ellis, Alex. J., Esq., 25, Argyll Road, Kensington, London, W.

Elias, Miss C., Belgrave, Leicester.

Evans, Rev. D. S., Llanymawddwy Rectory, Dinas Mawddwy, Merioneth.

Evans, J. Bagnall, Esq., Nant yr Eglwys, Whitlands, Caermarthenshire.

Fitzgerald, E., Esq., Woodbridge, Suffolk.

Fowler, Rev. J. T., Bishop Hatfields Hall, Durham.

Francis, Mrs, Tysoe Vicarage, Kineton, Warwickshire.

French, E., Esq., Lead Works, Hull.

Fry, Danby P., Esq., Local Government Board, Whitehall.

Furnivall, F. J., Esq., 3, St George's Square, Pruarose Hill, London, N.W.

Gibbs, H. H., Esq., St Dunstan's, Regent's Park, London, N.W.

Goodchild, J. G., Esq., Brougham Street, Penrith.

Gratrix, S., Esq., Lead Mills, 25, Alport Town, Deansgate, Manchester.

Gutch, Mrs, Holgate Lodge, York.

H. A. (per Rev. W. W. Skeat).

Halliwell (Phillipps) J. O., Esq., 11, Tregunter Road, West Brompton, S.W. (*Subscribes for two copies.*)

Halls, J. W., Esq., 1, Oppidans Road, Regent's Park, London, N.W.

Halkett, Rev. D. S., Little Bookham Rectory, Leatherhead, Surrey.

Halkett, Miss M. K., Hollam, Dulverton, Somerset.

Harvard College Library, Cambridge, Mass., U.S.

Hetherington, J. N., Esq., Clifton, Workington, Cumberland.

Hill, C., Esq., Rock Hurst, West Hoathley, E. Grinstead, Surrey.

Holroyd, Mr A., 36, Victoria Road, Saltaire.

Hyde, J., Esq., 14, Hesketh Street, Southport.

Jackson, Miss, 13, White Frairs, Chester.

Jamieson, J. H., Esq., Advocate's Library, Edinburgh.

Jebb, R. C., Esq., Trinity College, Cambridge.

Jones, F., Esq., 65, Granville Park, Lewisham, S.E.
Judson, Daniel, Esq., Wolsey House, East Moulsey, Surrey.
Kerslake, Mr, 14, West Park, Bristol.
Leigh, Col. Egerton, Jodrell Hall, Holmes Chapel, Cheshire.
Lewis, Rev. S. S., Corpus Christi College, Cambridge.
Lincoln, Right Rev. the Bishop of, Riseholme, Lincoln.
Lloyd, Miss E., Hazelcroft, Ripley, Yorkshire.
Lord, Miss, 9, Carlton Hill, London, N.W.
Lumby, Rev. J. R., St Mary's Gate, Cambridge.
Maclear, Rev. Dr, King's College School, Strand, W.C.
Macmillan, Messrs, Cambridge. (*Two copies.*)
Magnusson, E., Esq., 26, Bateman Street, Cambridge.
Mayor, Professor, St John's College, Cambridge.
Miall, J. M., Esq., 80, Granville Park, Lewisham, Kent.
Mildmay, Capt., 19, Charles Street, Berkeley Square, London, W.
Milner, G., Esq., The Glen, Moston, Manchester.
Morris, E. R., Esq., Homestay, Newtown, Montgomery.
Morris, J. P., Esq., 17, Sutton Street, Liverpool.
Moule, C. W., Esq., Corpus Christi College, Cambridge.
Moulton, Professor, Wesleyan Theological College, Richmond, Surrey.
Munby, A. J., Esq., 6, Figtree Court, Inner Temple, E.C.
Murdoch, J. B., Esq., Hamilton Place, Langside, Glasgow.
Murray, J. A. H., Esq., Mill Hill School, Hendon, N.W.
Napier, Rev. F. P., 8, Richmond Terrace, Richmond, Surrey.
Napier, J. W., Esq., Merchistoun, Alderley Edge, near Manchester.
Nettleship, J., Esq., Mill Hill School, Hendon, N.W.
Nicol, H., Esq., 52, Thornhill Road, Barnsbury, N.
Nodal, J. H., Esq., The Grange, Heaton Moor, Stockport.
Owen, Rev. E., Caersws, Montgomeryshire.
Paine, Cornelius, Esq., Oak Hill, Surbiton, Surrey.
Palmer, F. A., Esq., 17, Botolph Lane, Cambridge.
Palmer, H., Esq. (per Rev. J. Meek Clark).
Parish, Rev. W. D., Selmeston Vicarage, Lewes

PARKER, G., Esq., Kingston Road, Oxford.

PATTERSON, A. J., Esq., Savile Club, 15, Savile Row, London, W.

PATTERSON, W. J., Esq., Strandtown, Belfast.

PAYNE, J., Esq., 3, Kildare Gardens, Bayswater, W.

PEACOCK, E., Esq., Bottesford Manor, Brigg, Lincolnshire.

PEILE, J., Esq., Christ's College, Cambridge.

PIGTON, J. N., Esq., Sandyknowe, Wavertree, Liverpool.

PURTON, Rev. H. B., The Vicarage, Weobley, Herefordshire.

RAINE, Rev. Canon, York.

REID, J. S., Esq., Christ's College, Cambridge.

RICHARDSON, C., Esq., St Hilda's Terrace, Whitby.

ROBINSON, C. C., Esq., Canonbury Tower, London, N.

ROBINSON, Mr. E. S., Whitby.

ROOTH, W., Esq., Craven Cottage, Morton Road, Wandsworth, Surrey.

ROWNTREE, J. S., Esq., Mount Villas, Dringhouses, near York.

ROYAL LIBRARY, Windsor Castle.

SANDYS, J. E., Esq., St John's College, Cambridge.

SATCHELL, Thos., Esq., The Lodge, Oak Village, London, N.W.

SEARLE, Rev. W. G., Onkington Vicarage, Cambridgeshire.

SHARP, S., Esq., Tangley mere, Shalford, Surrey.

SHAW, J., Esq., (late) 29, Great Knightrider Street, Doctor's Commons.

SHELLY, J., Esq., Frankfort Chambers, Plymouth.

SIMMONS, Rev. Canon, Dalton Holme, Beverley.

SKEAT, Rev. W. W., Cintra Terrace, Cambridge. (*Secretary.*) (*Subscribes for four copies.*)

SMILES, S., Esq., 31, Granville Park, Blackheath.

SMITH, A., Esq., Laurelbank Place, Shawlands, Glasgow.

SMITH, C. Roach, Esq., Strood-by-Rochester, Kent.

SMITH, J. Russell, Esq., 36, Soho Square, London, W.C.

SOUTHERN, E. W., Esq., St Mary's Lodge, York.

SOUTHGATE, Mr. W., Carmarthen.

STAUNTON, H., Esq., 117, Lansdowne Road, Kensington Park, W.

STEPHENS, Professor, Copenhagen.
STRATMANN, Dr F. H., Krefeld, Germany.
SWEET, H., Esq., 110, Maida Vale, London, W.
TANCOCK, Rev. O. W., King's School, Sherborne.
TIMMINS, S., Esq., Elvetham Lodge, Birmingham.
TRACY, Rev. F. F., Beccles Rectory, Suffolk.
TRAFFORD, J. LEIGH, Esq., Northwich, Cheshire.
VAN SITTART, A. A., Esq., Trinity College, Cambridge.
WEDGWOOD, HENSLEIGH, Esq., 31, Queen Anne Street, London, W.
WEYMOUTH, Dr R. F., Mill Hill School, Hendon, N.
WHEATLEY, H. B., Esq., 1, Chalcot Terrace, Regent's Park Road, N.W.
WHITE, R., Esq., Park Place, Worksop, Notts.
WILLIAMS, S. H., Esq., 18, Kensington Crescent, London, W.
WILSON, T., Esq., Hilary Place, Leeds.
WILSON, E., Esq., 4, Osborne Terrace, Leeds.
WORDSWORTH, Rev. C., St Peter's College, Cambridge.
WRIGHT, T., Esq., 14, Sidney Street, Brompton, London, S.W.
WRIGHT, W. Aldis, Esq., Trinity College, Cambridge.

---

* * *The Hon. Secretary cannot undertake to reply to every communication. A reply will be sent in all cases where one is really required, but a delay of two or three weeks is sometimes inevitable. Contributions of even single dialectal words, or of a few words only, are desired. Each word should be written on a separate half-sheet of note-paper, with its meaning, the place where it is used, and a note of how it is pronounced.*

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

Langland's Vision

of

Piers the Plowman.

The Whitaker Text; or Text C.

Richard the Redeles.

The Crowned King.

BERLIN: ASHER & CO., 53 MOHRENSTRASSE.
NEW YORK: C. SCRIBNER & CO.; LEYPOLDT & HOLT.
PHILADELPHIA: J. B. LIPPINCOTT & CO.

Confessio avaricie

Anne came conetise: i can nozt hym distrene
so hongliche & so holke: herny hy silf loked
he was bitel broked & baberlyped: wt two bleri eyen
& as aleyen pors: lolled hs chekes
wel sydder ya hs chyn: ychyneled for elde
as bondme bakonn: hs berde was yschane
wt hs hode on hs hed: & his hatte boye
in atoyen tabard: of twelfe wynt age
I hane be conetouse qd ye caytif: ich byknoke ht her
for so tyme ich sned: syme at ye stile
& was hs pritys yplyzt: hs pfite to wayte
furst i leyned to lye: alesyng oy twey
wickedlich to weye: was my furst lesson
do wy st to wynchester: i wende to ye faire
wt many man marchaundises: as my maist hizt
fie hadde ye grace of gile: gon amonge my war
ht hadde ben unsolde ys seme zeer: so me god helpe
ich drake me amonge drapers: my donet to leyne
do drake ye lesnr alonge: ye lengr ht semed
amonge ye riche raies: ich rendred alessonn
do brochen he wt a batte nelde: & bonde he to gedres
ich putte in pressours: & pynned he ye inne
sil ten zeydes oy twelfe: tilled he yrittene
my wif was a webbe: & wollen cloy made
zo spake to ye spynestres: to spynen ht out
ye pounde yt zo paied he by: peised a quart
mor ya myn auncel: whan ich weied truye
ich bozt hir barlich: zo breke ht to sille
peny ale & poddyng ale: zo poured to gedres
for labourers & lowe folke: yt lay by hy silne
ye best lay in my bour: & in my bedde chambr
& so bounned ye af: he bozt ht ye aft
a galon for a grote: & zut no graye mesnr
whan ht came in coppe mele: ys crafte my wif used
rose ye regratour: was hir hizt name
zo hay yholde hockeris: ys ellene wynt
repentest yn nen qd repentance: ne restitucion madest
zus ouys qd zo i was yherborwed: wt an hepe of chepmen
ich aros & rifled her males: whan yer in reste wer
yt was arenful restitucion: qd repentance for soye
yn wolt honge hey yfor: her oy in helle
usedest en yn usurye: in al yy lif tyme
flay soylich he sede: saf in my zongye

The Vision of William

concerning

Piers the Plowman,

TOGETHER WITH

Vita de Dowel, Dobet, et Dobest,

Secundum Wit et Resoun,

BY WILLIAM LANGLAND.

(ABOUT 1362—1393 A.D.)

EDITED FROM NUMEROUS MANUSCRIPTS, WITH PREFACES, NOTES, AND A GLOSSARY,

43478 d

BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.,

LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE; EDITOR OF "LANCELOT OF THE LAIK," "THE ROMANS OF PARTENAY," "WILLIAM OF PALERNE," "HAVELOK," ETC.; AND TRANSLATOR OF THE "SONGS AND BALLADS OF UHLAND."

In Four Parts.—Part III.

Ll m 26.

LONDON:
PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,
BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXIII.

00043478

The Visions of William

concerning

Piers the Plowman,

Dowel, Dobet, and Dobest,

BY WILLIAM LANGLAND.

(1393 A.D.)

FROM MS. PHILLIPPS 8231, COLLATED WITH MS. LAUD 656, A MS. BELONGING TO THE EARL OF ILCHESTER, MS. COTTON VESP. B. 16, MSS. Fr. 5. 35 AND Dd. 3. 13 IN THE CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY LIBRARY, MS. CORP. CHR. CAMB. 293, MS. BODLEY 814, MS. R. 3. 14 IN THE LIBRARY OF TRINITY COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE, ETC.

THE "WHITAKER" TEXT; OR TEXT C.

Richard the Redeles,

BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

(1399 A.D.)

The Crowned King,

BY ANOTHER HAND.

(1415 A.D.)

EDITED BY THE

REV. WALTER W. SKEAT, M.A.,

LATE FELLOW OF CHRIST'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE.

LONDON:

PUBLISHED FOR THE EARLY ENGLISH TEXT SOCIETY,

BY N. TRÜBNER & CO., 57 & 59, LUDGATE HILL.

MDCCCLXXIII.

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

CONTENTS.

*** The autotype facsimile prefixed to this volume represents a page of MS. E (Laud 656), which differs but slightly from MS. Phillipps 8231, the basis of the text. For a full explanation of the contents of the facsimile, see the Preface, p. xxviii.

PREFACE III. § 1. The five shapes of the Poem. § 2. The mixture of C- and B-texts in MS. Bodley 814. § 3. The mixture of A- and C-texts in MS. T. § 4. Date of the C-text. § 5. Description of MSS. xxviii. MS. Phillipps 8252 (described in the footnote); xxix. MS. P; xxx. MS. E; xxxi. MS. Z; xxxii. MS. I; xxxii. (B) MS. T; xxxii. (C) MS. Harl. 6041; xxxii. (D) MS. Digby 145; xxxii. (E) MS. B; xxxiii. MS. M; xxxiv. MS. F; xxxv. MS. S; xxxvi. MS. G; xxxvii. MS. K; xxxviii. MS. Douce 104; xxxix. MS. Digby 102; xl. MS. N; xli. MS. Dublin D. 4. 1; xlii. MS. Bibl. Reg. 18. B. xvii; xliii. MS Phillipps 9056; xliv. Marquis of Westminster's MS. § 6. Comparison of the MSS., and their sub-classes. § 7. Description of Dr Whitaker's edition; London, 1813. § 8. Brief Notice of Dr Whitaker. § 9. Character of the C-text. § 10. Allusions in the C-text. § 11. Dialect of the C-text. § 12. Method of printing the Text. § 13. Method of printing the Footnotes. § 14. Explanation of the Sidenotes. § 15. Reference to the Editions by Wright and Whitaker. § 16. Comparison of the Three Texts, by Passus. § 17. Additional Passages in the C-text. § 18. Argument of the Poem (C-text) ... ix

PREFACE IV. RICHARD THE REDELES. § 1. The two former editions. § 2. Alteration of the title. § 3. Description of the MS. § 4. Latin quotations never before rightly printed. § 5. Date of the poem. § 6. Authorship of the poem; (1) external evidence; (2) internal evidence. § 7. Argument of Richard the Redeles. § 8. THE CROWNED KING ciii

PIERS THE PLOWMAN: PAGE

Passus I. (231 lines) 1
Passus II. (205 lines) 15
Passus III. (252 lines) 27
Passus IV. (501 lines) 42
Passus V. (196 lines) 71
Passus VI. (201 lines) 82
Passus VII. (441 lines) 94
Passus VIII. (308 lines) 120
Passus IX. (355 lines) 139
Passus X. (351 lines) 158
Passus XI., or Passus I. de Dowel (310 lines) ... 179
Passus XII., or Passus II. de Dowel (313 lines) ... 196
Passus XIII., or Passus III. de Dowel (247 lines) 215
Passus XIV., or Passus IV. de Dowel (249 lines)... 230
Passus XV., or Passus V. de Dowel (217 lines) ... 246
Passus XVI., or Passus VI. de Dowel (310 lines)... 260
Passus XVII., or Passus VII. de Dowel (371 lines) 280
Passus XVIII., or Passus I. de Dobet (322 lines)... 307
Passus XIX., or Passus II. de Dobet (293 lines) ... 328
Passus XX., or Passus III. de Dobet (332 lines) ... 346
Passus XXI., or Passus IV. de Dobet (479 lines) ... 366
Passus XXII., or Passus I. de Dobest (483 lines)... 399
Passus XXIII., or Passus II. de Dobest (386 lines) 426
Critical Notes 449

RICHARD THE REDELES: Prologue (87 lines) ... 469
Richard the Redeles: Passus I. (114 lines) ... 473
Richard the Redeles: Passus II. (192 lines) ... 478
Richard the Redeles: Passus III. (371 lines) ... 486
Richard the Redeles: Passus IV. (93 lines) ... 500
Notes to Richard the Redeles 504

THE CROWNED KING 523
Glossarial Index, etc., to the Crowned King ... 530

PREFACE III.

TEXT C.

§ 1. Before discussing the MSS. of the C-type, it is necessary to refer once more to the fact already twice mentioned (Pref. I. § 2; Pref. II. § 1) that the poem of Piers the Plowman assumes five different shapes in the MSS. Three of these are *real*, and due to the author, whence the three texts which have been separately published; whilst the other two are *apparent* only, and due to the mixture of parts of different texts by the scribes. Indeed, some MSS. present texts which are still further confused, and belong exactly to none of these, although they can easily be accounted for. It is necessary thus to draw attention once more to the five apparent well-defined shapes, because the C-text MSS. require peculiar care. With respect to them, we are concerned with three of the above-mentioned shapes. We find (1) MSS. of the true C-type throughout; (2) MSS. containing a mixture of A- and C-texts, as exhibited in the Trinity MS. R. 3. 14 (described in Pref. I. p. xviii), MS. Harl. 6041 (described at p. xx of the same volume), and MS. Digby 145 (described at p. xxiv of the same); and (3) MSS. containing a mixture of B- and C-texts, as exhibited in MS. Bodley 814 (described in Pref. II. p. xxv), MS. Addit. 10574 (Pref. II. p. xxvi), and MS. Cotton Calig. A. xi (Pref. II. p. xxvii).

§ 2. Taking the last of these first, it is only necessary to observe that MS. Bodley 814, Addit. 10574, and Calig. A. xi resemble each other so closely that *one* may be taken to represent all three. The one chosen for collation in the present volume is the same one as

before, viz. MS. Bodley 814, denoted by the letter B. This MS. exhibits a C-text during the first two Passus, and down to the end of l. 128 of Pass. iii.;[1] and is therefore available for collation near the beginning of the present version of the poem. Hence the letter B, so often found in the footnotes to the B-text, figures occasionally in the footnotes to the first 34 pages in this volume. But I have not cited it very often, for two reasons. The first is, that it is by no means a very good MS.; and the second, that its readings are in general almost exactly coincident with those of the far superior Ilchester MS., denoted by the letter I. It has, I believe, been cited as much as it deserves, and perhaps received even more than its fair share of attention in the footnotes to the B-text. In a word, it can only be used for a small portion of the text, and is not of much use even there. For a few further notes upon the character of it, see the description of MS. XXXII (E).

§ 3. We will next consider the shape of the poem in which the A- and C-texts are mixed together; a shape which is of considerably more importance and interest. Here, also, it is sufficient to take *one* MS. only as a guide, viz. the Trinity MS. R. 3. 14, often cited in the footnotes to the A-text, and always denoted by the letter T. It is far better than the other two MSS. of the same shape, which have now been neglected, although one of them (Harl. 6041) was cited for the A-text, with H_2 for its symbol. Collation with T begins at the point of junction of the A- and C-texts, i. e. at l. 297 of Passus xii.," p. 213; see the observation in the footnote. As the readings from it turned out to be often useful, the collation with it was continued down to the end of the text; so that, after p. 213, the letter T occurs in the footnotes throughout, down to p. 447. This MS. also proved to bear a close resemblance to the Ilchester MS., and this fact has proved of great assistance; since it supplies the probable readings of that MS. in the numerous places where portions of lines are missing, owing to its imperfect state of preservation. Hence, in the footnotes, the letters IT often occur together; whilst the letter T alone (in all probability) often truly

[1] See the passage quoted at length from this MS. in Critical Notes to B-text, p. 392.

denotes the same combination (IT) in passages where MS. I is imperfect. It represents the C-text in an early stage of revision, as explained in the description of the Ilchester MS. below.

The descriptions of the MSS. which are wholly of the C-type will be found further on, in sect. 5.

§ 4. DATE OF THE C-TEXT.

In Pref. II. sect. 3, I have shewn that we must place the B-text at least as late as A.D. 1377, from which we may at once conclude that the C-text is almost sure not to be earlier than A.D. 1380, considering the many variations between the two texts. It is, however, as well to shew, first of all, that the C-text is really later than the B-text; in other words, that no mistake has been made in the order of the recensions of the poem. On this point the internal evidence is most conclusive; given the B-text, it is not difficult to see how the C-text was formed from it, by various omissions, additions, transpositions, and corrections. But it is hardly possible to turn the C-text into the B-form, without the most improbable and contradictory suppositions. The transition in one direction is simple and natural, but in the other direction is difficult and unlikely. This will appear so clearly upon a careful perusal of the two texts that it is hardly worth while to go into particulars. The only reason for considering the question at all is that Dr Whitaker was of the contrary opinion, and this may in some measure account for the difficulty which he had in seeing his way clearly, and for the extraordinary views, founded upon no premises whatever, which he formed respecting the respective merits of the two later versions. The one sole reason which he offers for the supposed lateness of the B-text, is that it contains an allusion to the burning of heretics, and must therefore be later than the second year of Henry IV., when the statute "empowering the diocesan alone to commit heretics to the flames" was enacted. This point I have discussed already (Pref. II. p. v), giving the reasons, (1) that some of the B-text MSS. are considerably older than A.D. 1400; and (2) that heretics were sometimes burnt, at any rate abroad, before the above-mentioned statute was passed. But I

am now enabled considerably to strengthen the latter of these reasons, viz. by asserting that there is evidence to shew that heretics were burnt, *even in England*, at least as early as in the fourteenth century. When Mr Arnold, in his Introduction to his edition of Wyclif's Works, came to consider the question of the date of some of Wyclif's treatises, he found that the common opinion, viz. that no one was burnt for his religion in England before 1401, is directly opposed to the statements found in his MSS., and can no longer be sustained. Thus, in Wyclif's Sermon No. LXV (ed. Arnold, vol. i. p. 205) he complains that "symple men, þat been clepid eretikes . . ben sommyned and reprovyd many weies, and after put in prison, and *brend* or kild as worse þan þeves;" whilst in Sermon CII (p. 354), i. e. in a later sermon belonging to the same set, Richard II. is referred to in a manner which implies that he is still alive;—"men þat speken of oure kyng leeven to clepen him kyng Richard." To this Mr Arnold adds (Introd. p. x) the following important note. "Mr Bond, keeper of the MSS. at the British Museum, was good enough to point out to me a passage in the Chronicle of Meaux, lately edited by him for the Master of the Rolls, which is much to the purpose of the present inquiry. Abbot Burton says (vol. ii. p. 323) that the Franciscans, or a section of them, opposed certain constitutions of Pope John XXII., who thereupon caused many of them to be condemned and burnt, some in France in 1318, others at various places in France, Spain, Italy, and Germany, in 1330; and that among the severities practised on this last occasion, 'in Angliâ, in quadam silvâ, combusta (*sic*) sunt viri quinquaginta quinque, et mulieres octo, ejusdem ordinis et erroris.' This is indefinite, certainly, but there seems no possibility of questioning its substantial truth; and if it be true, then men and women were burnt in England for heresy before 1401." Mr Arnold also points out the passage in Walsingham (ed. Riley, ii. 189), which relates how the Bishop of Norwich threatened to *burn* or behead the Lollards, A.D. 1389.

It would probably not be difficult to multiply instances of such allusions. Thus, Pierce the Ploughman's Crede is generally considered as not later than A.D. 1394. Yet the allusion in it to the persecution of the Lollards is plain-spoken enough; for we find the

anonymous author alluding to the prosecution of Walter Brute in 1393, and declaring that, though those in power did not actually burn him, they would gladly have done so.

" þei pursueþ the pouere · & passeþ pursutes,
Boþe þey wiln & þei wolden · y-worþen so grete
To passen any mans miȝt · to morþeren þe soules;
First to *brenne* þe *bodye* · in a bale of fijr,
And syþen þe sely soule slen · & senden hyre to helle";
P. Pl. Crede, ed. Skeat, l. 664.[1]

And there is yet another allusion in the poem called the Plowmans Tale (written, as I hold, about A.D. 1395, by the same author) to the severity with which religious persecution was carried out, in the passage—

" Thou shalt be *brent* in balefull fire,
And all thy sect I shall destrie;
Ye shall be hanged by the swire."

We may depend upon it that these and similar passages refer to actual and not imaginary events. The allusions to *brenning* in Wyclif's Sermons, in Piers the Plowman, in Walsingham, in the Ploughmans Crede, and in the Plowmans Tale, may fairly be taken to be no mere rhetorical flourishes, but to refer to such things as are mentioned in the Chronicle of Meaux, where the burning of fifty-five men and eight women at once is mentioned quite casually. The fact is, that the famous statute of Henry IV. seems to be generally misunderstood. It did not in any way provide for the burning of heretics as a *new* remedy for heresy; it merely provided, as Mr Arnold well points out, for the application of the remedy 'uberius et celerius.' It is easy, moreover, to shew how this was effected, viz. by empowering the *diocesan*, as Dr Whitaker says, to act on his own responsibility. Before the passing of the statute, the punishment could be inflicted (and was inflicted) only by means, as it seemed to some, of an unnecessarily round-about procedure. If a bishop, as for instance the Bishop of Norwich in 1389, wished

[1] My note on this passage says—'Such a threat was not *carried out* till a few years later, when William Sautre was burnt in Smithfield, Feb. 26, 1401.'—(*P. Pl. Crede*, p. 52.) That is, I adopted the common opinion at the time of writing the note; but now believe that such an opinion has arisen from inattention. No doubt the threat *was* sometimes carried out.

to burn a heretic, he had to go through the process of formally handing over the said heretic to the secular arm; and the secular arm could dispose of the criminal in any way that was deemed advisable. The statute did away with this troublesome necessity, and was passed, to use the very words of it, because the bishops 'per suam iurisdictionem spiritualem dictos perfidos et peruersos absque auxilio dictae maiestatis regiae sufficienter corrigere nequeunt.' The whole matter has been made clear to me by the kind help of C. H. Pearson, Esq., author of the Early and Middle Ages of England, who pointed out to me a decisive case in point, viz. the account given by Bracton of a man who, for the crime of wishing to marry a Jewess, was handed over to the secular arm and *burnt*, as early as in the reign of Henry III.[1] So that, as a net result, we find that the somewhat vague allusion to *burning* in the B-text, upon which Dr Whitaker so confidently relied as proving that version of the poem to be later than 1401, proves no more than that it was later than the time of Henry III.; and, as to deciding between the claims of the B- and C-texts to priority, it proves just nothing at all; but rather did, in effect, induce Dr Whitaker to decide wrongly.

There remains, however, one argument more, which I have hitherto purposely kept out of sight. Neither Dr Whitaker, nor even Mr Wright, seems to have been at all aware of the existence of an A-text. It is mentioned in Warton (ii. 63, ed. 1840) in his remarks upon MS. Harl. 6041; but no one else seems to have noticed it. Now, when we proceed to place the *three* texts side by side, it is at once apparent that the B-text is *intermediate* in form between the other two; so that the order of texts must either be A, B, C, or C, B, A; but the A-text so evidently comes *first*, that the C-text can only come *last;* and this settles the question. The

[1] Bracton's language is very explicit, and his authority is decisive. "Cum autem clericus sic de crimine conuictus degradetur, non sequitur alia pœna pro vno delicto, vel pluribus ante degradationem perpetratis. Satis enim sufficit ei pro pœna degradatio, quæ est magna capitis diminutio, nisi forte conuictus fuerit de apostasia, quia tunc primo degradetur, et postea *per manum laicalem comburatur*, secundum quod accidit in concilio Oxon., celebrato a bonæ memoriæ S. Cantuarien. Archiepiscopo, de quodam diacono qui se apostatauit pro quadam Iudea, qui cum esset per Episcopum degradatus, statim fuit igni traditus per manum laycalem." Bracton, de Legibus Angliæ, lib. iii. tract. ii. c. 9; ed. 1569, fol. 124.

opening lines of the poem will suffice to shew this, if the three forms be compared. I cite a short passage by way of example.

Text of A.D. 1362.

In a somer sesun · whon softe was þe sonne,
I schop me in-to a schroud · a scheep as I were;
In habite of an hermite · vn-holy of werkes,
Wende I wydene in þis world · wondres to here.
Bote in a Mayes morwnynge · on Maluerne hulles
Me bi-fel a ferly · a feyrie, me þouhte;
I was weori of wandring · and wente me to reste
Vndur a brod banke · bi a bourne syde,
And as I lay and leonede · and lokede on þe watres,
I slumberde in a slepyng · hit sownede so murie.

A-*text*; prol. 1—10.

Text of A.D. 1377.

In a somer seson · whan soft was the sonne,
I shope me in shroudes · as I a shepe were,
In habite as an heremite · vnholy of workes,
Went wyde in þis world · wondres to here.
Ac on a May mornynge · on Maluerne hulles
Me byfel a ferly · of fairy, me thouȝte;
I was wery forwandred · and went me to reste
Vnder a brode banke · bi a bornes side,
And as I lay and lened · and loked in þe wateres,
I slombred in a slepyng · it sweyued so merye.

B-*text*; prol. 1—10.

Text of A.D. 1393.

In a somere seyson · whan softe was þe sonne,
Y shop me into shrobbis · as y a shepherde were,
In abit as an ermite · vnholy of werkes,
Ich wente forth in þe worlde · wonders to here,
And sawe meny cellis · and selcouthe þynges.
Ac on a may morwenyng · on Maluerne hulles
Me byfel for to slepe · for weyrynesse of wandryng;
And in a launde as ich lay · lenede ich and slepte,
And merueylously me mette · as ich may ȝow telle.

C-*text*; Pass. i. 1—9.

Now that all three texts are in the reader's hands, he can prosecute the comparison of them as far as he pleases, in a way that could never have been done before.

It will be observed that I have here assigned the date 1393 as

suitable to the latest version. I now proceed to adduce some reasons for this.

We have already seen that, as it comes last, it must be later than 1377; and any one who observes the great care with which the poem has been revised, the curious changes in the arrangement of many passages, and other similar indications, will be prepared to allow several years as a not unlikely interval between the two later versions; especially as an interval of fifteen years exists between the two earlier ones. It must be observed also, that the poem printed in this volume, with the title of "Richard the Redeles," belongs obviously to the year 1399; and it will be shewn presently what conclusive reasons there are for assuming that poem to have been written by the author of Piers the Plowman. This at once places the C-text between 1377 and 1399, with a probable interval of several years between it and the former of these dates. We thus at once assign the year 1390 as being probably not more than five or six years from the true date.

But a closer examination may bring us much nearer than this. Notwithstanding the occasional anachronisms which occur, owing to the poet's reluctance to alter some passages—a peculiarity which has already been explained (Pref. II. § 4)—we find trustworthy indications of the date in some of the *additional* passages which occur in the C-text for the first time. In particular, there is a very remarkable indication of the change of popular feeling towards King Richard. The traces of respect are fewer, and it is clear that he was rapidly sinking in the estimation of his subjects. Here, for instance, is a bold and outspoken passage, too plainly expressed to admit of doubt as to the poet's feelings. Addressing the king, and speaking of the prevalence of Meed or Bribery, he says—

> Religion hue al to-reueþ · and oute of ruele to lybbe.
> Ther nys cite vnder sonne · ne so riche reome
> Ther hue is loued and lete by · þat last shal eny while,
> With-oute werre oþer-wo · oþer wicked lawes,
> And customes of couetyse · þe comune to distruye.
> Vnsyttynge suffraunce · hure suster, and hure-selue
> Haue maked al-most · bote marie þe helpe,
> þat no lond loueþ the · and 3ut leest þyn owene.
>
> C-*text*; iv. 203.

Here he plainly tells the king that "unseemly Tolerance (of evil men), which is own sister to Bribery, in combination with Bribery herself, have almost brought it about, except the Virgin Mary help thee, that *no land loveth thee, and least of all thine own land.*" Now, after Richard really took the government into his own hands, in 1389, he was at first in considerable favour for some little time; but in 1392, there was a very great quarrel between himself and the Londoners, as related by Walsingham, and the feeling against him seems to have been very strong. The king's prodigality was beginning to make his exactions severely felt, and the quarrel turned, naturally enough, upon the question of money. Under the title "De transgressionibus Londinensium, et ira Regis," Walsingham (ed. Riley, ii. 207) relates the story thus. "Sub eodem tempore, misit Rex ad cives Londiniarum, petens ab eis mutuo mille libras; cui procaciter, et ultra quam decuit, restiterunt, et pecuniam se non posse præstare petitam unanimiter affirmaverunt; sed et quemdam Lumbardum, volentem accommodare Regi dictam summam, male tractaverunt, verberaverunt, et paulo minus occiderunt." This is the very story, I suppose, to which our author allúdes in the passage—

> "And ich dar legge my lyf · þat loue wol lene þe suluer,
> To wage thyne, and help wynne · þat þow wilnest after,
> More þan al þy marchauns · oþer þy mytrede bisshopes,
> Oþer *lumbardes* of lukes · þat lyuen by lone as Iewes."
>
> C. v. 191.

Here he tells the king that, if he wants money, he must not apply to the Lombards, but cultivate the love of his people. If this and the former allusion be considered, we may see grounds for placing the C-text later than 1392.[1] These are my reasons for selecting the year 1393 as a sufficiently approximate date, although I should not object to the opinion that the true date is later still. How it can be earlier, I cannot see; the long additional passage explaining the difference between Bribery and Wages (iv. 287—415) shews that this difference was considered as especially deserving of notice, and the whole tone of Pass. iv. indicates the poet's opinion as to the pre-

[1] Hardly in 1392; as the passage occurs also in the *early draught* of the C-text, in MSS. of sub-class *b*.

valence of gross misgovernment, which he here lays to the king's charge more directly than he had previously done. The very same tone is prevalent in the poem of "Richard the Redeles," the date of which is so clearly 1399.

From all this it will be seen that, although the year 1393 is only assigned as a conjectural date, there are some good reasons for supposing that it is not far wrong. I believe that we may safely assume the dates 1393 and 1398 as the extreme limits between which the date of the C-text can vary.

Whilst discussing this subject, it may be added that, although Pierce the Ploughmans Crede is an obvious imitation of the Vision, it is not perfectly clear from which text it was imitated. It probably appeared about 1394, and may have been immediately evoked by the fact of its author meeting with a copy of the C-text, but this is mere conjecture. The only passage I know of in which the Crede resembles the C-text more than any other version of the Vision is the following, in which the resemblance is not sufficiently close to make us feel certain upon the point.

"Now mot ich soutere his sone · setten to schole,[1]
And ich a beggers brol . on þe booke lerne . . . .
So of þat beggers brol · a bychop schal worþen . .
Þey [viz. *lords*] schulden maken bichopes · her owen breþren childre,
Oþer of some gentil blod · & so it best semed . . .
For her kynde were more · to y-clense diches," &c.
P. Pl. Crede; 744—760.

This may be compared with the following:—

"For-thi lefte þei here laboure · þese lewede knaues,
And cloþed hem in copes · clerkus as it were . . .
Ac sith bondmenne barnes · han be mad Bisshopes,
And barnes bastardes · han ben archidekenes . . .
Thuse by-longeþ to labour . and lordes kyn to seruen
Bothe god and good men · as here degree askeþ . . .
Hit by-comeþ for clerkus · crist for to seruen,
And knaues vncrouned · to cart and to worche," &c.
P. Pl. C. x. 209, 210; vi. 70, 71, 66, 67, 61, 62.

[1] My note on the line (*P. Pl. Crede*, p. 53) requires amendment; the line obviously means—"Now must each cobbler set his son to school."

I have merely quoted the most striking lines. In both poems, the whole context should be observed. In any case, the passages are worth comparing; and, if it should appear to the reader that the passages are really connected, this will be an argument for placing the C-text before 1394, i. e. about 1393, as before.

§ 5. DESCRIPTION OF THE MSS.

XXIX.[1] MS. Phillipps 8231, formerly MS. Heber 973; mentioned in Heber's Catalogue of MSS., part xi., p. 101. This MS. is

[1] Twenty-seven MSS. have been already described. MSS. I.—X. in Pref. I., pp. xv—xxiv; MS. XI. in Part i., at p. 142*; MS. XII. in footnote to Pref. II., p. vi.; and MSS. XIII.—XXVII. in Pref. II., pp. vi—xxx. The twenty-eighth MS. must be described here in a footnote, as it belongs rather to the B-class than to any other.

XXVIII. MS. Phillipps 8252, formerly MS. Heber 1088. Dr Whitaker (Pref. to his edition of Piers the Plowman, p. xxxii) speaks of it thus. "This MS. is a thick octavo volume, bearing the autographs of Sir Henry Spelman, Dr Taylor, the editor of Demosthenes, Mr Gough, and Mr Heber, its successive and distinguished owners. From the handwriting it may probably be assigned to the reign of Richard the Second [or rather Henry the Fourth]; but in addition to the present work, it contains the 'Travels of Sir John Maundevyle', the poem of 'Susanna', already quoted; a short story in prose, entitled 'Joseph'; 'Troilus', in five books; and a strange satirical proclamation from 'Lucifer, Prince of the depe Dominion of Darknesse'." Here 'the poem of Susanna' means the piece commonly known as the 'Pistyl of Sweet Susan', or the Apocryphal story of Susanna and the elders, printed from another MS. in the Select Remains of Scottish Poetry, by D. Laing, 1822. The piece called 'Joseph', in prose, relates to the visit of Joseph and Mary to Egypt, with a relation of the origin and virtues of the rose of Jericho, and an account of the growth, virtues, and gathering of 'Bawme'; in fact, the same story as that told in the legend of the Three Kings, printed from MS. Harl. 1704 in an Appendix to Mr Wright's edition of the Chester Plays, p. 290. The 'Troilus' is Chaucer's. The proclamation of Lucifer has been printed from MS. Cotton Vesp. B. 16 (described below; see account of MS. XXXIII.), in the Political, Religious, and Love Poems, ed. F. J. Furnivall (E. E. T. S.), p. 12.

The MS. is on paper, with a few vellum leaves bound in. The copy of Piers the Plowman contained in it may be said to be chiefly of the B-text, but it is in fact a mixed text, considerably confused in order, and entirely misleading, having several interpolations from the C-text. Dr Whitaker made some small use of it, calling it his 'MS. B', but it probably tended rather to confuse than to help him. He printed an extract from it (not worth the reprinting) which sufficiently shews the confusion of matter in it. This extract is 39 lines long. The first 19 lines are equivalent to B. v. 134—152; the next 14 are equivalent to C. vii. 105—118; and the last six are a bad copy (imperfect) of C. vii. 119—128.

The divisions of the Poem are also in some disorder, though they mostly follow the order of the B-text. Passus xiii., however, is made into two, so that the

denoted through this volume by the letter P, and is printed in full as being the best representative of Text C. It is an excellent MS., of strong vellum, written, I should suppose, *before* 1400, and contains 89 leaves, in eleven quires of eight leaves, and one over. The size of each leaf is about 11¼ by 7½ inches (very nearly the size of MS. Laud Misc. 581), and each page contains about 43 lines; excepting the last, which contains 23. The scribe's name is thus recorded—"Explicit Peeres Plouheman, scriptum per Thom. Dankastre." Amongst the various notes scribbled upon it is the note—'Iohannes Meade me possedet (*sic*): Pretij iij. iiij*d*.' It is certainly worth in these days more than 3*s*. 4*d*. At the top of the first page is a note in a late hand—'Homo Sine pecunia est quasi corpus Sine anima. A man without mony is as a bodie without shoul.' Most of the Latin quotations, and a large number of the proper names, are written or painted in vermilion. It was long before I discovered the exact value of this MS.; and, as the history of my experience may be instructive to others, I shall give it.

This MS. is, in fact, the very one which Dr Whitaker printed in full in 1813, at which time it was in the possession of Richard Heber, Esq., of Hodnet, in Shropshire, who lent it to Dr Whitaker for the purpose. His plan was to represent the MS. *exactly*, by printing it just as it stood. He accordingly adopted a black-letter type, as coming nearer than Roman type to the characters of the MS., and printed the Latin quotations in red. He did not punctuate the text, because there is, of course, no punctuation in the MS. He also endeavoured to print every mark of abbreviation just as it is written, so that there was no reason why his edition should not have been an exact representation of the original in all points, and

Passus xiii. of this MS. ends at B. xiii. 214, and Passus xiv. begins at B. xiii. 215, and is made to end at l. 457, just three lines too soon. Hence its Passus xv. begins thus:—

> Thus haukyn þe actif man · had foulyd his cote,
> Til conciens chalenged hym þer-of · in curteys manere,
> Why he nad wasshyn hit · or wipid hit with a brusshe.
> "I have but one hole hatre," quod haukyn · "y am þe las to blame," &c.

Of course this MS. counts accordingly XXI. Passus instead of XX. Taken altogether, it is one of those MSS. which are best avoided. A *few* notes from it are cited (from Whitaker's edition) in my Critical Notes.

such I accordingly supposed it to be. When considering which of the numerous MSS. I should take as the best representative of the C-text, I thought it would be well to avoid printing the same one as had been printed already, because I considered that it would be a distinct gain to have *two* MSS. printed in full instead of one, and I rather disliked the look of Dr Whitaker's text, as seeming to indicate a faulty source. Having decided to put it aside for a while, I tried what would be the effect of taking another MS. as the basis of the work, and the result of my experiment was curious. The most obvious one to select, *at first sight*, was the beautifully written Cotton MS. Vesp. B. 16, in the British Museum, and accordingly a transcript was made of the entire MS. by the kindness of Mr Rossiter, head-master of South London School, author of a Treatise on Trigonometry, Mr Brock, editor of the Alliterative Morte Arthure, and Mr Wood. Taking this as the text, I began to collate it with other copies. But this plan soon broke down, as I found that it was continually requiring emendation, or else that the readings were frequently inferior to those of Whitaker's edition. My next experience was with the Ilchester MS., of the existence of which I was kindly apprised by the Rev. C. W. Bingham, of Bingham's Melcombe, Dorchester. The value of this MS. was apparent at once, and, as the Earl of Ilchester was so kind as to lend it to me for three months, I was enabled to make a transcript of it, with the aid of Mr D. Hall, of the Cambridge University Library. But this MS. would not do to print from, on account of its incompleteness; see the description of it below. I was next attracted by the beautifully written MS. marked Ff. 5. 35, in our University Library, and, in order that there might be no mistake this time, the whole of Passus II. was set up in type from this MS., and the resulting text collated with almost every other MS. known to me. Then the whole truth came out at last; it became clear that MS. P was the best of the series, in spite of a few peculiarities in the scribe's spelling, which will be noticed below; whilst at the same time the conviction was *forced* upon me, that it was incredible that Whitaker's printed copy of it could be always correct. Several odd readings could hardly be other than misprints or misreadings, and there could be no way of

settling this but by going all over his text so as to compare it with the original throughout. I accordingly applied to Sir Thos. Phillipps, who kindly permitted Mr Brock to collate my copy of 'Whitaker' with the MS.; a task which Mr Brock accomplished, with great care, as far as Pass. x. l. 34, or the end of p. 148 in Whitaker. At a subsequent period I had the opportunity of visiting Cheltenham, and finishing the collation myself, carefully looking at all the more important readings with additional attention, and thus obtaining exact information as to the spelling of every word throughout the poem. From this *corrected* copy of Whitaker the present text has been printed, and the result is sufficiently satisfactory. Most of the absurd readings turned out to be Dr Whitaker's mistakes; some others were due to some marked peculiarities in the scribe's spelling, easily removeable; and the rest have been amended by collation with six or seven other MSS. The resulting text is a peculiarly good one, and is, at any rate, ascertained on sufficient grounds to be the best that can be procured from the existing materials. For a long time, the state of the text was a great puzzle to me, and it has been a great satisfaction to be able to find so full and clear a solution to that puzzle. I think it must have been nearly two years before I saw my way quite clearly; and I have no doubt that the chief part of the difficulty arose from my assuming that Dr Whitaker's print, so obviously *intended* to be correct, really *was* so. Certainly experience has taught me, as an editor, to put no trust in editors, but always to verify their work by a reference, where possible, to the originals which they profess to represent.

In printing the MS., I found a few errors of misspelling by the scribe of such glaring impropriety, that I have not hesitated to alter them, *always*, however, making a note of the alteration in a footnote at the bottom of the page, but *not* marking them by square brackets, because it would have disfigured the look of the text. The square brackets, however, are invariably used where the alteration involves any real difference in the *sense;* it is only where nothing could be gained by retaining them that I have ventured to dispense with them. The chief error of this nature consists in the use of initial *wh*. Although the scribe often spells such words rightly, he almost

as often spells them wrongly. Thus in Pass. i. 186, he writes *Wer* for *Wher;* and conversely, in ii. 71, he writes *whitterly* for *witterly.* Little could be gained by retaining such spellings,[1] and they were not worth a square bracket; yet they will be found duly noted in the footnotes, and I do not suppose that many readers will deem the liberty thus taken a very bold one.[2] His other chief error, a not uncommon one with scribes at many periods of English, is the use of *o* for *e*, as in *Lornede* for *Lernede*, xiv. 159; and, conversely, the use of *e* for *o*, as in *beþe* for *boþe*, xiii. 73. This also is a *personal* error, i. e. it is not often found in the other MSS.[3] Another peculiarity is seen in his use of the initial *h* in such words as *his* and *is*, as in 'Who-so *his* trywe of *ys* tonge,' xi. 78. This would have been remarkable, if he had shewn any consistency with himself in the matter, but since he quite as often writes *his* as *is* when the possessive pronoun is meant, it degenerates into a mere carelessness unworthy of much notice; yet the error is always recorded. The greatest liberty taken is in the substitution of *trewe* (the spelling of *all* the other MSS., including E) for *trywe*, the spelling most often found in P, and denoting, no doubt, a peculiarity in the scribe's pronunciation. This will be better understood when the description of MS. E (below) has been read over.

But when the scribe makes a downright blunder, as in *venturum* for *neutrum* in i. 152, the use of square brackets has been resorted to, as absolutely necessary.

This is the best place to notice at least two other peculiarities of the scribe Dankastre's writing. When he writes *sitte*, he makes the first *t* very short, so that, at a hasty glance, the word looks like *sute.* Hence Dr Whitaker has printed *sute* for *sitte*, *suthe* for *sitthe*, and the like, over and over again. But the error is Whitaker's, not

[1] The only gain is that the fact may have some significance; and by calling special attention to it in the preface, I have probably brought it into prominence even more than I should otherwise have done. It seems to imply that, to some ears at least, the *h* in *wh* (like initial *h*) was silent even in the fourteenth century.

[2] Especially if it be borne in mind that this error, very frequent in MS. P, does not occur, except perhaps very rarely, in *any other* MS. which I have consulted.

[3] This use of *e* for *o* is an error in the act of writing; the letters are so formed as to be very much alike; just as the *n* and *u* are at times confused.

Dankastre's. Also, when he wished to write a capital *c* in the middle of a line, he always wrote it of rather a small size, so that it has a slight resemblance to an *s*. This is why, in Whitaker's edition, the word *Coket* (ix. 328) is misprinted *soket;* with a few more similar instances.

The redeeming merit of this MS., for which many small faults may be overlooked, is that its mistakes are commonly of a very transparent nature; we can easily see through them, especially with the aid of collation of other MSS., and hence perceive clearly enough that Dankastre *made his copy from a very good original,* probably from an early copy of the poet's own *autograph* copy,[1] and that we are thus brought as near to that original as is *now* possible. This is especially interesting, both as proving the *general* integrity of the text, and because Dankastre's copy of the true text is not the *only* one, since there are two others. These two others are the two which are next described.

For further remarks upon MS. P, see the account below of Dr Whitaker's edition of it. See also the Critical Notes, pp. 449—466.

XXX. MS. Laud 656, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford; denoted throughout this volume by the letter E.

The character of this MS. may be best perceived by turning to the fac-simile of a page of it, obtained by the autotype process, and prefixed to this volume. The contents of that page will be explained presently. It is a neat MS. on vellum, containing 124 leaves, each measuring about 8½ by 6 inches, with about 40 lines on a page. The contents of the MS. are as follows:—

(*a*) A poem on the Destruction of Jerusalem, called by Warton (Hist. Eng. Poetry, vol. ii. p. 105; ed. 1840) The Warres of the Jewes. Begins (fol. 1 *b.*)—In tyberius tyme · þe trewe emp*erour*; ends (fol. 19)—& hom riden to rome · now rede ous our*e* lord. Hic t*ermin*at*ur* bell*um* Iudaicu*m* ap*u*d Ier*usal*em. Other copies of this

[1] But not from the autograph itself, as *may* have been the case with MS. XXXI. There is one passage which is corrupt, viz. Pass. i. ll. 107—123 (see footnote on p. 7), and which seems to have been filled in by guess-work in every MS. except Lord Ilchester's. MS. P also occasionally omits lines, one of the most remarkable instances being l. 206 of Pass. xiii., of which the former half only is preserved in the Ilchester MS., the latter half having been devoured by the rats!

alliterative poem are to be found in MS. Cotton Calig. A. ii., MS. Camb. Univ. Lib. Mm. 5. 14, and MS. No. cxxx. in the possession of Lord Ashburnham, described in P. Pl. Pref. II. p. xxi.

(*b*) Piers the Plowman; begins (fol. 99 *b*)—In a somere seson · whan softe was þe sonne; ends (fol. 114)—& siþ he grade after grace · til ich gan awake. Explicit passus secundus de dobest · incipit passus tercius.[1]

(*c*) On fol. 115, a couplet, repeated in another place at the very end of the MS., which runs as follows:—

He that In yowught no vertu wyll vse
In age all honur wyll hem refuse, &c.—

The next two leaves being blank.

(*d*) On fol. 118 (wrongly called 117), a sermon, beginning—gen. 15 c°. Abraham bileued in god, &c.

(*e*) on fol. 124 *b*, some sentences of scripture *in English*, which I here print at length on account of the interest that attaches to such early translations.

Hit is writen in þe boke of machabeus, þe viij. c°.; þe wraþ of gōd for soþ now is tourned in-to mercy. [2 *Mac.* 8. 5.]

prouerbiorum .xviij. c°.; who so answereþ to a man, or þat he haþ herd hym speke, he schewith hym-silf a fool & worþy to confusion. [*Prov.* 18. 13.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xj. c°.; blame þou no man or þat þow haue herd hym speke; & þen blame hym riȝtfulliche. [*Ecclus.* 11. 7.]

ysaie .x. c°.; wo be ȝou þat maken wicked lawes, & writen vnriȝtwisnesse for to oppresse with fadirles children, and modirles & widewes. [*Isa.* 10. 1, 2.]

Isaie .v. c°.; wo be to ȝou þat bynden houses to houses, & couplen feldes to feldes, & seyn þat riȝt is wronge, & wronge is riȝt. [*Isa.* 5. 8, 20.]

Thobie .iiij. c°. al þat þou hatest þat any man scholde do to þe, be wel ware þat þou do þat no tyme to non oþer man. [*Tob.* 4. 15.]

Isaie .xlvij°. c°.; þy wisdom & þy knowyng haþ disceyued þe. [*Isa.* 47. 10.]

prouerbiorum .x. c°.; þere myche speche is, lackeþ no synne. [*Prov.* 10. 19.]

prouerbiorum .xxix. c°.; who so euer norischeþ lecherie, he schal lese his heritage þerby. [*Prov.* 29. 3.]

[1] An error of the scribe. There is no indication of any *third* Passus of Dobest in any MS. but this; and even here, the lower half of the page is blank.

Ecclesiasticorum[1] .ij. c°.; I se þat also myche wisdom passeþ folie, as liȝt passeþ derknesse. [*Eccles.* 2. 13.]

Sapiencie .j°. c°.; In a wicked saule may entre no wisdom, ne dwelle in þe body þat is seruaunt to synne. [*Wisd.* 1. 4.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xiiij°. c°.; he þat is wicked to hym-silf, to what oþer man schal he be goode. [*Ecclus.* 14. 5.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xxviij°. c°.; þe stroke of þe tonge forsoþe breketh bones. [*Ecclus.* 28. 17.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xxix°. c°.; close þyn almes in þe pore mannes bosom, & hit schal fiȝte for þe vppon þy scheld & vppon þy spere in þe day of bataile. [*Ecclus.* 29. 12, 13.]

Sapiencie .i°. c°.; þe moupe þat lieþ sleeþ þe soule. [*Wisd.* 1. 11.]

Isaie xxiiij°. c°.; such as þe peple is, suche is þe preste; & suche squyere, suche lord; & suche damysel, such lady. [*Isa.* 24. 2.]

Ieremie xlviij. c°. Corsed be ȝe þat don þe workes of oure lord gilyngliche & disceyuyngliche. [*Jer.* 48. 10.]

Ieremie .ix. c°. No wisman Ioie hym in his wisdom, ne no stronge man in his strengþe, ne no riche man Ioie hym in his richesse; bot for to wite & knowe me, seiþ oure lord. [*Jer.* 9. 23.]

Michie .vj°. c°. I schal schewe to þe, man, what is god, & what god secheþ of þe; also þat þou do riȝtwisnesse, & loue mercy, & bisili loue god. [*Mic.* 6. 8.]

Prouerbiorum .xxj°. c°.; who so stoppeþ his ere fro a poure mannes crie, whan he crieþ to god, god wol noȝt heere hym. [*Prov.* 21. 13.]

Prouerbiorum .xvij°. c°. who þat Ioieþ hym of an oþer mannes meschef, he schal noȝt be vnpunschid. [*Prov.* 17. 5.]

Prouerbiorum .xxij. c°; who so accuseþ a poure man for to bynymen hym his goodis, for to adden hem to his richesse, a richere man þan he is schal take hit fro hym, & he schal falle to meschef. [*Prov.* 22. 16.]

Prouerbiorum .xxiij°. c°. Take noȝt awey þe techyng fro a child, & þoȝ þou smyte hym with a ȝerde, he schal noȝt deie, bot þou schalt smyte hym with a ȝerde, & delyuere his soule fram helle. [*Prov.* 23. 13, 14.]

Prouerbiorum .xiij. c°.; he þat spareþ þe ȝerde, hateþ his sone; & he þat loueþ his sone, wole bisily teche hym. [*Prov.* 13. 24.]

Ecclesiasticorum .xvj°. c°.; beter hit is to haue o child dredyng god þan a þousand wicked & noȝt dredyng god; & beter hit were to deye with-out children þan to leeue wicked children byhynde hym vntauȝt. [*Ecclus.* 16. 3.]

Prouerbiorum .xiiij°. c°.; who so haþ reuþe on a poure man, he schal be blessed, & who so bileueþ in god, he loueþ to do mercy. [*Prov.* 14. 21, 22, 31 ?]

[1] *Read* Ecclesiastes.

Prouerbiorum .xxviij°. c°.; who so þat 3yueþ to a poure man, hym ne schal no3t nede; he þat dispiseþ hem þat praien hym, he schal falle to meschef. Also in þe same chapitre; he þat boweþ awey his eren, & wole no3t hure goddes comaundementes, his praiers ben acorsed. Also in þe same chapitre; who so takeþ awey any þyng fro his fadere oþer fro his modire, & seiþ þat is no synne, he is partynere of manslau3t. [*Prov.* 28. 27; 9; 24.]

Prouerbiorum .xxvij .c°.; a fals tonge loueþ no3t soþfastnesse, & a slipire mouþ worcheþ myche sorwe. [*Prov.* 26. 28.]

Prouerbiorum xxj°. c°.; he þat kepeþ wel his mouþ & his tonge, he kepeþ his soule fram anguysche. [*Prov.* 21. 23.]

Exodij .xxxiiij°. Numeri .xiiij°. c°. & Ionas. Tu domine es paciens benignus & innocens, clemens deus & multum misericors. [*Ex.* 34. 6; *Num.* 14. 18; *Jon.* 4. 2.] Expliciunt prouerbia salamonis.[1]

On a flyleaf at the beginning is written—

Ete, drynke, slepe lasse;
Wake, wepe, bide, faste;
Loue masse;
Lete lustes passe;
Be man, no3t hors noþer asse.

Also this Latin astrological note—

Mercurius habet iiij^{or} condiciones; regit cum virgine, dominatur aque, loquitur facunde, manet cum sole.

On the last flyleaf is written—

Hafe y of My owne lambenes botte on, dere y nowte fore þe wylde wolfe to grene wood.

Also this note—Sciant presentes et futuri quod Ego Ioh. cempe de parochia de ticeherst in comi. Kancie—which seems to indicate that the MS. was once at Ticehurst in Kent.

The most interesting point about this MS. is that it is almost a duplicate of MS. P just described. It must have been a close copy from the same original. Hence the letters PE are often found together in the footnotes. This may be best understood by comparing the passage in the facsimile with Pass. vii. ll. 196—240; pp. 106—108. In order to assist those who are not very familiar with the MS. characters, I here print the exact contents of the facsimile; denoting, however, the contractions by italic letters.

[1] *Indistinct.*

Confessio auaricie

þ anne camè couetise[1] · ich can noȝt hym discreue
so hongriliche & so holwe · heruy hym silf loked
he was bitel browed & baberlipped · with two bleri eyen
& as a leþeren pors · lolled his chekes
Wel sydder þan his chyn · ychyueled for elde
As bondmen bakoun · his berde was yschaue
With his hode on his hed · & his hatte boþe
In a toren[2] tabard · of twelfe wynter age
Ich haue be couetouse quod þe caytif · Ich byknowe hit here
For[3] som tyme ich serued · symme at þe stile
& was his prentys yplyȝt · his profite to wayte
Furst ich lerned to lye · a lesyng oþer twey
Wickedlich to weye · was my furst lesson
To wy & to wynchestre · ich wende to þe faire
With many maner marchaundises · as my maister hiȝt
Ne hadde þe grace of gile · gon amonge my ware
Hit hadde ben vnsolde þis seuen ȝere · so me god helpe
Ich drowe me amonge drapers · my donet to lerne
To drawe þe lesure alonge · þe lengur hit semed
Amonge þe riche raies · ich rendred a lessoun
To brochen hem with a batte nelde · & bonde hem to gedres
Ich putte in pressours · & pynned hem þer Inne
Til ten ȝerdes oþer twelfe · tilled hem þrittene
My wif was a webbe · & wollen cloþ made
ȝo spake to þe spynnestres · to spynnen hit out
þe pounde þat ȝo paied hem by · peised a quarter
More þan myn auncel · whan ich weied truþe
Ich boȝt hire barlich · ȝo brewe hit to sille
Peny ale & poddyng ale · ȝo poured to gedres
For labourers & lowe folke · þat lay by hym silue
þe best lay in my boure · & in my bedde chambre
& so bommed þer of · he boȝt hit þer after
A galon for a grote · & ȝut no graiþe mesure

[1] Properly 'couetiſe,' with long *s*. But I have throughout neglected the distinction between the long and twisted *s*, because the printed long *s* is too close to an *f*, and only gives trouble. The twisted *s* occurs at the beginning and end of words, the long *s* in the middle.

[2] Written 'atoren,' the *a* being generally joined on to its noun. So also *alesyng*, &c.

[3] The capital *F* in Early English has *two* downstrokes, just as in the black-letter ſ. By a singular error, this symbol is frequently printed *ff*, as if the *f* were doubled. Yet I have allowed *ff* to stand in the poem of 'Richard the Redeles,' because the scribe uses it so constantly that he seems to have attached some *special* importance to it. See the remarks on the MS. of that poem.

Whan hit came in coppe mele · þis crafte my wif vsed
Rose þe regratoure · was hire riȝt name
ȝo haþ yholde hockerie · þis elleue wynter,
Repentest þou neuer quod repentaunce · ne restitucion madest
ȝus onys quod ȝo ich was yherborwed · with an hepe of chepmen
Ich aros & rifled here males · whan þei in reste were
þat was a reuful restitucion · quod repentaunce for soþe
þou wolt honge hey þerfore · here oþer in helle
Vsedest euer þou vsurye · in al þy lif tyme
Nay soþlich he sede · saf in my ȝougþe.[1]

This extract sufficiently exemplifies the close *general* resemblance between MS. E and the text. The chief points of interest arising from collation are all duly noted in the footnotes. Thus, in l. 200, MS. E reads *Wel*, correctly. It agrees with P in omitting ll. 204, 205. In l. 206, it has *þe* for *þis*. In l. 211, it has *wende* for *wente*. In l. 212, it supplies the word *maner*, and corrects *maistres* to *maister*. In l. 216, it has *lesure* for *lisure*. In l. 219, it omits the first *hem*. In l. 220, it correctly has *ȝerdes* for *ȝorde*; also *hem* (wrongly) for *out*. In l. 227, it has *hym-silue* for *hem-selue*. In l. 229, it agrees with P in wrongly omitting *who*. In l. 233, it has *elleue* for *eleuene*. In l. 236, it has *in* for *a*. In l. 238, it has *honge* for *hongy*. The remaining chief variation is an evident peculiarity of the scribe himself; he uses *ȝo* to signify *she*, although that form is found in no other MS., the spelling of that word in P being almost always *hue*. The most remarkable instance of its agreement with P is in l. 235, where the scribe of P has accidentally put *hue* for *he*, an error easily rectified by comparing l. 240 below. Here the scribe of E actually follows suit by substituting his favourite form *ȝo*, not noticing that *hue* is wrong.

The close resemblance of this MS. to the text has made it very useful to me, and enabled me to see my way more clearly in many places. It is worthy of remark that three of the best representatives of the poem of Piers the Plowman in its various forms are all to be

[1] This extract may serve many purposes. It will shew how Early English used to be actually written, and how the various contractions are to be expanded. Observe the difference between 'þ' and 'y,' the latter being curled to the right at the bottom; note also the shape of the metrical mark in this MS., the shape of ȝ, large and small; the use of the *same* symbol (an *n*) for *n* and *u*; the running together of *a* and *toren*; the separation of *to-gedres*, and many other things.

found in the Bodleian Library at Oxford; viz. the Vernon MS., printed by me as the basis of the A-text, the Laud MS. Misc. 581, the basis of the B-text; and the Laud MS. 656, which is practically almost a duplicate of P, the basis of the C-text.

XXXI. MS. Bodley 851; not regularly collated, and not mentioned in the footnotes, yet of considerable importance, as will here be shewn. It may, for convenience, be denoted by the letter Z.

The contents of this MS., which is of vellum, and measures 10 inches by 7½, may be ascertained from the Catalogue of the Bodley MSS. The copy of Piers the Plowman begins on fol. 124, and was entirely unknown to me till quite recently. This oversight arose in the most natural way possible. When making my collection of "Parallel Extracts" (E. E. T. S. 1866), Mr Coxe, Bodley's Librarian, whose kindness to me from first to last has been of the greatest service to me, himself sent me copies of the passage I had selected from the various MSS. of Piers the Plowman under his charge. But he sent me no copy of it from this MS. Z, for the sufficient reason that the passage is not to be found in it; whilst at the same time it never occurred to me to make further inquiry, because no other MS. omits the passage, and I did not suppose that any MS. *could* omit it. When however I at last lighted upon the MS. and examined it, this mystery was soon cleared up. The text it contains is a *mixed* one, consisting of two parts entirely distinct from each other and of different types, written out in very different hands. The first part exhibits an extremely corrupt text, mere rubbish, as it seems to me, and written out from imperfect recollection; but the latter part exhibits, though in a late hand, a copy of the C-text which is remarkable for the extreme general *correctness* of its readings, and may have been copied from an autograph or from an early copy of it. It is difficult to trace the exact point of junction of the texts, as the handwriting changes more than once, and the C-text portion does not settle down into its true form just at first. The net result is this, that the confusion of texts takes place near the end of B. Pass. vii., or C. Pass. x., i. e. near the end of the Vision of Piers the Plowman, *properly so called*, which winds up with two additional *spurious* lines in the following fashion—

At þe doom þat we deden · al as he vs bad & tawthe.
And þat it so mote be · to god preye we alle
To vs & alle cristin · god leue it so be-falle. Amen.

This miserable attempt at rime is a clear indication of the impossibility that the two added lines can be genuine. Hence the C-text in Z is of no value before we begin Pass. xi., or the Vision of Do-wel; but after that point its value is considerable, and will be explained more at length presently.

The former part of the MS. approaches rather to the B-text than the A-text, as, for instance, in the line—

Ant a-vowed faste · for eny hungur or furste—

which is like

And avowed to fast · for hungur or for thurst (B. 5. 388).

rather than

For hungur oþer for Furst · I make myn A-vou (A. 5. 218).

But the text is greatly corrupted, abridged, transposed, and in every way altered for the worse; so that it is worthy of no attention except as a curiosity. It will be sufficient to illustrate this by giving the very odd form in which four of the deadly sins, viz. Envy, Wrath, Gluttony, and Avarice, are described. The passage is abridged from B. 5. 76—391, by cutting down the 216 lines to 19, a considerable liberty.

[*Fol.* 133.] Enuye ant yre · ayther wep faste,
Preyude furst to pouel · ant tho (*sic*) petur alse
To gete grace for here gult · of god that hem boughte,
That nere wyked wylle · ne wrath hem ouere-come,
But sende hem grace to suffre · ant synne to lete,
And for to louye ant be by-loued · as charite wolde.
Thenne com couetyse · knoked ys brest,[1]
A haued a northfolk nose[2] · y noem ful god hede,
Ant swor by 'so theyk!'[3] · that synne scholde he lete,

[1] B. 5. 188.

[2] This description of Covetousness having 'a Norfolk nose' contains some covert satiré that is lost upon me. Having resided two years in Norfolk, I may be allowed perhaps to observe that I never remarked any peculiarity in the noses of the people there. But as they are, in these days at least, remarkably hospitable, this may account for my difficulty!!

[3] I. e. *so thee ik*, so may I thrive; O.E. *thee*, G. *gedeihen*, to thrive, prosper; cf. B. 5. 228—231.

Ant nere wolle to weye · ne worstedes[1] make,
Ne morgage manere · *with* monye that he haued,
But wenden to walsingham · ant my wyf alse,
Ant bydde the rode of bromholm · brynge vs out of dette.
Thenne gan gloten to grete · ant gret sorwe hadde[2]
Al for ys luyther lyf · that a lyued hadde,
Ant a-vowed faste—· 'for eny hung*ur* or furste
Schal nere fysch vp-on the fryday · defye*n* in my wombe
Ar abstinence myn aunte · haue yf me leue,
And yut hath he hated me · al my lyf-tyme.'

So much for the first part of the MS. But on comparing my printed C-text with the latter portion of it, I made the very satisfactory discovery that this MS., representing as it does a very pure text in spite of its rather late spellings, tended greatly to confirm the various emendations which I had made in the text after collation with other MSS. It was, as it were, an unexpected and satisfactory testimony to the correctness of my text, confirming many results of careful thought, and shewing me that I had been working upon right principles.

I give some examples of this from Passus xviii.; see pp. 309—320, especially noting the words enclosed within square brackets.

In l. 34 (p. 309), Z reads *&*. L. 38; Z. *he*. L. 50; Z. *holy-kyrke*. L. 55; Z. *ȝe*. L. 66; Z. *godes*. L. 70; Z. inserts *þat*. L. 80; Z. *þe*. L. 81; Z. inserts *þe*. L. 109; Z. *versyfye*. L. 112; Z. *a* (2nd time). L. 119; Z. *þow*. L. 127; Z. *A loue-knotte*. L. 133; Z. *diuerseþ*. L. 135; retained in Z. L. 143; Z. *þi*. L. 150; Z. *Where*. L. 169; Z. *soteled*. L. 177; Z. *knelede*. L. 188; Z. *prelates*; Z. *pope*. L. 198, quotation; Z. *nobis*. L. 211; Z. *þan*. L. 218; Z. *þe*. L. 220; Z. *kerke*.

Nearly all the alterations throughout pp. 309—320 are thus confirmed. Yet I do not hold the MS. to be always right, probably owing to its being a late and hurried copy. The satisfaction lies in its pointing to the former existence of better MSS. than any of those

[1] Another Norfolk allusion; insinuating, apparently, that the makers of the worsted fabrics at Worsted did not put in good wool and workmanship. It is too bad to suppose that the convenient proximity of the shrine at Walsingham caused them to be careless of their commercial integrity.

[2] Cf. B. 386—391; observe that lines 232—385 are omitted at one long jump

now extant. Valuable as it is as furnishing collateral evidence, it did not seem worth consulting much further, since it contributes no *new* results, but merely confirms the old ones. Besides, there are the usual clerical errors in it, such as *byden* for *byten* in l. 29, p. 308; and in l. 76, p. 311, it has *here prent ful ofte ys trewe* (much like the reading in F), which is obviously false in the alliteration, and caught from the line preceding. It also omits line 116, p. 314. One reading, in l. 49, p. 309, is especially noteworthy, viz. *cheld* for *child*, which, placed beside the *scheld* of MS. G, looks as if the spelling *cheld* was the original one; and may, at any rate, certify to us that the sense of the word is *chilled*, not *child*. The line clearly means—"And charity, that is chilled now, should grow warm (lit. chafe) of himself."

XXXII. A MS. now in the possession of the Earl of Ilchester; imperfect, but collated throughout, and denoted in the present volume by the letter I. This is a well-written, early, and important vellum MS., which no doubt once contained 126 leaves, of which several are now lost. The size of the page is about 9 inches by $6\frac{1}{2}$, and each page contains about 31 lines. Perhaps no MS. could be better devised for completely puzzling a critic unfamiliar with the poem. The text has been made up from two imperfect texts, an A-text and a C-text; some of the matter comes twice over; several leaves have been lost; the remaining ones have been numbered wrongly, and then bound up in the wrong order. Supposing the MS. *complete* and the leaves rightly numbered throughout, what has happened is this. Leaves 63, 81—88, 95, and 113—120 have been lost. Leaves 73—80 have been inserted after leaf 32; leaves 89—96 follow leaves 97—104; and the last six leaves have been placed in the order 122, 123, 121, 125, 124, 126. Leaf 126 was once blank, but bears a very distinct impression (reversed of course) of the concluding lines of the poem on leaf 125, back. The MS. has been somewhat spoilt, particularly at the end, by damp, and much injured by the rats, which have eaten away, in some places, nearly half the leaf, so that sometimes the last half, sometimes the first half of a line is entirely gone, and many lines are more or less imperfect. The hardest case is in xiii. 206,

where a line required to complete the sense occurs in this MS. only, and the rats have eaten the last half of it, so that so much of it has disappeared past recovery. The order of the leaves being thus accounted for, we may pass on to consider the order of the subject-matter. Leaf 1 contains about the first 60 lines of the Poem, probably of the A-type, but now quite illegible except the large initial *I*. Next follows a C-text piece (C. x. 75—254), which fills up leaves 2, 3, and a part of leaf 4. Leaf 4 (marked 3) contains, immediately after this, an A-text piece (A. prol. 55—76, 80—83); but on the back of the leaf the former C-text piece is continued, so that we thus get a second piece (C. x. 255—281) filling up the rest of leaf 4 and part of leaf 5. In like manner we find successively, next after this, the following passages, viz. A. prol. 84—95, C. i. 91—152, A. prol. 96—109; after which the C-text fairly begins to be consistent and consecutive, from C. ii. 1 to C. xii. 273. Next, leaf 63 is lost, so that the MS. fails from C. xii. 274 to xiii. 20; it then gives C. xiii. 21 to xvi. 295; fails from xvi. 296 to xviii. 58; gives C. xviii. 59 to xix. 101; fails from xix. 102 to xix. 162; gives C. xix. 163 to xxii. 78; fails from C. xxiii. 79 to xxiii. 81; and then gives the conclusion of the poem, of which very little is legible except a few words here and there sufficient to identify the text by. It thus appears that the passage which occurs twice over is C. x. 75—281, viz. once in its proper place, and once in the middle of the A-text prologue. Strange to say, this second copy of the passage, a few readings from which are given in the footnotes, and denoted by the *italic* letter *I*, varies considerably from the passage as it stands in the body of the text. Here, for instance, is a passage, which greatly varies from the text (C. x. 128—140) as it stands in all the other MSS.; see p. 165.

Alle maner menstrals · men wot wel. . . . . .
To vnderfonge hem faire · falles for þe . . . .
And al for loue of þe lorde · to whom þat þ . . . .
What þay . . . misdo · al is [in] merþe taken,
And soeffre . . for her lordes sake · al þat þay . . .
And ther-to golde men hem gyfe · wiþ a glad chere,
In worschip of þat worþy lorde · þat þay . . .
Right so ȝe riche do · and raþer, I rede,

Bringe in goddes bourdyo*ur*s · and at ȝour b . . .
His oghne mery menstrals · make þ hem . . . .
þe leedes þat ben lunatyk · and lepe*r*s aboute ; .
For with our saueours seal · her synnes . . . .
Ne bere þay no bagges · ne botels vnder . . .
þe which is lolleres lif · and lewed . . . . .

These lines do not read to me as spurious; it is just possible that they represent the poet's first cast of this curious passage, peculiar as it is to the C-text.

The succeeding lines are very imperfect; but the alternative reading in l. 144 (see footnote) is not a bad one; for whether we read

Reste hym, and roste hym · and his ryg turne,

or, Reste hym, and roste hym · by þe rede gledes,

we get a capital line either way, and one in Langland's best manner.

The following passage is also too good to be omitted; especially as it is a very remarkable one. It answers to C. x. 203—281; see p. 169.

Bot hermits þat howsen[1] now · by þe hie weye
Werkemen bifore were · webbeste*r*s and tay[lours],[2]
Clerkes connyngles of scole · and carters [knaues],
þat so*m*tyme were at mysese · of mete and [of drynke],
Laboured longe for lite good · and atte last aspied
How freres and o*þer* faytou*r*s · hadden fatte chekes ;
And þan þay left þair labo*ur* · þese lewed lither knaues,
Cloþed hem in Copes · right as þay clerkes were,
And þus agayn þe lăwe lyuen · if latyn be trewe ;
Non licet nobis legem voluntati, sed voluntatem coniungere legi.
Kyndely, by holy crist · ben suche cleped lollers
By heryng of oure eldres · of olde me*n*nes tech[ynge] ;
For he þat lolleþ is lame · his leg is out of [ioynte],
Or maymed on som me*m*bre · þat makþ hi*m* at [misese].
So þise lewed lollers · as lame me*n* þey walken ;
þey lollen al agayn þe leue[3] · and lawe of holy chirche.
For holy kirke comandeþ · al þe comun peple

[1] Surely William was ill-advised, if he altered *howsen* to *edefyen*; so too, two lines below, *connyngles of scole* is well said.

[2] The words or parts of words supplied between square brackets are conjectural.

[3] I. e. belief.

In obedience to be · and buxum to þe lawe;
þe reule of religioun · he redeþ it be holden.
On serkyn[1] wys þes seculers · it certefiez also,
Lewed men, by labour lyue · and lordez, go to hunt
In frith and in forest · boþe þe fox and oþer bestes,
þe wolues wilde þat wirye scheep · boþe wommen and children,
Saue þe sonday to cesse · þe seruice to heere,
First matyns and masse · and after noon also
Ententifely her euesong · euery man so aghte.
Þus it longeþ for lordes · to lered men and lewed
[Eche ho]ly-day to here · þe holy seruice,
And fast al þat our fader biddeþ · but in Infirmite,
Or but if preue penaunce · or pilgrimage it make.
Vnder þis obedience · ere we echone,
[And w]ho-so brekeþ it, be war · but if he repent
[Amende] him and mersy aske · and mekely him schryue
[I drede] me sore, if he dye · it bees ful dere boght
[And acoun]ted bifore crist · but conscience him excuse.
[Loke] now þise lollers · and lewed heremytes
[But] if þay breke obedience? · þay ben fer fro chirche!
[Wher] se we hem on sondays · þe seruice to here,
[Or meten] by þe morwen · to messe be bygonne?
Bot sekerly at euesong · se we right fewe,
Or labour for her lifelode · as þe lawe wolde.
[Ac at] mydday, at mete-tyme · I mete wiþ hem ofte,
[Comyng] wiþ her copes · right as þey clerkes were.
A bacheler, a beaupere · best him bysemes;
Bot for þe cloþ þat couereþ him · called he is a frere;
He wasscheþ and wypeþ · and wiþ þe ferste sitteþ.
But whil he wroght in þis world · and wan his mete in trouþe,
He satte at þe syd-bord · atte secound table;
Þer cam no wyn in his wombe · þorgh þe woke long,
Ne no blanket on his bed · ne whit bred biforn him.

The rest of the passage, to the end of l. 281, differs from the text but slightly, and most of the variations are given in the foot-notes. But for ll. 259 and 260 we find—

For many waker wolues · walken[2] in the feeldes,
And þe barkers arn blynde · þat bringe forþ þe lambes.

Line 268 runs thus—

þat schulde þe wilde wolf wiry · þat þe wolle fouleþ.

[1] *Serkyn* = sere kyn, i. e. divers kind. *On serkyn wys*, in various sorts of ways.

[2] This preserves the alliteration, which is deficient in the text.

And instead of ll. 275—278, we have but this single line—

[Thy] moebles, and more · may not quite þy dettes.

Returning to the consideration of the principal part of the text of this MS., it is necessary to say a few words as to its general character. It is, on the whole, *not quite the same text* as that given by MSS. P and E. Just as MS. R (see Pref. II. p. xii) differs from the true B-text in being of somewhat later date and thus embodying a few after-thoughts, so MS. I differs from the true C-text, but in the other direction; for it is clearly an *earlier* draught of the C-text, and does not contain quite so many alterations of the text as do most of the other MSS. Its readings, in consequence, sometimes *point back* to the B-text. Thus, in Pass. iii. 83, I alone reads *feffeþ* for *feffed*, and the B-text has *feffeth;* and in l. 99, I alone (like the B-text) prefixes *And* at the beginning. These are but slight matters, but such is, in general, the case nearly throughout. Sometimes, indeed, this MS. rightly preserves some reading where all the other MSS. are corrupt. Thus, in Pass. xviii. 94, even MS. Z, which is usually, as has been said, so correct, has the absurd reading *Wonderwyse;* I alone keeps the right reading *Wederwise*, found also in the B-text. From such an example as this, the value of the MS. may be better understood. My best thanks are due to the Earl of Ilchester for his great kindness in lending me the MS. for three months.

There is one peculiarity in this MS. which is of considerable importance, as it may give some help in tracing the author's history. The surname most commonly assigned to the author is Langland; but in MS. I, at the end of Passus x., we find the entry—"Explicit visio Will*elmi* .W. de Petro le Plowman. Et hic incipit visio eiusdem de Dowel." There can be no mistake about this, as I have since found the same entry in two other MSS., viz. in MS. Douce 104, fol. 39 *b*, and MS. Digby 102, fol. 35. All three of these MSS. belong, not only to the C-text, but to the same sub-class of C-text MSS.; see § 6. The signification of this mystic "W" is still to seek. Professor Morley suggests "Wychwood," in allusion to the note in the Dublin MS., printed in Pref. I. p. xxxv. My own guess is "Wigorniensis," from the connection between Great Malvern and

the see of Worcester. But I fear that both guesses are wide of the mark.

XXXII (B) = III. MS. T, in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge, marked R. 3. 14, already once described, in Pref. I. p. xviii. A few more words about this MS. are here required. It contains, as there explained, the whole of the A-text, except Passus xii., followed by a portion of a C-text, viz. C. xii. 297—xxiii. 386. My first intention was to collate this MS. from C. xii. 297 to the end of Passus xii. only, as intimated in the footnote to xii. 297, p. 213. But it turned out better than I had expected, and I therefore continued the collation with it down to the end of the Poem. Its chief value is that it is almost a duplicate of the MS. last described, and hence supplies, very frequently, the matter which is lacking in I owing to the very numerous lacunæ in that MS. Hence the combination IT is of frequent occurrence in the footnotes; and the letter T standing alone has frequently a similar significance, the reading of I not being given because it is wanting, and so cannot be *certainly* known.

XXXII (C) = V. MS. Harl. 6041, already described in Pref. I. p. xx. It has been explained that this MS. is little else than an inferior and later copy of T, and hardly worth consulting. It belongs, accordingly, to the same sub-class as the Ilchester MS. The C-text portion begins, as in T, at xii. 297.

XXXII (D) = X. MS. Digby 145, already described in Pref. I. p. xxiv. A late MS. (dated 1534), to which similar remarks apply. The C-text portion begins at xii. 297.

XXXII (E) = XXIII. MS. B, i. e. Bodley 814, already described in Pref. II. p. xxv, with further remarks in the Critical Notes to the B-text, p. 392, and in § 2 above. The C-text portion ends at C. iii. 128, and the B-text portion goes on without any break in the sense and at a right point of junction, at B. ii. 121. Though it approaches in character the Ilchester MS., and may be put in the same sub-class, it does not give much assistance. Thus, in the corrupt passage, C. i. 107—123, it does not greatly differ from the text, although in l. 110, it has

And chastised hem not þer-of · and nolde not rebuke hem,

where *chastised not* comes nearer to MS. I. As this MS. cannot be much depended on, very few readings have been cited from it.

XXXII (F) = XXIV. MS. Additional 10574, in the British Museum. Already described in Pref. II. p. xxvi; which see.

XXXII (G) = XXV. MS. Cotton Calig. A. xi. Already described in Pref. II. p. xxvii; which see.

XXXIII. MS. Cotton, Vespasian B. xvi., in the British Museum; the earliest[1] and best of the MSS. of the poem (in whatever shape) in the British Museum, written on vellum, before 1400; collated throughout, and denoted by the letter M. Each leaf measures about 10 inches by 7¼, and the MS. consists of 95 leaves. Each page contains about 40 lines. The copy of Piers the Plowman begins on leaf 6, and ends on leaf 95 *recto*. The metrical pause is denoted throughout by a large red dot. The poem is divided into paragraphs, which are denoted by paragraph-marks (¶) prefixed, coloured red and blue alternately, and every paragraph ends with a waved red line.[2] All the Latin quotations are written in red letters. On the first five leaves, and on the last page, are written various pieces, some of them imperfect, in a later hand, probably about A.D. 1416, or later, as that date is found on leaf 5. These pieces are printed in Mr Wright's edition of Political Songs; Camden Society, 1839. One of them, a Satirical Proclamation, will be found in Mr Furnivall's Political, Religious, and Love Poems (E. E. T. S., 1866), pp. 12 and 13. This is the piece which is dated A.D. 1416, but there are reasons for supposing this date a mere mistake for 1436; see the note in Mr Furnivall's volume. But all these pieces have clearly been written in afterwards, and the date of them does not affect the date of the copy of Piers the Plowman. As I was unable to give up my time to visiting the British Museum very frequently, my collation has been made by help of the transcript made for me, as I have already mentioned, by Mr Rossiter, Mr Brock, and Mr Wood. My thanks are also specially due to Miss L. Toulmin Smith, who

[1] Unless, as regards the date, preference be given to the curious MS. H (Harl. 875) of the A-type.

[2] I regret that the beginnings of the paragraphs are not marked in this text, but it was not easy to do so. Most MSS. omit the marks, and those that have them do not always agree.

compared the revises of this volume once more with the MS., in order to eliminate any small errors that might otherwise have arisen. Every reading of M that is of any consequence has been recorded in the footnotes.

The MS. is not so good, as regards the character of its readings, as might have been expected. My attempt to make it the basis of the text entirely broke down. In many places where it differs from MS. P, the variations are certainly for the worse, although it has always proved worth consulting, and is the only MS. which gives l. 116 of Pass. xviii., thus completing the otherwise imperfect sentence. In the course of my work, I discovered a fact which no one seems to have suspected, viz. that one leaf is missing, which ought to contain the passage C. xix. 245—xx. 30; and in another place, the subject-matter has been misplaced in a very puzzling manner: so that, on these accounts also, it is very fortunate that it was not taken as the basis of the text. After C. xviii. 186, M inserts xviii. 288; then comes xviii. 187; then xviii. 259—287; then xviii. 188—258; after which comes xviii. 289, and all the rest of the Passus. Nothing is lost by this arrangement, but it is not easy to follow or to explain, and it considerably injures the sense. The completeness of the collation with M renders it hardly necessary to say more; but it may be remarked that this MS. should not be put in the same sub-class with P, E, and Z, nor with I, T, and B, but in a third class, along with F and S. An account of the sub-classes will be found below, in sect. 6.

XXXIV. MS. in the Cambridge University Library, marked Ff. 5. 35, and denoted in this volume by F. This is a neatly written vellum MS., of the beginning of the fifteenth century, formerly containing 152 leaves, but now imperfect through the loss of two quires of eight leaves each. Each leaf measures about 9½ inches by 7, and each page contains about 37 lines. It contains a copy (*a*) of the Travels of Sir John Maundeville, commencing on fol. 1 *a*, and ending on fol. 49 *a*, and (*b*) of Piers the Plowman, commencing on fol. 49 *b*, and ending on fol. 152 *a*, about half way down the page, the rest of the page being blank. The missing leaves are foll. 81—88, and 105—112. The missing passages are C. viii. 265—

x. 181, and xiv. 94—xvi. 178. Notwithstanding its imperfect state, I was at one time under the impression that it might perhaps be made the basis of the text, and, in order to test this matter thoroughly, the whole of Passus ii. was set up in type from a transcript of the MS., and about fifteen copies printed, to enable me to collate this piece with all the other MSS. Then it came out that the readings of F are frequently peculiar to itself, and that its apparent smoothness of metre and diction must be due to the text having been touched up. This is a point which cannot very well be exemplified by special instances, as it is necessary to collate or observe the readings of a long passage, at least 400 or 500 lines, before the exact character of the MS. can be clearly apprehended; the reader will be content, perhaps, to accept the fact as the result of my experience, since I have collated it with the text throughout, and give every variation in the footnotes that is worth giving. Indeed, I believe that it has received more than its fair share of attention, since, on account of its peculiarities, the letter F appears oftener in the footnotes than any other, as may easily be perceived if a sufficiently long passage be examined. Where its readings are not peculiar, they most often agree with those of S, and frequently with those of M, so that the letters FS or MFS are often found in conjunction. It may be further observed here, once for all, that the plurals of substantives in F commonly end in *us*, a peculiarity I have not always noticed, though many instances of it will be found in the footnotes. For the feminine personal pronoun, nominative case, the forms used are *sche* and *scheo*, instead of the *hue* of MS. P. Except when supported by other MSS., its readings are, in general, to be regarded with suspicion.

XXXV. MS. in the library of Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, now marked No. 293, formerly R. 17; imperfect, but collated as far as it goes, and denoted in this volume by S. There are three passages wanting, of which one has been lost through the loss of a leaf, but the others seem to have been missed by the scribe in making his transcript. It now contains 64 vellum leaves, each measuring 10 inches by $6\frac{1}{2}$. It is not quite clear whether it is all in one handwriting, as the size of the writing is variable, and the

number of lines on a page varies from about 33 to about 44. It probably originally consisted of 74 leaves, 10 of which have disappeared. One of these, the last of the third quire of eight leaves, must have been cut out purposely at first, as there is no gap in the poem there. Another, the first of the eighth quire, is also gone, and with it the passage C. xvi. 80—156. Besides this, there is a gap from C. ix. 268—xi. 94,[1] which may always have been missing, and another involving the loss of the whole of Passus xvii. to xxi., which seems to have been accidental, since the colophon (in S) to Passus xvi. is 'Explicit passus sextus'; and the title to Passus xxii. is 'Incipit passus septimus de dowel', as if that Passus were really the next in order. Later still, comes a gap of 316 lines (C. xxii. 8—323), which is probably due to the loss of a quire of eight leaves. The lost passages are therefore ix. 268—xi. 94, xvi. 80—156, xvii. 1—xxi. 479, and xxii. 8—323. But what there is of the text is good; the writing is probably not much later than 1400, or may be earlier, and the readings do not vary much from the text. The Latin quotations are all in red, and the initial letter of every line has a red dab upon it. The metrical pause, on the other hand, is never marked. On a flyleaf, in a later hand, is written 'God spede the plowgh And sende vs corne ynowgh', as in MS. T; see Pref. I. p. xviii. Where the gaps in it occur, I have collated MS. G (the next described) instead of it, on account of the close similarity between these MSS. Its text abounds with plurals of substantives in *-us;* other common forms are *buþ* for *beþ*, *ous* for *us;* besides its shewing a fondness for the letter *u* in terminations, as in *grayþust* for *grayþest*, *brynguþ* for *bryngeþ*, and the like. When it differs from the text, it commonly agrees with G, M, or F.

XXXVI. MS. in the Cambridge University Library, marked Dd. 3. 13; sometimes collated, especially where S fails, and denoted by the letter G.

This MS. is also imperfect, and is written in a somewhat irregular

[1] The footnote to ix. 268 (p. 153) says—Here S has lost eight leaves. I do not now feel quite so sure about this; the missing piece, about 533 lines, would hardly fill a quire, except at the low rate of 27 lines to the page, and the catchword immediately below C. ix. 267 is "Lordus þat lyueþ," as if nothing were the matter.

hand, though probably of early date, not far from the year 1400. It is of vellum, and once contained at least 100 leaves, of which some are now lost, viz. two at the beginning, at least five at the end, and two others elsewhere. The missing passages are i. 1—153, xiv. 227—xv. 40, xvi. 288—xvii. 41, and xxiii. 40—386. But, besides this, the scribe had a wonderful faculty for missing lines; he has frequently slipped a line, or two or three lines at a time, as if he only strove to reach the end of his task in the quickest way. Thus, turning to Passus xvii., we see that he omits ll. 56, 57, 69—71, 75, 79, 89, 90, 125, 130, 134, 143, 171, 172, 176, 187, 190, 208, 216—218, 227, 237—240, 245, 246, 249, 250, 257, 262, 266, 281—283, 301—312, 325, 326, 351, 365, 366; as is easily verified by looking at the footnotes. Of course these frequent omissions make sad havoc of the sense. This is the more extraordinary, because, at the time of writing, the copy was revised by a corrector, who has frequently written 'cor.' at the bottom of the page. Yet the text, as far as it goes, is a good one, and differs from the text but slightly. It also bears a close likeness to S, and has therefore been collated in passages where S fails. In other passages, it has been collated *occasionally* only, and chiefly where there has been some slight doubt about the best reading. In this way it has proved of considerable service, and quite as much use has been made of it as seemed to be advisable.

The poem is divided into paragraphs, but not, as it would seem, with much correctness. The dialectal forms are much the same as those in P and S, and the spellings of words often agree with the spellings of P in a somewhat remarkable manner. In some instances, its readings tend to agreement with I. The collation of the text with G must not be taken to be *complete*, even where S fails; as I have frequently omitted to record readings from it that seemed of no particular value.

XXXVII. MS. Digby 171, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. Imperfect, and only partly collated; denoted always by the letter K. This is an excellent MS. as far as it goes; it now consists of 60 vellum leaves, and is well and clearly written in a bold large hand on quires of eight leaves each, when complete. The metrical

pause is denoted by a mark like a colon (:), and there are marks shewing where each paragraph commences. Each page measures about 10½ inches by 7¼, and contains about 34 lines. At least eight leaves have been lost at the beginning, and in place of them four paper leaves have been inserted, of which the two last are blank. On the first is written—"Bowght this book *anno* 1578, of harvy in gras street, the 14 october," followed by a price, erased; also, in a large hand—"precium xvj d." On the second paper leaf, in the handwriting of Stephen Batman, once a member of Trinity College, Cambridge, to whom the book doubtless once belonged, is written: —"This Booke is clepped: Sayewell, Doowell. Doo better. & Doo Best / Souche a booke az diserueth the Reeding. Bookes of Antiquiti are wel be-stowed one those whose sober staied mindes can abyde the reding; but commonly ffrantike braines suche az are more readye to be pratlers than parformers, seing this book to be olde, Rather take it for papisticall then else. & so many bookes com to confusion. S. B. Minister." Beneath this is a carefully executed drawing of a man sowing seed broadcast in a field; at the side of which is written—"Esaye 53; vers. 10"—probably with reference to the clause—"the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in his hand." The extant portion of the Poem begins—

Drede stod atte dore : and þat deone herde; C. iii. 217;

and ends—

For a doctor at þe heie deys : drank wyn faste; xvi. 65.

It is remarkable that the scribe ended his work here; no more was ever written, as the next page is left blank. "S. B." attempted to finish off the work, as it were, by an epigrammatic remark, the first line of which is meant to rime with "faste." It runs thus:—

I wolde this vers were not ye lastē;
Although this worke be harde to finde,
Yet it is good for a christian minde.

The owner evidently read the book carefully, and duly appreciated it. My collation with this MS. begins with Passus xii., from which point onwards all the readings worth noting are given as long as the

MS. holds out. I did not at first perceive the full value of it, or I would have collated it sooner; the general character of its readings may be considered to resemble that of the Ilchester MS. I have nevertheless read over the former part of the poem with K, and now supplement my work by here noting down the few readings which are most worthy of record.

Pass. iv. 106. K clemyng. 224. K knowe þ, *as in text.* 376. K *omits.* 416. K reuth. 424. K *retains.*

Pass. vi. 159. K *has*—Lederes of lawedaies · and londes purchased.

Pass. vii. 204, 205. K *retains.* 408. *thrumbled*] throbeled K.

Pass. viii. 251. K *has*—A ful lel lady · vnleke hit of grace. 278—280. K *retains what* P *omits.* 301. K synegen.

Pass. ix. 98, 99. K *retains.* 103. K He is holdyng. 351. K vm.

Pass. x. 187. K *has*—And alle holy heremytes · hauen schulle þe same. (So that, though this line is said in the footnote to be found in I only, it is really in K also.) 194. K bolleres. 195. K *has*—Of lygnage ne of lettrure, &c.

Pass. xi. 166. K *retains.*

It will be seen that these readings confirm or help out my results in almost every instance. Indeed, I may say that further collation with this MS. will, I believe, be found merely to confirm my results, and not to give new information. It possesses, on this account, more interest for myself than for the reader.

XXXVIII. MS. Douce 104, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. Apparently perfect; a MS. on vellum, written A.D. 1427. It contains 112 leaves, each measuring about 8½ inches by 6. Each page contains about 34 or 35 lines. At the end, on fol. 112 *b*, is scrawled—Explicit liber de Petro ploughman. Anno r. henrici sexti sexto; et fin*itum* (?) ante *festum* (?) Michael*is*, Incept*um* t*amen* assum :—scarcely legible. Below this is written, in a later hand, a few lines about "Tutiuillus," printed in Reliquiæ Antiquæ; i. 257. The chief peculiarity of this MS., which is wholly of the C-type, is that it abounds with very rudely drawn coloured pictures, some hardly finished, inserted in the margin wherever room could be found for

them. A few of them are curious, and all seem to have been directly suggested by a perusal of the passage opposite to which they occur. Thus, there are pictures of Lady Meed, on foll. 8, 10, 11, and 11 *b*; of Tom Stowe with his two staves (C. vi. 131), on fol. 23; of Pride, fol. 24; Envy, fol. 25; Wrath, fol. 26; Lechery, fol. 26 *b*; Avarice, fol. 27; Gluttony, fol. 29; Sloth, fol. 31; a Palmer, fol. 33; the Castle of Truth (C. viii. 232, &c.), fol. 34; and so on. The later ones are very poor; a few only are at all characteristic, and even these are but sketched in outline. In many places the leaves are considerably discoloured. As I have not collated this MS., I cannot give its peculiarities with certainty; but it is obviously an inferior MS. of the same sub-class with I and T. Thus, in Pass. ii. the following readings of this MS. will be found duly entered in the footnotes, marked I; or else closely resembling the readings so marked. 122. Euen þe. 134. toure. 147. to abate. 150. hit fyrst. 161. And in. 162. For of. 164. Lokeþ on vs. 177. chideþ neþer. 186. lewed þyng. 190. And *omitted*. 191. Thei *omitted*. 192. crep oute. 195. And a; as for. 199. carful. 202. saide ere. All these readings are more or less peculiar, and leave little doubt as to the general character of the MS.

XXXIX. MS. Digby 102, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. This is a copy of the C-text, on vellum, of perhaps about the middle of the fifteenth century, measuring about 9 inches by 6¼, and forming rather a thick volume; it contains many other pieces besides Piers the Plowman, which comes at the beginning, and ends on fol. 98. The striking peculiarity of this MS. is that our poem is written all across the page, like prose, obviously with the view of economising space. But each line is well marked out, as the metrical mark, somewhat like an inverted semicolon (⁝), comes in the middle of every line, and a down stroke (/) at the end of each; with several paragraph-marks, alternately red and blue, in fitting places. Unfortunately several leaves have been lost at the beginning, so that it commences near the end of l. 156 of Pass. iii., thus:—"of notaries / To fette Fauel forth⁝ floreynes y-nowe / And bad Gyle to gyue⁝ gold al aboute /" &c. The readings of this MS. have a striking resemblance to those of MS. I (Ilchester MS). Thus it

agrees with I in Pass. iv. 140—142 (see footnote). So also in iv. 389, it has—

Such imp*ar*fit peple · rep*r*eueth al reson.

And again, in iv. 331, it has the curious reading *Si ne is lhe glose.*[1] We may safely put it in the same sub-class with I and T.

XL. MS. Harl. 2376, in the British Museum. A MS. of thin vellum, containing 124 leaves, apparently perfect; size of leaf, about 8½ inches by 5½; contains about 31 lines in a page. Written about A.D. 1440 or earlier, in clear, good writing. Red lines are drawn round all the Latin quotations, and round proper names, &c. In some places it looks a little greasy, as if it had been well thumbed. On the top of the first leaf is a date—'13 August 1724.' The title is—'Here by-gynneþ þe boke of Pyris Plowman.' The poem ends on fol. 124*a*, the rest being blank. It is a most disappointing MS., as it looks so promising, and is yet so unsatisfactory. I had intended to collate it, denoting it by the letter N; but so many readings seemed to be corrupt that it proved to be no sure guide, and is, indeed, best neglected. Mr Furnivall collated the whole of Passus ii. with a printed copy from MS. F, and I here give a few corrupt readings by way of example.

Pass. ii. 12. toppe (*for* toft). 17. made he (*for* he het). 25. tyme (*for* lyue). 29. dronkkehede (*for* glotenie). 43. byfanges (*for* by-longeþ). 78. teche (*for* kenne). 85. grefe (*for* ylle). 88. teche (*for* kennen). 101. take (*for* lacche). 116. spare (*for* lacke). 178. trewly (*for* leelliche). 200. rest (*for* lysse). It is, in fact, clear that the scribe has, as it were, *glossed* his words, by substituting easy ones in the place of hard ones, regardless of alliteration. Nor has he always done this correctly; for, in l. 116 for example, the word *lacke* means *to blame*, not *to spare*. He was clearly thinking of the other *lacke*, which answers to our modern *lack*, and even then his would be a poor rendering. The reader who takes the trouble

[1] As the line stands in the text, it means that 'God gives nothing without a clause of revocation on account of *sin*'; the other reading means 'God gives nothing without an *if* (in Latin, a *si*).' This is so much simpler that it may probably be right. In any case, the MSS. of the same sub-class as the Ilchester MS. show an earlier draught of the C-text, as has been already observed; and in this particular case, the readings of MSS. of any other sub-class may be corrupt.

to look up the above references will easily satisfy himself that the MS. is utterly worthless as regards its readings; since it fails in the case of all the harder words, just where help is most wanted. On account of these alterations, it is the more difficult to tell to what sub-class it belongs; but it probably was copied from a MS. closely agreeing with P. Thus, in ii. 4, it has *þat castel*, as P has; and therefore varies from I and F. In l. 5, it has the interesting variation *william*, for *wille;* where I has *sone*. In l. 4, it also has *by name*, as in P only. These and similar instances tend to shew its exact origin.

XLI. MS. marked D. 4. 1, in the library of Trinity College, Dublin. On vellum, written in the fifteenth century, not very early. This MS. I have never seen, but it is of the C-type, and I am indebted to Professor Dowden, of Dublin, for a careful collation of Passus ii. with a printed copy of the Passus as it stands in F. This analysis of the text shews that it probably belongs to the same sub-class as P, and therefore differs but little from my printed text. Any small variations from the text are chiefly such as are found in S and G, particularly, perhaps, the latter. There are several glosses written above the harder words, in a later hand; but they are of no importance, since they are as often wrong as right. Thus, over *nempnen* in ii. 21 is written *take;* but it means *to name;* the glossator was thinking of *nimen*. In ii. 29, the reading *cheorles* (i. e. churls) occurs; against this is the note '*chereles, without chere.*' This shews that some one has long since read over this copy of the poem, and attempted to make out the sense of it, but with indifferent success. Taken as a whole, the MS. is not a very good one, though it belongs to a good type or sub-class.

XLII. MS. marked 18 B xvii, in the Royal Library in the British Museum. A vellum MS., containing 123 leaves, the last of which is blank. Each leaf measures about 11½ by 8½ inches, and each page contains about 38 lines on a page. Written not long after 1500. This is a very interesting MS., as it also contains a copy of Pierce the Ploughman's Crede; and I have shewn, in the Preface to my edition of that poem, that there is no reason for putting this copy later than the printed copy of 1550, as Mr Wright

has done; neither is it, as he says, on paper, but on vellum. In fact, it contains, as I shewed further, five additional lines which were *afterwards suppressed* in the printed copy, because they were not acceptable to the readers of the day.[1] The Crede is contained on leaves 1—13; and is followed by Piers the Plowman, which ends on leaf 122. The Latin quotations are written in larger characters than the rest. It is wholly of the C-type, and the text, though late, is not a bad one. The thorn-letter (þ) does not occur, *th* being written instead; nor does the symbol ȝ occur either. I am indebted to Miss L. Toulmin Smith for a careful collation of Passus ii. with a printed copy of that Passus as it stands in MS. F. This shews that its readings hardly differ from those of MS. P, i. e. from the printed text, though the spellings of the words are of later form. In ii. 123, for example, it has *meuen*, as in the text. When it varies from P, it tends to agreement with S. On the whole, it tells us nothing new, but helps generally to confirm the text. The scribe, unlike the scribe of MS. N (Harl. 2376), seems to have understood his work; so that in ii. 18, for example, whilst discarding *bylyue* as obsolete, he substitutes *lyflode* for it, and so at any rate contrives to preserve the sense of it.

XLIII. MS. No. 9056, in the collection of the late Sir Thos. Phillipps. A thin MS. on vellum, about the same size as MS. P, a good deal spoiled and out of condition; many leaves much injured by damp. It contains 91 leaves, and is neatly bound in russia. It has several notes here and there in later writing, and in several places the old writing has been inked over, not always correctly. It is clearly wholly of the C-type, but not much can be made of it, and I have therefore set it aside. The last page is scarcely legible, and a note states (correctly) that the last 42 lines are wanting. I doubt if it was ever a very good copy.

It is perhaps worth while to notice here that the three MSS. formerly in the possession of Richard Heber all passed into the

[1] The only other MS. of the Crede is the MS. marked R. 3. 15 in the library of Trinity College, Cambridge, which furnishes an excellent text, and is the one upon which my edition of the Crede was based. Various readings are given throughout from MS. Bibl. Reg. 18. B. xvii, and are denoted by the letter B.

hands of Sir Thos. Phillipps, and are still all together. Thus the Heber MS. No. 973,[1] formerly in the possession of Sir R. Smyth, is now MS. Phillipps No. 8231, and described at p. 125 of Sir Thos. Phillipps's Catalogue; this is our MS. P, or MS. XXIX. Secondly, the Heber MS. 974, formerly in the collection of Martin, of Palgrave, appears as No. 1003 in Thorpe's Catalogue of MSS. for 1836, and was sold to Sir Thos. Phillipps Feb. 16, 1836; it is now MS. Phillipps 9056, the one just described above. Thirdly, the Heber MS. 1088 is now MS. Phillipps 8252, and is our MS. XXVIII. These MSS. are further interesting from their having been in the hands of Dr Whitaker.

XLIV. A MS. in the possession of the Marquis of Westminster. Reference was made to this in an article in "The Academy," abstracted from the Report of the Historical MSS. Commission, where it was further stated that the MS. differs considerably from the texts as yet published by the Early English Text Society. This perhaps means that it is of the C-type. The news of the existence of this MS. has come too late to be of any service to me; and if it is, as has been stated, of the fifteenth century, it is probably of later date than most of those which I have collated.[2]

Lastly, it may be observed that numerous extracts from a B-text copy of Piers the Plowman may be found at p. 149, and the following pages, of MS. James 2, in the Bodleian Library, Oxford. They are rather curious than valuable.

§ 6. COMPARISON OF THE MSS., AND THEIR SUB-CLASSES.

In order to exhibit the relation of the MSS. to each other, and by way of recapitulation of the above descriptions, I here add a sketch of the sub-classes into which they are divisible. As in the case of the B-text, the agreement between MSS. in the same sub-class is often very close.

(*a*) 1. Phillipps 8231 (P). Here printed.

2. Laud 656 (E). Almost a duplicate of P.

[1] See Heber's Catalogue of MSS. part xi. p. 101.

[2] On application to the Marquis of Westminster, I am courteously informed that his MSS. are at present inaccessible, being packed away whilst considerable alterations are being made in the house.

3. Bodley 851 (Z). Even more correct in its readings than P, but of later date, and imperfect at the beginning.
4. Corpus Christi College, Cambridge; No. 293 (S). Imperfect, but an early copy.
5. Camb. Univ. Lib. Dd. 3. 13 (G). Imperfect.
6. Trin. Coll. Dublin, D. 4. 1.
7. Bibl. Reg. 18 B. xvii., Brit. Mus. Late, but not a bad text.

(*b*) 1. Ilchester MS. (I). Imperfect.
2. Digby 102. Imperfect.
3. Douce 104. With pictures.
4. Trin. Coll. Camb. R. 3. 14 (T). Last part only
5. Harl. 6041 (H_2). Last part only.
6. Digby 145 (?). Last part only.
7. Bodley 814 (B). Only near the beginning.
8. Addit. 10574. Only near the beginning.
9. Cotton, Calig. A. xi. Only near the beginning.

(*c*) Digby 171 (K). Imperfect. A very fair text, intermediate to that of sub-class (*a*) and sub-class (*b*).

(*d*) Cotton, Vesp. B. xvi. (M). Nearly perfect; much nearer to sub-class (*a*) than to sub-class (*b*).

(*e*) Camb. Univ. Lib. Ff. 5. 35 (F). Imperfect; varies more widely from sub-classes (*a*) and (*b*) than any other MS.

Not classed are (1) Harl. 2376 (N); (2) MS. Phillipps 9056; (3) the Marquis of Westminster's MS.

It must be observed that the MSS. of sub-class (*b*) represent a slightly *earlier* cast of the poem than those of sub-class (*a*); as has been already explained. But the texts of MSS. M and F are *later*.

§ 7. DESCRIPTION OF THE PRINTED EDITION (C-TEXT).

The only edition of Piers the Plowman which exhibits the C-text is Dr Whitaker's. The Title-page of the volume is as follows:—

"Visio Willi de Petro Ploughman, Item Visiones ejusdem de Dowel, Dobet, et Dobest. Or The Vision of William concerning Piers Ploughman, and The Visions of the same concerning the Origin, Progress, and Perfection of the Christian Life. Ascribed to Robert Langland, a Secular Priest of the county of Salop; and written in, or imme-

diately after, the year MCCCLXII. Printed from a MS. contemporary with the author, collated with two others of great antiquity, and exhibiting the original text; together with an introductory discourse, a perpetual commentary, annotations, and a glossary. By Thomas Dunham Whitaker, LL.D. F.S.A., Vicar of Whalley, and Rector of Heysham, in Lancashire. [Motto] Vatis hic noster in seculo suo doctissimus, et acerrimus morum vindex, clericis, quos in omnibus satyris, ipso summo pontifice non intacto perstringit; clericis inquam utriusque nominis, quid propter peccata eorum, hypocrisin, avaritiam, luxum, terrenorum cupidinem, defectum charitatis, beneficiorum et redituum abusum, desidiam et turpem gregum neglectum in postero tempore eventurum erat, prædixit. HICKES.[1]—London: printed for John Murray, Albemarle Street. MDCCCXIII."[2]

The Dedication runs thus:—"To Richard Heber, Esq. of Hodnet, in the County of Salop, this edition of the first English Satirist, his old and spirited countryman, is inscribed," &c., &c. The Contents of the book are:—Introductory Discourse, pp. i—xlviii; Errata, p. xlix; additional Note, p. li; Text, in black letter, with Paraphrase below it, pp. 1—412 (pp. 265 and 266 being unrepresented, owing to a mistake in the pagination; since sheet Ll ends with p. 264, and sheet Mm begins with p. 267); Notes, pp. 1—18; Glossary, pp. 21—31. Printer's name, John Harding, St John's Square, London.

It will be necessary to say a few words more upon the various parts of the book.[3]

[1] Hickesii Thesaurus, i. 107.

[2] Together with the particular copy of the work in my possession there came into my hands several additional particulars, including prospectus, printer's bills, &c. It thus appears that it was published by subscription, the number of subscribers (whose names are given) being two hundred, at five guineas apiece; increased to seven guineas for such copies as came into public sale. It was got up in so expensive a manner that the mere cost of printing, exclusive of woodcuts and binding, was £401 6*s.* 7*d.* It is of quarto size, and printed on very stout paper.

[3] The following mendacious and spiteful note upon Whitaker's edition appears (as a quotation) in Lowndes, and has been reprinted in booksellers' catalogues over and over again, and will probably often be reprinted in the future whenever a copy of Crowley's edition occurs for sale. "The value of the old editions is not at all lessened by the reprint of Dr. Whittaker (*sic*), as he carefully suppressed all the passages relating to the indecent lives and practices of the Romish clergy." The fact is that Dr Whitaker suppressed nothing but a very few coarse lines which have no special reference to the 'Romish clergy.' Neither is the implied charge against

Title-page. This contains several errors. There is little reason for calling the author Robert, since he so often calls himself William. Again, the text written in or soon after A.D. 1362 was the A-text; the C-text must be some thirty years later. Consequently, Whitaker's edition does not exhibit "the original text," but the text as it stood after two recensions. Neither is Whitaker's text really "collated" with two other MSS.; the readings cited in the Notes from his 'MS. B' are not more than fifty, and those from 'MS. C' not more than twenty.

Introductory Discourse. The general contents of this may be thus summarised. State of England in the reign of Edward III., pp. i, ii; Chaucer and Langland, pp. iii—v; Dialect of Langland is 'Mercno-Saxon', pp. vi, vii; Alliterative poetry, pp. viii—x; Runic prosody, pp. xi, xii; Cædmon's metre, pp. xiii, xiv; Runic rhyme, p. xv; Ormulum and 'Moral Ode', p. xvi; 'Pistill of Susan', p. xvii; Langland not a Wickliffite, p. xviii; Date of Piers the Plowman, p. xix; Brief abstract of the Poem, pp. xx—xxx; MSS. of the Poem, pp. xxxi—xxxiii; Parallel Extracts from MS. A [Phillipps 8231],[1] MS. B [Phillipps 8252],[2] MS. C [Oriel MS.],[3] and Crowley's print of 1550, the passage chosen being the description of Wrath [C. vii. 103—128], pp. xxxiv, xxxv; Langland's powers as a satirist, pp. xxxvi—xxxix; Extreme obscurity of Langland's diction, p. xl; Concluding Remarks, p. xli; Testimonies of Authors concerning Langland, pp. xlii—xlviii; Errata, p. xlix; Note on the Ormulum and Jack Upland, p. li.

Of this discourse, there is not much that is still of value; the remarks on the Dialect have been superseded by the labours of Dr Morris and others; those on Alliterative Poetry by Dr Guest's History of English Rhythms, Mr Sweet's Sketch of the History of Anglo-Saxon Poetry, prefixed to Hazlitt's edition of Warton's English

Langland a fair one; he certainly would have had no sympathy with prurient hunters up of filth.

[1] The correct version of this extract will be found in the text of this volume; Pass. vii. 103—128.

[2] The extract shews that this MS. is a mere jumble of texts, and almost without any value; it is not worth reprinting.

[3] Correctly printed in Pref. II., p. xviii; which see.

Poetry, my own Essay prefixed to vol. iii. of the edition of the Percy Folio MS. by Hales and Furnivall, &c.; whilst a great deal more than was known to Whitaker can be learnt from the since-published editions of the Ormulum, the Moral Ode, the Pistill of Susan, and the like. The *date* of the Poem he put down as 1362, though that is really the date of the A-text only; and, in considering his own text as of earlier date than Crowley's, he is now easily seen to have been wrong. His remarks on the extreme obscurity of Langland's diction are of a piece with his own evident difficulty in understanding it, and were caused, in a great measure, by his misreadings of the MS. The passages that are *really* obscure are singularly few. His concluding remarks contain the following interesting passage:—

"He [the editor] wishes to conciliate no favour to the work, by lamenting that it was undertaken in the languor of bad health, or that it was only prosecuted in the intervals of leisure which an active and occupied life allowed: both the facts, indeed, are true; but these, if likely to have injured the work in any material degree, were reasons why it ought not to have been begun; if otherwise, they will not contribute to lessen its actual defects. In short, he is ready to confess that, for the space of two years, it has received from him attention sufficient to have rescued it from very gross imperfections, and consequently, that its faults of this degree, whether more or fewer in number, are to be ascribed to a cause more humiliating than the indolence or carelessness of the editor."

The marks of an evident anxiety to represent the MS. with extreme exactness are indeed most apparent on every page; how then are we to account for the frequent amazing variations from the true text of the old scribe? Only, I believe, by the old observation that the eye only sees that which it has been *trained* to see. It is clear that, as a scholar, he frequently misunderstood his author; and that, as a transcriber, he often failed in deciphering the not very difficult characters in which the MS. is written. The two causes together are quite sufficient to account for such mistakes as, despite all his care, are certainly to be found in his edition.

The most interesting and by far the best remarks in Whitaker's

Introduction are those which relate to Langland himself and to the general character of his poem. Whether we entirely agree with him or not, these passages are certainly worthy of perusal, and I therefore reprint them here without further apology.

"During the reign of Edward the Third, one of the most splendid, but not the most refined in our annals, yet equally removed from both these extremes, arose in this country two poets, the writings of one of whom contributed to enlarge the minds, and of the other to improve the moral feelings of their contemporaries in a degree unfelt since the æras of the great Roman satirists. The first of these, a man of the world and a courtier, at once informed and delighted the higher orders by his original and lively portraits of human nature in every rank, and almost under every modification, while he prevented or perverted the proper effect of satire by the most licentious and obscene exhibitions. The latter, an obscure country priest, much addicted to solitary contemplation, but at the same time a keen and severe observer of human nature; well read in the scriptures and schoolmen, and intimately acquainted with the old language and poetry of his country, in an uncouth dialect and rugged metre, by his sarcastic and ironical vein of wit, his knowledge of low life, his solemnity on some occasions, his gaiety on others, his striking personifications, dark allusions, and rapid transitions, has contrived[1] to support and animate an allegory (the most insipid for the most part and tedious of all vehicles of instruction) through a bulky volume. By what inducement he was led to prefer this vehicle, it is not difficult to conjecture. From his subordinate station in the church, this free reprover of the higher ranks was exposed to all the severities of ecclesiastical discipline: and from the aristocratical temper of the times he was liable to be crushed by the civil power. Everything, therefore, of a personal nature was in common prudence to be avoided. The great were not then accustomed, as a licentious press has since disciplined them, to endure the freedoms of reprehension:—authority was, even when abused, sacred; and rank, when united with vice, was enabled to keep its partner in countenance. Above all, the great ecclesiastics were as vindictive as they

[1] Printed 'continued'; but surely a misprint.

were corrupt: and hence the satirist was compelled to shelter himself under the distant generalities of personification.

"But, unfortunately, by this means, whatever he gained in personal security, he lost in the point and distinctness of his satire. Mere personifications of virtues and vices, however skilfully and powerfully touched, are capable of few strokes: the quality is simple, but different individuals, who partake of it in a degree however pre-eminent, combine and modify it in such an infinite variety of ways, with other subordinate traits and features of character, that while the abstract property is one and the same, in its actual existence, as part of the moral nature of man, it is capable in skilful hands of infinite diversities of representation. It is indeed far from being necessary that the characters be real, but, for the purposes of satirical painting, they must be *persons*.

"From this uniformity of appearance in his abstract qualities the author has been betrayed, by the necessity of combination in some way or other, into the fault of mixing his personifications with each other; as, *ex. gr.* avarice and fraud, qualities which, though nearly akin, have no necessary co-existence;[1] and, for the same reason, wherever he deviates into personality, as in the coarse but striking scene of 'Glutton's' Debauch, where the characters, though imaginary, are persons, not personifications, he paints with all the truth and distinctness of a Dutch master. . . . . .

"Wherever born or bred, and by whatever name distinguished, the author of these Visions was an observer and a reflector of no common powers. I can conceive him (like his own visionary William[2]) to have been sometimes occupied in contemplative wanderings on the Malvern Hills, and dozing away a summer's noon among the bushes, while his waking thoughts were distorted into all

[1] I believe this expresses a misapprehension. I suppose that the idea of connecting avarice and fraud is none of Langland's, but that he was merely following the conventional description of Avarice considered as one of the seven deadly sins. We find the same thing in Chaucer's Persones Tale:—"of avarice cometh eek lesynges, *thefte*, and fals witnesse and *fals othes* . . . . The synne of thefte is . . . . . in borwyng of thin neighebores catelle in entent never to pay, and in semblable thinges."

[2] His 'William' is not 'visionary' at all; it is simply and solely *his own name*.

the misshapen forms created by a dreaming fancy. Sometimes I can descry him taking his staff, and roaming far and wide in search of manners and characters; mingling with men of every accessible rank, and storing his memory with hints for future use. I next pursue him to his study, sedate and thoughtful, yet wildly inventive, digesting the first rude drafts of his Visions, and in successive transcriptions, as judgment matured, or invention declined, or as his observations were more extended, expanding or contracting, improving and sometimes perhaps debasing his original text.[1] The time of our author's death, and the place of his interment, are equally unknown, with almost every circumstance relating to him. His contemporaries, Chaucer and Gower, repose beneath magnificent tombs, but Langland (if such were really his name) has no other monument than that which, having framed for himself, he left to posterity to appropriate. . . . . .

"The Reformers of the sixteenth century claimed as their own the Author of these Visions; but surely on no good grounds. That he believed and taught almost all the fundamental doctrines of Christianity has no tendency to prove him a Wickliffite or Lollard. The best and soundest members of the church of Rome have done the same. It is not defects but redundancies which we impute to them. Of the predestinarian principles afterwards professed by Wickliff, Langland seems to think with disapprobation; and when his visionary hero speaks of himself as belonging to the Lolleres, he evidently means, not the religious party distinguished by a similar name, but, in the usual strain of his irony, a company of idle wanderers.[2] Yet in the midst of darkness and spiritual slavery, his acute and penetrating understanding enabled him to discover the multiplied superstitions of the public service, the licentious abuse of

[1] In spite of the fact that Dr Whitaker did not perceive *which* was the oldest text, he yet here expresses the true state of the case with great clearness. Even the charge of 'debasing' the text may be sustained; there certainly seem to be several passages in which the C-text, by being altered, has been weakened. But other passages have been much improved.

[2] But it may also be said, that he tries to shew that the term *loller* might be applied with more fitness to others than the followers of Wyclif. Though not quite a Wycliffite, his sympathies were mostly with that party.

pilgrimages, the immoral tendencies of indulgences, the bad effects upon the living of expiatory services for the dead, the inordinate wealth of the papacy, and the usurpations of the mendicant orders, both on the rights of the diocesans and of the parochial clergy. These abuses Langland, with many other good men who could endure to remain in the communion of the church of Rome, saw and deplored; but though he finally conducted his pilgrim out of the particular communion of Rome into the universal church, he permitted him to carry along with him too many remnants of his old faith, such as satisfaction for sin to be made by the sinner, together with the merit of works, and especially of voluntary poverty; but, above all, the worship of the cross; incumbrances with which the Lollards of his own, or the Protestants of a later age, would not willingly have received him as a proselyte.

"Neither was he an enemy to monastic institutions themselves: on the contrary, he appears to have sighed for the quiet and contemplative life of the cloister, could it have been restored to its primitive purity and order.

"On the nature and origin of civil society, as on most other subjects, he thought for himself; and, at a period when mankind had scarcely begun to speculate on such subjects at all, he boldly traced the source of kingly power to the will of the people, and considered government as instituted for the benefit of the governed. Indeed a strong democratic tendency may be discovered in many passages of his work. . . . . .

"Crowley's editions of the Visions are printed from a MS. of late date[1] and little authority, in which the division of the passus is extremely confused, and the whole distribution of the work perplexed.[2] Still, it must be confessed, that, with the advantage of better MSS.,[3] the investigation of the general plan of these Visions

[1] "He describes it as bearing date A.D. 1409. Advert. to ed. 1550."—*Whitaker's note.* But this calmly begs the whole question. Crowley's words (to be found in Pref. II. p. xxxii) distinctly imply that the date A.D. 1409 appeared in an 'auncient copye' which 'it chaunced him to se' rather than in the one which he chose to print from. Besides, the B-text was not written till A.D. 1377.

[2] All pure assertion and assumption. I find nothing of the kind.

[3] For 'better' read 'later', rather; since the C-text is later than the B-text. Besides, Whitaker's 'MS. B' (Phillipps 8252) is really late, confused, and bad.

is not without its difficulties. The work is altogether the most obscure in the English language, both with respect to phraseology,[1] to the immediate connection of the author's ideas, and to the leading divisions of the subject. . . . .

"All these varieties [of text], however, bear marks, not of the same spirit and genius only, but of the same peculiar and original manner, so that it is scarcely to be conceived that they are interpolations of successive transcribers. Whatever be the cause, however, it may confidently be affirmed, that the text of no ancient work whatever contains so many various readings, or differs so widely from itself.

"To account for this phenomenon, however, in the penury, or rather in the absence of original information relating to the author, we are at liberty to suppose that the first edition of his work appeared when he was a young man, and that he lived and continued in the habit of transcribing to extreme old age. But a man of *his* genius would not submit to the drudgery of mere transcription; his invention and judgment would always be at work; new abuses, and therefore new objects of satire, would emerge from time to time: and as a new language began to be spoken, he might, though unwillingly, be induced to adopt its modernisms, in order to make his work intelligible to a second or third generation of readers.[2] In this last respect, however, it is not improbable that his transcribers might use some freedoms; for while we deny them invention to add, we may at least allow them skill to translate.[3] . . . . .

"The writer of these Visions had the first, though perhaps not the most splendid, qualification of a moral poet, an acute moral sense, with a vehement indignation against the abuses of public and the vices of private life; to this was added a keen sarcastic humour, and a faculty of depicting the manners of low life with an exactness and felicity, which have never been surpassed, but by the great

[1] Not often in *phraseology;* Langland is plain-spoken enough. The meanings of nearly all the harder words which he uses have been well ascertained.

[2] This is rather a bold suggestion, but it deserves consideration. There certainly seem to be indications of avoidance of unusual forms in the latest version. Thus, the word *trielich*, which occurs in B. prol. 14, is avoided by a change in the text; and *ȝerne* in B. vi. 299 becomes *deynteuosliche* in C. ix. 324.

[3] See, for example, the description of MS. Harl. 2376 above.

satirist of the present day.[1] His conscience appears to have held the torch to his understanding, rather than the reverse. He judges of actions by feelings, more than by induction. His casuistry is sometimes miserably perplexed, and his illustrations very unhappy. The first of these defects is to be ascribed to his acquaintance with the schoolmen, the second to his ignorance of classical antiquity; in his views of morality an understanding naturally perspicuous was clouded by the one, while in his powers of adorning a subject, a taste perhaps naturally coarse was left wholly unpolished by the other. He often sinks into imbecility,[2] and not unfrequently spins out his thread of allegory into mere tenuity. But, on other occasions, when aroused by the subject, he has a wildness of imagination, which might have deserved to be illustrated by the pencil of Fuseli, and a sublimity (more especially when inspired by the great mysteries of revelation) which has not been surpassed by Cowper.

"He had a smattering of French, but no Italian. I have endeavoured in vain to discover in these Visions any imitations of Dante, whose Inferno and Purgatorio, in some respects, resemble them. But the boldness of those works, which the familiarity of the Italians with the vices of their Popes rendered tolerable, and even popular, beyond the Alps, would have appalled the courage of a tramontane satirist, and shocked the feelings of his readers, in the fourteenth century.

"To the author of these Visions has been ascribed by some Protestant writers an higher inspiration than that of the muse, and his famous prediction of the fall of the religious houses has invested him with the more sacred character of a prophet.[3] . . . There is just enough in this celebrated prediction, compared with its supposed fulfilment, to excite a momentary surprise.

"The erudition of Langland, if such were really the author's name, besides his Saxon literature, consisted in a very familiar know-

[1] A footnote explains that the reference is to "Dr Crabb."

[2] Not "often." There is a long passage in C. iv. 336—409, which we should *now* call very stupid; it may once have been highly thought of.

[3] B. x. 317—327; cf. Pref. II. p. xxxiv.

ledge of the Vulgate, and the schoolmen: the first of which he appears to quote from memory, as he frequently deviates from the letter of that version. . . . His citations from the schoolmen I am unable to trace."

Text and Paraphrase. The text is printed in black letter, without punctuation, the marks of contraction not being expanded, but represented as they occur in the MS. It follows his 'MS. A' (the very one here reprinted, and called P) throughout, without any editorial emendations. The numerous mistakes (many of them of slight moment) are due to his having understood the text but imperfectly, and to his not always understanding the scribe's characters. Despite his evidences of care, there are some strange instances of inaccuracy. For example, some of the proper names and all the Latin quotations are written in *red* characters in the MS. In Whitaker's text, most of the proper names and all the Latin quotations are printed in *red* letters. I confess I was much surprised to find that, in the case of the proper names, the words *printed* in red letters are no sort of guide to the words *written* in red letters; indeed, the deviations of the print from the MS. are so frequent in this respect that the task of rectification became irksome; and as no good result came of it (for the scribe is very capricious, and even writes words in red which are not names at all), I had no choice but to abandon all notice of this peculiarity. In a similar way, Dr Whitaker's use of capital letters is no guide to the scribe's use of them. He also frequently puts *v* for the *u* of the MS., and *vice versâ*. He also frequently (by a misreading) turns *itt* into *ut*, *n* into *u*, *u* into *n*, *ni* or *ui* into *m*, or *m* into *ni*. All this may be sufficiently illustrated by the line ending—"þer comseþ a myghte" (C. ii. 162); the signification being—"there commenceth a might." This, in Whitaker's edition, appears in the form—"þer coniseþ Almyghte;" where the *m* has become *ni*, the small *a* a capital *A*, an *l* has been inserted, and the new formation *Almyghte* printed in red letters, whereas the MS. reading *a myghte* is in black letters. The more important errors in Whitaker's text are pointed out in the Critical Notes below, pp. 449—466; the rest can be ascertained by collating his text with the text here printed.

The *Paraphrase* occupies the lowest quarter of each page. It is a very full one, and might easily, by a little more expansion, have been turned into a verbal translation. As it is, however, the side-notes to the present edition give very nearly as much help, and it is, from the nature of the case, rather poor reading as compared with the original. Some of the explanations in it are truly amazing, as is pointed out in my Critical Notes. I shall only quote here, as an illustration, the explanation of the phrase "þer conisep Almyghte," which has just been cited. The paraphrase here actually recognises the words *a myghte* of the MS., and says accordingly—"there teacheth a mighty one." There is an entry in the *Glossary* to the effect that *conise* means "to teach, i.e. to cause to con or know."

The *Notes* occupy only 18 pages. The most valuable ones are those which give readings from his 'MS. B' (Phillipps 8252) and 'MS. C' (Oriel MS.). Many remarks in them are wrong, as is shewn in the Critical Notes in this volume. The explanatory hints in them are very few.

The *Glossary* is by far the worst part of the book. It extends to little more than 10 pages, double columns, of not very close type, and explains about 350 words; but the mistakes in spelling and interpretation are very numerous. Moreover, there are no references given. The entry "Sælsam, probably a bag or purse," for example, completely baffles me; I can find no such word in Whitaker's text, nor, indeed, elsewhere.

I cannot, however, close my notice of this edition without observing that it is, in its way, a great work. The attempt to represent the MS. so exactly was well meant, and sometimes, even in the more obscure passages, is closely carried out; whilst the Paraphrase well brings out the *general* sense of the poem. However deficient Whitaker's edition may seem to others, I can truly say that *to me* it has been invaluable; and but for the help it has afforded me, the difficulty of my task would have been at least doubled. From the first moment of undertaking the comparison of the three texts, I have always had it at hand to refer to, and have referred to it hundreds of times; and many are the difficulties which a mere reference to it has solved. If there are numerous inaccuracies, the desire to

be accurate is none the less clear; and it is frequently in the hardest passages that the print is most correct. I cannot conclude this paragraph without acknowledging, in the fullest and most thankful manner, my very great obligations to Dr Whitaker's edition. To have succeeded in putting forth a book in so expensive a form and involving so many difficulties in the printing, at a time when the general interest in philology was so slight, must have required a high degree of energy and perseverance; two qualities for which Dr Whitaker was certainly remarkable.

§ 8. BRIEF NOTICE OF DR WHITAKER.

A biographical memoir of Dr Whitaker has lately been written by Mr J. Gough Nichols, who has kindly made me a present of a copy of the same. The short notice of him here given is compiled from that work, to which I refer the reader for further information.[1]

Thomas Dunham Whitaker was born in the parsonage-house of Rainham, Norfolk, June 8, 1759. His father, the Rev. William Whitaker, was at that time curate of Rainham, but removed in 1760 to an estate at Holme, near Burnley, in Lancashire. He commenced residence at St John's College, Cambridge, in Nov., 1775, took the degree of LL.B. in 1781, and commenced studying civil law. But in 1782, on the death of his father, he succeeded to the paternal estate, and turned his attention to divinity. He was ordained deacon in 1785, priest in 1786, and in 1797 was licensed to the perpetual curacy of Holme on his own nomination. In 1799, he qualified as a magistrate for the county of Lancaster, and in 1801 as a magistrate for the West Riding of Yorkshire. In 1809 he was presented to the Vicarage of Whalley, and in 1818 to the Vicarage of Blackburn; both of which appointments he held till his death, which took place on the 18th Dec., 1821, in the 63rd year of his age.

His writings are very numerous, and some of his works are on a large scale. He was the author of many published sermons, a list of

[1] Biographical Memoirs of Thomas Dunham Whitaker, by J. Gough Nichols, prefixed to a new edition of Whitaker's History of Whalley. See also an excellent notice of Whitaker in the English Cyclopædia.

which is given by Mr Nichols (p. iii, note 2); also of numerous articles in the Quarterly Review, from 1809 to 1819; see Mr Nichols' list (p. xxix). One work of his is in Latin, in the style of Tacitus, who was his favourite author; it is entitled "De Motu per Britanniam Civico," and treats of the famous rebellion of 1745; it was published in 1809. Amongst the works edited by him are "The Life and Original Correspondence of Sir Geo. Radcliffe, Knt, LL.D., the friend of the Earl of Strafford," 4to. 1810; the Sermons of Dr Edwin Sandys, formerly Archbishop of York, with a life of the author, 8vo. 1812; Piers the Plowman (C-text), 4to. 1813; and Pierce the Ploughmans Crede (a mere reprint of Wolfe's edition of 1550), 4to. 1814. But his fame must rest rather on his antiquarian works, collections, and editions, such as 'A History of the original parish of Whalley and the honour of Clitheroe, in the counties of Lancaster and York,' 4to. 1801, reprinted in 1806, and again in 1818; 'History of the Deanery of Craven,' royal 4to. 1805, reprinted in 1812; a new edition of Thoresby's 'Ducatus Leodiensis, or the Topography of Leeds,' fol. 1816; 'Loidis and Elmete; or, an attempt to illustrate the Districts described in these words by Bede,' viz. Aredale, Wharfdale, and the vale of Calder, in Yorkshire, 4to. 1816; Appendix to the same, 1821; also a part of the History of Yorkshire, comprehending Richmondshire and Lunedale, published after his death, 2 vols. fol. 1823. It is worthy of remark that the last of these, and some others, contain plates from landscapes by no less an artist than Turner.

It is clear that Dr Whitaker attempted far too much; his projected designs were always on a grand scale, and the performance fell short of what he intended. The most defective of his topographical works is the History of Richmondshire, but this may fairly be attributed to its having fallen, after his death, into incompetent hands.

He was remarkable for great warmth and enthusiasm, and for restless energy and activity in all his duties, whether clerical, magisterial, or editorial. He formed and carried out many plans for the benefit of the clergy in his district,[1] and it is recorded that "his

[1] Gent. Maga. 1820, vol. xc. pt. ii. p. 402.

extempore eloquence in the pulpit was rapid, energetic, and impressive." A speech of his, delivered at Blackburn, Monday, Feb. 10, 1817, is printed in the Gentleman's Magazine, vol. lxxxvii., pt. i. p. 213; and strongly expresses his conservative opinions. He received a testimonial for his services as a magistrate in April, 1821, not long before his death. Of his behaviour in troublous times Mr Nichols records the following anecdote.

"Scarcely a year before his death there was a turn-out of the colliers of Altham, Padiham, and Hapton, who assembled in large numbers at Padiham, threatening to march riotously into Burnley. Many parties recommended that they should not be allowed to approach the town, but that they should be dispersed by the military. Dr Whitaker, although an invalid, drove into Burnley on the day when the colliers were expected, and declared that he would not order the military out, until he had tried, in person, to persuade the mob to return.[1] Accordingly he met them near Gannow, a mile out of the town, in a post-chaise; he was there helped into the driver's seat, from whence he harangued them so successfully that they agreed to go home quietly; and such was the respect paid to him when he had finished, that the strong rough men lifted him down, like a child, and told him, 'Doctor, put your foot here; we will take care that you shall not be hurt.'"

It was this effort that helped to bring on the attack of paralysis from which he never recovered.

His chief amusement was in superintending plantations. His son records that, "he came into the possession of a tree-denuded estate, where there were not above six or seven acres of wood upon it, and he left it covered with thriving plantations of all sizes, and trees of various growth. It was the finest larch in the Old Clough, planted by himself, that was felled, to form his coffin, which was hewn out from its bulk like a canoe, according to his own directions given to his bailiff William Edmundson." Mr Edmundson thus narrates the story. "On the 21st Aug. 1821, the doctor sent for me from the hay-field, to go with him into the wood—and when

[1] This reminds one of Algernon Mordaunt in Lord Lytton's novel of 'Disowned.'

we got there, he walked to the side of a larch-tree, and said, 'William, I planted this tree with my own hands, and intend to have my coffin made of it; have you your two-foot in your pocket?' I said I had. 'Then,' says he, 'measure it.' Afterwards he turned his back to the said tree, closed his arms up, and said, 'Will it hold my body when it is hollowed out of the solid?' I replied, 'It will be little enough;' and he immediately observed—'The tree is growing bigger, and I am growing less.'"

I hope this brief account of a good and worthy man will not be deemed out of place here. It seemed to me unbecoming to re-edit the latest text of Piers the Plowman, partly by help of the materials which he has supplied, without some tribute to his evident enthusiasm for his author,[1] or without an expression of sincere respect for his memory.

§ 9. CHARACTER OF THE C-TEXT.

The following remarks (like those in Pref. II. p. xxxix) apply only to the *form* of the poem, not to its *subject-matter*. The A-text shewed the poem as originally sketched, the last or twelfth Passus being extant in one MS. only. The B-text is frequently found perfect in the MSS., and is distinguished by the closeness with which all the best MSS. agree. The C-text MSS. are frequently imperfect, some at the beginning, some at the end, and some in the middle. It is just possible that, in the case of the MSS. from which leaves have been torn out, there may have been some passage which particularly attracted notice; but this is not clear. Passus xiv.—xviii. seem to have suffered most in this way. The agreement between the MSS. of the C-text is not so close, apparently, as in the case of the B-text; but this is chiefly owing to the numerous variations in MS. F., and to the distinction between the MSS. of sub-class *a* and those of sub-class *b*. If we consider those of sub-class *a* only, we thus have several MSS. agreeing even in very minute par-

[1] A letter proposing a new edition of Piers the Plowman appeared in the Gentleman's Magazine, for November, 1787, dated Nov. 12, and signed T. H. W. I have no doubt, from its contents, that it is Whitaker's, in spite of the misprint in the second initial.

ticulars; and it is, on the whole, true for this text also, that "conjectural emendations" are, as a rule, entirely out of the question, and that the readings I have given are, as a matter of fact, supported by much stronger evidence than I have actually adduced. Those who venture to question a reading will of course, in the first instance, examine the readings of the MSS. which I have not cited, especially of the better ones, and will commonly find, as I believe, that the few corrections introduced in the text are more strongly supported than they had supposed. Besides which, reference must be made to the two former texts wherever they furnish parallel passages. It may sometimes happen that a line stands the same in all three texts, and that there is no footnote recording any variation in it. The reader should endeavour to realise what this means. On the face of it, it means that the line occurs in the same form in some twenty MSS.; but it really means much more. For, in such cases, the uncited MSS. commonly agree with the rest, and thus the said line rests on the authority of *nearly forty* rather than of twenty MSS. only. In other words, there can be no doubt in such cases of the true reading, however obscure it may seem. Wherever difficult words occur, I have frequently recorded the spellings of several MSS., even though they do *not* materially differ, in order to make it clear to the reader that the reading given is no misprint; and I have also often consulted other MSS. which I have not cited. Thus, if any one should suppose the word *eythes* in C. xxii. 273 is a mistake for something else, he is requested to observe that it is spelt *eythes*, *eiþes*, *aithes*, or *ayþes* (all much the same) in six MSS. at least; and my impression is that it is also so spelt in at least six MSS. more. The best way in such cases is to accept the reading as genuine; and instead of saying, with Whitaker, that "this word nowhere occurs, and the alliteration requires[1] that we read *teyths*, meaning, perhaps, teeth; i. e. of harrows," I should prefer to suggest that it seems to throw some light on the mysterious word "*Aither*, a ploughing,"

[1] The alliteration requires, on the contrary, that the word should begin with a vowel, or a diphthong; the 'chief-letter' is the *o* in *olde*. Cf. O.Fries. *eide*, a kind of harrow or hoe; O.H.G. *egida*, a harrow, G. *egge*, a harrow. See *eide* in Richtofen.

which is recorded in the Whitby and Cleveland Glossaries. The text of MS. P is peculiarly good; and it is most satisfactory to be able to point to many pages in which none but the most trifling emendations occur; as the reader may easily discover for himself. I believe that a sufficient number of MSS. (and those the best that can be had) have been consulted to render the text perfectly firm and certain. There are scarcely half-a-dozen passages in which any doubt can be said to occur.

The C-text is inferior to the B-text in general vigour and compactness. On the other hand, it is the fullest of the three texts, and the most carefully finished. It contains the author's last corrections after a most careful revision, and is evidently intended as a final form, requiring no further touches. This is best seen in the last two Passus. *At first sight*, they stand almost alike in the two latest texts; but closer inspection shews that the author has gone over them word by word, making a few slight but clear corrections here and there, down to the very end. Only the eighth line from the end (B. xx. 377; C. xxiii. 379) has been almost entirely recast, in order to improve the alliteration. It is most satisfactory to perceive that he completed his revision with a high degree of care and attention, that he survived the work, and that in all probability was satisfied with it, as there is no trace whatever of any later revision. If we prefer the B-text as a whole, we must never forget that the C-text is the best possible commentary upon it, and is often, indeed, much more, as it contains some additional passages which it would be a pity to have lost, and to which I shall more particularly direct attention presently.

§ 10. ALLUSIONS IN THE C-TEXT.

It is remarkable that some of the B-text passages, which contain allusions to places and events, have been expunged in the revision; but we gain, on the other hand, a most interesting autobiographical passage.

Allusions to himself. Of the allusions to himself in the B-text, he retains the allusion to his name "Wille;" see VII. 2. He speaks of his wife Kitte and daughter Calote, XXI. 473. He shews

himself acquainted with the mode of drawing up a legal document. XIV. 117—120. But he omits, probably by intention, the allusion to his nickname of "Long Wille;"[1] the mention of his age; his outward bearing; his knowledge of French.

On the other hand, he now tells us that he lived in London many long years, XVII. 286; viz. in a cot on Cornhill, VI. 1. He has a new allusion to his wife Kitte, VI. 2. Lady Holy-church no longer addresses him merely as her *son* (B. i. 5), but calls him by his name "Wille," II. 5; concerning which substitution it should be noted that MSS. I and B retain the "sone," in accordance with the remark already made, that MSS. of sub-class *b* are earlier *in form* than those of sub-class *a*. And in more places than one he shews a knowledge of the law, particularly in his explanation of a particular point of "Westminster law," XI. 239. But most of all are we indebted to the long passage at the beginning of Passus VI, wherein he tells us that, when he was young, his father and friends put him to school, VI. 36; and that since his friends died, he has found no life so pleasant as one in the "long clothes" of an ecclesiastic, VI. 41; he lives not only *in* London, but *upon* London, VI. 44; his tools of labour being his *Paternoster* and Primer, his *Placebo* and his *Dirige*, his Psalter and his Seven Psalms, VI. 47. Thus he sings for the souls of them that help him, living now with one, now with another, welcomed wherever he comes, so that he begs, as it were, without the bag and bottle such as beggars generally carried, having no receptacle for food but his stomach only, VI. 52. He adds, that clerks should not be made to do the work of knaves, and that no clerk ought to receive tonsure unless he be the son of a franklin or free man, VI. 54—64. He regrets the time he has misspent, VI. 93. The whole passage (VI. 1—108) deserves to be read carefully.

Allusions to places. Of the places enumerated as referred to in the B-text, he retains his allusions to Malvern hills, I. 6, 163; X. 295; to Walsingham, I. 52; Winchester fair, VII. 211; the pass of Alton, XVII. 139; Hertfordshire, VII. 413; St Thomas's shrine, VIII. 201; Dunmow, XI. 276; Chester, VIII. 11; London, I. 83,

[1] For references to the B-text, see Pref. II. p. xl.

89; III. 148, 169; VII. 96; Cock Lane, Smithfield, VII. 366; Tyburn, XV. 130; Southwark, VII. 83; Westminster, III. 174; IV. 13; XXIII. 284; Westminster Hall, XXIII. 133; Court of Arches, III. 61; XXIII. 136; the river Thames, XV. 104; Avignon, XXII. 424; Lucca, IX. 109; besides allusions to Rome, Gallicia, Bruges, Prussia, Babylon, Alexandria, &c.; to which complete references will be supplied hereafter.

But it is noticeable that he has omitted several of the more particular allusions, as if he had some design of rendering his words of less particular application. He no longer mentions Norfolk, or Bromholm (at least not in the same connection), Stratford, Cheapside, Garlickhithe, Shoreditch, Normandy, Calais, Roquemadour. Instead of Buckinghamshire, he has Banbury, III. 111; and instead of Abingdon, the vague term "Engelonde," thus considerably spoiling his famous prophecy, VI. 177.

But he has a new allusion to Tyburn, VII. 368; to Winchester fair, XIV. 52; to St Giles's down, the hill on the east side of the city whereon the said fair was held, V. 51; and to the Court of Arches, III. 186; also a particular allusion to London, XVII. 286. He also mentions Corfe Castle, IV. 140.

Allusions to circumstances. The allusion which, in the A-text at least, was meant for Edward II., is now made almost equally applicable to Edward III.; see IV. 163. References are retained to the use of nobles, IV. 47; the battle of Creçy, XV. 50; the pestilences, VI. 115; the storm of wind, VI. 117; and to Wycliffe's translation of the Bible, XI. 88.

But the particular reference to the treaty of Brétigny is done away with; and so likewise is the reference to John Chichester as mayor of London. The allusion to the fourth pestilence is accordingly made more vague, by turning the words "þe pestilence" (B. xiii. 248) into "pestilences," XVI. 218. The retention of the phrase 'yf ich regne eny whyle' (B. iv. 177; C. v. 171) deserves notice.

On the other hand, there appears what I believe to be an allusion to the quarrel between the king and the Londoners, V. 194; an allusion to certain forms of injustice, V. 189; a clear and bold

rebuke of the king's folly, IV. 203—213; hints on the iniquity of selling a kingdom or duchy, IV. 245;[1] an attack on false miracles,[2] I. 100; and on the worship of images, I. 119.

It deserves to be added here, that the C-text MSS. speak sometimes of *five* orders of mendicant friars, instead of the usual four orders of the previous texts. The fifth order is, I suppose, that of the *Crutched* Friars; but why they should have been counted in at this period rather than at any other is a problem which still remains unsolved. For references, observe "alle fyue ordres," X. 343; "þe fyue mendynauns," XVI. 81. Yet we also find "alle þe foure ordres" in a passage very near the beginning of the poem; I. 56.

§ 11. DIALECT OF THE C-TEXT.

The various MSS. of the C-text fully bear out the opinions I have already expressed (Pref. II. p. xli) about the dialect of the poem. They enable us to ascertain, beyond all reasonable doubt, that the dialect of the Vernon MS., chosen as the basis of the A-text because it was on the whole the best MS. of its class, is not the dialect of the author, but has been Southernized by the scribe. Thus the Vernon MS. is, compared with all the rest, far too uniform and regular in its grammatical forms, and represents an "improved" text, in a dialect superior to that which the poet himself would have used. I can now repeat, with increased confidence, that he certainly used a mixed dialect, one peculiarity of it being that the endings *-en* and *-eth* both occur in the plural indicative, the former being the more common. The following are instances of plurals in *-en* which occur, not only in MSS. L and W of the B-type, but in MS. P of the C-type also. Plurals in *-en* in Passus i; *holden*, 30, *marchen*, 61, *parten*, 79, *lyen*, 89, *seruen*, 90, *tellen*, 90, *sitten*, 94, *demen*, 94. Plurals in *-eth*, at the end of a line, *destroyeþ*, 24, *þryueþ*, 34, *conneþ*,

[1] The language is too vague for the particular allusion to be determined. In 1393, according to Walsingham, Cherbourg was restored to the king of Navarre, who had pledged it to Richard for 22,000 marks, but had then repaid the sum borrowed. In reality, Richard thus only received back a sum which he had lent, but it may easily have seemed to his disaffected people as if he was selling Cherbourg for so much money.

[2] Walsingham narrates the performance of miracles at Wymundham, Bridlington, Ely, Cambridge, and St Alban's, all about A.D. 1389.

35. We also find *-en* cut down to the simple final *-e*, as in *choppe*, 64. The third person singular of weak verbs ends in *-ede*, as in *lenede*, 8, *waitede*, 16; but also in *-ed*, as in *preched*, 66, *chasted*, 110, *costned*, 209. In the plural, we find the endings *-eden*, as in *likeden*, 70, *kneleden*, 71; often shortened to *-ede*, as in *lyuede*, 70, *pleynede*, 81; and sometimes even to *-ed*, as in *assented*, iii. 68, *parailed*, iii. 224; although plurals in *-ed* are less common in this MS. than plurals in *-ede*. It may be doubted, however, when the plural ends in *-ede*, if it is meant that the last *-e* is to be sounded; for it is a common fault in this MS. P only (very seldom in other MSS. of the C-type) that the past *participle* is made to end in *-ede* instead of *-ed*; a fault which I have often not hesitated to correct, when all the other MSS. exhibit the true ending in *-ed*. See, for instance, the form *makede* (in MS. P), iii. 73, where all the other MSS. correctly have *maked*, a reading which I have accordingly adopted. For examples of past participles in *-ed*, observe *auaunsed*, ii. 189, *encombred*, ii. 192, *hasped*, ii. 193, &c. Sometimes we find the ending *-id*, as in *amaistrid*, iii. 167; or *-yd*, as in *ytermenyd*, ii. 93, *lackyd*, iii. 21. In past tenses of strong verbs, we find the long vowel denoted sometimes by its being doubled, as in *ouerleep*, i. 169; *leep*, iii. 69; but sometimes by the addition of *e*, as in *shope*, iii. 177. Sometimes the lengthening of the vowel-sound is not indicated, as in *lep*, iii. 225. In a similar manner, we find *fote* for *foot*, ii. 119; but also *fet* instead of *feet*, iii. 193. I may here observe that the forms *calde*, *calden*, for "called," are very common in the C-text MSS. It deserves to be noticed that the endings of weak verbs in the past tense are, in Old English, various, and depend in a great measure on the form of the stem. If we take *-edë* (dissyllable) as the standard ending of the third person singular in the past tense of a weak verb, this ending may be abbreviated into *-ed*, or into *-de*, or may disappear altogether. In both the former cases, the termination is often *written* in the form *-ede*, even when only one of the *ees* is sounded, and it is not always easy to say which. Thus *callede* may be a dissyllable, but we cannot, as it stands, say which *e* is to be ignored. But when some scribes continually write *called* or *callid* or *callyd* or *callud*, as well as

callede, we know, that, to them, it is the final *e* that disappears; and when other scribes write *callede* or *calde* indifferently, we may infer that, to them, it is the medial *e* that disappears. Even in the case of the same scribe, the practice varies with the stem; we may sometimes fairly infer that the scribe who was familiar with the sound *lov'de* (for *louede* = loved) may, in the case of some other verb (say *callede*, for example) have preferred *callëd*. In some cases, the termination tends to disappear. Take, for example, such a stem as *command*. The past tense, normal form, is *comaund-e-de* or *comand-e-de*, which could be abbreviated either to *comaunded* or to *comaund-de*. The former is the form found in Piers the Plowman; see, e. g. *comaundid*, C. ii. 20. But the latter seems to have been current also, and on account of its inconvenient shape, soon became abbreviated to *comaund* simply, as in l. 2557 of the alliterative Troy-Boke. See, on this point, Sir F. Madden's note to William of Palerne, l. 347. I have purposely thrown out this hint because I believe the question requires a much further investigation of a careful character; it is not enough to give *-edë* as a past-tense ending; we have to consider also the ways in which this *-edë* can be abbreviated; and I believe it will be found that the method of abbreviation is very various, depending as it does on three variable elements, viz. (1) the stem, (2) the dialect, and (3) the date.

Just as in the B-text, we find the contractions *ryt* for *rideth*, *rest* for *resteth*, i. 186; and the like. One very noteworthy contraction is that of *rat* or *ret* for *redeþ*, iv. 410; a contraction which actually puzzled the scribes in one passage, where two of them have turned *rat* into *þat*, xiv. 5. We also frequently find infinitives in *-ie*, *-ye*, or *-y*, as *closye*, i. 133, *sauy*, ii. 80, *hongy*, vii. 238. I do not recall instances in which the prefix *I-* or *y-* is used with a past tense, but it is common with past participles; yet these are also used *without* the prefix, as *tried*, ii. 81. The present participle almost always ends in *-yng* or *-ing*; yet, just as in the B-text, a few stray examples of the ending *-ind* or *-ynd* are found; as *closynde*, i. 132, the infinitive being *closye*, i. 133. We still find plural adjectives (of French origin) in *-es*, as in *cardinales*, i. 132.

But there is one peculiarity of some at least of the C-text MSS. which deserves special notice, and that is, the tendency to the Western forms in *-us*. Some MSS., as F and S, abound with them; and they occur even in the text, as *clerkus*, i. 141. They are also conspicuous in MS. H, of the A-type. Even from this we may conjecture something. It seems not improbable that, just as the author once came from the West of England up to London, so later in life he returned from London to the West of England. This supposition explains (1) his mention of the Malvern hills; (2) his familiarity with London; and (3) his language in the C-text, in which he speaks of his residence in London as if it were a thing of the past. Hence, also, we are not surprised to find that, in 1399, he passed through Bristol; see Richard the Redeles, prol. 2. The present text abounds also with the use of *hus* for *his*, and *hue* for *she*. The forms of the feminine personal pronoun are singularly diverse in the MSS. MS. P almost always has *hue;* E invariably has *ȝo;* I has *sche;* F has *sche, scheo, heo;* G commonly *heo;* see ii. 10, footnote.

On the whole, the dialect of MS. L (the basis of the B-text) and that of MS. P (that of the C-text) do not much differ, and both probably represent, with sufficient approximation, the dialect of the author; which MS. V (the basis of the A-text) certainly does not.

§ 12. METHOD OF PRINTING THE TEXT.

The Text is, as has been explained, mainly from MS. P (Phillipps 8231), but has a few alterations and additional lines from other MSS., enclosed within square brackets. The rejected readings of MS. P will be found in the footnotes. A few *slight* variations in spelling have been made without the constant use of square brackets, but it is only in such cases as have been pointed out in the description of MS. P above, and there also the rejected spellings of P will be found in the footnotes. The additional lines from other MSS. are very few. The contractions that appear in P are not at all frequent; they are denoted by the use of italic letters, as in "somẽre" in the first line, where the MS. has "som'e," with the usual upward curl representing *er* between the *m* and *e*. All the Latin words

and quotations, and one or two French quotations (xiv. 205, 206; xviii. 163, 164) are printed in italics, but the contractions in the Latin quotations are not expressed by any alteration of type, as there can be no doubt about the readings.

The metrical mark which occurs in the middle of each line in the MS. is denoted in this edition by an "inverted" full-stop. It marks the place where a slight pause occurs in reading, and is frequently equivalent to a comma. In the Cotton MS. (M), it is denoted by a large red dot. See also the facsimile prefixed to this text.

The lines in each Passus are numbered separately. The Latin quotations are not reckoned as lines, except when in verse; otherwise they are "set back." When reference has to be made to them, they are denoted, in the latter case, by the number of the English line which precedes them. The punctuation is wholly my own. Dr Whitaker's edition, intended as a close imitation of the MS., is not punctuated at all.

§ 13. METHOD OF PRINTING THE FOOTNOTES.

The list of MSS. quoted in the footnotes may be briefly repeated. They are P (Phillipps 8231, the text); E (Laud 656); I (Ilchester MS.); M (Cotton or Museum MS.); F (Camb. Univ. Lib. Ff. 5. 25); G (Camb. Univ. Lib. Dd. 3. 13); S (Corpus 293); B (Bodley 814); K (Kenelm Digby 171); T (Trin. Coll. Camb. R. 3. 14). Besides which the italic *I* occurs, referring to the passage which appears a second time in the Ilchester MS., as noted in the description of that MS. Of these, E, I, M, F, S have been collated throughout, except where gaps occur in them. The collation with B ceases at iii. 128, and even before that only *occasional* readings are cited from it. The collation with T begins at xii. 297. The collation with K extends from xii. 1 to xvi. 65. Readings from G are cited only occasionally. The number of MSS. on which the text is based varies from five to nine, the most usual number being six or seven. The readings of least importance are those of G. The MS. which differs from the text most frequently is F. The principles upon which the various readings are given have been fully explained in Pref. I. p. xxix.

§ 14. EXPLANATION OF THE SIDE-NOTES.

The thick numbers (Clarendon-type) in the margin refer to the *pages* of vol. i. and vol. ii. Those which refer to vol. i. have **A** prefixed to them; but they necessarily cease to occur after p. 212, as the A-text extends no further. Those which refer to vol. ii. have **B** prefixed to them as far as to the end of Pass. xii. p. 214. After this, the single number is of course sufficient, as the A-text has considerably less than 170 pages, and there can therefore be no doubt as to which is meant. For example, if this volume be opened at p. 119, the mark **B 231** opposite l. 430 signifies that the parallel passage to ll. 430 and 431 occurs on p. 231 of the B-text; the mark **B 77** opposite l. 432 signifies that the parallel passage to l. 432 and the lines following occurs on p. 77 of the B-text; whilst the mark **A 64 B 78** opposite l. 438 signifies that the corresponding line occurs *at* the top of p. 64 in vol. i., and *near* the top of p. 78 in vol. ii. It is impossible always to fit the marks so as to indicate the *first* lines on the pages, but this has been done where practicable.

These numbers furnish a ready way of referring from volume to volume, and can be used for any pair of volumes, or for all three, starting from any one of them. For example, let vol. i. be in hand, and let it be required to compare the confession of Envy on p. 55 with the same confession as it stands in the other texts. Open vol. ii. and look for **55**; the number occurs on p. 60, and the confession of Envy is a few lines lower, on p. 61. Next open vol. iii., and look for **A 55**; this occurs on p. 98, at the place sought.

Again, let vol. ii. be in hand, and let it be required to compare the description of Lady Meed, at p. 21, with the other texts. Here the numbers **17** and **18** in the margin *at once* refer back to the pages of the A-text. Next, open vol. iii. and look for **B 21**, which is soon found in the margin of p. 27.

Lastly, if vol. iii. be in hand, then, wherever it be opened, the numbers in the margin *refer back* to the other volumes, as has been explained. The principle of this arrangement is that of *referring back* to what has preceded; but it will work both ways, and furnishes as ready a method of comparison between the texts as can

well be arranged. It is easy enough in practice, except where the variations between the texts are wide or total, so that no comparison can well be instituted. In such cases, the reader will find a further very convenient guide by observing whether or not an obelus (†) is prefixed to the side-note, as this invariably indicates the appearance of *new matter*. Thus, in vol. iii. p. 96, the obeli prefixed to the first three side-notes give warning that this passage has not occurred before, and it is useless to look for it in the B-text or A-text, though just the one word *wilnynge* does happen to occur in the B-text, at the page indicated by the **B 225** on p. 95. In the A-text, there is nothing like it at all. So also, in vol. ii. p. 22, the obeli prefixed to the last six side-notes give warning that the passage has not occurred before, i. e. that it is not in the A-text. This simple plan of marking new matter will be found very useful in practice.

I have only to add that, when a number, as **B 43** on p. 65, is enclosed between marks of parenthesis, it means that it is *repeated* (see also p. 59); or sometimes it denotes that the page indicated is the nearest that can be assigned.

I have also endeavoured, where practicable, to preserve *the same words* in the wording of the side-notes and head-lines; as this expedient greatly facilitates the finding of parallel passages. For example, turning to p. 40, the same head-line occurs in vol. ii. at p. 31, and in vol. i. at p. 27; whilst the side-notes are repeated in the same form of words as far as possible, the *fifth* side-note in vol. iii. p. 40 being a new one, as indicated by the obelus; whilst the last side-note on the page is an old one.

The only difficulty that can occur arises from the *transposition of matter;* though it is here also that the marginal numbers are of most use. Thus, on p. 124 of this volume, the marginal notes direct the reader who compares this page with the B-text to turn from p. 82 to p. 232 on reaching l. 70. But for this hint, he would be a very long time in finding out for himself what to do. In order to save trouble as far as possible, a brief account of the transposition of matter in the course of the double revision is here subjoined.

We may first of all remark, in comparing the B-text with the preceding A-text, that no real transposition of matter occurs, as the

numbers in the margin of the B-text are all consecutive, though the numbers **115, 116** do not occur, owing to the matter on those A-pages being omitted. The only number out of place is the **132** on p. 163; but this merely refers to the Latin quotation *Super cathedram moysy.*

But, in comparing the C-text with the texts preceding it, transpositions occur in several places. Looking at the B-numbers in the marginal notes to vol. iii., we observe this to be the order of them.

Consecutive; **B 1—B 59.** *Insertion (a);* **B 158—B 160,**[1] vol. iii. pp. 90—92. *Consecutive;* **B 59—B 60.** *Insertion (b);* **B 225—B 227,** vol. iii. pp. 95—97. *Consecutive;* **B 61.** *Insertion (c);* **B 227—B 228,** vol. iii. pp. 98, 99. *Consecutive;* **B 63—B 67.** *Insertion (d),* from matter previously omitted, **B 60—B 61,** vol. iii. p. 104; immediately followed by *insertion (e),* **B 228—B 229,** vol. iii. p. 105. *Consecutive;* **B 67—B 72.** *Insertion (f);* **B 229—B 231,** vol. iii. pp. 109, 110. *Consecutive (nearly);* **B 71—B 72.** *Insertion (g);* **B 82—B 83,** vol. iii. pp. 112, 113. *Consecutive;* **B 72—B 77.** *Insertion (h),* only a couple of lines, **B 231;** vol. iii. p. 119. *Consecutive;* **B 77—B 82.** *Insertion (i);* **B 232—B 234;** vol. iii. pp. 124—127. *Consecutive;* **B 83—B 135,** all but a break of a single B-page, viz. **B 118;** then comes another break of one B-page, followed by **B 137—B 139;** then a slight recurrence to **B 138** (vol. iii. 191); after which comes **B 140—B 147;** then a break of a couple of B-pages, followed by **B 150—B 152;** then a break of a page, followed by **B 154—B 155.** *Insertion (k);* **B 168—B 170,** vol. iii. pp. 205—207. *Consecutive;* **B 162—167,** and **B 170—B 192,** with a slight transposition of the matter in **B 172** and **B 173;** then, after a break of three B-pages, follows **B 195—B 224;** after which a considerable break; then follows **B 237—B 239;** after which a break of about a page, the matter on **B 240** bearing a slight resemblance to that a little further on in the C-text; see vol. iii. p. 281; next follows **B 241—B 272;** then a slight break; next **B 274—B 277;** another break; next **B 281—B 283,** followed by a few lines from **B 281;** next **B 283—B 308;** a slight break; next **B 310—**

[1] Which involves the insertion **A 132** after **A 54.**

B 385, where the poem ends; so that after page 208, in vol. iii., the order of matter in the B-text and C-text is much the same.

On looking at this analysis more closely, we see that the principal passages inserted (all but one) in an *earlier* part of the poem than before are those marked as *insertions* (*a*)—(*i*). Looking at the *subjects* of these, the result is as follows.

Insertion (*a*). The saying of Pope Gregory about a fish out of water; the prophecy that a king shall one day come and reform religion. This is now made to form part of Reason's sermon, instead of part of Scripture's discourse. It shortens the latter, and comes in much more naturally as a part of the former. The change is a considerable improvement, and skilfully managed.

Insertions (*b*)—(*i*). These can be all explained together. It is quite clear on what principle the poet made them; and, if they be carefully examined, they will be found to be *so skilfully adjusted as quite to exclude the supposition that any one but himself could have done it.* This is a very important matter, as it assures us that the double revision of the poem is *all his own work;* and, although this might have been inferred from the style and character of the writing, it is most satisfactory to have the proof of it brought home to us in a way that cannot well be mistaken. It is also the more necessary, because there certainly are indications that the poet inclined, at the last, to the softening down and modification of some of his sentiments. Mr Wright has drawn attention to this in one instance, where he prints two short passages side by side, and draws the inference that "in this instance the doctrine is stated far more distinctly and far more boldly in the first text than in the second;" Wright's edition, Pref. p. xxxv. That is to say, the poet grew more conservative in his ideas and more careful in his expressions as he grew older; a result so common and natural that it is not to be wondered at, but may be accepted as the fact. Let it not be supposed, however, that he in any way lost his vigour of expression when he chose to exert it; observe his graphic description of the life of the poor in London, C. x. 71—161; and his fine attack on the revellers of Richard's court and his humorous description of the packed parliament, *Rich. Redeles*, iii. 190—238, iv. 1—73. The reader may

pardon this digression, as it is necessary to enable him to see his way more clearly. We can now return to the consideration of the *insertions* (*b*)—(*i*), and easily understand them.

The fact is, that in his B-text, the poet did, to some extent, enlarge upon the favourite and common subject of the Seven Deadly Sins *twice over;* once in the proper place, and a second time, in describing at length the character of Haukyn, the active man, a representative of the character of that *Actiua-Uita* which it was formerly so much the fashion to contrast with the *Uita-Contemplativa*, in order to bring out the great dangers of a life in the world as compared with the life in a cloister. But, on revising his work, the poet saw how much could be gained by combining his two sets of descriptions into one, at the same time making a few alterations and additions; and he has succeeded, upon the whole, in considerably bettering this important and characteristic portion of his poem. The mere statement of these alterations will *now* suffice to bring out and prove these points.

Insertion (*b*); a description of Haukyn's *pride*, now placed so as to form part of the description of the allegorical character of Pride. The result is that the poet now gives *two* examples of Pride; one, Pernel Proud-heart, a *female* character, and a second, named simply Pride, a *male* character.

Insertion (*c*); a description of Haukyn's *envy*, now made to form part of the description of Envy.

Insertions (*d*) *and* (*e*). The former of these is a mere removal of the description of Lechery to a later place among the Seven Sins; the latter is a description of Haukyn's *lechery*, which is now made to supplement the previously very short description.

Insertion (*f*); a description of Haukyn's *cheating tricks*, now made to form part of the description of Avarice.

Insertion (*g*). This is a removal. A passage which formerly formed part of the character of Sloth, but which is rather a description of Avarice, is now placed so as to form part of the character of Avarice. It comes in very much better in its new place.

Insertion (*h*). A few lines only, formerly descriptive of Haukyn's *gluttony*, are now made to form part of the character of Glutton.

Insertion (*i*); a description of Haukyn's *sloth*, now made to form part of the character of Sloth.[1]

The continuous design in all these changes must now be evident. Perhaps I may add here, that, though the B-text will probably remain, *as a whole*, the favourite form of the poem (owing, perhaps, in some measure, to the fact of its being better known), there are several passages in which the C-text far surpasses it. See the section below on the Additions in the C-text.

To return once more to the subject of reference from volume to volume, for the purpose of comparing the texts. I have already shewn how the comparison can, in general, be made. It remains to add a few remarks on the difficulty arising from the transposition of the subject-matter.

When vol. iii. is in hand, the difficulty does not occur, as the marginal numbers are then a sufficient guide. Neither does much difficulty occur when vol. i. is in hand, if it be remembered that the A-text passage about "the fish out of water" (vol. i. p. 132), not shifted in the B-text, *is* shifted in the C-text so as to come on p. 90 of vol. iii. All the rest of the A-text remains unshifted.

But when vol. ii. is in hand, it may sometimes be troublesome to find the corresponding passage in the C-text. The best way of doing this is just to bear in mind what the shiftings mean, viz. (1) that Haukyn's failings are now made to amplify the characters of the Seven Sins; and (2) that Lechery is made the *fourth* instead of the *second* of the Sins. In fact, the only references which really cause trouble have been already supplied, in the description of the *insertions* above. I repeat them here, *in the B-text order*.

(*d*) B. pp. 60, 61; cf. C. p. 104.
(*g*) B. 82, 83; cf. C. 112, 113.
(*a*) B. 158—160; cf. C. 90—92.
(*h*) B. 168—170; cf. C. 205—207.
(*b*) B. 225—227; cf. C. 95—97.
(*c*) B. 227, 228; cf. C. 98, 99.
(*e*) B. 228, 229; cf. C. 105.

[1] The character of Wrath has been amplified also; but it is by means of *entirely new* lines.

(*f*) B. 229—231; cf. C. 109, 110.
(*h*) B. 231; cf. C. 119.
(*i*) B. 232—234; cf. C. 124—127.

This is all the help that can well be given, and will perhaps suffice. Yet it may very well appear, hereafter, that some portion of a B-text line has been again used, in the C-text, in a different position and connection. The process of revision can only be truly described by saying that the poet took his poem *all to pieces*, and *reconstructed it.* Even where he retains the same subject-matter, he varies the language; whilst, on the other hand, he sometimes uses old expressions when dealing with new subject-matter. The number of minute differences between the versions is past all counting.

§ 15. REFERENCE TO THE EDITIONS BY WRIGHT AND WHITAKER.

Before referring to Mr Wright's edition, the place should be found in vol. ii. The reader may then find his way out of vol. ii. into Mr Wright's by help of the directions already given in that volume; see Pref. II. p. xxxviii.

Another very simple plan is to add to the number of the page in vol. ii. its *sixth part*, omitting fractions; this will give the page in Wright's edition very nearly. Example: the quotation *Si hominibus, &c.*, occurs in vol. ii. p. 227; but 227 + 37 = 264, which is the page of Wright's edition required.

In Whitaker's edition the name of the Passus is at the head of every page. Only he keeps to the separate divisions into "Piers the Plowman," "Dowel," "Dobet," and "Dobest." The following table will serve as a help.

PIERS THE PLOWMAN: Pass. i.—x.; the same as in this volume.

DOWEL. Pass. i.—vii.; called in this volume Pass. xi.—xvii., which may be obtained by adding *ten.*

DOBET. Pass. i. = Pass. xviii.; Pass. ii. = Pass. xix.; Pass. iii. = Pass. xx.; Pass. iv. = Pass. xxi.

DOBEST. Pass. i. = Pass. xxii.; Pass. ii. = Pass. xxiii.

§ 16. COMPARISON OF THE THREE TEXTS, BY PASSUS.

The division into Passus in the C-text differs considerably from that in the B-text, and, owing to the numerous variations it is not possible to shew the *precise* points at which the texts are equivalent at the commencement of each Passus. The following scheme is as near a representation of the parallelism of the texts as can well be made. Note that the *straight* lines shew that the texts are almost identical at the points indicated, but the *waved* lines shew that they are only approximately similar.

A-TEXT.	B-TEXT.	C-TEXT.
Prologue.	Prologue.	Pass. i.
Pass. i.	Pass. i.	Pass. ii.
Pass. ii.	Pass. ii.	Pass. iii.
Pass. iii.	Pass. iii.	Pass. iv.
Pass. iv.	Pass. iv.	Pass. v.
(*Not in A-text.*)	(*Not in B-text.*)	Pass. vi. 1—104.
Pass. v. 1—42	Pass. v. 1—60	„ 105—201.
„ 43—221	„ 61—391	Pass. vii.
„ 222—*end*	„ 392—519	Pass. viii. 1—157.
Pass. vi.	„ 520—*end*	„ 158—306.
Pass. vii. 1, 2	Pass. vi. 1, 2	„ 307, 308.
„ 3—*end*	„ 3—*end*	Pass. ix.
Pass. viii.	Pass. vii.	Pass. x.
	(*Here begins the Vision of Dowel.*)	
Pass. ix.	Pass. viii.	Pass. xi. 1—126.
Pass. x.	Pass. ix.	„ 127—*end.*
Pass. xi.	Pass. x.	Pass. xii. 1—162.
Pass. xii. (*peculiar*)	Pass. xi. 1—42	„ 163—*end.*
	„ 43—265	Pass. xiii. 1—166.
	(*Not in B-text.*)	„ 167—*end.*
	(*Not in B-text.*)	Pass. xiv. 1—100.
	„ 278—*end*	„ 101—*end.*
	Pass. xii.	Pass. xv.
	Pass. xiii. 1—260	Pass. xvi. 1—231.

A-TEXT.	B-TEXT.	C-TEXT.
	Pass. xiii. 276—*end* ~~	(*Several pieces inserted in* Pass. vii., viii.)
	Pass. xiv. 1—27	(*Not in C-text.*)
	„ 28—131	—Pass. xvi. 236—*end.*
	„ 132—*end*	—Pass. xvii. 1—157.
	(*Here begins Do-bet.*)	
	Pass. xv. 1—262 ~~~~	„ 158—*end.*
		(*Here begins Do-bet.*)
	„ 263—*end* ~~	Pass. xviii.
	Pass. xvi. ~~~~~~~~~~	Pass. xix.
	Pass. xvii. ————	Pass. xx.
	Pass. xviii. ————	Pass. xxi.
	(*Here begins Do-best.*)	(*Here begins Do-best.*)
	Pass. xix. ————	Pass. xxii.
	Pass. xx. ————	Pass. xxiii.

This table will be found useful for reference, and may serve to give some idea of the trouble taken by the author in revising his work.

§ 17. ADDITIONAL PASSAGES IN THE C-TEXT.

Most of the passages which are peculiar to the C-text will be found in the Notes to Mr Wright's edition of Piers the Plowman; but as they are there printed in small type, it may be doubted whether they have received anything like the attention which they deserve. Moreover, they read much better in their right place, with their own proper context. These additional passages may best be found by observing the numerous side-notes to which an obelus (†) is prefixed in this volume. To enumerate them all would be a long task, as some are but one or two lines long; I here call attention to some of the more remarkable ones only.

Pass. i. 95—124.[1] The author introduces Conscience as accusing the priests of idolatry or image-worship and of proclaiming false miracles; they are warned to take example from the evil fate of Hophni and Phineas. The following are remarkable lines, and I

[1] See the observation in the first footnote on p. 7.

give them in a modernized form. Where words are printed in italics, I have slightly altered the language.

"Conscience came and accused them · (and the commons heard it),
And said—'Idolatry ye suffer · in sundry places many;
And boxes are brought forth · y-bound with iron
To *receive*[1] the toll · of untrue sacrifice.
In meaning[2] of miracles · much wax there hangeth;
All the world wot well · it *may* not be true.
But, for it profits you to purse-ward · ye prelates suffer
That laymen in misbelief · live and die;'" &c.

Pass. ii. 108—125. Some curious observations on the fall of Lucifer, with speculations as to why he made his seat in the north (Isaiah xiv. 14).

"'Lord, why would he then · that wretched Lucifer
Leap [so] aloft · in the North side,
Nor[3] sit on the sun's side · where the day gloweth?[4]
Were it not for Northern men[5] · anon would I tell [you],
But I will *blame* none living' · quoth that lady soothly.
'It is *safer* by South · where the sun reigneth
Than in the North, by many notes · let none believe otherwise.
For thither where the fiend flew · his foot for to set,
There he failed and fell · and his fellows all;
And hell is where he is · and he there [is] bound;'" &c.

Pass. iii. 28, 29. "A briar cannot bear berries as a vine;" &c.

120—128. This passage is a good deal altered.

129—136. A curious allusion to the martyrdom of St Lawrence, who is here said to have claimed heaven as his due, on account of his sufferings.

181—189. Civil and Simony are to ride on the backs of rectors, and notaries on the backs of parsons that permute often, &c.

243—248. A passage directed against appeals to the pope.

Pass. iv. 86—114. 'Regraters' or retail-dealers are pitiless, and expect full payment for short measure; they provoke God to send

[1] Orig. *vnder-take*, here used in the sense of *receive*.

[2] Orig. *menynge*; which may bear the sense of either (1) signification, or (2) remembrance, memory.

[3] *Wolde þan* = chose rather than.

[4] *Roweth*, i. e. grows red, gleams, glows: cf. xxi. 128.

[5] Which insinuates that the author is *not* a Northerner; and that he *could* have spoken to their disadvantage.

fevers and fire. Often fires happen in a town through the carelessness of brewers, or from a neglected candle. Surely mayors ought to enquire carefully into the characters of those whom they make free of a city.

140—145. Meed is threatened with imprisonment in Corfe Castle.

203—213. An important passage, addressed to Richard II., already cited and discussed in sect. 4 above; p. xvi.

236—258. Another important passage, on the duty of a king towards his people.

292—415. A passage of that subtle and simile-seeking character which was no doubt once highly esteemed, but to us seems tedious and puerile. The author undertakes to establish parallels between the two kinds of Meed and the two kinds of grammatical relation. In tone and style it is much like another tedious passage in which the mystery of the Trinity is exemplified by reference to a man's hand or to a blazing torch, which first appears in the B-text (xvii. 135—249). Any one who carefully compares these passages (i. e. if he thinks it worth his while) may easily see that the writer of one of them would be just the man to write the other. In other words, we cannot well put aside this passage as not genuine, because the author has already previously committed himself by penning a passage equally dull.

Pass. v. 50—55. Contains an allusion to St Giles's down, Winchester, where a great fair used to be held.

187—196. An attack upon certain modes of injustice, and an allusion to the king's attempt to borrow money of the Lombards; already cited and discussed in sect. 4 above; p. xvii.

Pass. vi. 1—108. The autobiographical passage already mentioned in sect. 10 above; p. lxix.

187—197. There was perfect unity in heaven till Lucifer rebelled; so also men who dislike unity cause trouble to a realm. The pope is entreated to have pity upon holy church.

Pass. vii. 14—29, 33—40. An amplification of the description of Pride.

65—68. An amplification of the description of Envy.

106—118, 143—150. An amplification of the description of Wrath. Note the allusion to *pews*, perhaps the earliest one in English literature.

"Among wives and widows · I am wont to sit,
Y-parked in pews; · the parson knows it,
How little do I love · Letice at-the-Stile;
Because she had holy bread ere I · my heart began to change;
Afterward at meat · she and I chid;" &c.

176, 177; 190—195. An amplification of the description of Lechery.

258, 259; 291—293; 309—315; 331—333. On the sin of Avarice.

Pass. viii. 145—149. An addition to the prayer of Repentance.

257—260. God will "charge Charity to make a church in thy heart, wherein to harbour truth;" &c.

292—306. Sinners begin with one accord to make excuse; one says, 'I have bought a farm;' another, 'I have bought five yoke of oxen;' a third, 'I have married a wife.'

Pass. ix. 136—138. "Your prayers might help, if ye were perfect; but God wills that no deceit should be found in folk that go a-begging." An important passage, because it shews that the modern phrase to "go a-begging" was represented in Old English by "gon a-begged," "gon abeggeth," or "gon and beggen." It is probable that the form *abegged* is not really a past participle, but a corruption of the earlier form *abeggeth* (which occurs in MS. I, i. e. in the earlier draught of the C-text), and that this form is an imitation of the form *a hunteth* in the phrase *gon a hunteth* or *riden an hunteth*. Cf. the line (numbered 387) from Robert of Gloucester, in Specimens of English; Part ii; ed. Morris and Skeat, p. 14.

"As he *rod an hontep* · & par-auntre is hors spurnde."

But this form *hontep* is the dat. case of a substantive, viz. of the A.S. *hunta*ð or *hunto*ð. This substantive would easily be mistaken for a part of a verb; and particularly for the past participle of a verb; just as many people at this day are completely unable to distinguish between the verbal substantive *hunting* and the same form when used as a present participle. This mistake once

established, the ending *-ed* would be used freely after the verb *to go* and similar verbs. Hence the phrase in Chaucer "gon a blake-beryed," which has hitherto puzzled every reader to explain, is a mere variation of "gon a blake-berying," i. e. "go a-gathering blackberries," a synonym for "go a-wandering the Lord knows where." This solution of a long-standing difficulty has already been printed by me in Notes and Queries. Cf. "goop afaytyng" in C. x. 170.

198—202. Various kinds of agricultural work:—

"In daubing and delving · in dung-afield-bearing,
In threshing, in thatching · in thwiting[1] of pins," &c.

279—290. The parable of Dives and Lazarus, and its moral.

350—352. The "mysterious prophecy" here takes a new shape, as was remarked more than three hundred years ago by Crowley; see Prof. II. p. xxxiv.

Pass. x. 71—280. Nearly all new, and very curious. The subjects are: the poor of London, poor lunatics, sham beggars and true ones, false hermits and true ones, 'lollers' and 'lolling' friars, and unfaithful pastors. Compare the quotation from the supplementary passage in the Ilchester MS., in the description of MS. XXXII. above; p. xxxiv.

Pass. xi. 39, 40. When the righteous man sins, he falls only as a man who falls *within* a boat.

51—55. Free-will and Free-wit enable a man to row himself out of sin.

94—98. Bishops should take courage and dare to proceed against wealthy lords.

158—169; 175—181; 187—201. Sin hides God from man, whence arises despair. Wicked men believe more in wealth than in God. The folly of Lot, Noah, and Herod "the daft," who

"Gave his daughter for a dancing · in a dish the head
Of the blessed Baptist · before all his guests."

We should love our enemies, and remember that the highest aim of man is to help in bringing about the Unity of Mankind, when all

[1] Whittling; i. e. pointing wooden pegs with a knife.

lands shall love each other, and believe in one law. Especially should this be the aim of bishops.

"The chattels that Christ had · three cloths were they,
Whereof he was rifled · and robbed ere he died;
After that, he lost his life · that Law might *turn to* Love.
Prelates and priests · and princes of holy church
Should *fear* no death · nor dear years,
But wend as wide · as the world *extends*,
To till the earth with [the] tongue · and teach men to love.
For whoso loveth, believe it well · God will not let him starve
In *mishap*, for lack of meat · nor for missing of clothes."

208—210; 214—219. Illegitimate children. How Cain was conceived in sin.

239—244. A point of Westminster law.

"For though the father be a franklin · and for a felon be hanged,
The heritage that the heir should have · is at the king's will;" &c.

259—269. A rich man will not marry a pretty girl, if she be poor; but any squire or knight will marry the lowliest born, or the ugliest hag ever seen, if known to be rich or well-rented; and then wish, on the morrow,

"That his wife were wax · or a wattle-ful of nobles[1]."

309, 310. Two lines in William's best manner, such as should be engraved on the hearts of all true men:—

"For the more a man may do · *if only* he do it,
The more is he worth and worthy · of wise and good [men] praised."

Ah! that admonitory clause—"by so þat he do hit!"

Pass. xii. 21—25. On successful cheats.

61, 62. "For God is deaf now-a-days · and deigneth not to hear us,
And good men, for our guilts · he grindeth all to death."

76—80. None now follow Tobit's counsel (Tobit iv. 9).

[1] If his wife were turned to *wax*, she would be useful for making wax-candles for offering at the altar. A "watelful" of nobles means a basketful of the coins so named.

142—148; 161, 162. Various alterations are made here.

200—203; 224—227; 233, 234. Recklessness is introduced instead of the "Loyalty" of the B-text; which involves several changes in the language.

Pass. xiii. 17, 18. William here reveals the plea which the friars put forward for not complying with the conditions of their letters of fraternity. They used to ask for an additional sum in order to enable them to *make restitution* for the evil winnings of their clients.

154—247. Nearly all new. William sings the praises of poverty, and likens all men to seeds sown in the ground. Those seeds are most worthy which can best stand the severest weather; so is it also with God's saints. Fruits that contain sweet juice will not keep long; so is it with those who are rich in this world only. Foulest weeds grow on the fattest lands; so likewise vices spring up out of riches. Wealth often excites the cupidity of robbers, who murder their victims; and so both murderers and murdered come to perdition.

Pass. xiv. 1—100. But Poverty may walk in peace, and fear no thieves. Abraham and Job were rich men, whom God tried and found patient. Yet Wealth is not evil in itself, though surely Poverty commonly reaches heaven the sooner. If a merchant and a messenger go the same way, the former must needs be detained longest by his business at every resting-place. And whilst they are on the journey, the messenger may take a short cut across a wheat-field, as he is privileged to do; but if the merchant attempt to do the same, the hayward catches him and takes a pledge from him. If both go to the fair together, the merchant goes the slower, having more to carry; and goes with the heavier heart, having more to lose. Yet the merchant may reach his home safely at last. So likewise may rich and poor both reach heaven.

188—192. Men are more immoderate in their desires than any other animals.

Pass. xv. 3—27. Altered and abridged from the B-text.

30—32. A curious admission of the author's belief in astrology.

"Clergy [Learning] cometh but of sight · and *Common Sense* [comes] of Stars,
As, to be born or begot · in such a constellation
That Wit waxeth thereof · and other weirds *also*;" &c.

37—42; 72—74; 215, 216. Altered from the B-text.

Pass. xvi. 78, 79.

"It is loath to me, though I Latin know · to *blame* any sect,
For all we are brethren · though we be diversely clothed."

138; 149—152. In the B-text, a speech which is put into the mouth of Patience is now put into the mouth of Piers the Plowman, who is described as suddenly vanishing immediately after he has uttered it. The object is clearly to draw more attention to the opinions expressed in ll. 138—148; besides which, the emphatic direction that we are to love our enemies is very properly attributed to Piers the Plowman, i. e. to Jesus Christ.

154—157. Christian love and true Patience might win all France without bloodshed. L. 162 is a singular addition.

306—309. Rich men, after death, are often poor indeed.

Pass. xvii. 21—37. Altered and abridged from the B-text.

158—182. Altered from the B-text; with the substitution of Liberum-Arbitrium in the place of Reason.

Pass. xviii. 1—8; 12. Altered from the B-text.

37—40. A curious quotation from the book of Tobit.

47—52. "If religious [men] would refuse · the alms of raveners,
Then Grace would grow yet · and green-leaved wax,
And Charity, that is chilled now · should chafe of himself,
And comfort all Christians · if holy church would amend;" &c.

58—71. The poet drives home forcibly the doctrine that "charity begins at home." The following lines are good and weighty.

"For God bade His blessed [ones] · as the book teacheth,
Honour thy father and mother, &c.:
To help thy father foremost · before friars and monks,
And ere priests or pardoners · or any people else.
Help thy kin, Christ bids · for there begins charity;

And afterwards await[1] · who hath most need,
And there help, if thou hast [aught] · and that hold I charity!"

82—93. Altered from the B-text.

124—158. A discussion of the hope that Saracens and Jews may be saved.

233—249. The poet charges the pope, whose mission is peace, with maintaining war. He argues that the pope ought to promote Christianity by peaceful measures, just as Mahomet promoted his religion by means of a dove. The line

"Not through manslaughter and man's strength · had Mahomet the mastery"

involves an odd mistake, as the contrary fact is sufficiently notorious.

289—294. Just as a king's duty is to defend his people, fighting at their head at the risk of his life, so should a good pastor be ready to lay down his life for his flock.

Pass. xix. 4—30; 53—108; 118—120. Altered from the B-text. The two descriptions should be compared.

163, 164. "The Jews told the justice · how that Jesus said [it];
But the over-turning of the temple · betokened the resurrection."

228—234; 238—240. Adam, Eve, and Abel represent the Trinity. Eve was formed from Adam, and Abel proceeded from both.

Pass. xx. 232—246. An amplification of the parable of Dives. If Dives, who won his wealth *without* guile, was condemned, what will be the fate of those rich men who have won their wealth deceitfully? Make to yourselves friends with the mammon of unrighteousness, by spending your wealth wisely and liberally.

Pass. xxi. 214, 215; 218, 219. The fact that things can often be best perceived from observing their contrasts is thus enforced.

"Who could *kindly*[2] · with colours describe,
If all the world were white · and swan-white [were] all things?"
"If God had not suffred from some · other than Himself,
He had not wist *verily* · whether death were sour or sweet."

[1] i. e. look round to see. [2] naturally.

283—296. This additional passage is a great curiosity; because, in representing Satan as opposing our Lord's entrance by the aid of *guns*, our author has anticipated Milton's use of them in Paradise Lost; vi. 470.

"But rise up, Ragamuffin · and reach me all the bars
That Belial, thy bel-sire · beat, with thy dam;
And I shall let[1] this lord · and His light stop!
Ere we through brightness be blinded · bar we the gates.
Check we and chain we · and each chink stop,
That no light leap in · at loover nor at loop-hole.
And thou, Ashtaroth, hoot out · and have out our knaves,[2]
Colting, and all his kin · our chattels to save.
Brimstone boiling · burning out cast it
All hot on their heads · that enter nigh the walls.
Set bows of brake[3] · and brazen guns,
And shoot out shot enough · His squadron[4] to blind.
Set Mahomet at the mangonel[5] · and mill-stones throw ye,
With crooks and with calthrops[6] · clog[7] we them each one."

319—322. Additional lines about the temptation of Adam and Eve.

329—330; 334—337. Altered from B-text with additions.

353—361. A digression, for which the author apologizes, on the awful punishment that awaits liars.

386—388. The law requires an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth.

Pass. xxii. This Passus contains eight new lines, viz. 56—59, 152, 237, 336, and 439. On the other hand, lines 247, 366, and 371 of B. xix have disappeared.

Pass. xxiii. This Passus contains but two new lines, viz. 36 and

[1] i. e. hinder.

[2] servants, lads.

[3] A "brake" is an old term for various implements which permit great force to be employed; *bows of brake* almost certainly refer to such huge crossbows as those employed by the Genoese archers, which required a crank or winch to wind them up or "set" them.

[4] Orig. *shultrom* or *schiltrom*, from A.S. *scýld-truma*, lit. a troop-shield, and hence an armed company or battalion.

[5] A war-engine for throwing vast stones.

[6] Instruments formed by inserting four (or more) spikes into a ball. However thrown on the ground, one spike at least sticks up, and they much impede the enemy's approach.

[7] Orig. *acloye*, i. e. *cloy*, clog, or impede.

261. But there are several minute alterations, shewing that the work of revision has been carried out to the very end of the poem.

§ 18. ARGUMENT OF THE POEM. (TEXT C.)

The poem is distinctly divisible into two parts, the "Vision of Piers the Plowman," and the "Visions of Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best." Of these, the former is again divisible into two distinct visions, which may be called: (1) The Vision of the Field full of Folk, of Holy Church, and of Lady Meed, occupying Passus I.—V.; and (2) The Vision of the Seven Deadly Sins and of Piers the Plowman, occupying Passus VI.—X., preceded by a discourse between the author and Reason. The latter consists of three parts, viz. The Visions of Do-well, of Do-bet, and of Do-best. Passus I.—VII. of Do-well form Passus XI.—XVII. Passus I.—IV. of Do-bet form Passus XVIII.—XXI. Passus I. and II. of Do-best form Passus XXII. and XXIII. But some of these parts contain more than one vision, the number of visions in the whole poem amounting to *eleven*.

1. Piers the Plowman.

I. VISION OF THE FIELD FULL OF FOLK, OF HOLY CHURCH, AND OF LADY MEED.[1] *Passus I.* The author describes how, weary of wandering, he sits down to rest upon the Malvern Hills, and there falls asleep and dreams. In his vision, the world and its people are represented to him by a field full of folk, busily engaged in their avocations. The field was situated between the tower of Truth, who is God the Father, and the deep dale which is the abode of the evil spirits. In it there were ploughmen and spendthrifts, anchorites, merchants, minstrels, beggars, pilgrims, hermits, friars, a pardoner with his bulls, and priests who had deserted their cures. [Conscience[2] appears, and accuses the priests of permitting idolatry and the worship of images; warning them of the fate that befel Eli and his sons.] There was also a king, to whom Common-sense spake words of advice. Then was seen suddenly a rout of rats and mice, conspiring to bell the cat, from doing which they were dissuaded by

[1] See the argument of the B-text, vol. ii. p. xlviii.

[2] The passages within square brackets are not in the B-text.

a wise mouse. There were also barons, burgesses, tradesmen, labourers, and taverners touting for custom.

Passus II. Presently, the poet sees a lovely lady, of whom he asks the meaning of the tower. She tells him it is the abode of the Creator, who provides men with the necessaries of life. The deep dale contains the castle of Care, where lives the Father of Falseness. He next asks her name, and she tells him she is Holy Church, and instructs him how great a treasure Truth is, how Lucifer fell through Pride, [with a passing remark on Lucifer's seat being in the North,] that Love is the treacle for sin, and that the way to heaven lies through Love.

Passus III. He asks how he may know Falsehood. She bids him turn and see Falsehood and Flattery. Looking aside he sees, not them alone, but a woman in glorious apparel. He is told she is the Lady Meed (i. e. Reward) who is going to be married to Falsehood on the morrow. Holy Church then leaves him. The wedding is prepared, and Simony and Civil read a deed respecting the property with which Falsehood and Meed are to be endowed. Theology objects to the marriage, and disputes its legality, [referring to the Legend of St Lawrence;] whereupon it is agreed that all must go to Westminster to have the question decided. All the parties ride off to London, Meed being mounted upon a sheriff and Falsehood upon a 'sisour.' Thus all come to the King's court, who vows that he will punish Falsehood and his crew if he can catch them. On hearing this, Liar flees to the friars, who pity him and house him for their own purposes.

Passus IV. Lady Meed is arrested and brought before the king. The justices assure her all will go well. To seem righteous, she confesses and is shriven, offering to glaze a church-window by way of amendment; and immediately afterwards, advises mayors and judges to take bribes. [Here the author takes occasion to warn all false dealers of the vengeance of God that awaits them.] The king proposes that Meed shall marry Conscience, and she is willing to do so; but Conscience refuses, and exposes her faults; [adding an attack upon the king (Richard II.) for his bad government.] She attempts to retaliate and to justify herself; but Conscience refutes her argu-

ments. [Here a long and subtle passage is inserted in which the *two kinds* of Meed, viz. Lawful Wages and Rewards given for no good reason, are distinguished. An attempt is made to draw a parallel between them and the Direct and Indirect Relations in Grammar. Hire (i. e. Lawful Wages) resembles the Direct Relation, as when, e. g. an adjective agrees with its substantive in gender, case, and number. But Bribery or Needless Reward is like the Indirect Relation, in which there is no agreement in case.] Conscience then quotes the example of Saul to shew the evil of covetousness; and declares that Reason will one day reign upon earth, and punish all wrongdoers. Then shall men think that Messiah has come, and the reign of Peace shall begin. Conscience concludes by advising Meed always to read texts in connection with the context.

Passus V. Acting upon the advice of Conscience, the king orders Reason to be sent for; who comes, accompanied by Wiseman and Wilyman. At this moment, Peace enters, with a complaint against Wrong. Wrong, knowing the complaint is true, gets Wisdom and Wit on his side by Meed's help, and offers to buy Peace off with a present. Reason, however, is firm and will shew no pity, but advises the king to act with strict justice. The king is convinced, and prays Reason to remain with him for ever after. [Reason reminds him that Love will give him more money than the Lombards will lend him. The king dismisses all his corrupt officers.]

II. The Vision of the Seven Deadly Sins and of Piers the Plowman. *Passus VI.* [This Passus opens with a curious and interesting discourse between Reason and the author, in the course of which the author refers to his own history and mode of life.] The author goes to church, and soon falls asleep again, and has a second vision, in which he again sees the field full of folk, and Reason[1] preaching to the assembled people; reminding them that the late storm and pestilence were judgments of God. Here[2] Reason introduces the remarkable prophecy that a king would come and reform religion, when the abbot of England[3] should receive from him a knock, and incurable should be the wound.

[1] In the A-text, it is *Conscience* who preaches. [2] See B-text, x. 317.
[3] In the B-text (x. 326) it is the abbot of *Abingdon*.

Passus VII. Repentance seconds the efforts of Conscience, and many begin to repent. Of these the first is Pride,[1] who makes a vow of humility. The second is Envy, who is described with much particularity, and who confesses his evil thoughts and his attempts to harm his neighbours. The third is Wrath, a friar, whose aunt was a nun, and who had been cook to a convent, and incited many to quarrel. The fourth is Luxury, who vows to drink only water. The fifth, Avarice, who confesses how he lied and cheated, and taught his wife to cheat; and, not understanding the word *restitution*, thought that it was another term for stealing. Robert the robber also repents, and prays earnestly for forgiveness. The sixth, Gluttony, who (on his way to church) is tempted into a beer-house, of the interior of which the author gives a life-like and perfect picture. He too repents, though not till he has first become completely drunk and afterwards felt the ill effects of drinking.

Passus VIII. The seventh is Sloth, a priest who knows rimes about Robin Hood better than his prayers, and can find a hare in a field more readily than he can read lives of saints. Repentance makes intercession for all the penitents. Then they all set out in search of Truth, but no one knows the way. Soon they meet with a palmer, who has met with many saints, but never with one named *Truth*. At this juncture Piers the Plowman "put forth his head," declaring that he knows Truth well, and will tell them the way, which he then describes. [Some of the sinners begin to make excuse.] The pilgrims think the way long, and want a guide.

Passus IX. Piers says he will come himself and shew them, when he has ploughed his half-acre. Meanwhile, he gives good advice to rich ladies and to a knight. Before starting, Piers makes his will, and then sets all who come to him to hard work. Many shirk their work, but are reduced to subordination by the sharp treatment of Hunger. Next follow most curious and valuable passages respecting the diet of the poor, striking for higher wages, and the discontent caused by prosperity. A mysterious prophecy is appended.

Passus X. At this time Truth (i. e. God the Father) sends Piers

[1] Cf. B. Pass. XIII. for the *supplementary* passages.

a bull of pardon, especially intended for kings, knights, bishops, and the labouring poor, and even for some lawyers and merchants, in a less degree. [Here is introduced a curious description of the poor of London, of "lollers," and of false hermits.] A priest disputes the validity of the pardon, and wants to read it. The dispute between this priest and Piers becomes so violent that the dreamer awakes, and the Poem of Piers the Plowman (properly so called) ends with a fine peroration on the small value of papal pardons, and the superiority of a righteous life over mere trust in indulgences, at the great Day of Doom.

2. Visio de Dowel.

III. The Vision of Wit, Study, Clergy, and Scripture. *Passus XI.* In introducing a new poem,[1] the "Visio de Dowel," the author begins by describing a dialogue that passed between himself and two Minorite friars concerning the doctrine of free-will. After this, he again falls asleep, and perceives in a dream a man named Thought. He asks Thought where Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best live, and Thought gives him some account of these, but says that the best person to give him further information is Wit. After wandering for three days, the dreamer and Thought meet with Wit.

Wit[2] tells the dreamer that Do-well dwells in a castle called *Caro*, wherein also is enclosed the Lady *Anima*, and they are guarded by the constable Inwit (Conscience), and his five sons (the senses). [Here follows a discourse upon the effect of Sin in hiding God from man], the duty of the church to protect idiots and helpless persons, [and upon the value of Love.] Next follow discussions upon the good that there is in well-assorted and lawful wedlock, and the evil of mercenary or ill-advised marriages, and of adulterous connections.

Passus XII. The dreamer applies to yet one more adviser, viz. Dame Study, the wife of Wit. She laments that wicked men most

[1] Though this Vision, like the others that follow it, is, in its form, altogether a new poem, the author no doubt intended it from the first to be a continuation of the former Vision.

[2] Here, in the B-text, begins Pass. IX.

frequently obtain this world's wealth. She inveighs with great justice and force against the way in which shallow would-be theologians cavil about the mysterious things of God, and unworthily amuse themselves with vain quibbles. She laments the lack of charity, and the increase of pride. At last, she commends the dreamer to Clergy and Scripture, from whom he may hope to learn yet more. Accordingly, he seeks these, and receives some instruction from Clergy, which is soon cut short by Scripture, who so scorns the poet that he weeps and falls into a new dream.

IV. The Vision of Fortune, Nature, Recklessness, and Reason.[1] In a new vision, William sees Fortune, with her attendant damsels named Lust-of-the-flesh and Lust-of-the-eyes, who bid him rejoice in his youth. Here Recklessness is introduced, who discourses upon predestination in language similar to that in the conclusion of Pass. X. in the B-text.

Passus XIII. But at the approach of old age, William finds that the friars, once his friends, avoid him, because he wished to be buried in his parish church. Loyalty and Scripture give him good advice, and he is told why Trajan was released from hell. Recklessness[2] cites Christ's example of humility, declares poverty to be like a walnut, enlarges upon the value of poverty, [compares men to various seeds and their vices to weeds, and declares that riches bring men to perdition.]

Passus XIV. [Here the praise of poverty is continued, with the examples of Job and Abraham. Recklessness narrates the parable of the merchant and the messenger, signifying the rich and the poor;] and concludes his harangue by saying that priests unfit for their office are as bad as a notary who knows not how to draw up a charter. William's dream continues, and he sees Nature, who shews him how all animals except man follow Reason. He asks why this is; Reason rebukes him, and he awakes.

V. The Vision of Imaginative. The dreamer beholds one who rebukes him for his impatience. He asks the stranger's name.

[1] Here, in the B-text, begins Pass. XI.

[2] The long speech of Recklessness extends from XIII. 88 to XIV. 128. In the B-text, the speaker is *Loyalty*.

Passus XV. The stranger says his name is Imaginative, exhorts him not to despise learning, instructs him as to the relative chances of salvation of the learned and the ignorant, and tells him why wealth is like a peacock's tail. After distinguishing between three kinds of baptism, Imaginative suddenly vanishes, upon which the dreamer awakes.

VI. The Vision of Conscience, Patience, and Activa-Vita. *Passus XVI.* In the sixth vision, Conscience, Clergy, Patience, and the dreamer go to dine with Reason.[1] At the high daïs is seated a doctor of the church, who astonishes all by his gluttony. After dinner, the doctor, being well primed with wine, is ready to expound theological subtleties. Conscience and Patience bid farewell to Clergy and Reason, and set out as pilgrims in company with the poet. Soon they meet with one Activa-Vita, who is a minstrel and seller of wafers. Patience instructs Activa-Vita, and declares that beggars shall have joy hereafter.

Passus XVII. Patience laments that riches should rob man's soul of God's love, praises poverty, and enumerates its nine advantages.

VII. The Vision of Freewill[2] and of the tree of Charity. The poet next observes one Liberum-Arbitrium, who reproves him for presumption. William next inquires the nature of Charity, which Free-will defines.

3. Visio de Dobet.

Passus XVIII. Free-will quotes the Lives of the Saints, and shews that the friars are now far from being charitable. He alludes to the story of Mahomet's pet dove, to the fatal gift of Constantine, and to the miracles of Christ, ending with the charitable wish that Saracens and Jews may be saved.

Passus XIX. William is then shewn the tree upon which Charity grows, supported upon three props, the meaning of which is

[1] In the B-text, they dine with *Clergy*.

[2] In the B-text, *Anima* or *The Soul*. This is really a *new* vision, although, in the C-text, it is immediately subjoined to the preceding, without mention of the dreamer's awaking and again falling asleep. The poet also makes the "Visio de Dobet" begin further on, instead of here as in the B-text.

explained by Free-will.[1] Next follows a part of the history of Christ, His incarnation, miracles, and betrayal by Judas Iscariot. At this point the dreamer suddenly awakes. In his anxious search after Free-will,[1] he meets with Abraham or Faith.

VIII. The Vision of Faith, Hope, and Charity. Faith (Abraham) explains how he became God's herald. and shews William the leper (Lazarus) lying in his lap.

Passus XX. Next William beholds *Spes*, or Hope, who, like Abraham, is in search of Piers. Spes and William journey towards Jerusalem, and behold a Samaritan riding near them. Soon they find a wounded man lying in the way. Faith and Hope pass by him, but the Good Samaritan (i. e. Charity or Christ Himself in the garb of Piers the Plowman) has compassion upon him, and takes care of him, leaving him at an inn called *Lex-Dei*.[2] The dreamer asks for instruction, and learns from the Samaritan how the Holy Trinity is symbolized by a man's hand, or by a blazing torch. The sin against the Holy Ghost is alluded to; also the three things which drive a man out of his own house. Once more the dreamer awakes.

IX. The Vision of the Triumph of Piers the Plowman. *Passus XXI.* This, the finest Passus in the whole poem, is entirely occupied with the history of Jesus. With growing power and vividness, the poet describes the crucifixion, with the healing of Longeus, the struggle between Life and Death and between Light and Darkness, the meeting together of Mercy and Truth, Righteousness and Peace, whilst the Saviour rests in the grave; a triumphant description of His descent into hell, [where Satan attempts to oppose Him with "brazen guns,"] and His victory over Satan and Lucifer, till the poet wakes in ecstasy, with the joyous peal of the bells ringing in his ears on the morning of Easter day.

4. Visio de Dobest.

X. The Vision of Grace. *Passus XXII.* But alas! the poem of Dobest reveals how far off the end yet is. The Saviour, having earned the names of Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best, leaves earth,

[1] In the B-text, not Free-will, but Piers the Plowman.

[2] In the B-text, *Lex-Christi*.

upon which Antichrist is soon to descend. Piers *henceforth* denotes the whole Christian body, upon whom Grace or the Holy Spirit bestows various gifts. Grace makes Piers His ploughman, and gives him four oxen (the four evangelists), and four "stots" (the four chief Latin "fathers"); also four seeds, which are the cardinal virtues. Pride and his host attack the Church of Unity. All men are invited by Conscience to partake of the eucharist, but an impenitent brewer refuses to do so, and an ignorant vicar reviles the cardinals whom the pope sends from Avignon. A lord and a king are introduced, who justify their own exactions. Then the dreamer awakes.

XI. The Vision of Antichrist. *Passus XXIII.* Before falling asleep once more, William encounters Need, who rebukes and instructs him. He then dreams once more how Antichrist assails the Church of Unity, which is defended by Conscience against Pride and all his host. Diseases assail all mankind; Death "pashes" to the dust kings and knights, emperors and popes, and many a lovely lady. Life, with his mistress Fortune, indulges in all kinds of excesses. He becomes the father of Sloth, who marries Wanhope. Old-age appears as the enemy of Life. The dreamer takes refuge in the castle of Unity, which is beleaguered by many foes, especially by Sloth and Avarice. The friars craftily offer to aid Conscience. At last one Flattery, a friar, gains admission to the castle, offering to salve Conscience of all hurts with soothing but deadly remedies, till Conscience, hard beset by Pride and Sloth, cries out to Contrition to help him; but Contrition slumbers, benumbed by the deadly potions he has drunk. With a last effort Conscience arouses himself, and seizes his pilgrim's staff, determined to wander wide over the world till he shall find Piers the Plowman. Again the dreamer awakes, and here ceases the still unfinished history of the religious life of man.[1]

[1] For a more detailed and exact analysis of the poem, as it stands in the B-text, see Professor Morley's English Writers, vol. i. p. 758.

PREFACE IV.

RICHARD THE REDELES.

§ 1. This poem is now printed for the third time. It has already been twice printed by Mr Wright, viz. for the Camden Society, 1838, and in 'Political Poems and Songs,' 1859, vol. i. p. 368, with the title of a 'Poem on the Deposition of Richard II.' The edition of 1838 is the one which I have most consulted, and is alone referred to in the Footnotes and General Notes.

§ 2. I have purposely altered the title, because it is somewhat misleading. It is clear from the internal evidence that the poem was written *before* Richard was formally deposed; whilst the title given by Mr Wright is calculated to give the impression that it was written afterwards. The title 'Richard the Redeles' (i. e. Richard devoid of counsel) is simply taken from what is really the first line of the Poem, since the Prologue may be looked upon as a sort of preface.[1] In that line—

"Now, Richard þe redeles · reweth on ȝou self"—

the poet very happily strikes the keynote of the whole poem, which is entirely concerned with the 'redeles' character of the king and his favourites.

§ 3. The MS. from which the text is printed is, unfortunately, unique. It is MS. XIX. of the 'Piers Plowman' MSS., i. e. MS. Ll. 4. 14 in the Cambridge University Library, which has been already described in Pref. II. p. xx, to which the reader is referred. On observing the striking similarity between this MS. and the Oriel

[1] Cf. the Note to Pass. i. 1.

MS. described in Pref. II. p. xvi, I had at first a slight hope that some trace of another copy of the poem might appear in that MS. also, which is of earlier date. But the only trace discoverable is the somewhat significant one that a considerable number of leaves have been torn out of the MS., just where the poem ought to have appeared. There remained therefore nothing to be done but to reproduce the text of the Cambridge MS. as carefully as possible, although it is, unfortunately, a rather late copy, written, perhaps, towards the middle of the fifteenth century. A few obvious corrections have been made, but the actual readings of the MS. have been always recorded in the footnotes in such cases. I have also carefully collated Mr Wright's edition of 1838 with the MS., in order to correct the few errors which appear there. Thus I have corrected *ffordyd* to *ffondyd*, prol. 50; *y-lyste* to *y-lyfte*, i. 4; *gestis* to *gostis*, i. 25; *neft* to *nest*, i. 51; *caringe* to *curinge*, i. 96; *the* to *þat*, i. 103; *mals* to *maters*, i. 111; *And* to *As*, ii. 4; *roune* to *ronne*, ii. 5; *ȝiste* to *ȝifte*, ii. 96; *and* to *in*, ii. 106; *rabeyn* to *raveyn*, ii. 159; *woves* to *wones*, ii. 180; *hic* to *homo*, iii. 32; *broud* to *brond* (or rather, *bond*, as explained in the footnote), iii. 94; *mouside* to *monside*, iii. 105; *cloped* to *cloþed*, iii. 106; *hone* to *houe*, iii. 326; and *bouet* to *bonet*,[1] iv. 72; with a very few other slight alterations in spelling, not worth mentioning. I have also inserted the five Latin quotations (viz. at i. 8; ii. 52, 139; iii. 32, 128), which Mr Wright unfortunately omitted, owing to a peculiarity in the arrangement of the text by the scribe which requires careful attention, as will appear from the following explanation.

§ 4. The copies of Piers the Plowman and of Richard the Redeles in MS. XIX. are in the same handwriting, and are similarly arranged; and this arrangement can only be rightly understood by examining the former carefully. By turning to it, we at once perceive that the scribe adopts the singular plan, apparent in no other copy of the poem, of writing the Latin quotations *in the margin* of the MS., instead of leaving them in their proper place in the text. They thus have the *appearance* of being supplementary, or added as a commentary; they look like detached annotations instead of

[1] Mr. Wright makes this correction (but no other) in his edition of 1859.

forming an integral part of the text. Not observing this peculiarity, Mr Wright unfortunately considered them as comments, and omits to mention any but one, which he quotes in his Preface with a misreading that led him to take a wrong view of the scribe's sentiments, as will be shewn further on. If, however, these five quotations be considered, it will be seen that they all suit the context, and drop into their right places. Thus, the quotation from 1 Tim. vi. 10 is correctly cited as authorising the assertion in i. 8; that from Luke xi. 17 clearly refers to the word *deseueraunce* in ii. 50; that from Psalm x. 17 comes in well enough after ii. 139; the quotation following iii. 32 is clearly led up to by the words "as clerkis me tolde;" and lastly, the quotation from Mat. xi. 8 completes the sentence to which it is subjoined. These appeals to Scripture or to the writings of "clerks" are exactly in Langland's usual manner, and the quotations are to be ascribed to the author, and not to the scribe. The only remark by the scribe is at iii. 281, where "n*o*ta, n*o*ta, n*o*ta," appears in the margin. This remark Mr Wright interprets as expressing surprise or dissent on the part of the scribe. It expresses, in my opinion, the converse, viz. admiration or approbation, and may have been simply copied along with all the rest. The remark "nota," expressing particular approbation, abounds in MSS. of Piers the Plowman, and is not uncommon even elsewhere.

There are, however, a few marginal notes *in a later hand*, which really *are* marginal notes and nothing more; such as "Overwatchynge" against iii. 282; "Kew-kaw" against iii. 299, and the like. But all these were written in many years afterwards, and have nothing to do with the original text except as valueless comments.

§ 5. DATE OF THE POEM.

The internal evidence enables us to settle the date of the poem almost within a fortnight. The following lines in the Prologue—

> "I had pete of his passion · þat prince was of Walis
> And eke oure crouned kynge · till crist woll no leng*er*;
> And ffor I wuste not witt*er*ly · what shulde fall,

Whedir god wolde ȝeue him grace · sone to amende,
To be oure gioure aȝeyn · or graunte it anoþer, &c."

shew clearly that it was written after Richard had been taken prisoner, Aug. 18, 1399, and before he had been formally deposed, Sept. 30 in the same year. Other indications of date are in the allusion to the execution of Lord Scrope at Bristol, July 29, and to the release of the Earl of Warwick, who almost immediately after is heard of at Newcastle-under-Lyne, August 25; see Notes to ii. 152 and iii. 94. Allowing a few days for news to travel, and observing the author's boldness in rebuking Richard, as if his chances of escape seemed but small, we see that the date is restricted very nearly to the first three weeks in September. We may therefore put it down as belonging to September, 1399, without fear of error.

The poem probably took at least some days to compose; and so quick was the progress of events at that time, when everything was in the hands of Bolingbroke, who could act, when he chose, with amazing promptitude and unerring rapidity, that we may fairly trace an increasing boldness in the poet's language as he proceeds. In fact, the course of events must have considerably interfered with the poet's plans. He begins by addressing the poem to Richard personally, whose hand he intended it to reach (prol. 53), declaring that he would not publish it till it had been approved of (prol. 61); but he afterwards declares that a day of reckoning had come, and that God had judged evil-doers and restored peace (iii. 352—371). I here throw out the suggestion for what it is worth, that the unfinished state of the existing copy of the poem may be due to the fact that the poem itself never *was* finished; that the course of events, in fact, cut it short in the middle. The news of Richard's formal deposition would naturally put an end to it; the announcement of this fact would shew that it was quite useless to persevere in addressing a poem to a sovereign whose power was at an end. The lines

"And if ony word write be · þat wrothe make myghte
My souereyne, þat suget · I shulde to be" (prol. 76)

would already be out of date; and we may well suppose, further, that the poem never was published after all, i. e. that copies of it

were not then multiplied. It is fortunate that the present unique copy has survived at all. Well might the poet exclaim, with creditable sagacity—

"It passid my parceit · and my·preifis also,
How so wondirffull werkis · wolde haue an ende!" (prol. 17.)

§ 6. AUTHORSHIP OF THE POEM.

As to the authorship of the poem, I have not the slightest hesitation in ascribing it to William, the author of Piers the Plowman. That it must be his, and his only, was suggested to me years ago, on the first perusal of it; and after considering the question with the utmost care, from every point of view, not once only, but many times, I am not only entirely satisfied on this point in my own mind, but considerably surprised to think that there could ever have been a moment's doubt about it, or any place for a contrary opinion.[1] I think it is fair to say, in addition, that I should be the very last person to admit as William's any lines which are not his; and that, considering the number of times which I have read over his famous poem in one manuscript after another, I should be the very first person to distinguish between his original style and any imitation of it. In describing the various MSS. of Piers the Plowman, for example, I have often pointed to spurious lines, which are easily detected. Yet it is well known that Mr Wright, through the editor both of Piers the Plowman and of the present poem, failed to see their common authorship, and has, indeed, given his opinion on the other side. I think I shall best meet this difficulty by shewing how he came to be misled upon this point. I attribute it all to the fact mentioned above, viz. that he mistook a quotation to be a scribe's comment, which really forms an integral part of the text; and, in addition to this, he entirely misread and misconstrued that quotation. Since this was his chief reason, if not his sole reason, for deciding *against* William as the author, the very same quotation, interpreted in a very different manner, *now* furnishes an argument in William's favour rather than otherwise. The quotation in question is that on

[1] I claimed the poem of "Richard" for William seven years ago, in Pref. I. p. xxxvii.

p. 487. The author says that the White Hart (Richard), in attacking the Horse (the earl of Arundel) and others, had acted unnaturally. "No man," he says, "ought to desire to do harm to them that are near of kin to themselves, or to wish to take measures that an ally of theirs should bleed. Such conduct is contrary to nature, as learned writers have told me:—*Propter ingratitudinem liber homo reuocatur in seruitutem, ut in stimulo compunccionis et in lege Ciuili;* i. e. on account of ungrateful behaviour a freed man is degraded to a state of slavery, both according to the sting of compunction[1] and in the civil law." The allusion is not quite clear, and I do not profess to make it so; but we can see the general drift of it. The poet is citing some author to prove his point, viz. that unnatural or ungrateful conduct is deserving of punishment, and that a man who does not know how to make good use of his liberty ought to be again enslaved. Of one thing, at any rate, I am quite sure, that the words *liber homo* can only be rightly translated by *a free man* or *a freed man*. And now see to what a curious result Mr Wright's misreading of the sentence led him. It just so happens that the word *homo* is written "h°," by way of abbreviation, the *o* being perfectly clear, smooth, round, and regular. This he read as "h^{c}," an abbreviation for *hic*. But this alters the sense of *liber*, which is no longer an adjective but a substantive; we now get *liber hic*, meaning *this book*. Next, because the quotation, like all the rest, (amounting to several hundreds in the course of the volume) happens to be written at the *side* of the page, as already explained, he takes the whole remark to be a comment by the scribe, expressing condemnation of the book he was copying, as thus:—"On account of the author's ingratitude, this book is hereby recalled into slavery;" whatever that may mean. And being thus once turned into the wrong track, he seems, as far as I can follow him, to have put a distinction between a supposed unpopular poem like the present, and such a popular one as Piers the Plowman. It is singular that the difference between the two readings "h°" and "h^{c}" occupies no

[1] Can this be a reference to Hampole's 'Pricke of Conscience'? I think it probable. See ll. 53—64, 117—122, 161—168 in that poem, ed. Morris. Perhaps the exact reference may be found hereafter.

more space than might easily be covered by a pin's head; nevertheless this variation makes *all* the difference, and shews how careful one has to be.

Having thus cleared the way by getting rid of this troublesome mis-reading, we may now consider what grounds there are for supposing the present poem to be William's.

And here, my only fear is that of overstating the arguments; of producing, that is, so many, that the reader may suspect that I am conscious of a weakness in some of them. The fairest way of stating the case is by declaring that there is not a single point of *disconnection* between the poem of Richard and that of Piers the Plowman. In every point of evidence, whether internal or external, there is not, that I can see, a trace of suspicion. If, for example, this poem had been found *detached* from Piers the Plowman, or in the handwriting of another scribe from that of the one who wrote out Piers the Plowman; if it had been in different metre, or not divided into Passus; if it had shewn a difference in the rhythm or ring of the lines, or any variation in phraseology, or style, or mode of illustration by quotations, or in any other point, then in that point or respect something might be said on the other side. I know very well how these arguments can be met. It is easy to say, for example, what is quite true, viz. that the mere fact of the two poems appearing together in the same handwriting in the same MS., proves no real connection between the two. But the right answer to this is, that, so far at least, it bars the disconnection; that it is an indication which, however weak, is yet right as far as it goes, and, *taken in connection with all the other reasons*, is really of some slight weight, inasmuch as it answers the suspicion of disconnection that might, under another arrangement, have arisen. So also, with respect to the internal evidence; here I am reminded that mere resemblance of phraseology proves no more than that one poem is an *imitation* of the other; to which I only shall reply that such resemblances are at times far more minute than any mere imitator could have attained to. With these preliminary remarks, I proceed to shew what sort of evidence we have for connecting the poems.

First of all, I bring forward one argument which ought to decide

the whole question, viz. that the author of Richard *distinctly claims to have written* the Vision. This very important point has hitherto been completely overlooked.

He says (iii. 315)—

> For, as reason and right · *rehearsed tq me once,*
> 'Tho ben men of this molde · þat most harme worchen.'

The former of these lines is merely a poetical way of saying—"as I have already remarked elsewhere;" whilst the latter is a quotation, verbatim, from Piers the Plowman, A. 3. 71, or B. 3. 80. Very nearly as significant is the expression in the Prologue, 82, 83—

> The story is of no estate [of men] · that strive against their lusts,
> But [of] those that follow their flesh · and their frail thoughts.

This may very well mean, "this story is not like my former one, the subject of which was Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best, or the gradual perfection of the Christian life;" for we could hardly better describe the *general drift* of Piers the Plowman than by using this terse summary by its author, that it is "a story of the estate of mankind, represented as striving against all worldly lusts," and attaining to perfection in one instance only, viz. in the case of Piers the Plowman, i. e. Jesus Christ.

Of course this evidence was easily overlooked as long as it was not perceived that iii. 316 is quoted verbatim from the older poem; but now that I have once given the reference, I do not see how this very convincing argument can be met.

I shall now arrange the different points of evidence under the two headings, (1) external and (2) internal.

(1) *External evidence.*

(*a*) P. Pl. is in alliterative verse. So is *Richard.*

(*b*) Both poems are divided into *Passus.*

(*c*) These Passus are of variable length, yet not dissimilar in length in the two poems.

Rich. prologue contains 87 lines; this is rather short; but the Prol. to A-text is not much longer, viz. of 108 lines.

Rich. Pass. I. contains 114 lines; only 4 lines less than *P. Pl.* A. 9, which has 118 lines.

Rich. Pass. II. has 192 lines; just 4 lines less than *P. Pl.* C. 5, which has 196 lines.

Rich. Pass. III. has 371 lines. So has *P. Pl.* C. 17.

(*d*) The first line of the Prologue to *Richard* begins with the word *And*. It contains also the pronoun *I*. The last line of *P. Pl.* also contains the pronoun *I*, and the one poem reads right on, as a continuation of the other. Thus:—

"And suthe he gradde after grace · til *ich* gan awake.
And, as *I* passid in *my* preiere · þer prestis were at messe."

The words about "passing in my prayer" are clearly suggested by the lines in which Conscience declares he will become a pilgrim, wandering wide all over the world, and never resting till he finds Piers the Plowman.

(*e*) *P. Pl.* is written in a mixed dialect, so that the present tense plural commonly ends in *-en*, but sometimes also in *-eth*. Again, the past participles sometimes have *y-* prefixed, and sometimes want that prefix. These and other peculiarities appear in *Richard*. Thus we find the plurals *feblen, harmen*, in iii. 16, 18; but *steleth* in iii. 21. So, also, we find the p.p. *filled, Ioyned*, in i. 35, 38; but *ygraue, ydoutid*, in i. 40, 42. In *P. Pl.* we sometimes find *I-* or *y-* prefixed to past tenses; cf. *I-knewe*, Rich. i. 92. The dialect depends somewhat on the scribe, it is true; but we can see the scribe is right in some at least of these points, by the rhythm of the lines. It is hardly worth while to discuss the dialect further; it is sufficient to observe that it is precisely the same as that employed in most of the MSS. of Piers the Plowman.

(*f*) In *P. Pl.* we find occasional Latin quotations cited as adducing authority for certain statements in the text. In *Richard* we find five such, as has been already explained. But I doubt if a single quotation, introduced in William's manner, can be found in any other *alliterative* poem extant. Other authors introduce quotations by making them fall into the alliterative rhythm. William alone introduces quotations *in Latin prose*, just as freely as Hampole introduces them amongst his rimed verses. In *P. Pl.* the majority of these quotations are from the Bible; in *Richard*, four out of the five are from the Bible.

Thus, in every external point, in the form of verse, the division into Passus, the length of the Passus, the linking together of the Poems as consecutive, in the dialect, and in the introduction of quotations, the two poems have every symptom of connection, and in each and every of these points disconnection is barred.

(2) *Internal evidence.*

(*a*) William must have been an old man at the time of writing *Richard.* He seems to have been forty-five years old in 1377 or thereabouts; and if we put his birth in 1332, he would be 67 in 1399. But he distinctly intimates his old age in the lines—

"For it falleth as well to fodes[1] · of four and twenty years,
Or young men of yesterday · to give good redes,[2]
As becometh a cow · to hop in a cage!" (iii. 260).

In his eyes, a man of 24 years old was but a young man of yesterday, whose counsel was to be despised.

(*b*) At the time of writing the C-text, William seems to have retired to the West of England again, and may probably have seen once more his "Malvern Hills." We are *not* then surprised to find him at Bristol (*Rich.* prol. 2); though, had we heard of him at Norwich or York, we might indeed have wondered what took him there.

(*c*) The peculiarities of metre in both poems are the same. Such peculiarities afford close, cogent, and positive evidence, of a character that it would prove very difficult to demolish. I shall not take the trouble to carry this evidence very far, though it admits, at the expense of tediousness, of considerable accuracy. Some of the peculiarities are these.

(α) William seems hardly to care a rush for any rules, and at times daringly introduces lines in which the alliteration is imperceptible, as, e. g. in the line—

"And plastred hem so esyly · þei drede no synne;"
P. Pl. B. 20. 377.

Just so in *Rich.* 3. 137, 162:—

"Out of þe domes carte · as he þat þroff neuere."
"But now þer is a gyse · þe queyntest of all."

[1] children; lit. persons *fed.* [2] pieces of advice.

(β) William often omits the chief-letter of the alliteration, contrary to all rule, as in *P. Pl.* B. 2. 42—

"And al is lyeres ledyng · þat she is þus ywedded."

So also in *Rich.* 3. 113—

"Cursidnesse and combraunce · amonge þe yonge lordis."

A few similar instances of careless alliteration may be found in other alliterative poems, as, e. g., in the first line of the Crede, unless *begynnynge* be, as I suspect, an error for *comsynge;* but they are *unusually* frequent in the two poems we are comparing.

(γ) William alliterates *f* with *v*. This is a very curious point, since similar instances *in other authors* are, at any rate, very few in number. I may observe that it was by observing this peculiarity that I first felt *sure of my ground*, as I then felt that I had laid hold of an argument which is a very strong one indeed, and will puzzle any one to set aside. Every critic must see the force of this.

I accordingly give several instances; the list, however, is not exhaustive. This peculiarity serves the further purpose of linking *all the three texts* of Piers the Plowman together.

Examples from the A-text.

And *f*etten vr *v*itayles · of þe *f*ornicatours; 2. 155.
Till *V*igilate þe *v*eil · *f*ette water at his eiȝen; 5. 223.
And made a-*v*ou bi*f*ore god · for his *f*oule sleuþe; 5. 230.
Beoþ þreo *f*aire *v*ertues · and beoþ not *f*er to *f*ynde; 9. 70.

Add to these two remarkable examples where the chief-letter is omitted or misplaced :—

Whi þat *v*eniaunce *f*el · on Saul and his children; 3. 245.
And þe *v*ernicle bi-*f*ore · *f*or men schulde him knowe; 6. 14.

Examples from the B-text.

Amonges *f*oure *v*ertues · þe best of all *v*ertues; prol. 103.
But *f*et hym al with *v*enesoun · de*f*ame we hym neuere; prol. 194.
*F*orgoers and *v*itaillers · and *v*okates of þe arches; 2. 60.
þan for ani any *v*ertue or *f*airenesse · or any *f*ree kynde; 2. 76.
And *v*owed to *f*ast · *f*or hunger or *f*or thurst; 5. 388.
I haue made *v*owes *f*ourty · and *f*orȝete hem on þe morne; 5. 404.
I *v*isited neuere *f*ieble men · ne *f*ettered *f*olke in puttes; 5. 412.
Bothe *f*lesche and *f*issche · and many other *v*itailles · 5. 443.

And made avowe to-fore god · for his foule sleuthe; 5. 457.
Veniaunce, veniaunce · forȝiue be it neuere; 17. 287.
Tyl þe vendage falle · in þe vale of iosephath; 18. 367.
And alle þo faire vertues · as vyces þei semeth; 19. 453.

And the following, in which the chief-letter is omitted or misplaced:—

And vigilies and fastyng-dayes · alle þise late I passe; 5. 416.
And the verniole bifore · for men shulde knowe; 5. 530.

Examples from the C-text.

Amonges foure vertues · most vertuose of vertues; 1. 131.
The ferst of tho ys fode · and vesture þe secounde; 2. 23.
And þo þat fynden me my fode · vouchen saf, ich trowe; 6. 49.
Freres folowen my vore · fele tyme and ofte; 7. 118.
The vylenye of my foule mouþe · and of my foule mawe; 7. 433.

And the following, in which the chief-letter is omitted:—

Venged me fele tymes · oþer brend my-self with-ynne; 7. 74.

Examples from Richard the Redeles.

So full was it filled · with vertuous stones; 1. 35.
For venym on þe valeye · hadde foule with hem fare; 2. 150.
And fedith him on þe venym · his felle to anewe; 3. 24.
And þey folweth þe vois · at þe frist note; 3. 56.
At iche movinge fotte · venyaunce þey asked; 3. 108.
So vertue wolde flowe · whan vicis were ebbid; 3. 206.
Devourours of vetaile · þat fouȝten er þei paide; 3. 371.

This alliteration of *f* with *v* furnishes a simple and convenient test of William's workmanship. I must ask all who deny his claim to the poem of "Richard" to produce frequent instances of similar alliteration *in poems by other authors* before they can be entitled to any reply to their arguments.[1]

[1] Lines in which *v* occurs throughout are very scarce. The following is an example:—

Thus veniaunce, veniaunce · verrey charite asketh; B. 17. 289; C. 20. 271.

But, *in other poems*, such is the regular form. Observe, for example, the following:—

In devoydynge þe vylanye · þat venkquyst his þewes;
Allit. Poems, ed. Morris; B. 544.

þis watȝ a uengaunce violent · þat voyded þise places; *id.* 1013.

For more instances in the same volume, see B. 199, 544, 574, 664, 744, 863, 1151, 1280, 1288, 1311, 1358, 1648, 1713; and C. 71, 165, 333, 370; the only line which I observe to run upon *f*, *v*, *v*, is C. 331. In William of Palerne, we

Whilst treating of this point, it may be remarked here that the scribe of the unique copy of the poem uses *ff* nearly throughout instead of initial *f*. This *ff* is merely the way of writing the capital letter, and is therefore invariably used at the beginning of a line; see note 3 on p. xxviii. I have retained the scribe's use of it, because it has been suggested that he may have meant something by it; but I believe it to have been a mere freak, as it is used by the same scribe in his copy of Piers the Plowman. Some scribes have a special fancy for the use of capital letters; the "Romans of Partenay," for example, abounds with words beginning with capital *a* (A) to such an extent as to have caused serious inconvenience in the printing. If it be absolutely necessary to assign a positive value to the form *ff*, the most likely value is that of the Welsh *ff* as distinguished from *f*, that is, of the sound *f* as distinguished from the sound *v*. If so, the practice of the scribe differed, possibly, from that of his author; for William seems to have considered the *f*-sound as sufficiently near to the *v*-sound for the purpose of alliteration. In other words, he seems to have inclined to the Southern English pronunciation of *f*, for which *v* (*u*) is written so frequently in Robert of Gloucester, John de Trevisa, and the Ayenbite of Inwyt.

(δ) But a still stronger argument remains, viz. in the use of curious words, phrases, and expressions. Many of these have been pointed out already in the footnotes to the poem, pp. 469—503. Who but William ever used the word *culorum* (Rich. prol. 72; 4. 61)? Who else talks of *construing a clause* (l. 83), of *moving a matter* (l. 84), or of *comsing* [i. e. *commencing*] *words* (4. 35)?

find lines founded on *f*, *v*, *f* (l. 1685), and *v*, *v*, *f* (l. 5197); but *v* occurs throughout in l. 639, and we have the curious linking together of *w*, *w*, *v*, in l. 1121. In the 'Alexander' fragment in the same volume, we find *v* throughout in l. 281; but my impression is that the author of these two poems avoided the use of *v* as being an awkward letter to manage.

Respecting the Morte Arthure and the Troy-boke, I am indebted to Mr Donaldson for some valuable notes. It hence appears that *v* in Morte Arthure is common throughout the line, as in ll. 41, 353, 1982; see especially ll. 2047-51 and 2570-3, where several lines running have *v* for the rime-letter. So also in the Troy-boke; see ll. 49, 339, 1249, 2140, 2145, 2432, 3502, 4017, 7030, 7045, 7092, 7121. But examples of *f* alliterated with *v* are very scarce; it is doubtful if any appear in the Troy-boke, and in the Morte Arthure ll. 772, 1983 seem the best examples; and perhaps we may add ll. 867 and 910.

Where else are we to look for *mischief is up* (1. 29), for *wroth as the wind* (3. 153), for *yhote truss* (3. 228), or for *bald reasons* (4. 70)? Even such words as *for-wene* (1. 27), and *y-luggyd* (3. 336), are not particularly common elsewhere. I quite admit that some of the resemblances are almost *too* close, as, e. g. in 1. 9, 1. 33, 2. 97, 2. 139, 3. 253,[1] where nearly the whole of the lines in Richard are merely copied from Piers the Plowman. These instances are such as an imitator would easily have achieved, and they would on that account induce suspicion, but for our knowledge of the fact that it had for years been William's practice to rewrite much that he composed, working up old material and new together. But when we come to some of the other instances, in which the verbal resemblances are only to be discovered by one who, like myself, happens to know thousands of lines of Piers the Plowman almost by heart, the case is altered; we then have internal evidence for a common author of the two poems of the strongest kind. Such, for instance, is the alliteration of *bragging* and *boasting* in C. 9. 152; *Rich.* 2. 80, 3. 186; of *clothing* and *quaintly*, A. pr. 24; *Rich.* 3. 176; of *rewme* and *rain*, B. 3. 207; *Rich.* 3. 248; of *stumble* and *stand*, C. 11. 35; *Rich.* 2. 82; of *run* and *ride*, C. 4. 271; *Rich.* 2. 58; and of *rightfully* and *reason*, C. 2. 50; *Rich.* prol. 48. Other striking instances are these, which are rather beyond the reach of a mere imitator, who would hardly have thought such imitations to be worth his while.

Two *rysen rapliche* · and rounede to-geders; C. 7. 383;
And *ros* with him *rapely* · to riȝtyn his wronge; *Rich.* pr. 13.

Musynge on þis meteles · a myle-wey ich ȝeode;
And *meny tymes* this meteles · *made me* to studie; C. 10. 296.
This *made me* to *muse* · *many tyme* and ofte; *Rich.* pr. 30.

On *god*, whenne me greued ouht · and *grucched of hus sonde;*
C. 7. 111.
And not to *grucchen* a grott · aȝeine *godis sonde; Rich.* pr. 35.

Ther treuthe is, þe trone · þat *trinite* ynne sitteþ.
Lere it þus lewede men · for lettrede hit knoweþ,
That treuthe and trewe loue · ys no *tresour* bettere;
C. 2. 134-6.

[1] Excepting, of course, 3. 316, which professes to be, as it is, a quotation.

For all is *tresour* of þe *trinite* · þat turneth men to gode ;
Rich. pr. 46.

To whom but William should *tresour* have thus suggested itself in connection with *trinite?*

Or Poule þe apostle · *þat no pitee hadde ;*
B. 10. 424 ; C. 12. 268.
By preysinge of polaxis · *þat no pete hadde ; Rich.* 1. 17.

Here the recurrence of a not very striking half-line is well worth notice.

In like manner we may see great force in such a coincidence as the following.

Lawe *withouten loue* · leye þere a bene ; B. 11. 165.
For legiance *without loue* · litill þinge availith ; *Rich.* 1. 24.

There is nothing remarkable in a couple of words like *without love.* But there is an extraordinary coincidence in the fact that they come into the line *in exactly the same place,* and that they are followed by half-lines of *almost exactly the same significance.* The phrase *leye þere a bene* means "lay or stake a bean upon it, for it is worth no more ;" with which *litill þinge availith* is a synonymous expression.

It seems hardly worth while to pursue this argument further ; since any one who wishes to see more examples of such coincidences has only to look up the references given in the footnotes. It deserves to be added that the finding of these references was a tedious and difficult task. They may be obvious enough now that they are given, but they were hard enough to find in the first instance.

(η) The last argument I shall adduce is by appealing to the evidence of originality in the poem of "Richard." An imitator of William might have copied his phrases, but how was he to attain to his genius? It is a great satisfaction to find, moreover, that William's power did not fail him in his old age. There are some passages in his last poem which exhibit him almost at his best. I shall merely give the references to some of these ; the reader may then form his own opinion. See, e. g. Pass. i. 1—19 ; 25—59 ; ii. 162—167 ; 186—192 ; iii. 116—243 ; 324—337 ; 352—371 ; iv. 31—82. In particular, the passage iii. 116—189 is a well-wrought

piece of lively and sustained satire, whilst the contrast between the fashionable courtiers and Wisdom in his homely garb "of the old shape" (iii. 211—238) is excellent. The supposition of such passages being written by a poet of less power than William is like supposing that there may have been two Shakespeares. Few better things have ever been said than in his marvellous and bold substitution of the fashionable dresses of the courtiers for the courtiers themselves, as if the only part of the courtier that was worth mention was the dress which he wore. When Wisdom's life was threatened, it was not by creatures that could be called *men*, it was by the *sleeves themselves!* The severe and supreme contempt of the satire almost evaporates when we analyse it thus critically, but take the passage as it stands, and what could be better? Wisdom attempts to come near Richard's court, and what happens?

> He was hallooed [at] and hunted · and yhote truss,[1]
> And his dwelling ydemed[2] · a bow-draught from them,
> And each man was charged · to chop at his crown,
> If he nighed them any nearer · than they had him named.[3]
> The porter with his pikes · then put him outer,
> And warned[4] him the wicket · whilst the watch dured.
> "Let's slay him!" quoth *the sleeves · that slid upon the earth,*[5]
> *And all the beardless burns*[6] · *bayed on him ever,*
> And scorned him, for his slaveyn[7] · was of the old shape.
> Thus Malapert was mightful · and master of [the] house,
> And ever wandered Wisdom · without the gates.

Such was the end of Wisdom's attempt to insinuate himself into Richard's court.

Almost equally good is the description of the packed parliament of Sept. 1397, in iv. 31—82. When we read that "some argued against *right*" (iv. 45), it is clear that the poet, with consummate irony, means that "they *pretended to* argue against *wrong*," viz. against the wrongful imposition of inordinate taxes; though this actual *wrong* was a theoretical *right* on the part of the king who expected acquiescence. The king demands an extravagant sum of

[1] bidden to pack off. [2] assigned.
[3] him nempned = named for him, assigned for him.
[4] forbade him, warned him away from.
[5] Alluding to the long sleeves then worn, which even trailed upon the ground.
[6] men. [7] mantle, cloak.

his people; whereupon their representatives in parliament, knowing very well what they are about (for they will receive a bribe from the king on the sly) reply indignantly that they know their duty, that they are sent there to protect the people, that they can only grant money for a war or for some such emergency, and that, if they are false to their constituents, they will not receive their salary for attendance in parliament. But, alas! all this virtuous talk was only "for the manner, to make men blind" (iv. 44); and the result was that they were paid both ways, by the people for their services, and by the king for *not* pressing their opposition too far! And as for the members themselves, we might apply some of the lines, I fear, to men of our own time. What says the satirist?

Then sat some · as a cipher in arithmetic,
That noteth[1] a place · but nothing availeth . . . .
And some slumbered and slept · and said but a little;
And some mumbled with their mouth · and knew not what they meant . . .
And some were so solemn · and sad, of their wits,
That, ere they came to the close · encumbered they were . . .
And some were so fierce · at their first coming,
That they bent on a bonet[2] · and bore a top-sail
Before the wind freshly · to make a good fare[3] . . .
Some wist well enough · how it would end . . . .
Some held with the more[4] · however it went . . .
And some dreaded dukes · and Do-well forsook.

For my own part, I wish there were more of it; and so commend it to the reader's consideration.

§ 7. ARGUMENT OF RICHARD THE REDELES.

Prologue.[5] And as I [i. e. the author of Piers the Plowman] was passing through Bristol, I came to Christ Church, where I heard strange news. For whilst king Richard was warring in the west against the wild Irish, Henry entered England on the east side, whom all the land loved, and rose with him to right his wrongs. For myself, I had pity upon our lawful king, and, not knowing what would be the end of the matter, determined to write him a poem of

[1] marks. [2] spread an extra sail. [3] journey. [4] majority.

[5] The argument of the Prologue can only be well described by using the *first* person.

advice, recommending him to take God's visitation in patience. If it may please him to read over what I have written, I shall rejoice if it does him some good; and I will undertake to say that any prince in Christendom might learn from it, if he can understand English. If then, my liege, my book reaches your royal hand, deign to peruse it; for it shall not be published as yet, till wiser men have revised it. I hope it may profit both young and old; and if any word displeases my sovereign, I pray him not to mistake my good intentions towards him.

Passus I. Now, Richard the Redeles [counsel-less], have pity on yourself! Learn that allegiance is secured by conduct quite different from your own; not by exactions, robberies by your purveyors, or imposition of heavy taxes. Your courtiers are graceless "ghosts," that never wore armour nor felt a shower of hail. You came to your crown under most auspicious circumstances. Your crown was, as it were, adorned with pearls, rubies, gems, diamonds, and sapphires; it was powdered over with pity, and adorned with truth. But who can now tell what became of this crown? Your courtiers usurped the power that should have been yours; your people dared not complain. Men might as well have hunted a hare with a tabor, as have expected redress. Yet it was said of old time—'Where grooms and nobles are all equally great, wo be to that kingdom, and to all the dwellers therein!' Thus was your crown broken, by the power you deputed to your favourites. Had it been preserved whole, we should not have heard of murders amongst the great. But your counsellors were young and giddy men, who selfishly misled you to their own advantage; they cajoled you into setting aside your true friends, and loving false deeds. Had you but done as a prince should do, you would have hung the first suggester of falsehood high upon the gallows, yea, though he had been your own brother. But you encouraged knaves, and this greatly emboldened them.

Passus II. The worst matter was, that you dispersed so widely your badges of the "white hart." The wearers of this badge, your retainers, ran rife throughout your realm. But some of them stood in awe of the Eagle [Bolingbroke]; and, moreover, the moulting-

time of these harts was drawing nigh; it was nearly time for them to lose their horns. It amazes me to think that you should have suffered your harts [retainers] to be so numerous as to be a plague to your people. They skinned the poor mercilessly, and displayed their badges to silence complaints. So that, as the townspeople used to say, for every *hart* that you marked on a badge, you missed ten score of faithful *hearts* of subjects. These badges of yours spoilt all the broth, and upset the pot amongst the coals. Hence, when you wished to lean upon your limbs [the commons], they failed you. Though Reason warns me to speak respectfully, I must yet say that, in my opinion, no upstart of a retainer ought ever to wear a mark or badge; these should be reserved for good and great men, as, e. g. a just judge. I fear you have sought merely to multiply the number of your badge-wearers, and to attach them to yourself personally. Had the good Greyhound [the earl of Westmoreland?] been cherished as a chieftain, you might have had 'white harts' enough in your service. But no wonder though 'head-deer' failed you, since you had no pity on the 'rascals' or lean deer. Meanwhile the Eagle [Bolingbroke] was fostering nestlings of his own, watching over them whilst their wings were growing. Then did this bird batter on the *bushes* [i. e. punish Bushy], and gather men as they walked on the *green* [i. e. seize and imprison Green], till all the 'scruff' and 'scrope' [an allusion to Scrope] was torn asunder. He so moulded the metal with his hand-mould, that these men lost the dearest limbs they had, viz. their heads. Even then this Falcon [also meaning Bolingbroke] was not fully fed. But the blear-eyed scoundrel who stole the *bay* [i. e. Bagot] made the Falcon flush for anger; and, ere long, this rascal was caught. Still the Eagle continued his hawking, till he had soon subdued every kite and crow. Many snares and gins were set in all directions, catching men wherever they went; and evermore the Eagle hovered on high, and clearly saw all the privy projects of the pies below.

Passus III. I return now from the Eagle, to speak once more of the harts, and how they came at last to misfortune. The worst of all faults are those committed against nature. Let me shew how this applies to the harts. When a hart comes to be a hundred years

old, he adopts this plan for renewing his youth. It is his wont to catch and kill an adder, and to feed upon his venom, by which means he succeeds in renewing his skin.[1] It is natural, then, for the hart to prey upon the adder; but it is unnatural for him to attack a Colt [Thomas Fitz-alan], or a Horse [the earl of Arundel], or a Swan [the duke of Gloucester], or a Bear [the earl of Warwick]. It is therefore because of their unnatural conduct that the harts failed of success. Now hear the story of the partridge. The partridge lays her eggs and sits upon them; but very soon another partridge comes and takes her place whilst she is off the nest, and hatches the young ones. Then the right mother-bird returns, and, at the sound of her call, the young birds desert the intruder and follow her.[1] In like manner, when the Eagle returned to his young ones, they forsook the king who had oppressed them for two-and-twenty years, and returned to their true father. The Swan [the duke of Gloucester] had failed [was dead]; the Horse [the duke of Arundel] was sore hurt; but the Eagle released the bear [the earl of Warwick] and all his 'bearlings.' Then did they 'gaggle' on the *green* [i. e. attacked Green]; they cursed the Earl Marshal [the duke of Norfolk]; and followed the Eagle everywhere, ready for vengeance. To return to Richard and his misdeeds. One great fault amongst his courtiers was in the tyranny of fashion and the expense of dress. Such men keep no money that comes to them, yet they clip the king's coin and make it scarce. Except their sleeves slide upon the ground, they curse the robe-maker. They even follow a fashion which may be described as cutting the clothes to pieces, so that they have to pay for the piecing of the cloth together nearly twenty times the price of the cloth itself. Surely such followers of the fashion are not the men to be trusted. Yet we find that lords bestow liveries on such men, and choose them, not for any goodness or worth, but for their bragging and boasting. If lords would drive away the 'dagged' clothes and the 'Dutch' coats, and reprove robbers, and choose worthy men, the world would mend. Then I beheld how Wisdom presented himself at court,

[1] These accounts of the habits of the hart and partridge express the received opinions of the period.

seeking admittance; wondering, as well he might, at the number of the household retainers. But as soon as ever his true name became known, he was warned off the ground. "Let's slay him," quoth the sliding sleeves; and all the beardless boys mocked him. Then was Wisdom wroth, and said they should never win grace. Counsellors, Warriors, and Labourers are the true pillars of a realm; but lads of twenty-four years are not those whence Counsellors should be chosen. Rulers are chosen to uphold the law, not to spend the night in wakeful debauchery. But, fortunately, such misrule and riot cannot last for ever. Sooner or later comes a 'kew-kaw,' i. e. a change of fortune, when the robbers at last go to prison. Yet even then Bribery favours the bad, and mighty lords abet their evil followers. Fighting men from Chester pleaded in the courts in their own way, viz. with violence and intimidation; and those who dared to complain were in extreme danger. But at last the Lord of heaven arose in His righteous anger, summoned His archangels and angels, His barons and His bachelors, and rode against evil-doers in royal array. Then fell a deep calm, and the heavens waxed clear; and every man might see the moon move at midday, and the very stars pursuing after evildoers.

Passus IV. Where was ever a king who kept so large a household as Richard did? So great were his expenses, that not even his unprecedented taxations could repay the poor for what his purveyors had exacted from them. But for credit, his men would have been drawn to the devil for the debts they owed. At last, when nothing was left but the bare bags, he determined to summon a submissive and corrupt parliament. When this venal assembly had come together, a clerk stood up, and asked them to vote supplies. Then some members pretended that they knew their duty, and made a shew as if they could not grant them; others sat in their places like mere ciphers; others were tale-bearers; others slumbered; others talked nonsense, or lost themselves in argument. Then there were others, newly elected, who were for dashing on at full sail; but the mast bent, and they were glad to strike sail to escape shipwreck. Some 'knew how it would all end;' others held always with the majority; whilst another set could talk of nothing but the

money which the king owed to themselves. Others feared the lords, and forsook Dowell. [*Here the poem breaks off.*]

§ 8. THE CROWNED KING.

A sufficient account of this poem will be found in the preliminary remarks on p. 523. It is an early imitation of Piers the Plowman, written at Southampton, probably in June, 1415, and addressed, as I suppose, to Henry V. shortly before his famous campaign in France.

NOTICE.

THE "Parallel Extracts from twenty-nine MSS. of Piers the Plowman" (E. E. T. S. 1866) will be reprinted, with additions, in Part IV. of the present edition.

The method by which it is easily possible to refer from one text of "Piers the Plowman" to another is fully explained in pp. lxxvi—lxxxii of *this* volume. If, when the B-text is in hand, there be any difficulty in finding the corresponding passage in the C-text, see especially the table at the foot of p. lxxxi. For the comparison of all three texts by Passus, see p. lxxxiii.

Part I. This part, published in 1867, contains the Poem in its earliest form (A.D. 1362), called the "Vernon" Text, or A-text. It contains a Prologue and twelve Passus; but the reader is requested to observe that Pass. xii was *issued separately, at the end of Part II.*, on pages numbered 137* to 144*. In binding, these pages should be inserted between pages 136 and 137 of Part I. The MSS. used for Part I. are V = Vernon MS., the text; T = Trin. Coll. Cam. R. 3. 14; H = Harl. 875, Brit. Mus.; U = Univ. Coll. Oxford; H_2 = Harl. 6041, Brit. Mus.; D = Douce 323; and others, described in Pref. I. pp. xv—xxiv. Pass. XII. is found only in MS. Rawl. Poet. 137, and (partly) in U.

Observe that the text of the Vernon MS. (the best on the whole) does not represent the *true dialect* of the poem. The scribe has introduced many *Southern* forms which do not belong to it. The true dialect appears in the two later texts; which see.

Several extracts from this text, with Notes and Glossary, will be found in "Specimens of Early English, A.D. 1298—1393;" by Dr.

Morris and Rev. W. W. Skeat, Clarendon Press, 1872. These extracts comprise the Prologue, Pass. i., Pass. ii. 158—212; Pass. iii. 1—162; Pass. v. 1—263; Pass. vi. 1—45; Pass. vii. 234—311.

A few Errata have been detected in Part I. The only one of much consequence is at p. 66, l. 263, where *lene* should be *leue*. The following is a list of the Errata, several of which are trifling.

Page xxx. l. 16. For *rime-letter* read *chief-letter* or *chief rime-letter*.

Page xxxiv. l. 4. *For* begins *read* begin.

Page xxxvii. l. 8 from the bottom. The metrical dot should follow *ffodis;* see Part III., p. 495, l. 260.

Page 4, *footnote to* l. 69. For *him*] DH *om.*, read *him*] DH2 *om.*

Page 5, l. 78. Insert the metrical mark after *he*.

Page 9, l. 43. Insert the same after *whom*.

Page 25, *footnote to* l. 172. *For* wola loke H, *read* wole loke H.

Page 38, *footnote to* l. 192. *For* I batride on þe bak UD, *read* I batride hym on the bak UD.

Page 50, *footnote to* l. 133. *Read* & declyne it aftir U.

Page 51, l. 154. *For* liue *read* lyue.

Page 62, l. 185. The central dot is "inverted."

Page 66, l. 263 (both text and footnote). *For* lene *read* leue.

Page 68, *fourth sidenote. For* cannot *read* cannot tell.

Page 75, *footnote to* l. 29. For *see U* 221, 259, read *see* ll. 221, 259.

Page 77, *fourth sidenote. For* jongleur *read* jougleur.

Page 79, l. 98. Insert the metrical mark after *pilgrimes*.

Page 80, l. 122. The initial letter is not illuminated; it should have been printed the same as the first letter in the next line.

Page 93, *footnote to* l. 26. Read *hem* (1)] hym T.

Page 99, *footnote to* l. 135. *For* catonistris U *read* catonistris H.

Page 99, l. 129. Add a full stop at the end of the line.

Page 100, *footnote to* l. 144. Insert a long hyphen between *men* and *hadden*.

Page 100, l. 157. Add a full stop at the end of the line.

Page 102, *footnote to* l. 180. Insert a hyphen in *I doubled*.

Page 103, *fifth sidenote. For* at times, *read* at all times.

Page 107, l. 80. *Read* þat þe [Erl] Auerous, &c. The word *Erl* should no doubt be inserted, though the Vernon MS. omits it.

Page 108, *footnote to* l. 98. *The words* "him V" *belong to the end of the footnote to* l. 96.

Page 113, *footnote to* l. 62. The promised note to this line was accidentally omitted. It was merely intended to draw attention to the fact that the *omission* of the Latin words in MS. U is easily accounted for. They were to have been inserted (in that MS.) in *red* letters, and a space was left for the purpose; but the rubricator forgot to insert them.

Page 114, *footnote to* l. 78. For *lo—þe*, read *to Rooten in* þe.

Page 126, *footnote to* l. 79. For *see* ll. 73, etc., read *see* ll. 74, etc.

Page 133, *first sidenote. For* Where as *read* Whereas.

Page 139, headline, and l. 4. For 75 read 76.

Page 146, *note to* l. 68. *Add,* the quotation is from Ps. lxviii. 29 (Vulgate).

Page 146, *note to* l. 85. Transfer *heo,* so as to follow " have."

Page 153, l. 11 *from the bottom. Insert* the *in the vacant space. Three lines above, for* commonded *read* commended.

Page 154, note to l. 303 Subsequently to writing this note, *the whole of* Pass. xii was discovered, and printed as soon as practicable, viz. on pp. 137*—144*, issued at the end of Part II.

Part II. This part, published in 1869, contains the poem in its *second* shape (A.D. 1377), and does not greatly differ from the text as printed by Mr Wright; but it is printed from a different MS. and contains more than 170 additional lines. The variations of Mr Wright's text from the present one are denoted in the footnotes by the letter W. The old text printed by Crowley also exhibits the poem in this second form.

Numerous notes and a full glossary to the first seven Passus in this volume will be found in my smaller edition of "Piers the Plowman," published in the Clarendon Press Series, 1869.

For notes and a glossary to the whole poem, consult Mr Wright's edition, and Dr Stratmann's Old English Dictionary.

The MSS. used for Part II. are L = Laud 851, the text; W = MS. printed by Wright (Trin. Coll. Cam. B. 15.17); O = Oriel 79; R = Rawl. Poet. 38; C = Camb. Dd. 1. 17; B = Bodley 814; Cx = Camb. Ll. 4. 14; Y = Mr Yates Thompson's MS.; and others, described in Pref. II. pp. vi—xxxi.

The pages at the end, numbered 137* to 144* belong to Part I., and should be inserted between pp. 136 and 137 of that volume.

The following is a list of Errata.

Page 5, l. 93. *Dele* full stop at the end of the line.

Page 36, l. 89; and p. 39, l. 161. *For* presentȝ *read* presentz.

Page 41, l. 214. *For* presentȝ *read* presentz.

Page 217, fourth sidenote. *For* Clergy *read* Conscience.

Page 289, l. 25. *Insert marks of quotation before* to.

Page 360, l. 363. Put a full stop at the end of the line.

Page 398, note to l. 168. In the quotation from Crowley, *for* tell *read* tel.

Part III. This part, now published, contains the poem in its *third* shape (A.D. 1393-4), and is printed from the same MS. as that from which Dr Whitaker's edition was taken. Hundreds of corrections have been made in Whitaker's text.

The MSS. used for Part III. are P = Phillipps 8231, the text; E = Laud 656; I = Ilchester MS.; M = Museum MS. (Cotton Vesp. B. 16); F = Camb. Ff. 5. 35; G = Camb. Dd. 3. 13; S = Corpus 293; B = Bodley 814; K = (Kenelm) Digby 171; and others, described in Pref. III. pp. xix—l.

For a reading of the contents of the autotype fácsimile, see Pref. III. p. xxviii.

This part also contains the poem of Richard the Redeles (A.D. 1399), by the same author; also a short imitative piece by another hand (A.D. 1415), entitled The Crowned King.

The following is a List of Errata, as far as known.

Page 31. *Dele* † at the beginning of the first side-note.
Page 32, l. 88, text and footnote. *For* hym *read* hem.

Part IV. This part, now in course of preparation, will contain a General Preface, General Notes, and a full Glossarial Index. It will take, perhaps, two or three years to complete it.

Cambridge; Sept. 15, 1873.

THE VISION OF WILLIAM CONCERNING

"PIERS THE PLOWMAN."

Hic incipit visio Willelmi de Petro Ploughman.

[PASSUS 1.]

(*Pages of Texts*) **A 1 B 1**

IN a somere seyson · whan softe was þe sonne,
I shop [me] in-to shrobbis · as y [a] shepherde were,
In Abit as an Ermite · vnholy of werkes,
Ich wente forth in þe worlde · wonders to hure,
And sawe meny cellis · and selcouthe þynges.

One summer season, clothed as a hermit, I went abroad in the world to hear wonders.

Ac on a may morwenyng · on Maluerne hulles
Me byfel for to slepe · for weyrynesse of wandryng;
And in a launde as ich lay · lenede ich and slepte,
And Merueylously me mette · as ich may 3ow telle;
Al þe welþe of þis worlde · & þe woo boþe,
Wynkyng as it were · wyterly ich saw hyt,
Of tryuþe & of tricherye · of tresoun and of gyle,

On Malvern hills, tired of wandering, I [† lay down in a lawn], where I soon fell asleep.

Then dreamt I a wondrous dream, that I [† saw all the world, and

OBS. P = MS. Phillips (the text); E = MS. Laud 656; I = MS. Ilchester; M = MS. Cotton (Brit. Museum); F = MS. Camb. Ff. 5. 25; G = MS. Camb. Dd. 3. 13; S = MS. Corpus (Camb.); B = Bodley 814, &c. *See Preface.*

A dagger (†) in a sidenote marks passages peculiar to the C-text.

1—55. *missing in* I; 1—153. *missing in* G.

2. [*me* MFS] PE *om. shrôbbis*] schrubbes FS. [*a* MFSE] P *om. as—were*] a schepard as I were F.

3. *Abit*] an abijt M. *as*] of M. *of*] of his F.

4. *Ich wente*] Wente i M; Ich wende E. *worlde*] *miswritten* worle P.

5. *And*] I M. *cellis*] celles E; selles MF; sellys S.

6. *on*] in MF.

7. *for*] M *om. wandryng*] walkyng M. F *has*—Me be-fel a ferly · a fayr-eye me þou3t (*cf.* B-text).

8. *And*] M *om. lenede ich*] i lenede a-doun M.

9. *And*] M *om. Merueylously*] meruayles F. *me mette*] i mette M; mette of F. *may*] schal M.

10. *Al*] Of al MF. F *transposes* welþe *and* woo. *worlde*] *so in* E; world MF; wordle PS. *See note to* l. 13.

12. *tricherye—tresoun*] tresoun · trichery F. *of tresoun*] treson SM. *of gyle*] gile MFS.

beheld] on the east side a tower,

Al ich saw slepynge : as ich shal 3ow telle.
Esteward ich byhulde · after þe sonne,
And sawe a toure, as ich trowede · truthe was þer-ynne ;

† and on the west a deep dale, where Death dwelt.

Westwarde ich waitede · in a whyle after,
And sawe a deep dale · deþ, as ich lyuede,
Wonede in þo wones · and wyckede spiritus.

A 2 B 2 There was also a fair field, full of all manner of folk.

A fair feld, ful of folke · fonde ich þer bytwyne,
Alle manere of men · þe mene & þe ryche,
Worchynge and wandrynge · as þe worlde askeþ.

Some of them ploughed, sowed, and worked hard;

Somme putte hem to plow · and pleiden ful seylde,
In settyng and in sowyng · swonken ful harde,
And wonne þat þuse wasters · with glotenye destroyeþ.

but some were clad in gay apparel.

Somme putte hem to pruyde · & parailede hem þer-after,
In contenaunce & in cloþynge · in Meny kynne gyse ;

Others prayed, and led an austere life, like anchorites.

In praiers & in penaunces · putten hem Manye,
Al for þe loue of oure lorde · [lyueden] ful harde,
In hope to haue a gode ende · & heuene-ryche Blysse ;
As ancres & Eremites · þat holden hem in hure cellys,

Some chose merchandise,

Coueytynge noȝt in contrees · to carien a-boute
For no lykerouse lyflode · hure lykame to plese,
And somme chosen cheffare · þey [cheuede] þe betere,

13. *This line follows* l. 10 *in* M. *telle*] schewe M.

14. *Byhulde*] lokede M. *after*] an by to F.

15. *And*] I M. *trowede*] trowe F.

16. *waitede*] awayted E ; bihuld M. *whyle*] *written* wyle P.

17. *deþ*] *with* deþ F. *lyuede*] leue MFS.

18. *Wonede*] þat woned F. *þo*] þat MF ; þe S. *and*] *with* F. *spiritus*] gost*us* F.

19. *ful*] *so in* l. 23 ; *here* (*and in* l. 22) *written* fol.

20. *Alle*] Of al MF.

22. *putte*] *so in* E ; putten M ; put F ; *written* pute P ; *cf.* l. 25. *ful*] but F.

23. *sowyng*] *so in* ESM ; sowing F ; *written* sawyng P. *in*] F *om.*

24. *with*] *written* wit P. *destroyeþ*] destroyeth E ; destruyeþ ; distryeþ P ; destreizen M ; destreyen S.

25. *&*] F *om.* *parailede*] apparailed F ; a-pareileþ M.

26. *contenaunce*] *so in* M ; cuntynaunce F ; contenaunce P. *& in*] & F ; of MS. *kynne*] kin F ; kynnes M.

27. *praiers—penaunces*] penaunce and preieres M. *in penaunces*] penaunce F.

28. *Al*] & F ; M *om.* [*lyueden* ES] liueden M ; leuede F ; lyuend P.

29. *a*] MFS *om.* *gode*] *so in* F ; goode E ; god M ; goud P.

30. *As*] And F. *ancres*] ankryes M ; hankers E. *hure*] here EF ; M *om.*

31. *Coueytynge*] Coueytyng E ; þei coueiten M ; & coueiteth F ; Coueyten S. *carien*] karien E ; cayren F ; caren S.

33. *þey*] and M. [*cheuede*] cheffede P ; *but observe* cheued S ; cheueued (*sic*) E ; cheuyd F : preueden M.

As hit semeþ to oure syght · þat soche men þryueþ.
And somme murthes to make · as mynstrals conneþ,
þat wollen neyþer swynke ne swete · bote swery grete oþes,
And fynde vp foule fantesyes · and foles hem maken,
And hauen witte at wylle · to worche yf þey wolde.
þat Paul prechiþ of hem · prouen hit ich myghte,
Qui turpiloquium loquitur · ys lucyfers knaue.
Bydders and Beggers · faste a-boute 3oden,
Tyl hure bagge and hure bely · were bretful ycrammyd,
Faytynge for hure fode · and foulliche atten Ale.
In glotenye, [god wot] · goth þey to bedde,
And aryseþ with ribaudrie · tho Roberdes knaues;
Slep & synful sleuthe · seweþ suche euere.
Pylgrimis & palmers · ply3hten hem to-gederes,
To seche seint Iame · and seyntys of rome,
Wenten forth in hure way · with meny vn-wyse tale[s],
And hauen leue to lye · al hure lyf-tyme.
Eremytes on an hep · with hokede staues,
Wenten to walsyngham · and hure wenches after;
Grete lobies and longe · [þat] loth were to swynke,
Cloþede hem in copis · to be knowe fro oþere,

whilst some were minstrels,

against whom St Paul preaches.

There were beggars, too, dissembling knaves, who lived in gluttony, sleep, and sloth.

Pilgrims and palmers were there, who went to Rome, and had leave to lie ever after.

Hermits, too, went to Walsingham, and their wenches with them; great long lubbers were they, and loath to work.

34. *to*] in M. *þryueþ*] schulde M.
35. *as—conneþ*] mynstralles becomyth F.
36. *þat*] M *om.* *wollen*] nollen E. *neyþer*] nou3t M; nau3t F. *ne*] no F. *swery*] swerie E; swere MFS.
37. *And*] þei M. *foule*] M *om.*
39. *þat*] And þat M. *prouen*] preuen MFSE.
40. *turp. loq.*] *transposed in* MF.
41. *3oden*] 3ede MF; 3eden SE.
42. *bagge*] bagges M. *were*] was MS. *bretful* MFE] bredful P; breful S. *ycrammyd*] i-fulled M.
43. *atten Ale*] atte nale FSE; at þe ale M.
44. [*god wot* MF] tho gomes PS; tho wrecches E. *goth*] gon MFS; go E. *goth—bedde*] þei gon to here beddes F.
45. *aryseþ*] rysen F; rysuþ S. *with*] wiþ FSE; vp wiþ M; wit P. *ribaudrie*] ribaudi3e M; ribawdie F. *tho*] þes M; as F.
46. *seweþ suche*] foleweþ hem M.
47. *ply3hten*] putten F.
48. *To*] For to F. *seche*] *wgitten* siche P; sechen E; seke MF. *of*] at M.
49. *Wenten*] þey wente F; þei gon M. *with*] wit P. *vn-wyse*] wise M. *tales* MF] talus S; tale PE.
50. *hauen leue*] goten a licence F. *lyf-tyme*] lif aftur M.
53. *Grete*] Large M; Lothly F. [*þat* M] & PFSE.
54. *Cloþede*] þei cloþid F. *knowe*] i-knowe MF; yknowe E.

And made hem-selue Eremytes · hure eise to haue.
I found friars there, of all four orders, glozing the Gospel,
Ich fond þer frerus · alle þe foure ordres, 56
Prechynge þe peple · for *pro*fit of þe wombe,
And glosynge þe godspel · as hem good lykede;
For couetise of copes · contrariede som doctors.
A 4 covetous cheats, whose traffic had much to do with B 4 money.
Meny of þis maistres · of mendinant freres, 60
Hure monye & marchaundise · marchen to-gederes;
For since charity has taken to trading, many strange things have happened.
Ac sutth charite hath be chapman · and chef to shryue lordes,
Many ferlies han fallen · in a fewe 3eres;
Bote holy churche & charite · choppe a-doun swich shryuers, 64
þe moste myschif [on] molde · Mounteþ vp faste.
There preached a pardoner, and shewed a bull, saying he could assoil everyone.
Ther preched a pardoner · as he a prest were,
And brou3te forþ a bulle · with bisshopis seles,
And seide þat hym-selue · my3te asoilie hem alle 68
Of falsnesse of fastinges · of vowes to-broke.
Lewede men lyuede hym wel · and likeden hus wordes,
Comen & kneleden · to kyssen his bulles;

55. *selue*] silue P; silf E; self MF.

56. OBS. *Here begins the* Ilchester MS. (I). *Ich—þer*] þer fond i M. *frerus*] þe freres FE; of freres IS. *alle*] of alle M.

58. *And glosynge*] þay glosen I; And glosen M; & glosede F. *godspel*] *so in* E; gospel IMFS. *good lykede*] self lyken M; good liken I.

59. *som*] here F. *contrariede, &c.*] construed as þay wolde I.

60. *of—freres*] may cloþe hem ful warme I; ben meinteinours of freres M.

61. *Hure*] For heore M; þan I. *marchen*] meten ofte I; marchaundeþ M.

62. *Ac sutth*] & suþ E; Seth F; Sith I. *hath be*] was I.

63. *ferlies*] merueiles M; wondres E.

64. Bot charite and holy chirch · halde hem bet togideres I. *choppe a-doun*] chaste F.

65. [*on* IFS] of PME. *molde*] þis world M. *Mounteþ*] is mountyng IF.

66. *Ther preched*] þo prechede þere F.

67. *And*] I *om.* *brou3te* M] brou3t F; broght IS; bro3te E; broute P. *bulle*] brod bulle I.

68. *And*] He MFSE. *þat*] surely I. *hym-selue*] he M. *my3te*] my3the P.

69. *fastinges*] fastyng IF; faityngе M. *of*] and of I. *vowes*] foues S. *to-broke*] I-broke F; broken I.

70. *Lewede—hym*] þe lewed folc it leued I. *wel*] S *om.* *wordes*] speche IM.

71. *Comen—kneleden*] þei comen vp knelende I; Comen knelyng M; & comen vp knelyng F. *to kyssen*] and kissed IF; and cusseden M.

He blessede hem *with* hus [breuet] · and blerede hure eye[n], 72
And raghte *with* hus rageman · rynges and Broches.
Thus ȝe ȝeueþ ȝoure golde · glotones to helpe,
And leneþ it to loreles · þat lecherie haunten.
Were þe bisshop blessid · oþer worth boþe hus eren, 76
Hus sele sholde noȝt be sent · in deceit of þe puple.
Ac it ys noȝt by þe bysshop · þat þe boye precheþ,
þe parsheprest and þe pardoner · parten þe seluer,
þat poore puple in parshes · sholde haue, yf þei ne were.
Persones & parsheprestes · pleynede to þe bisshop, 81
þat hure parshen[s] ben poore · sitthe þe pestelence tyme,
To haue licence & leue · in londone to dwelle,
And synge þer for symonye · [for] seluer ys swete. 84
Bisshopes and bachilers · boþe maisters and doctors,
þat han cure vnder cryst · and crownynge in tokne,
Ben chargid with holy churche · charyte to tulie,
þat is, leel loue and lif · a-mong lered and lewed; 88

Men came and kissed it; and he blinded their eyes with it, and got rings and brooches.

Were the bishop worth his ears, this would not be suffered.

A 5

Parish-priests complain that their parishioners are poor now since the pestilence, and so they go to London.

Bishops and others having B 5 cure of souls live in London, even in Lent. (Cf. A. *prol.* 90.)

72. *blessede*] bunched I. [*breuet* IM] blastes F; bulles (*prob. repeated by accident*) PE; bulle S. *eyen* F] eyȝen M; yen S; eye PE.

73. *And*] He M. *hus*] þat M. *rynges—Broches*] broch*us* & rynges FS. *and*] an P.

74. *ȝe—ȝoure*] now gif ȝe ȝour I; ȝe ȝeuen ȝoure M; gaf good men here F.

75. *leneþ*] lenes I; leued F. *loreles*] losels I. *haunten*] hauntes I; hauntede F.

76. *Were*] But were F. *oþer*] or IFS; and M. *eren*] *so in* SM; eres IF; eyen E.

77. *sholde*] ne schulde M; were I. *be—of*] set so to ceyue I; be sende in the siȝt of E.

78—80. I *omits*.

78. *Ac*] F *om*.

79. *þe*] Bute þe M. *parsheprest*] prest F. *pardoner*] he M. *parten*] departen M.

80. *poore—parshes*] þe pore peple in þe paressches S; þe pore peple in parshes E; þe pore in the parsche M; þe peple F. *yf*] hit ȝif M.

81. *& parsheprestes*] þer presed fast and I; & prestus F. *pleynede*] playneþ M.

82. *parshens*] parschones M; paresschenes S; parischenes E; parisshes I; parische F; parshen P. *ben*] beþ E; were IM; was F. *þe*] IMF *om*.

83. *To—leue*] My lorde, graunte vs license I. *in*] at IM.

84. *And*] To IM; For to E. *þer for*] by F. [*for* IMF] þe wyle P; þe whyles E; whyle S.

85—94. I *omits*.

85. *boþe*] M *om*. *doctors*] oþere F.

86. *crownynge*] ben crouned M. *and—tokne*] cristendome to kepe F. *in tokne*] to kenne S.

87. *Ben*] Beþ E; & F. *with*] wit P; in F.

Thei lyen in londone · in lentene, and elles.
Some serve the king in his exchequer. Somme seruen þe kynge · and hus seluer tellen,
In þe chekkere and þe chauncelrie · chalengynge hus dettes,
Of wardes & of wardemotes · wayues and strayues.
Some are stewards to lords. Somme aren as seneschals · and seruen oþere lordes,
And ben in stede of stywardes · and sitten & demen.
Concience cam & acusede hem · and þe comune hit herde,
† Conscience said to them, "Ye permit idolatry, and false miracles. And seide, "ydolatrie ȝe soffren · in sondrye places menye,
And boxes ben [broght] forþ · [I-]bounden *with* yre,
To vnder-take þe tol · of vntrewe sacrifice.
In menynge of miracles · muche wex [þer hangeþ];
Al þe world wot wel · hit myȝte nat be trywe:
Ac for it *profitiþ* ȝow to porswarde · ȝe prelates soffren
Þat lewede men in mysbylyue · leuen & deien.
Ich lyue wel, by oure lorde · for loue of ȝoure couetyse,
† All the world is the worse for your covetousness. þat al þe world be þe wors; · as holy wryt telleþ
What cheste, & meschaunce · to [þe] children of israel,
Ful on hem þat free were · þorwe two false preestes.

89. *lyen* FS] lien E; leyen P; liggen M. *in* (1)] at F.
90. *Somme*] And summe F.
91—157. *Most of these lines occur in* I, *folios* 5 *and* 6; *cf. note to* l. 159.
91. *In þe*] At þe M; In F. *and*] and in M. *þe* (2)] FS *om. chalengynge*] chalengeþ M.
92. *&*] M *om. of*] FS *om. strayues*] *so in* MFE; strayuus S.
94. *And ben*] Summe arn M. *and* (1)] M *om.*
95. *&*] F *om. cam &*] I *om. & —hem*] to þe kyng M. *acusede*] cursed E. *hit herde*] herde hit PE; *but* MFS *have* hit herde.
97. *And—ben*] ȝoure boxes be F. [*broght* I] y-set PME; sette F; set S. *Ibounden*] ybounden E; i-bounde MF; bounden PSI. *yre*] *so in* FE; iren M; ire S; Irne I.
98. *tol*] *so in* IMFS; tolle E; tool P.
99. [*þer hangeþ* MFI] hongeþ þere PSE.
100. *world* MFEI] wordle P.
101. *Ac—ȝow*] But hit profijte ȝow M; Ac for it profiteþ FS; For pfyt in I. *soffren*] it suffre F; of holi chirche (*badly*) M.
102. *Þat*] Þat þe E. *leuen*] boþe leuen F.
103. *wel*] M *om.* *ȝoure*] owre S; F *om.*
104. *world*] *so in* MF; worlde ISE; *miswritten* wolde P. *wryt* IS] writ F; wryȝt P; wriȝt M; write E.
105. *to*] come to M. [*þe* IMFS] PE *om.*
106. *Ful*] Fil F; Fel E. *þorwe*] for FS.

For þe synne of ophni · and of finées hus brother,
þei were disconfit in bataille · and losten *Archa dei;*
And, for hure syre sauh hem syngen · and soffredè hem don ille,
And noȝt chasted hem *þer*-of · and wolde noȝt rebukie hem;
A-non, as it was ytold hym · *þat* þe children of israel
Weren disconfit in bataille · and *Archa dei* ylore,
And hus sones slayen · anon he ful for sorwe
Fro *hus* chaire þare he sat · and brak hus necke a-tweyne.
And al was for veniaunce · þat he but noȝt hus children;
And for þey were preestes · and men of holychurche,

† Remember the fate of Hophni and Phineas (cf. B-text, p. 157),

† and how Eli fell from his chair, and brake his neck,

† because he did not beat his children.

Obs. *The want of alliteration shews that the true form of* ll. 107—123 *is lost; but we may conjecture what it was from the portion of it preserved in* Lord Ilchester's MS., *which is as follows:—*

For þe synne of Offyn · and Fynees his broþer,
þat beten were in bataile · and losten *archa domini;*
And for þair sire soeffrede · þe sennes *þat* þey wroght,
And chastised not his children · of her euel chekkes,
[*Two lines lost?*]
He stombled doun fro his stool · in stede *þer* he sat,
And brak his nekke-bon in tuo · for so þe book telleþ.
[*One line lost?*]
For þay were prestes vnpure · peres of holy chirche,
Wrong on þe wrecches · wroken was þe harder.
For-þy ȝou prelates I preche · and peres of holy chirche,
Þat soeffre men do sacrifice · and sory mawmets [honoure]
And ȝe her gyours vnder god · schulde don hem go[od worchen,]
Beþ war I warne ȝow witterly · for god wol wr[aþþen hym,]
And sende sorwe on ȝour-self · sadlier to falle
Þan fel on Offyn or Fynees · or on her fader awther.

107. *þe—ophni*] ophinies sunne M; ofnyes synne FS. *of* (2)] MFS *om.* *finees*] phynyes E.

108. *disconfit*] discunfited M; discumfytud S: discumfort F.

109. *And*] M *om.* *for*] fore P. *syre*] fader (*wrongly*) M. *sauh*] si M; sawe F; say S. *syngen*] synge F; synne M; synny E; synewe S (*syngen* = sin *is not uncommon in* O.E.). *don*] to do S.

110. *wolde*] nolde M. *rebukie hem*] hem rebuke M.

112. *disconfit*] discumfited S; discunfited M; discumfit F.

113. *slayen*] weren i-slayn M; boþe sleyn F; yslayn E. *anon—sorwe*] for sorwe he fil to grounde F.

114. *chaire*] se F (*but* chaire, *pronounced* shair, *answers the alliteration*). *brak*] barst F. *a-tweyne*] on twynne M; a-twey E.

115. *þat*] M *om.* *but*] *so in* M; bet F; beet S: bete E. *but noȝt*] ne bete E.

God was wel þe wroþer · and tok þe raþere veniaunce.
† I tell you priests, who permit men to worship idols, that God will take vengeance upon you,
For-þi ich seȝe, ȝe preestes · and men of holychurche,
þat soffren men do sacrifice · and worshepen Maumettes, 119
And ȝe sholde be here fadres · and techen hem betere,
God shal take veniaunce · [on] Alle swiche preestes
Wel harder and grettere · on suche shrewede faderes,
† greater than that which fell upon Hophni, Phineas, and Eli.
þan euere he dude on ophni · and finées, or [on] here fader, 123
For ȝoure shrewede suffraunce · and ȝoure owene synne.
(B 5)
ȝoure masse & ȝoure matynes · and meny of ȝoure houres 125
Aren don vndeuotlich · drede ys at þe laste
Leste crist in hus constorie · of ȝow a-corse menye.
St Peter deputed his power of the keys to the four cardinal virtues;
Ich parceuede of þe power · þat peter hadde to kepe,
To bynden and vnbynden · as þe boke telleþ,
How he [hit lefte] with loue · as oure lorde wolde, 130
Amonges foure vertues · most vertuose of vertues,
That cardinales ben callid · and closynde ȝates,
Ther crist is in kyngdome · to closye *with* heuene.

117. *wel*] M *om.* It greued god more greuously · ventaunce gret to take F.

118. *For-þi* FS] For-whi M; For þat E; For þei P. *seȝe*] seiȝe M; seye FS; sey E. *ȝe*] ȝow M. *men*] *prelatus* F (*which improves the alliteration*).

119. *worshepen Maumettes*] sewe mawmetrye F; mawmetes honoure M.

120. *And*] M *om.* F *varies; see note below.*

121—125. F *omits. The whole passage* (117—126) *is shorter and better in* F, *as follows:—*

For-þi I seye, ȝe *prestus* · & *prelatus* of holy churche,
þat suffre men do sac*r*ifise · & sewe mawmetrye,
& ȝe schul fader hem fro þe fende · to folwe godd*us* wille,
For ȝe do nat ȝoure deue*r* · drede is at þe laste, &c.

121. [*on* SM] in PE. *preestes*] fadres M.

122. *faderes*] prestes M.

123. *euere*] M *om.* *and*] or M. [*on* MS] in PE.

124. *shrewede*] wickede M.

125. *masse*] masses M.

127. *Leste*] F *om.* *a-corse*] a-curce M; acorsy E. *of—a-corse*] curse of ȝow I.

128. *Ich—of*] þo parceyued I of F. *of*] þer M.

129. *To*] For to F. *and*] and to IMSE.

130. [*hit lefte* M] it lefte F; lofte PE; hit lost S; lefte it I. *with*] wit P.

131. *vertues* (2)] o*þ*ere F.

132. *ben*] beþ F; hem M. *closynde*] closyng IFE; closede þe M; closynge þe S.

133. *in*] in his M. *closye*] *so in* E; close SMF. *heuene*] þe heuene F.

Ac of þe cardinales at court · þat [cauȝt] han such a name,
And power presumen in hem-self · a pope to make,
To haue þe power þat peter hadde · repugnen ich nelle;
For in loue and in letterure · lith þe grete eleccion;
Countrepleide it noȝt," quath Conscience · "for holy churches sake."

but as to the power of the men now called *cardinals*—I will not deny it."

þanne cam þer a kyng · knyȝt-hod hym ladde,
The muche myȝte of þe men · made hym to regne;
And þanne cam kynde witte · & clerkus he made,
And conscience & kynde wit · and knyȝt-hod to-gederes
Caste þat þe comune · sholde hure comunes fynde.
Kyndewit & þe comune · contreuede alle craftes,
And for most [profit] to þe puple · a plouh þei gonne make,
With leel labour to lyue · whyl [lif] and londe lasteth.
Than kynde wit to þe kyng · and to þe comune seide,
"Crist kep þe, [sire] kyng · and þy kynryche,
And [leue] þe lede so þy londe · þat leaute þe louye,
And for þy ryȝtful ruelyng · be rewardid in heuene."
Conscience to cleregie · and to þe kyng saide,
"*Sum rex, sum princeps* · [*neutrum*] *fortasse deinceps;*

Next I beheld a king.

B 6

[† Conscience and Common-Sense] said the commons must support them.
The commons provided a plough to till the soil.

Then [† Common-Sense] cried aloud and said, "Christ grant, sir king, that you may rule well."

[† Then Conscience] ad-

134. *þe*] M *om.* *at*] at þe M; of FE. *þat—han* S] þat chaut han P; han cauȝt hem M; þat cauȝt haue FI; þat kaȝt hem E. *a*] F *om.*

135. *And*] An P. *to*] for to IFE.

136. *þe*] M *om.* *repugnen*] inpugnen FS; repuyne hem M.

137. *and in*] and M; as F. *þe grete*] þe lawe of þat F.

After l. 137 I *inserts*—And he þat tolde me þis tale · to clergie was named.

138. *quath*] *written* quaht P; quod IMF. *churches*] chirche M; churche E.

140. *muche* MF] meche P; moche S; myche E. *þe*] þo E. *men*] man F.

141. *And þanne*] þanne F; þer M. *kynde*] *miswritten* a kynde P; *but see next line.*

142. *And*] MF *om.* S *omits last half of* l. 141, *and first half of* l. 142.

144. *Kyndewit*] þe kynde wit F.

145. *And for*] And as for þe S. [*profit* F] profijt M; profite E; profytable PS. *to—puple*] of þe comune M. *for—puple*] so for proffit and prow I.

146. *With*] Wiþ MF; Wit P. *whyl*] wyl P. [*lif* MFS] lyue PE.

148. *kep*] saue M. [*sire* MI] PFSE *om.* *þy*] þe F.

149. [*leue* ISMFE] lyue P (lyue = leue = *permit*). *so þy*] to þe S. *londe*] reme F.

150. *þy*] M *om.*

151. I *omits.* *Conscience*] þo conscience F. *cleregie*] þe clergiȝe M.

152. [*neutrum* IMFSE] *miswritten* venturum P.

dressed the king in Latin.

O qui iura regis · christi specialia regis,
Hoc vt agas melius · iustus, & esto pius!
Nudum ius a te · vestiri vult pietate,
Qualia vis metere · talia grana sere; 156
Si seritur pietas · de pietate metas."

(A 5) (B 9) There were a hundred sergeants in silk hoods, law-pleaders, who never spoke till they saw their money.

Conscience and þe kyng · in-to þe court wenten,
Where houede an hondred · in houes of silke,
Seriauntes hij semede · þat seruen atte barre, 160
To plede for penyes · and poundes þe lawe,
And nat for [loue of oure lord] · vnlose hure lyppe[s] ones.
B 10
Þow myȝt bet mete þe myst · on maluerne hulles,
Þan gete a mom of hure mouth · til moneye be hem shewid. 164

B 7 Then a rout of rats and mice ran together to take counsel.

Thanne ran þer a route · of ratones, as it were,
And smale mys *with* hem · mo þan a þousand,
Come to on counsail · for hure comune profit;
For a cat of a court · cam whan hym lykyde, 168
And ouer-leep hem lyȝtlyche · and lauhte hem at wille,
And pleide *with* hem periloslich · & putte hem þer hym lykyde:—

"We are all afraid of the cat."

"And if we grucche of hys game · he wol greue ous sarrer,

154. *Here* MS. G *begins.*

158. *Conscience*] þe conscience F. *and þe*] to S. *in-to*] & to S. *þe*] EFG *om.*

159. *Here* MS. I *begins again, but is a mere jumble down to end of the Passus; it contains lines* 84—95 *of* A-text, *followed by* 91—157 *of* C-text; *and ends with lines* 96—109 *of* A-text.

159. *Where*] *so in* SMFGE; Wer P.

160. *hij*] hit MG. *þat*] to F. *atte*] *so in* GE; ate S; at þe MF; atte þe (*wrongly*) P.

162. *And*] M *om.* [*loue of oure lord* SMFGI] oure lordes loue PE. *vnlose*] open M. *lyppes*] *so in* MFGI; lyppe PSE.

163. *myȝt*] might I; myȝtest FGS; mitest M. *bet*] betere MFIG. *þe*] IF *om.*

164. *mom*] word S. *be*] were G. *hem*] ISMFG *om.* *shewid*] i-schewed MG.

165. *it were*] i wene M.

166. *with*] a-mong M. *smale— hem*] *with* hem smale mys F.

167. *Come*] þat come F. *on*] o S; a MFG.

168. *whan*] *so in* SMFE; wen G; wanne P.

169. *lyȝtlyche*] lyȝtlyiche P. *at*] at his M; alle atte G.

170. *hem*] some SFG.

171. *And*] M *om.* *of*] M *om.* *sarrer*] *so in* S; sarre M; sorre G; þe sorere E; alle F.

To hus clees clawen ows · and in hys cloches holde,
þat ous loþeth þe lyf · er he lete ows passe.
Myȝte we with eny wyt · hus wil with-sette,
We myȝte be lordes aloft · and lyue as vs luste."
Tho saide a raton of renoun · most resonable of tonge,
"Ich haue yseie grete syres · in Cytees and in tounes
Bere byȝes of bryȝt gold · al aboute hure neckes,
And colers of crafty werke · boþe knyȝtes and squiers.
Were þer a belle on hure byȝe · by *iesus*, [as] me þynkeþ,
Men myȝte wite wher þei wenten · and hure wey roume.
Ryȝt so," quaþ þe raton · "reison me shewith,
A belle to byggen of bras · oþer of bryȝt seluer,
And knytte it on a coler · for oure comune profit,
And honge aboute þe cattys hals · þanne hure we mowe
Wher he ryt oþer rest · oþer romyþ to pleye.
And yf hym luste for to layke · þanne loke we mowe,
And appere in hus presence · [whyle] hym pleye lykeþ,
And yf he wratthe, we mowe be war · and hus way roume."

A rat of renown said, "I have seen sires in cities wear collars on their necks.

A bell might be hung on to such a collar.

B S
Let us put a collar and bell on the cat's neck.

When he is playful, we can stay; when wrathful, we must get out of his way."

172. *To*] In-to M; And *with* S; & to F. *cloes*] cleon S; cleos M; clawes FE. *clawen*] clawy G; clochen F. *cloches*] clawes G; *campus* F.

173. *loþeth*] shal loþe G. *þe*] oure M. *er*] or FES; ar G. (*ous* or *ows* = *us*.)

174. *Myȝte*] But myȝt F. *with*] wiþ MFG; *with* ES; *miswritten* wit P. *wyt* SMFG] witt E; *spelt* wyȝt P. *with-sette*] to with-sette PEFS; *but* MG *omit* to. *Cf.* B-text.

175. *myȝte be*] were M. *and*] to M. *luste* MF] leste G; lusten (*wrongly*) PES.

176. *resonable*] resuable G; renable F.

178. *bryȝt*] grete S. *al*] G *om.*

180. *on*] yn G. [*as* SMFG] PE *om.*

181. *Men*] Me M. *wite*] i-wite M; wete F. *wher* M] where FGE; wer PS.

182. *þe raton*] þat rat M. *shewith*] þinkeþ M.

183. *A—byggen*] To bygge a belle G. *oþer*] or SMF.

184. *knytte*] honge M.

185. *honge*] binde hit M; honge hit S. *hals*] nekke (*with* hals *above it*) S. *hure*] here M; heere F; hyre G; huyre S. *þanne hure*] heere þanne F.

186. *Wher*] Where SGE; Wheþer MF; Wer P. *ryt*] ritt E; rijt M; ryȝt G; rist F. *oþer* (1)] or S. *oþer* (2)] or SMF.

187. *for*] M *om.* *layke*] walke E. *loke*] here M.

188. *appere—presence*] in his presence appere F. [*whyle* SE] whil F; þe while MG; wil P.

189. *he*] hym G. *wratthe*] wreþþuþ G; wrethe M; wraþ hym E. *roume*] rowmye E. *hus—roume*] of hys wey rewme G.

Al þe route of ratons · to þys reison a-sentede,
But when the bell was bought, never a rat durst hang it on the cat's neck.
Ac þo þe belle was ybouȝt · and [on] þe byȝe honged,
Ther was no raton of al þe route · for al þe reame of fraunce, 192
[þat durste] haue bounde þe belle · a-boute þe cattes necke,
Ne haue it hongid a-boute hus hals · al engelond to wynne;
So theirs was labour lost.
And leten hure labour ylost · and al hure longe trauail.
A mous þat muche good couthe · as me þo þouȝte, 196
A mouse addressed the rout, saying,
Strok forþ sturneliche · and stod by-for hem alle,
And to þe route of ratones · rehercede þuse wordes,
"If we kill the old cat, a young one will come;
"Thauh we hadde ycullid þe catte · ȝut sholde þer come anoþer,
To cracchen ous & al oure kynde · þouh we crepe vnder benches. 200
For-þi ich consaile, for comune profit · lete þe cat worthe,
And neuere be we so bold · þe belle hym to shewe.
and it is very bad for the court
B 9
where a kitten reigns.
For ich hurde my syre sayn · seuen ȝer passed, 204
'Ther þe cat nys bote a kyton · þe court is ful elynge;'
Witnesse of holy wryt · who so can rede—

190. *þe*] þis MG. *ratons*] þe ratons PS; *but* MFGE *omit* þe.
191. *þo*] M *om.* *ybouȝt*] *spelt* bouȝth P. [*on* SMFG] in E; P *om.* *honged*] hongede P.
192. *was*] ne was M. *of*] in SMF. *al þe* (1)] þat M.
193. [*þat durste* M] þat durst F; þat dorste S; þat derste GE; þa þerste P. *bounde*] honget M.
194. *Ne—hongid*] No hongut hit M; Ne hangid hit F. *engelond*] engelonnd P.
195. *And*] þei M; And þanne S; þo þey G. *leten*] letun hy S; letten al M. *al*] M *om.* *trauail*] studiȝe MG; tyme F.
196. *good*] G *om.* *couthe*] coude MF. *þouȝte* MFG] *spelt* þouthe P; þoȝt E.
197. *forþ*] forþ þo M.
198. *þe*] þis M.
199. *ycullid*] culde F; culd SG. *þe*] a F.
200. *cracchen*] *so in* M; chracchen P; cracche SFG; cracchy E. *crepe*] crope E.
201. *For-þi* F] For-þy SG; For-whi M; For þei P. *worthe*] y-worþe GM.
202. *neuere—we*] be we neuer F.
203. *passed*] a-passed MG; I-passid F
204. *nys*] is SMFG. *ful*] wel M.
205. *Witnesse*] Withnesseþ M; Witnessith F. *of*] hit M; hit wel F; þerwith G; at S. *rede*] hit rede M; wel rede F.

Ue terre ubi puer est rex: Salamon. Eccles. x. 16.

Ich sigge it for me," quaþ þe mous · "ich seo so muchel after,
Shal neuere þe cat ne þe kyton · by my consail, be greued,
Ne carpen of hure colers · þat costide me neuere; 208 I do not pay my share for the collar.
And þauh it costned me catel · by-knowe ich ne wolde,
Bote soffren and sigge nouht · and so is þe beste,
Tyl myschief amende [hem] · þat meny men chasteþ.
[For] meny mannys malt · we mys wolde distrye, 212 Mice and rats are a nuisance as well as cats."
And ȝe, route of ratons · of rest men a-wake,
Ne were þe cat of þe court · And ȝonge Kytones to-warde;
For hadde ȝe ratones ȝoure reed · ȝe couthe nat ruelie ȝow-selue."
What this metals by-meneþ · ȝe men þat buth murye, 216
Diuine ȝe, for ich ne dar · by dere god almyȝty!
ȝut mette me more · of mene and of ryche,
As barouns & burgeis · and bonde-men of þroupes, **A 6 B 10**
Al ich sauh slepyng · as ȝe shullen hure after; 220 I saw too barons, burgesses, bond-men,
Boþe bakers and brywers · bouchers and oþere,

206. *sigge*] seye SG; sei MF. *it*] M *om.* *seo*] se MFGE.
207. *þe—þe*] no cat ne M. *þe* (2)] E *om.* *þe—kyton*] noþer þe cat þe kitoun noþer F. *greued*] greuede P.
208. *costide*] costed E; costned S; costnede F; costunde M; costnyþ G.
209. *costned*] coste F.
211. *Tyl*] Tyl þat G. *myschief*] god M. *amende* SMFG] amenden PE. [*hem* SMFGE] hym P.
212. [*For* SMFG] And PE. *mannys*] mannes E; a mannus F; menes M. *mys* MFG] myse E; muys S; myes P.
213. ȝe *route*] þe rowtus F. *awake*] wake S.
214. *Ne were*] Nere F.
215. *ratones*] rattus al F. *ruelie*] ruly E; rule SG; rewele M; rewle F.
216. *What* SMFE] Wat PG. *metals*] metels M; metelus SF; metaus E. *by-meneþ*] menyþ G. *buth*] buþ S; beþ E; byþ G; ben M; be F; *miswritten* but P.
217. *Diuine*] Deme E.
218. ȝut] And ȝut M; & ȝit F. *mette* SMFGE] mete P. *me*] i MF.
219. *As*] Of M. *& burgeis*] of burgeises M. *þroupes*] þropus SF; þropes ME; thorpys G.
220. *ich sauh*] saw I F. *hure*] i-here M; here F. ȝe—*hure*] I schal telle S.
221. *Boþe*] M *om.*

bakers, butchers, brewers, and others; and ditchers who lead ill lives, and sing idle songs.

Webbesters and walkers · and wynners *with* handen,
As taylours and tanners · and tyliers of erthe,
As dikers and deluers · þat don here dedes ille,
And dryueþ forþ hure daies · *with* '*deux saue dame emme!*'

Cooks were crying "hot pies," and taverners were praising their wine.

Kokes and here knaues · crieden 'hote pyes, hote!
Good goos and grys · go we dyne, gowe!'
Tauerners 'a tast for nouht' · tolden þe same,
'Whit wyn of oseye · and of gascoyne,
Of þe ruele and of þe rochel wyn · þe roste to defye.'
Al þis ich sauh slepynge · and seuene sythes more.

Explicit passus primus.

222. *Webbesters*] As websterus F. *and*] an P. *handen*] *so in* E; honndus S; hondes M; handes F; handys G.

223. *As*] M *om.* *tanners*] tauernerus S. *of*] þe (*sic*) SF.

224. *As*] M *om.* *dikers—deluers*] deluers and dykers G. *þat*] þei M.

225. *hure daies*] þe longe day M; þe deerne day F. *saue*] vous saue G.

226. *crieden*] crien M.

227. *goos—grys*] griis and gees M. *go we*] with gowe F. *dyne*] to dyner S.

228. *tolden*] þei tolde F. *þe*] þat M; me þe G.

229. *Whit*] With M; With white F. *of* (2)] eke of M.

230. *Of*] & of F. *ruele*] ruel E; rule SG; rewle M; ryne F. *of*] SMF *om.* *þe rochel*] rochel SMF. *wyn*] MG *om.* *þe* (3)] E *om.*

COLOPHON. *So in other* MSS.; Explicit Passus primus de visione Petri le plouhman G.

PASSUS II.

Incipit passus secundus.

WHat þe montayne by-meneþ · and þe merke dale, **A 7 B 11**
And þe feld ful of folke · ich shal ȝow fayre shewe.
A loueliche lady of lere · in lynnen y-cloþid,
Cam doun fro þat castel · and calde me by name,
And seide, "wille, slepest þow · syxt þow þis puple,
How busy þai ben · a-boute þe mase?
The most p*ar*tie of þe puple · þat passeþ on þis erthe,
Haue thei worship in þis worlde · þei willen no betere;
Of o*þer* heuene þan here · þei holden no tale."
Ich was aferd of hure face · thauh hue faire were,
And saide, "m*er*cy, ma dame · what may þys be to mene?"

I now tell the meaning of the mountain, the dale, and the field.
A lovely lady came down from a castle, and bade me look at the people;
most of whom seek only worship in this world (here imaged by a field).
I was afraid, and asked what it all meant.

TITLE. *So in* IFES; Hic incipit *secundus* passus de uisione Will*elmi* de pet*ro* plouhm*an* M.
1. *by-meneþ*] meenes I.
2. *þe*] al þe I.
4. *Cam*] Com hir I. *doun*] a-doun M. *fro*] of G. *þat castel*] a castel M; þe clif FS; þat hul I. *calde*] clepede M. *by name*] my name E; faire MIFS.
5. *wille*] sone IB. *syxt*] sixst FS; seest M; seist E. *syxt þow*] seestow I. *þow*] þou nat F.
6. *How*] & how F. *þai*] þat þei MIF. *a-boute*] al a-bouȝte M; and al aboute I; ryȝt a-boute G.
7. *partie*] part F. *þe*] þis MG. *þis*] I *om.*
8, 9. F *transposes these lines.*
8. *Haue*] *so in* IFEG; Hadden SM; Haued P. *in*] on G. *worlde*] erþe G. *þei—betere*] wolde þey no betre I; þei wesche no more F. *willen*] wilneþ MB.
9. *here*] here is IF. *þei holden*] holden þei MIF.
10. *hue*] sche MIFS; heo G; ȝo E.
11, 12, 13. And seide, merci, madame · For marie loue of heuene, þe tour on þe toft · what mai it bi-mene?
þat tour, quod þat ladi · treuþe is þer-inne M.
11. *what*] wat P.

"In the tower," she said, "is Truth, i.e. God the Creator,

"The tour vp-on toft," quaþ hue · "treuthe ys þer-ynne,
And wolde þat ȝe wrouhte · as hus word techeþ.
For he is fader of faith · and formour of alle;
To be faith-ful to hym · he ȝaue ȝow fyue wittes
For to worshepen hym *þer*-with · while ȝe lyuen here. 16

A 8

who gives men wool and linen sufficient.

Wherfore he het þe elementes · to helpe ȝow alle tymes,
And brynge forth ȝoure bylyue · boþe lynnen and wollen,
And in mesure, þouh hit muche were · to make ȝow at ese. 19

Three things are really needful,—

B 12

meat, clothes, and drink.

He comaundid of his cortesye · in comune þre þynges,
Aren non nudful bote þo þre · nempnen hem ich þenke,
And rekene hem by rewe · reherce hem wher þe lykeþ.
The ferst of þo ys fode · and vesture þe secounde,

But beware of drink, and remember Lot's sin,

And drynke þat do þe good · ac drynk nat oute of tyme. 24
Lo! loth in hus lyue · þorw lecherouse drynke
Wikkydlich wroghte · and wratthede god al-myghty.

which was caused by drunkenness.

In hus dronkenesse a day · hus douhtres he dighte,
And lay by hem boþe · as þe bok telleþ. 28
In hus glotenie [he] by-gat · [gerles] þat weren churles,

12. *vp-on*] vpon þe ISG; on þe MF. *hue*] sche IFS; heo G; ȝo E.
13. *And*] He M. *as—techeþ*] as his wille were M; after hys wordes G.
14. *faith*] fey G.
15. *faithful*] feyful G. *to*] wyth G.
16. *For*] M *om.* *while*] *so* M; whyle S; þe whiles I; whil þat F; wile P. *lyuen*] be F.
17. *Wherfore*] Werfore P; þerfore E. *þe elementes*] *so* MB; þelementz I; þe element FS; þe elemens PE; þat element G. *to*] schold G; M *om.* *alle*] at al E.
18. *bylyue*] byleue FEG. *lynnen—wollen*] wollen & lynnen SF.
19. G *omits.* *And*] MF *om.* *hit*] I *om.*
20. *He*] I *om.*
21. *Aren*] Ben M; Were G. *nudful—þre*] so nedful as þo M. *þre*] F *om.* *nempnen*] and nemene M; & nemne I; & nempne F; nemme S; nemny G.
22. *wher*] wer P.
23. *The*] Ther P. *of þo*] of hem M; I *om.* *and*] an P.
24. *do þe*] doth þe I; it dooþ F. *ac*] and IG; but MF. *drynk*] do hit M.
25. *Lo*] Loke how M; I *om.* *loth*] loot S. *drynke*] drenke P.
26. *wroghte*] he wrouȝte M. *Wikkydlich wroghte*] Wrouȝt wikkedeliche F.
27. *dronkenesse*] *so* MI; drunkenesse F; dronknesse PSG; derknesse (!) E. *a*] on a FB. *douhtres*] doutren M; douȝtryn G.
29. [*he* MFS] PIEG *om.* *by-gat*] gat MF. [*gerles* I] gurles MG; gurlus FS; PE *om.* *weren*] *miswritten* wereren P. *churles*] þrallus F.

And al he wited þe wyne · hus wikked dede.

Inebriamus eum uino et dormianus cum eo, ut seruare possimus de patre nostro semen. Gen. xix. 32.
Genesis.

Thorgh wyn and þorw wommen · þer was loth encombred; Thus was Lot encumbered.

For-þy dred dilitable drynke · boþe day and ny3tes. 32

Mesure is medecyne · þauh þou muche wylne. Moderation is wholesome, though the appetite be keen.

Al is no3t good to þe gost · þat þe gut Askeþ,

Ne liflode to þe licame · þat leof is to þe saule;

Leue no3t þy licame · for a lyere hym techeth, 36 Believe not thy body, which is **A 9** leagued with the fiend; therefore beware."

þat is þe wrecchede worlde · þat wolde þe bygyle;

For þe fend and þy flesch · folwen to-gederes,

And þat [seeþ] þe saule · and [seith] hit the in herte,

And wisseþ þe to be ware · and what wolde þe de- **B 13**
ceyuye." 40

"A ma dame, mercy," quaþ ich · "me lykeþ wel 3oure wordes, I thanked her, and asked her to whom the treasures of the world belonged.

Ac þe moneye of þis molde · þat men so faste kepeþ,

Telle 3e me now to wham · þat tresour by-longeþ?"

"Go to þe gospel," quaþ hue · "and see what god sayde, 44 She bade me go to the gospel, and read how Christ was tempted by

Whanne þe puple aposed hym · of a peny in þe temple,

30. *wited*] witte hit M; wyted hit S; witte I; wyste (*over erasure*) G. *hus*] þat F; þys G. *et dormiamus*] dormiamusque I. *seruare*] reseruare FS.

31. *wommen*] womman MI. *loth*] lot SE. *encombred*] y-comeryd G.

32. *For-þy*] For-whi M; F *om.* *day*] *so* IFEG; daies M; dayuus S.

33. *is*] is a P; *but* MIFSEGB *omit* a. *wylne*] 3erne I.

34. *gut*] *so* MFSEB; gout P; got G; gost (*by mistake*) I.

35. *to* (2)] I *om.*

36. *Leue* FE] Lyef P; Leef IS; Loue M.

37. *þat*] Which I. *is*] G *om.* *þe* (1)] þis MSEG. *þat*] MISG *om.*

39. *þat*] F *om.* [*seeþ* EB] seþ S; seyþ PG; sleþ M; sickith F (*þat seeþ* = Moderation looks after). [*seith* F] seiþ EB; seyþ SG; saith I; sette M; setth P. M *has*—And þat sleþ þi soule · and þow sette hem in þin herte.

40. *and*] IG *om.* M *has*—I wisse þe þat þou be i-war · leste þei þe disseiue.

42. *of*] on M. *kepeþ*] biholden M.

43. *Telle*] Telleþ MI; Tellith F. *3e*] MIF *om.* *by-longeþ*] apendeþ M; befallith F.

44. *hue*] sche MIS; scheo F; heo G; 3o E.

45. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *of*] with F.

being shown a penny.

And god askede of hem · whas was þe coygne.
'Cesares,' þei seiden · 'sothliche we knowen.'

"Render unto Cæsar," &c. (Matt. xxii. 21).

'*Reddite cesari*,' seide god · 'þat to cesar by-falleþ,
Et que sunt dei, deo · oþer ellys ȝe don ille.'

"Reason and common sense should rule you."

For ryhtfulliche reson · sholde ruele ȝow alle,
And kynde wit be wardeyn · ȝoure welþe to kepe,
And tutour of ȝowre tresoure · and take [hit] ȝow atte nede;
For hosboundrie and he · holdeþ to-gederes."

Then I asked her what the deep dale meant.

Ich fraynede hure faire þo · for hym þat hure made,
"The dupe dale and durke · yn-semely to see to,
What may hit by-mene · madame, ich by-seche?"

A 10
"That is the castle of care," she said, "the abode of Satan,

"That is þe castel of care · who-so comeþ þer-ynne
May banne þat he bore was · in body and in soule;
Ther-ynne wonyeþ a wyȝt · þat wrong is his name,
Fader of falshede · fond hit furst of alle;

who deceived Adam and Eve,
B 14
and Cain, and Judas.

Adam and Eue · he eggede to don ille,
Consailde cayme · to cullen hus broþer;
Iudas he by-Iapede · þorgh Iewene seluer,
And afterward he heng hym · hye on an ellerne.

46. *god*] he M. *of*] at IF. *whas*] *so* G; whos IS; whose M; hoos F; what E.

47. *we knowen*] to say F.

48. *seide*] quod MF. *to*] IFSG *om.* *by-falleþ*] bi-longeþ M; behoueth F.

49. *ellys*] I *om.*

50. *ryhtfulliche*] rithful M. *ruele*] ruly E.

51. *welþe*] soules M.

52. *tutour*] detour S. *and*] to M. [*hit* MIG] hym S; PE *om.* *ȝow atte*] out atte S; at ȝoure M.

53. *holdeþ*] holden boþe M; haldith hem F.

54. *hure* (2)] me M.

55. *The—durke*] þat derke dale and deop M. *durke*] þe derke IG. *vnsemely*] so vnsemely I. *to—to*] of siȝt M. *vnsemely—to*] so dredful to syȝt F.

56. *by-mene*] be to mene F. *ich*] I ȝow FG; i þe M.

58. *bore was*] was boren M. *and*] or F.

59. *þat*] MFSG *om.* *his name*] i-hote M.

60. *Fader*] He is fader F. *fond*] he fond M; & founded F.

61. *Eue*] eue with eiuye F. *eggede*] egede P. *to*] G *om.* *don*] IF *om.*

62. *Consailde*] He conseilede M; And counceilede I; & counseil (*sic*) cursede F. *cullen*] killen IF.

63. *he*] G *om.* *by-Iapede*] iapede M. *þorgh*] wiþ MF. *Iewene*] þe iewes M.

64. *And*] An P. *afterward*] aftur F. *he heng*] anhanged I; heo hongede G. *hym*] him-self MS. *on*] vpon IF. *ellerne*] eller I; elrene S; helderne F; elnerene G; hiller-tree B.

He ys lettare of loue · and lyeth alle tymes;
þat tryst in erthely tresour · he by-traieþ sonnest,
To en-combrye men *with* couetyse · that is hus kynde."
Thanne hadde ich wonder in my wit · what womman hue were,
þat suche wyse wordes · of holy wryt shewede;
And [halsede] hure on þe heie name · er hue þennys wente,
What hue were witterly · þat wissede me so and tauhte.
"Holychurche ich am," quaþ hue · "þow oghtest me [to] knawe;
Ich vnder-feng þe formest · and fre man þe made.
þow broghtest me borwes · my byddyng to fulfille,
To leue on me and louye me · al þy lyf tyme."
Thanne knelede ich on my knees · [and] criede hure [of] grace,
And preiede hure pytously · to preie for me to amende,
Al-so to kenne me kyndelich · on crist to by-leue,
"And teche me to no tresour · bote telle me þys ilke,
How ich may sauy my saule · þat seynt art yholde."

He hinders love, and deceives all that trust in earthly treasure."
Then I wondered who she was, and conjured her to tell me her name.
"I am Holy Church, who received thee in infancy; thou broughtest me then pledges, to work my will."
Then I prayed her to teach me to believe in Christ,
for I wished for no
A 11
treasure but my soul's salvation.

65. *ys*] ys a PE; *but* MIFGSB *omit* a. *lyeth*] liȝere M; lieþ in E.
66. *erthely tresour*] tresour of erþe MIG. *sonnest*] soneste E; sonest I.
67. *encombrye*] combre I; comere G; encombre FSM. *is*] his P.
68. *Thanne*] þo MFG. *hue*] sche MIFS; ȝo E; yt G.
69. *þat*] And F. *wryt*] wryȝt P.
70. [*halsede* MIFB] halsnede SE; hansiede P; halnesde G. *on*] in MIF; vpon G. *heie*] holi M. *er*] or MIFSE; ar G. *hue*] sche MIS; heo FG; ȝo E. *þennys*] þennes MIE; þenne F; þanne G.
71. *hue*] sche MISF; heo G; ȝo E. *witterly* IFEG] wytuȝly S; whiterly P. *and tauhte*] faire F. M *has* —To telle me what sche were · þat me so faire tauȝte.
72. *hue*] *see* l. 71. [*to* MIFSEGB] P *om.*
73. *vnder-feng*] vnder-fong MFG. *formest*] furst M.
74. *byddyng*] wil M.
75. *To*] I *om.* *leue*] *so* MIFSEG; lyue P. *on*] MF *om.* *louye*] loue MIF. *lyf* SG] lif MFE; lyfe I; lyue P.
76. *knelede ich*] i knelede MIG. [*and* MIFSEG] P *om.* *hure*] to here S. [*of* MIFSG] PE *om.* *hure of*] of heor M.
77. *hure*] to here FS. *pytously*] pytosly P; mekly G. *to—for*] M *om.*
78. *Also to*] And also I. *Also—kenne*] And kenneþ M. *to by-leue*] for to leue E. *by-leue*] by-lyue P.
79. *And*] I *om.* *teche*] techeþ M. *telle me*] telleþ me M; how I may F.
80. *sauy*] *so* EG; saue MIFS. *art*] ert PE.

"Truth is the best of treasures;

"Whanne alle tresours ben tried," quaþ hue · "treuþe is þe beste;
Ich do hit on *Deus caritas* · to deme þe soþe.
Hit is as derworthe a druwery · as dere god him-selue.

whoever is true in word and work is like our Lord.

For he, is trewe of hus tonge · and of hus two handes, 84.
And doþ þe werkes þ*erwith* · and wilneþ no man ille,
He is a god by þe gospel · and graunty may hele,

Luke viii. 21.

And like oure lorde also · by seynt lukys wordes.
Clerkus þat knowen þys · shoulde kennen hit a-boute,
For cristene and vncristene · cleymen it echone. 89.

Kings and knights should govern rightfully, and bind transgressors;

Kynges and kny3tes · shoulde kepen hit by reson,
Ryden and rappe a-doune · In reames a-boute,
And take trespassours · and tyen hem faste, 92
Til trewþe hadde ytermenyd · here trespas to þe ende;
And holde *with* hym and *with* hure · þat han trewe accion,
And for no [lordene] loue · leue þe trewe partye.

and to do so is the true duty of knights.

Trewely to take · and treweliche to fy3te, 96
Ys þe profession and þe [pure] ordre · þat apendeþ to kny3tes;
Who-so passeþ that poynt · ys apostata of kny3t-hod.

81. *Whanne*] *so* F; Whan MIE; When SG; Qwenne P. *quaþ hue*] ISFG *om.*
82. *on*] vpon I.
83. *a*] S *om.* *druwery*] druri M; drury FE; druerie IG. *him*] hem P.
84. *he*] *so also* SEG; whoso M; ho so F; who I. *trewe*] trywe P; *but see* ll. 95, 96.
85. *þe*] his M. *wilneþ*] willeþ F.
86. *a*] M *om.* *graunty*] *so in* G; graunte MIFSE.
87. I *puts* also *before* like. *like*] lijk to MI.
88. *þys*] hit wel M; it is þus I. *shoulde*] I *om.*
89. *vncristene*] vncrestine P.
91. *reames*] reemes M; reumes I; rewm*us* F; reumus S; remes G.
92. *And*] *so in* I; And to PESG; & titly F; Forte M. *trespassours*] transgressores IG.
94. *trewe*] þe trewe MF; *spelt* triwe P; *but see* l. 95. *accion*] cause F.
95. *And*] S *om.* [*lordene* I] lordyne G; lordes ME; lordayne P; mordyne (*sic*) S (lordene *is gen. pl.*). *And—lordene*] Ne for no disordeyned F.
96. *Trewely*] For trewly F. *take*] take trauaile F. *fy3te*] fy3ete P; *but see* l. 100.
97. *Ys*] þis is S. [*pure* MFESGB] poure PI. þe (1)—*ordre*] þe pure *pro*fessioun F.
98. *Who-so* E] Wo-so P; Ho-so S; And who-so IG; And whose M; & ho-so F. *apostata*] aposteta PG. *of kny3t-hod*] in his ordre M; in þe ordre F.

For þei shoulde nat faste · ne for-bere sherte ;
Bote feithfullich defende · and fyȝte for truthe,
And neuere leue for loue · In hope to lacche seluer. **A 12**
Dauid by hus daies · dobbede knyȝtes,
And dude hem swerye [on] here swerde · to serue truthe euere.

For David dubbed knights to serve Truth.

Whanne god by-gan heuene · in þat grete blysse,
He made knyȝtes in hus court · creatures ten,
Cherubin and seraphin · suche seuene [and] another ;
Lucifer louelokest þo · ac lytel while it [durede.]
He was an archangel of heuene · on of godes knyȝtes ;
He and oþer *with* hym · þat hulde nouȝt *with* treuthe,
Lopen out in loþliche forme · for hus false wille ;
He hadde lust to be lyke · hus lord god almyghty.

And God, too, knighted Cherubim and Seraphim, and others.

† Lucifer was an archangel of heaven, till he sought to be equal with God.

Ponam pedem meum in aquilone, & ero similis altissimo. **B 16** Isaiah xiv. 14.

Lord ! why wolde he þo · þulke wrechede lucifer,
Lepen a-lofte · in þe north syde
[þan] sitten in þe sonne side · þer þe day roweþ ?
Ne were it for norþerne men · a-non ich wolde telle ;
Ac ich wolle lacke no lyf " · quaþ þat lady sothly;

† Why should Lucifer seek to have a seat in the north ?

† But for offending Northern

99. *nat*] noþer IG. *sherte*] serke I.
100. *fyȝte—truthe*] feithfulli fiȝte M. IB *have only the imperfect line* —But fighte and fende trouþe.
101. *In*] ne M. *seluer*] ȝiftes F.
102. *Dauid*] For dauyd F. *by*] in IF. *daies*] lijfdaies M ; day S. *dobbede*] dubbede MF.
103. *And dude*] Dede I. [*on* MIFSGB] in PE. *here*] his MG.
104. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *Whanne god*] And god whan he I.
105. *He*] I *om. ten*] *so* MIB ; tenne F ; tene PESG.
106. [*and* MIFSEB] P *om. another*] on oþur FS ; oþere M ; oþer E.
107. *ac*] and M. *while*] wile P. [*durede* MIFSB] laste PE.
108. *on*] and on MF ; & E.
109. *He*] But he F. *þat*] IMFSG *om. hulde*] helde FESG ; helden MI.
110. *Lopen*] þei lepten M ; & lopen F. *hus*] heore M ; here F.
111. *lust*] a lust F. *be*] haue be F. *He—lust*] þat lust hadde I. *hus*] oure M. *god*] þat was I.
112. E *omits. wrechede*] wikked ISG ; false M. *he—lucifer*] lucifer · þat lurdeyn of helle F.
113. *a-lofte* SB] a-luft I ; on a-lofte PE ; so a-lofte F ; out on lofte M. *in*] in-to M.
114. [*þan* IB] To PEMFS. (*This is clearly right ;* wolde þan = chose rather than. *To meet the difficulty,* M *has*—To sitte in þe norþ half ; F *has*—To sitte aȝe þe sunne ; *cf.* ll. 117, 118.) *roweþ*] reweþ E.
115. *telle*] ȝow telle MI ; schewe F.
116. *sothly*] sotthly P ; þanne F.

men, I would tell you.

"Hit is sykerer by southe · þer þe sonne regneth
þan in þe north by meny notes · no man [leue] oþer.
For þider as þe fend flegh · hus fote for to sette,
Ther he failede and ful · and hus felawes alle; 120
And helle is *þer* he ys · and he þer ybounde.
Euene contrarie sitteþ criste · clerkus knowen þe sothe;
Dixit dominus domino meo, sede a dextris meis.
Ac of þis matere no more · meuen ich nelle;
[Hewes] in þe halyday · after hete wayten, 124
Þey care noȝt þauh it be cold · knaues, when þei worchen.
In wonderwyse holy wryt · tellith how þei fullen;
So*m*me in erþe, so*m*me in aier · so*m*me in helle dupe,
Ac lucifer lowest · lith of hem alle; 128
For prude þat hym pokede · hus peyne hath no ende.
Alle þat worchen þat wikkede ys · wenden þei shulle
After hure deþ-day · and dwelle þer wrong ys;
And alle þat han wel y-wroght · wenden þey shulle 132
Estwarde to heuene · euere to abyde,
Ther treuthe is, þe trone · þat trinite ynne sitteþ.
Lere it þus lewede men · for lettrede hit knoweþ,
[Than] treuthe & trewe loue · ys no tresour bettere." 136

† In the north fell the fiend, and there also is hell.

† Psalm cix. 1 (Vulg.).

† Peasants seek the fire on holidays, but care not how cold it is when they work.

Lucifer, for his exceeding pride, lies lowest in hell; with him all wrongdoers shall dwell.

But they that do well may be sure **A 13** of heaven."

117. *sonne*] day S.
118. *þan*] For M. *by*] ben M. [*leue* IFSEBG] loueþ M; *miswritten* loyne P.
119. *as*] þat SE. *flegh*] fly FSG; fli M; fley E.
120. *and*] þo he F. *ful*] *spelt* fuel P; *but* M *has* ful, *and* I *has* fulle, *miswritten for* ful; fil F; fel SG; felle E.
121. *ys*] S *om.* *þer* (2)] þer-inne MF.
122. *Euene*] & euene F; Euen þe I. *knowen*] witeþ I; kenne F.
123. *no*] F *om.* *meuen*] *so in* E; meue PG; *the other readings are corrupt, viz.* nemene M; nemnen I; nempne F; neuene S. *nelle*] ne þenke M.
124. [*Hewes* I] Hewen B; Hebb*us* FS; Hynen M; He was (*sic*) PE; Hyne hewys (*sic*) G. *hete*] *miswritten* heten P; meten E.
125. *Þey*] Ac þey I. *when*] wen P.
126. *In*] I *om.* *fullen*] fillen IF.
127. *in*] in-to M (*thrice*). *erþe*] þerþe I. *aier*] þeir I; þe eir M; þe eyre S. *somme* (3)] & summe F.
129. *prude*] pride MIF. *þat*] *þere* I. *peyne*] penaunce F.
130. *Alle*] And alle I. *þat wikkede ys*] wikkidnesse F.
131. *þer—ys*] wiþ þat schrewe M.
132. *alle*] þo M.
133. *Estwarde*] Euene estward F. *to*] til IEG. *euere*] *þere* euer FS.
134. *þe*] in (*sic*) M. *trone*] tour IB. *trinite*] þe trinite MFS; treuþe IG. *ynne sitteþ*] sitteþ ynne F.
135. *Lere*] Lerne E. *it*] M *om.* *it þus*] þis S.
136. [*Than*] þan S; That PMFIE (*perhaps* That *is right, but it is obscure*). *ys*] *þere* is F.

"Ich haue no kynde knowyng," quaþ ich · "ȝe mote kenne me bettere,
By what wey hit wexith · and [wheder] out of my menyng." 138

B 17
"But I have no natural knowledge of it," said I.

"Thow dotede daffe," quaþ hue · "dulle aren þy wittes,
Ich leue þow lernedist to lyte · latyn in þy ȝowthe;
Heu michi, quod sterilem · duxi uitam iuuenilem!
Hit is a kynde knowyng · þat kenneþ in þyn herte
For to louye þy lord · leuest of alle,
And deye raþere þan to do · eny dedlich synne; 144
Melius est mori quam male uiuere.

"Thou fool," said she, "it is thy natural *conscience*, teaching you to love God, and leave deadly sin.

And þis ich trowe be treuthe · who so can teche þe betere,
Loke þow soffrie hym to say · and so þow myght lerne.

If any can teach you better, let him!

For treuthe telleþ þat loue · ys tryacle for synne,
And most souereyne salue · for saule and for body. 148
Loue is þe plonte of pees · and most *pre*ciouse of vertues;
For heuene holde hit ne myȝte · so heuy hit semede,
Til hit hadde on erthe · ȝoten hym-selue.
Was neuere lef vp-on lynde · lyghter þer-after, 152

Truth says that Love is the treacle for sin.

For Love is the plant of Peace.

Heaven could not hold it, and it fell to earth.

137. *mote*] moste M. *ȝe mote*] ȝit mote ȝe I. *kenne me*] me teche M.

138. *what*] wat P. [*wheder* I] whider B; whod*ur* S; wider M; wonder PE. *my menyng*] menynges IB. *wheder—menyng*] whedurward he drawe þ F.

139. *dotede*] dotest M; dosen (*sic*) I. *hue*] sche MIS; scheo F; ȝo E. *dulle*] dolle P. *aren*] arn M; are IS; be F; byþ G. *þy*] ȝowr*e* S.

140. *leue*] *so* IFSEGB; lyue P; trowe M. *lernedist*] lernest M. *to*] ful M. *lyte*] litel MIF. *þy*] þe S. *ȝowthe* G] ȝouþe MISB; *spelt* ȝoweþe P; ȝougheþ E; F *has* liue.

142. *kenneþ*] knoweþ M; cumseth F. *in*] M *om.*

143. *leuest*] luuest P.

144. *deye*] to deye S. *to*] MIS *om.*

145. *And*] As E; M *om.* *ich trowe*] trowe i F. *so*] M *om.*

146. *þow* (1)] to E. *þow myght*] myght þou IG; mith þou M; maistow F.

147. *for*] to abate I.

148. *for* (1)] boþe for F. *saule—body*] bodi and for soule M. *for* (2)] F *om.*

149. *plonte*] *so* ESG; plante MIF. *and*] MIFS *om.*

150. *For*] M *om.* *hit*] it first I.

151. *on*] of I. *ȝoten*] I-ȝotun I; ȝeten EG. *hym-selue*] hit-selue IS.

152. *lef*] *placed after* lynde *in* PE *only.* *vp-on*] on MF. *lyghter*] lygheter P; þat was litere M.

But having taken human
B 18 nature, it was as light as a linden-leaf.

As whanne hit hadde of þe [folde] · flesch and blod ytake;
Tho was it portatyf and *per*shaunt · as þe poynt of a nelde,
May non Armure hit lette · noþer hye walles;

Love is a leader of the angels, and a mediator.

For-þy is loue ledere · of oure lordes folke in heuene,
And [a] mene, as þe meyere is · by-twyne þe kyng & þe comune,
Ryȝt so is loue a ledere · and þe lawe shapeþ;
Vp man for hus mysdedes · þe mercement he taxeþ.
And for to knowe it kyndeliche · hit comseþ by myghte,
In þe herte, *þer* is þe hefd · and þe hye welle.

A 14 Of kynde knowyng in *herte* · þer comseþ a myghte,

Love began with God the Father, who let His Son die for us;

That falleþ to þe Fader · þat formede ous alle.
On ous he lokyde *with* loue · and let hus sone deye,
Meekliche for oure mysdedes · to amendy ous alle.
And ȝut wolde he hem no wo · þat wroght hym al þat tene,

even as Christ prayed for His enemies,

Bote myldeliche *with* mouthe · mercy he by-souhte,
To haue pyte on þat puple · þat paynede hym to deþe.
Her myȝt þow see ensample · In hym-self one,

153. *As*] And M; Ac S. *whanne*] wanne P. [*folde* IB] fold M; flod PS; flode E; flood F; *see* B-text.

154. *Tho—it*] Hit was M. *per-shaunt*] persaunt FG; persaund M; *per*sende I. *þe*] FGS *om.* *nelde*] *so* M; nedle EFS; nedele IG.

155. *May*] þer ne mai M. *hit lette*] him wiþ-sitte M. *noþer*] ne none IF.

156. *For-þy*] For-whi M; For he E. *is loue*] loue is FMS. *in*] of MISG.

157. [*a* MIFSGB] PE *om.* *þe—is*] as a meir MF. *&* *þe*] & F.

158. *a*] I *om.* *and*]. whan F. *shapeþ*] shappeþ PE.

159. *Vp*] Vp-on MS; Of F. *mysdedes*] mysdede F. *taxeþ*] axeth F.

160. *it*] hym SG. *comseþ*] comeþ MI. *by myghte*] in þe herte M.

161. *In*] And in I. *þer*] M *om.* *hefd*] heued IG; hede F; hed M; hefe S; hefte E.

162. *Of*] For of I. *knowyng*] wit M. *comseþ*] of comeþ M; comeþ I.

163. *þat*] And þat I. *to*] *so* IFSGB; in-to PEM; *see* B-text. *ous*] us MF; vs IE.

164, 165. M *omits.* *On—and*] Loked on vs with loue I. *amendy*] amende IFS.

166. I *omits.* *ȝut*] S *om.* *wolde*] ne wolde M. *he*] S *om.* *tene*] teune P.

167. *myldeliche*] mekeli MIG. *he*] hem he F; he þe (*sic*) E.

168. *on þat*] of þe I. *paynede*] pyned SG.

169. *Her*] þer E. *myȝt*] may F. *ensample*] ensamples I.

That he was myghtful & meke · and mercy gan graunte, granting mercy to them that pierced his heart.
To hem þat henge hym hye · and hus herte þerlede.
For-þy ich rede 3ow ryche · haue reuthe of þe poure; Therefore I advise the rich to have pity on the poor; for 'with the same measure,' &c.
Þauh 3e be myghty to mote · beeþ meke in 3oure workes;
Þe same mesure þat 3e meteþ · amys oþer ellys,
3e shulleþ be weyen þer-with · whanne 3e wenden hennes;

Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis, remecietur uobis. Matt. vii. 2.

Thauh 3e be trewe of 3oure tonge · and trewelich wynne, For though ye be true in word and deed, except ye love the poor, and **B 19** give alms,
And be as chast as a chyld · þat noþer chit ne fyghteþ,
Bote yf [3e] loue leelliche · and lene þe poure,
Of such good as god sent · goodliche parte,
3e haue no more meryt · in masse ne in houres, **A 15** ye have no merit in your prayers.
Than malkyn of hure maidenhod · wham no man desireþ.

For Iamys þe gentel · [Iuggeþ] in hus bokes, St James tells us that Faith without works is dead;
Þat feith with-oute fet · ys febelere þan nouht,
And ded as a dore-nayle · bote yf þe dede folwe;

Fides sine operibus mortua est. Jam. ii. 20.

Chastite with-oute charite · worth cheynid in helle; so chastity without charity is but an unlighted lamp.
Hit is as lewede as a lampe · þat no lyght ys ynne.
Meny chapelayns aren chast · ac charite hem faileþ;

170. *meke*] meuk P.
171. *hem*] hym P. *henge*] hangede M; hengen IB. *hym*] I *om.* *þerlede*] *so* ES; þerlden M; þrillede F; þorlede PI.
172. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *haue*] haueþ M; ha F. *reuthe*] merci MSG. *of*] on MFS; vpon I. *þe*] E *om.*
173. *mote*] mete E. *meke*] meuk P.
174. *Þe*] For þe I.
175. *weyen*] i-weied M. *whanne*] wanne P. *remecietur*] remicietur PS.
176. *trewe*] trywe P. *tonge*] tonges IS. *trewelich*] triwelich P.
177. *noþer chit*] chit neyþer I. *chit*] chid M. *ne*] no F. *fyghteþ*] striueþ M.
178. [*3e* MIFSEGB] P *om.* *lene*] lene to PE; *but* MIFSGB *omit* to.
179. *sent*] sent 3ow I. *goodliche*] & goodliche it F; and trewliche M. *parte*] to parte S.
180. *in*] of M (*twice*). *masse*] mass*us* F.
181. *wham*] *so* SE; wam P; whom F; þat M. *wham—man*] whan no man hir I.
182. [*Iuggeþ*] *so* ISEB; *miswritten* suggeþ P; iugged F; Iugede M.
183. *fet*] feet MF; þe feet I; fete E.
184. *ded*] as ded I. *a*] I *om.* *yf*] FSG *om.*
185. *Chastite*] For chastite F. *cheynid*] i-chained M; schrined F.
186. *as* (1)] M *om.* *lewede*] lewed þing I. *ys*] nys E.
187. *aren*] ben M. *ac*] but M. *hem faileþ*] is a-weiȝe M.

Many chaplains are chaste, but have not charity;

Aren none hardur ne hongryour · þan men of holy churche,
Auerouse & euel-willed · whanne thei ben auaunsed,
And vnkynde to hure kyn · and to alle crystine;

they eat up what they should give away, and ask for more, and are encumbered with avarice.

Thei chewen here charite · and chiden after more;
And encombred *with* couetyse · þei conne nat out crepe,
So harde hath aueryce · hasped hem to-gederes.
And þat ys no treuthe of þe trinite · bote trecherie and synne,

This treachery sets the laity a bad example.

And luþer ensample, leue me · to þe lewede puple.
For thees aren wordes · wryten in þe euangelye,

A 16 See what is in the Gospel (Luke vi. 38).

Date et dabitur uobis · [for I dele ȝow alle.]

Love comforts Christians.

And þat is þe lok of loue · þat vnloseþ grace,
þat conforteth alle cristine · encombred *with* synne.

Love is the readiest way to heaven;

So loue ys lech of lyue · and lysse of alle peyne,
And þe graffe of grace · and grayþest [wey] to heuene.

B 20 and Truth is the best of all treasures."

For-þy ich may say, as ich seide · by syght of þe tixt,
Whenne alle tresours ben tryed · treuth ys þe best;
Loue it," quaþ [þat] lady · "lette may ich no lengere
To lere þe what loue ys" · and leue at [me] hue lauhte.

Explicit passus secundus.

188. *Aren*] þer arn M.

189. *euel*] *written* veuele P. *willed*] i-willed M; ywilled E. *whanne*] wanne P. *thei ben*] hy buþ S; þei beþ FE.

190. *And*] I *om.*

191. *Thei*] I *om.*

192. *And*] þei ben M; And ben I; FS *om.* *with*] þorȝ S. *þei*] and M. *out crepe*] crepe out I.

193. *hasped*] hapsed I. *to-gederes*] to-gedderes P.

194. *And þat*] þat M; Hit F.

195. *And*] And a I. *leue me*] leueth he F; leueþ me E; leyf me P. *to*] as for I.

196. *aren*] ben M; beþ F. *wryten*] i-wriȝten M; y-writen I; Iwrite S.

197. [*for—alle*] *from* MIFSGB; PE *om.*

198. *lok*] book (*wrongly*) I. *þat* (2)] and I. *vnloseþ*] vnlowketh F.

199. *conforteth*] confortetth P. *cristine*] carfulle I. *encombred*] accombred I; acombred F.

200. *So*] So þat F. *peyne*] peine MIE; payne SGB; peynes F; pyne P.

201. *and*] an P; I *om.* *grayþest*] *so* IF; grayþust S; grayþost P; gracioust M; growith E. [*wey* S] wei MF; way IB; PE *om.*

202. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *may*] M *om.* *seide*] seide ere I. *þe tixt*] þis tixt E; þese textus F; þis tixes (*sic*) M; þis texcestes (*sic*) I.

203. *Whenne*] Wenne P. *ben*] beth F. *tryed*] I-tried F.

204. [*þat* MIFEGB] þe P. *may ich*] i ne mai M.

205. *lere*] lerne M; E *om.* *þe*] S *om.* *what*] wat P. [*me* MIFSEGB] P *om.* *hue*] sche MIFS; ȝo E.

PASSUS III.

Incipit passus tercius.

And þanne ich knelede on my knees · and cryede to hure of grace, **A 17 B 21** Then I prayed her

And seide, "mercy, madame · for marye loue of heuene,
Þat bar þat blessede barn · þat boughte vs on þe rode,
Kenne me by som craft · to knowe þe false." to teach me how to know
"Loke vpon þy lyft half," quath hue · "lo whar he standiþ, Falsehood. She bade me turn and see him.
Boþe fals and fauel · and fykel-tonge lyere,
And menye of hure maners · boþe men and wommen."
Ich lokid on my lyft half · as þe lady me tauhte, I looked, and, first of all, beheld
And sauh a womman as yt were · wonderlich riche cloþed. a woman very richly clothed,
[Hue] was purfild with peloure · non purere in erthe,
And coroned [with] a corone · þe kynge hath no betere; decked with a crown

RUBRIC. *So in* PES. Hic incipit tertius passus de uisione M; Passus secundus de uisione, vbi prius I; Incipit tercius F.

1. *And*] M *om. to—of*] of hure M. *of*] F *om.*

3. *þat* (1)] þe FS. *blessede*] blisful MI. *þe*] E *om.*

4. *Kenne*] As kenneth F. *me*] S *om. knowe*] kenne M.

5. *vpon*] on MF. *half*] hand M. *hue*] sche MFS; 3o E. *quath hue*] I *om. lo*] and lo I; & se F. *whar*] war P.

6. *Boþe*] I *om. and fykel-tonge*] fikeltonge and M.

7. *boþe*] of I.

8. E *omits. Ich lokid*] þo loked I F. *on*] vpon IS. *half*] hand M.

9. *sauh*] I *om. womman*] wommon P. *riche*] IF *om. cloþed*] i-cloþed MIFG.

10. [*Hue* S] *miswritten* He P; *but see* l. 5; Sche ISM; Heo FG; 3o E. *with*] wit P; in I. *in*] on MES.

11. *coroned*] coronede P. [*with* F] wiþ G; in PEMIS; *but cf.* B-text. *no*] non I.

and costly rings. On alle hure fyue fyngres · rycheliche yrynged, 12

She wore rubies and other gems. (A 18) And þer-on rede rubies · and oþer riche stones.

Hure robe was ryccher · þan ich rede couthe,

I cannot describe her array. For to telle of hure atyre · no tyme haue ich nouth.

Hure a-raye with hure rychesse · rauesshede myn herte, 16

B 22 "Whas wyf hue were · and what was hure name,

"Who is this?" I asked. Leue lady," quaþ ich þo · "layn nat yf ȝe knowen."

"That is Meed (Bribery)," she said, "who has done me much evil. "þat ys mede þe mayde," quaþ hue · "þat hath noyed me ofte,

And lowen vp-on my lemman · þat leaute ys hoten, 20

And lackyd hym to lordes · þat lawes han to kepe,

In kynges court & in comune court · contrarieþ my techynge.

In þe popes paleys · hue is pryuy as my-selue,

Ac soþnesse wold noȝt so · for hue is a bastarde; 24

Her father was named [Flattery]; and she is like him. On fauel was hure fader · þat hath a fykel tonge,

And selde soth seith · bote [if] he souche gyle;

And mede ys manered after hym · as men of kynde karpen,

[*Qualis*] *pater, talis filius.*

† A briar bears For shal neuere brere bere · beries as a vyne, 28

12. *On*] M *om.* *rycheliche*] ful richeli MI.

14. *robe*] robyng I. *was*] was ribaned F. *couthe*] coude MF.

15. *nouth*] now E.

16. *Hure*] þe M. *with*] wit P. *with hure*] of þat M; for F.

17. *Whas*] *so* SG; Whos IE; Whose M; Hoos F; *miswritten* Was P. *hue*] þat sche M; sche IS; scheo F; ȝo E. *were*] was F.

18. *Leue*] *so* MES; Leeue I; Leef F; Luue P. *lady*] dame S. *layn nat*] lay nat F; lie not E; telleþ me M.

19. *hue*] sche MFS; ȝo E. *quaþ hue*] I *om.* *þat*] MIFS *om.* *hath*] had S. *noyed*] i-noied M; nuyed S. *ofte*] ful ofte MIFS.

20. *lowen*] I-lowe I. *vp-on*] on MIF. *lemman*] lemmen P. *hoten*] i-hote MF; I-hotun S.

21. *lackyd*] lackeþ M; lakkeþ I.

22. *ſ*] IS *om.* *in*] MF *om.* *court* (2)] F *om.* *techynge*] lore F.

23. *hue*] sche MS; he I; heo F; ȝo E. *pryuy*] as preuei M.

24. *soþnesse*] sothfastnesse F. *is*] was F.

25. *On*] Oon I; Of (*sic*) E; Sire F. *hath*] had F.

26. *selde* MIEG] seilde P; seelde F; ful selde S. [*if* IFEB] MPS *om.* *souche*] *so* IBE; suche S; seche FG. *bote—souche*] bute hit sowne to M.

27. *ys*] E *om.* *kynde*] *miswritten* kynden P. [*Qualis* FESB] Talis PIM. *filius*] filia IE.

28. *beries*] bery I.

Ne on croked kene þorne · kynde fygys wexe;
Bona arbor bonum fructum facit.
Ich ouhte be herre þan hue · ich kam of [a] betere,
The fader þat me forth brouhte · *filius dei* he hoteþ,
þat neuere lyede ne lauhwede · in Al hus lyf-tyme.
Ich am hus dere douheter · duchesse of heuene;
What man þat me louyeþ · and my wille folweþ,
Shal haue grâce to good ynow · and a good ende;
And what man þat loueþ mede · my lyf ich dar wedde,
He shal lese for hure loue · a lappe of trewe charite.
That most helpeþ men to heuene · mede most letteþ,
Ich do hit vpon dauid · þe doumbe wol noȝt lye;
Domine, quis habitabit in tabernaculo tuo, et cetera.
Dauid vn-doþ hit hym-self · as þe doumbe sheweþ,
Et super innocentem munera non accepit.
To-morwe worth mede wedded · to a mansed wrecche,
To on fals faithles · of þe feendes kynne.
Fauel þorgh his flateryng speche · hath mede foule enchantid,
And al is lyers ledyng · þat lady is þus ywedded.

not grapes, nor a thorn figs. Matt. vii. 17.

My father is the [Son of] God.

† Whoever loveth me shall find grace.

See what David says of men who take Meed. Psal. xiv. 1 (Vulgate).

† Psal. xiv. 5.

B 2.3 To-morrow shall Meed be married to Falsehood, by help of Flattery.

29. *Ne*] *apparently miswritten* No P. *on*] on a MIFS. *kene*] kynde (*sic*) S. · *fygys*] figge I. *facit*] affert M.

30. *be*] to be M; ben I. *herre*] *so* E; *miswritten* herrer P; heyhere I; heiere F; hyur S; bet M. *hue*] sche MS; he I; heo F; ȝo E. *ich*] for i M. [*a* IFSB] þe M; kynde PE; *cf.* B-text.

31. *me*] on (*sic*) I.

32. *lyede*] ne lei M. *lauhwede*] lawhede IF; lawede E; lauȝede S; lauhed M. *Al*] M *om.*

33. *Ich am*] And I am I. *dere* MIFEB] dure P. *duchesse*] & duchesse F.

34. *What*] þat what I. *þat*] MI *om.* *louyeþ*] louyȝe M. *folweþ*] folewe M. *my—folweþ*] wole my wil holde F.

35. *Shal*] He schal F. *to*] of M. *grace—good*] good riȝt F.

36. *what*] wat P. *þat*] M *om.* *loueþ mede*] mede louiȝe M; mede loueþ IG. *ich dar*] dar i MFG.

37. *lese*] luse P. *a lappe*] and lippe (*sic*) I. *a—charite*] þe liȝt of conscience F. *trewe*] trywe P.

38. *most—men*] helpeþ men most M; helpeþ man most I. *men*] man IF. *most* (2)] ofte M.

39. *doumbe*] dombe IEG.

40. *hit*] M *om.* *doumbe*] *so* MSFB; dombe IEG; dumbe P.

41. *wed'ded*] maried ISFG; i-maried M.

42. *To*] Til F. *feendes*] deueles MG.

43. *his*] *so* IFSEG; is P; M *om.* *speche*] F *om.* *foule*] ful F.

44. *And*] F *om.* *is*] þurw F; þorȝ S. *þat*] þis IS; þat þat E; þe F. *is þus*] schal þus be M; ys F.

Soffre now and þow shalt see · suche as ben apaiede,
To-morrow you may see [Meed's marriage]; þat mede ys þus ymaryed · to-morwe þow shalt aspie.
Know hym wel, yf þow kanst · and kep þe fro hem alle
þat louyeþ hure lordsheps · lasse oþer more. 48
but let her friends alone. Lacke hem noȝt, bote lete hem worthe · tyl leaute be Iustice,
And haue power for to punyshe hem · þen put forþ þy reson.
A 19 I now commend thee to Christ." For ich by-kenne þe crist," quaþ hue · "and hus clene moder,
Encombre neuere þy conscience · for couetyse of mede."
Thus she left me lying asleep. Afterwards, I beheld the bridal. Thus left me þat lady · lyggynge a slepe. 53
And ich sauh how mede was maried · metyng as it were;
And al þe riche retynaunce · þat roteþ hem on fals lyuynge
Were bede to þat brudale · on boþe half þe contreie,
Thither were assembled knights, clerks, sheriffs, beadles, advocates, and many others. Of many maner men · þat were of medes kunne; 57
Of knyȝtes, of clerkes · of oþer comune puple,
As sysours and somners · shereyues and here clerkes,
Budels and bailifs · and brokours of chaffare, 60
B 24 [Forgoers] and vytailers · and vokettus of [þe] Arches,

45. *now*] I *om.* *suche*] for suche F.
47. *wel*] MI *om.*
48. *þat*] For her þat M. *lordsheps*] lordschepe MF; lordeschipe I; worschip E. *oþer*] *so* IES; *miswritten* oþer þe P. *lasse oþer*] oþer lasse or M; boþe lasse and F.
49. *Lacke*] Loue F. *bote*] & F. *be Iustice*] by maystre S.
50. *haue*] haued M. *for*] MIFSG *om.* *put*] put þou F.
51. *For*] M *om.* *hue*] sche MIS; scheo F; ȝo E; heo G.
52. *Encombre*] And acombre þou I.
53. *a slepe*] as a slepe I; in my slepe F.
54. *And*] M *om.* *And—was*] þo saw I mede F. *it were*] I were F.
55. *And*] MIG *om.* *hem*] M *om.* *on*] of I; in FE. *þat—on*] rotede *in* F.
56. *bede*] i-bede M; beden I; boden E. *þat*] þe IFG. *brudale*] bridale MIEG; bruydale S; bredale F. *on*] a I.
57. *men*] of men MIFS. *kunne*] kynne MIESG; kyn F. *were—kunne*] of medes kynne were I.
58. *of* (2)] & S. *of* (3)] and MS; & of F. *oþer*] þe F.
59. *As*] M *om.* *here*] oþer M.
60. *Budels*] Budeles M; Budelus S; Bedeles I; Bedellus F; Bedels E. *and* (1)] S *om.* *chaffare*] chaffares MIF.
61. [*Forgoers* IE] Vorgheours P; Voregoerus S; & foragers F... *Forgoers and*] Alle maner of M. *voketus*] voketts I; vocates E; a-uoketes M; felawes F. [*þe* FESGI] PM *om.*

Ich kan noȝt rekenye þe route · þat ran a-boute mede.
Ac symonye and ciuile · and sisours of contreis
Were most pryuye with mede · of eny men, [me þouȝte].
Ac fauel was þe ferste · þat fette hure [out] of chambre,
And as a brocoũr broghte hure forth · to be ioynid with fals.
Whanne symonye and cyuyle · sauh here boþeres wil,
Thay assented þer-to · at seluers praiere.
Thenne leep liere forþ, and seide · "lo! here a chartre,
That gyle hath gyue to falsnesse · and graunted to mede,"
And preyþ cyuyle it to see · and symonye it to rede.
Þanne symonye and cyuyle · stoden forth boþe,
And vnfeelde [þe] feffement · þat fals hadde maked;
Þanne sayde symonye · þat cyuyl it herde,
"Alle þat louen & byleuen · vp lykyng of mede,
Leueþ hit leelly · thys worth hure laste mede,
Þat folwen falsnesse · fauel, and lyere,
And me, and swiche men · þat after mede wayten.

Sciant presentes et futuri: et cetera.

† Of these, Simony and Civil were the principal.

Then Flattery led Meed to Falsehood.

(A 20) Then Liar leapt forth with a charter.

Simony and Civil unfold the deed.

CARTA. "Know

63. *Ac*] And I.
64. *with*] wit P. *eny*] meny S. [*me þouȝte* MFSBG] me þoghte IE; of þe route P.
65. *Ac*] & sire F. *fette*] brouȝte M. [*out* MIFBG] oute S; PE *om.*
66. *And as*] As M; And I. *broghte*] he brouȝte M. *with*] wit P; to þe I.
67. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *sauh*] sien M. *here boþeres*] heore boþe M; *þer* boþe I; here beiþer F; here boþe SG; here boþers E.
68. *þer-to*] it were so IB (*which improves the alliteration*).
69. *Thenne*] þo M. *leep*] lepte M; luppe I; lepe F; lept S; leepe E.
70. *gyue*] i-ȝeue M. *to* (1)] M *om. to* (2)] also MIG.
71. M *transposes* symonye *and* cyuyle. *it—see*] to se it I. *it—rede*] to rede it IFS.
72. *stoden*] *so* MFG; stode E; standen I; stod P; stop (!) S.
73. *And*] F *om. vnfeelde*] *so* E; vnfelde SG; vnfeeld P; vnfoldeþ IB; Vnfoldede FM. [*þe* MIFSEGB] þat P. *maked*] makede P.
74. *Þanne*] þo M. *þat*] and M.
75. *louen*] liuen M. *byleuen*] *so* EMFSG; bylyuen P; bilieueþ I. *vp*] *so* MEFG; vppe I; vpon S.
76. *mede*] ende M. *thys—mede*] wo is here last drynke F.
78. *And*] I *om. me*] Meede I. *swiche*] *so* MS; suche IE; *miswritten* shiche P. *And—men*] As beth þese myster*u*s men F. *þat*] as M. *Carta*] *so* PEG; Incipit carta F (*see margin*); I *adds*—The feoffament of Meede. *futuri*] futuri, quod ego M.

all men that Meed is married for her goods;

[Witen] alle and witnesen · þat wonen here on erthe,
þat mede ys y-maried · more for hure richesse
þan for holynesse oþer hendenesse · oþer for hye kynde.
Falsnesse is fayne of hure · for he wot hure riche,

and Flattery grants her and her husband

And fauel hath *with* fals speche · feffed hem by þis lettere
To be prynces of prude · and pouerte to dispice,
To bakbyten and to bosten · and bere fals witnesse,
To scornie and to scolde · sclaundres to make,
Boþ vnbuxom and bold · to breke þe ten hestes.

the earldom of Envy,

The erldom of enuye · and yre he hym grauntеþ,
With þe castel of cheste · and chatering-out-of-reson;

and the county of Covetousness;

The countee of couetise · he consenteþ to boþe,
B 25. *With* vserye and Auerice · and oþer false sleithes
In bargeyns and in brocages · *with* þe borghe of þufþe,

also the lordship of Lechery.

And al þe lordshep of lecherye · in lengþe and in Brede,
As in workes and in wordes · [and] waitynges of eyes,
In wedes and [in] wisshynges · and *with* ydel þouhtes,
þer þat wil wolde · and werkmanshup faileþ.

79. [*Witen* I] Wyten B; Witten E; Wetyn P; Weten S; Wetith F; Wite ȝe M. *alle*] MI *om.*

80. *hure*] hure mechel P; hire mychel E; *but* MIFSG *omit* mechel; *cf.* B-text.

81. *for* (1)] F *om.* F *transposes* holynesse *and* hendenesse. *kynde*] kynne M.

82. *is*] his P. *wot*] fynt F.

83. *And*] M *om.* *hath with*] þat haþ a I. *feffed*] feffeþ I. *fals—lettere*] falsnesse · feffed hèm to-gedere F.

84. *prynces*] princesse M; prince F; pruyse (*sic*) I. *and*] M *om.*

85. *bakbyten*] *so* S; bacbite MIF; bagbyten PE. *bosten*] boste wel F. *and*] and to M. *witnesse*] whitnesse P; withnesse M.

86. *scornie—scolde*] scolde & to scorne S. *sclaundres*] & sclaundres FS; and sclaundre I.

87. *Boþ*] MIG *om.* *vnbuxom*] buxom F.

88. *and yre*] euer F. *he hym*] hem he S. *grauntеþ*] graunte (*sic*) I.

89. *cheste—reson*] care · & of vnkynde speche F.

90. *countee*] cuntesse FS. *The countee*] They counteþ I. *he*] and I; F *om.* *to*] to hem IF; S *om.*

92. *and*] S *om.* *in*] IF *om.* *brocages*] burgages FG. *þe*] E *om.* *borghe*] bourh M; borwe I; box F; borȝ ES. *þufþe*] *so* EG; þefþe M; þefte IFSB.

93. F *omits.* *And*] With I. *al*] *in* E.

94. *and* (1)] F *om.* *in* (2)] M *om.* [*and* M] and in I; in FESG; P *om.* *waitynges*] waytynges EG; waityng MIFS; waitenges P.

95. *and*] MFS *om.* [*in* MFSEGB] PI *om.* *wisshynges*] wisshenges P; wissching M. *with*] in M.

Glotenye he geueþ hem · and grete oþes to-gederes,
Al day to drynke · at dyuerse tauernes,
Ther to Iangle and to Iape · and Iuge her emcristine,
And fastingdayes to frete · by-for noon, and drynke
With spicerie, spek ydelnesse · In veen speche, and spene,
And suwye forþ swych felaushep · tyl þei ben fallen in slewþe,
And a-wake *with* wanhope · and no wil to amende,
For he leyueþ be ylost · when he hus lyf leteþ:
This lif to folwie falsnesse · and folk þat on hym leueþ,
After hure deþ [a] dwelling · day *with*-outen ende
In luciferes lordshup · as þys lettere sheweþ,
With al þe portinaunce of purgatorye · And þe payne of helle."

Gluttony is also granted to them,

and all kinds of Sloth;

and they are to dwell in hell after death."

In witnesse of þis þyng · wrong was þe ferste,
And Peres þe p*ar*doner · of paulynes queste,
Bette þe budele · of banneburies sokne,
Reynald þe reue · and Redyngkynges menye,
Munde þe mylnere · and meny mo oþere.
In þe date of þe deuel · þis dede ys a-seled,
By syght of syre symonye · and cyuyles leue.
Thanne [tened] hym theologye · whenne he þys tale herde,

A 21 B 26 The witnesses were Wrong, Piers the Pardoner, Bette the beadle, and many others.

The deed was then sealed and signed.

But Theology was wroth, and said

97. *he geueþ*] i ȝeue M; a gyueþ I. *hem* MIFEB] hym P.
98. *drynke*] drynk depe F. *at*] in MF.
99. *Ther*] And þer I. *Iangle*] Iangly P. *to* (2)] M *om.*
100. *And*] M *om.* *byfor*] a-fore F. *and*] an P.
101. *spek*] and speke M. *and*] to F. *spene*] spende MI.
102. *suwye*] suwe MF; sewe S; sue I; suweþ E. *swych*] wiþ M.
104. *leyueþ*] loueþ M. *be*] to be MI. *when*] wen P.
105. *lif*] F *om.* *to*] is to MF. *leueþ*] *so* IFSE; leued M; lyueþ P.
106. [*a* MFSEG] þay I; P *om.* *dwelling*] duellen I.
107. *luciferes lordshup*] lordschipe *with* lucifer I. *þys*] þe MF.
108. *al*] F *om.* *þe portinaunce*] þaportenances I. *And*] in M; & al F. *payne*] pyne F.
111. *Bette*] Bot I. *budele*] bedil I; bedel E; bedele F. *banneburies*] banburi MF; Bannebury I. *sokne*] soke M.
112. *and*] and þe PE; *but* IFS *om.* þe; M *has* of. M *transposes* ll. 111 *and* 112.
113. *Munde*] Mondy F; Mundy SG. *mylnere*] mullere M; myllere I; mill-ward F. *mo oþere*] anoþer I.
114. *ys*] was M.
116. *Thanne*] Þo M. [*tened* IFS] tenede MG; tene E; tuemede (*for* tuenede) P. *whenne*] wenne P. *tale*] tales I.

to [Simony], "Wo betide thee!

And seyde to syre symonye · "now sorwe mote þow haue,

Such a weddyng to worche · þat wrathe myghte treuþe.

And er þis weddyng be wroughte · wo to al ȝoure consail!

† For Meed's mother is Amends,

For mede is moillere · amendes was here dame;

þouh fals were hure fader · and fykel-tonge hure syre,

Amendes was hure [moder] · by trewe [mennes] lokyng.

† and she may not be wedded without her mother's leave.

With-oute hure mod*er* amendes · mede may noght be wedded,

For treuth plyghte hure treuthe · to wedde on of hure douhteres,

And god grauntede it were so · so þat no gyle were,

† But thou hast given her as Guile taught thee.

And þow hast ygeue hure as gyle taughte · god ȝyue þe sorwe!

For cyuyl and þy selue · selde fulfilleth

þat god wolde were ydo · *with*-oute som deceite.

Ich theologie þe tixt knowe · and trewe dome wyt-nesseþ,

† Lawrence, lying on the gridiron, claimed heaven as his due reward.

þat laurens þe leuite · lyggynge on þe gredire,

Loked vp to oure lorde · and a-loud seide,

'God, of þy *grace* · heuene gates opene,

117. *syre*] MIFS *om.* *symonye*] ciuile MF. *now*] M *om.* *mote þow*] *so* IE; þow mote P; þow M. *mote—haue*] on þi bok*us* F.

118. *þat*] to F. *wrathe*] tene M. *myghte*] mai M; *with* þe F. *treuþe*] treuhþe P.

119. *And*] M *om.* *al*] M *om.* *al—consail*] ȝow alle F.

120. *is*] is a MF. *moillere*] moilere IFS; moiller M. *was*] I *om.*

121. *þouh*] Al-þogh I. *syre*] belsire MIG.

122. [*moder* MIBG] dame PEFS. [*mennes* MI] men PEFS.

123. *With-oute*] And wiþoute IB.

124. *hure*] ȝoure E. *douhteres*] doutren M.

125. F *omits.* *grauntede*] graunte IS. *it*] þat it S. *þat*] MI *om.*

126. *ygeue—taughte*] gon here after gyle F. *god*] now god I.

127. *selde*] ful selden ȝe F.

128. *som*] M *om.* *deceite*] deceytes F.

129. *See note in* B-text, p. 392. *tixt*] trewþe F. *and*] ȝif I. *trewe-dome*] trewþe M; text*us* it F.

130. *lyggynge*] þat lay I. *þe* (2)] M *om.* *gredire*] fyre F.

131. *a-loud*] al þis he M. *seide*] cride F.

132. *opene*] þow opene M.

For ich, man, of þy mercy · mede haue deserued!' 133
And sythþe man may an hey · mede of god deserue,
Hit semeþ ful sothly · ryght so on erthe,
That mede may be wedded · to no man bote to treuthe; Meed should be wedded to Truth.
And þow hast feffyd hure *with* fals · fy on suche lawe!
For þorw lesynges ȝe [lacchen] · largeliche mede. 138 Thou livest by lying.
Þat ȝe nemeþ & notaries · to nauht by-gynneþ brynge
Holy churche, and charite · ȝe cheweþ and deuoureþ.
Ȝe shulle a-bygge boþe · bote ȝe a-mende þe sonnere. **A 22**
For wel ȝe wyten, wernardes · as holy wryt telleþ, But ye shall abide it hereafter.
Þat fals ys faithles · þe fend ys hus syre, Ye well know
And as a bastard ybore · byȝute was he neuere. 144 Falsehood is a **B 27** traitor;
And mede ys moillere · a maiden of goode,
Hue myghte cusse þe kyng · as for hus kynswo*m*man. but Meed (Reward) might kiss the king.
For-þy worcheþ by wisdome · and by witte al-so,
And ledeþ hure to londoun · wher lawe may declare, 148 Then take her to London, and see if the law will permit this.
Yf matrimoine may be · of mede and of falshede.
And þow Iustice[s] en-ioynen hem · þorgh Iurers oþes,
Ȝut be war of þe weddyng · for wytty is treuthe,
And conscience is of hus consail · and knoweth ȝow alle; 152
And yf he fynde ȝow in defaute · [and] *with* þe false holde, If Conscience find this out,

134. *man*] a man M.
135. *ful*] riȝt F; I *om.* *on*] here on M.
136. *to* (2)] IG *om.*
137. *fy*] now fy F. *suche*] þi F; swich a M.
138. *þorw*] bi MI. [*lacchen* MIFS] lauhte P; laȝt E.
139. *ȝ*] and þe I. *by-gynneþ*] hit wole ȝow M; gynneþ I; gynneth to F; ȝe gunnuþ S.
141. *a-bygge*] abeggen it I.
143. *fals*] foule fals F.
144. *as*] is M. *ybore*] born M. *byȝute*] byȝete IS; bigete M; be-ȝeten F.
145. *ys*] is a M; was a F. *a*] and I.
146. *Hue*] Sche MS; Scheo F; ȝo E; And I. *myghte*] may F. *as*] M *om.* *hus*] F *om.*
147. *For-þy*] For-whi M; For hy EG. *al-so*] boþe M.
148. *londoun*] londen P. *wher*] wer P; *þere IG.*
149. *Yf*] Wheþer M; Where IG. *may be*] be may F. *falshede*] fals F.
150. *þow*] þogh I; þauȝ S; trewe M. *Iustices*] *so* IFSE; Iustice PM. *en-ioynen*] an-ioynen I; ioyne F. *oþes*] lawe F.
151. *Ȝut*] But ȝut M. *þe*] MF *om.* *weddyng*] wedyng P. *treuthe*] sir trewþe F.
152. *And*] M *om.* *is*] F *om.*
153. *And*] M *om.* *in*] in eny S. [*and* MI] PEFS *om.* *þe*] M *om.* *holde*] to holde FS.

it will go hard with you at the last."

Hit shal sitte ȝoure soules · ful soure at þe laste."
Her-to a-sentyd cyuyle · ac symonie ne wolde,
Tyl he hadde seluer for þe seel · [and] sygnes of notaries.

A 23 Then Flattery fetched out florins, and bade Guile give it to the notaries.

Tho fette fauel forþ · floreynes y-nowe,
And bad gyle "go gyue ·gold al a-boute,
Nameliche, to notaries · þat non of hem faille;
And feffe falsnesse · with floreynes ynowe,
For he may mede amaistren · *with* hus myry speche."

Great were the thanks for these bribes.

Tho þis gold was gyuen · gret was þe þonkynge
That fals and fauel hadde · for here faire ȝyftes,
And comen ful courteislich · to conforte þe false.
Thei seide to hym softeliche · "cesse shulle we neue*r*e;
Til mede be þy wedded wyf · we wolle nouht stynte.
For we han mede a-maistrid · þorw oure myrye tonge,

B 28 Meed consents to go to London.

þat hue graunteþ to go · with a good wille
To londoun, and loke · yf lawe wol Iuge;
To be maried for monye · mede hath a-sented."

Then were Flattery and Falsehood glad, and bade all be ready to go to Westminster.

Than was fauel fayne · and falsnesse blyþe,
And leten sompne alle segges · In eche syde a-boute,
And bed hem alle ben boun · beggeres and oþere,
To wenden *with* hem to westemynstre · hus weddyng to honoure.

154. *soules*] soule I. *soure*] sore I.
155. *a-sentyd*] assenteþ I. *ac*] bute M; & FS.
156. *seluer*] F *om.* [*and* MIFSE] a P. *sygnes — notaries*] notaries signes M. *of*] & S.
157. *Tho*] To I.
158. *go*] goo & F; to MI.
159. *Nameliche*] And nameliche IE. *to*] to þe F; þe I. *faille*] ne fayle S; no faile F.
160. *falsnesse*] falswittnesse MG; fals witnesses I. *with*] wit P.
161. *amaistren*] maistriȝe M.
162. *Tho*] Ac þo F. *was—þonkynge*] were þe þankes M; game þei hadde F.
163. I *transposes* fals *and* fauel. *That—hadde*] & þonked fals & fauel F. *faire*] grete S.
164. *to—þe*] and comfortede M.
165. *Thei*] & FI. *to hym*] I *om.* *softeliche*] soþli MS; soþely I. *shulle*] schulde M.
166. *we wolle*] wile we M; wille we I; wole we F. *nouht*] neuere S.
167. *han*] I *om.* *mede*] here F. *tonge*] speche M.
169. *londoun*] londen P. *and*] and to I. *yf*] wheþer þe F. *wol*] wil it F.
170. *mede*] for mede F.
171. *Than*] þo M; But þanne F.
172. *alle*] alle her I; alle þe F *segges*] siscars M.
173. *bed*] *so* PG; bad MIF; bydde S; bede E (*but* bed hem = bed' hem = bede hem).
174. *hem*] him ISG. *hus*] þis M; the F.

Ac hakeneyes hadde þei none · bote hakeneyes to hyre ; Then they all wanted horses.
Thenne gan gyle borwe hors · at meny grete maistres,
And shope þat a shereyue · sholde bere mede 177 **A 24** Meed was set on a sheriff's back, and Falsehood on an assizer's.
Softliche in saumbury · fram syse to syse.
Fals and fauel · sholde fecche forth sisours,
And ride on hem & on reues · ryght faste by mede.
Symonye and cyuyle · seiden and sworen 181
That prestes and prouisours · sholde prelates seruen, † "Priests and provisors are to serve as horses for prelates, and I (Civil) and Symony will ride on rectors.
"And ich my-self cyuyle · and symonye my felawe
Wollen ryden vp-on rectours · and riche men
deuoutours, 184
And notories [on] persons · þat permuten ofte,
And on poure prouysors · & on a-peles [in] þe arches.
Somenours and southdenes · þat *supersedeas* takeþ, † Summoners shall ride on men of unclean life.
On hem þat louyeþ lecherie · lepeþ vp and rydeþ, 188
On executores and suche men · comeþ softliche after.
And let cople þe comissarie · oure cart shal he drawe, **A 25 B 29** Yoke our commissary,
And fecche forth oure vitailes · of *fornicatores*.
Makeþ of lyer a lang cart · to lede alle þese oþere, 192 and make of Liar a long cart."
As fobbes and faitours · þat on hure fet rennen."

175. *hakeneyes* (1)] horsyng M ; horsus þo F.

176. *Thenne*] þo M. *gan gyle*] gile bigon M. *borwe*] to borwen IM. *at*] of M ; & F. *grete maistres*] a gret maystre S ; grete sires F.

178. *in saumbury*] in his Sambury S ; in chaumbre M ; in chambre IE ; I-sadeled F.

179. *Fals*] Fals schulden M ; And fals I. *sholde*] IM *om.* *fecche—sisours*] forþ sisoures fette F.

180. *And*] To M. *on—reues*] riȝt in þe rewe F. *ryght*] MF *om.*

181. *and*] an P. *seiden*] þo seiden F.

182. *prelates seruen*] be prelates E.

183. *ich*] F *om.* *felawe*] fere F.

184. *Wollen*] Schulle M. *deuoutours*] *so* IM ; deuotours S ; deuoutrours E ; of þropus F.

185. *And*] M *om.* [*on* IE] upon F ; and PMS.

186. *on* (2)] vpon I. *a-peles*] apele E ; pelours M. [*in* EI] of MS ; on P. *&—in*] þat peleth to F.

187. *Somenours*] & sumnours F. *southdenes*] soþdenes E ; sodenes IFS ; denes M. *þat*] I *om.*

189. *On*] þe E. *executores*] secutours I ; secatours F. *comeþ softliche*] & comyth soft F.

190. *let cople*] late cope IFS ; cartsadeleþ M. *þe*] oure M. *oure*] þe F. *drawe*] dryue S.

191. *forth*] I *om.* *of*] of alle M ; and I. *fornicatores*] *so* I ; fornicators P ; fornicatours MFSE (*but it is the* Latin *form ; see* B-text).

192. *Makeþ*] And make M ; And makeþ I. *of*] a F ; of a I. *lang*] long IS. *þese* F] þise I ; þis ME ; þes PS.

193. *As*] M *om.* *fobbes*] *so* IES ; fobberus F ; Freres M. *þat—fet*] let hem on fote M.

Thus all ride forth together.

Thanne fals and fauel · ryden forth to-gederes,
And mede in þe myddes · and alle þuse men after.
Ich haue no tome to telle · þe tail þat hem folweþ,
Of many manere men · for medes sake sent after;

Guile led the way; but soon Soothness spurred on, and went and told Conscience.

Ac gile was forgoere · to gyen al þe puple,
For to wisse hem þe weye · and with mede a-byde.
Sothnesse seih hem alle · and seide bote a lytel,
And priked forth on pacience · and passede hem alle,
And cam to þe kynges court; · to conscience he tolde,
And conscience to þe kyng · carped it after.

"If I could but catch Falsehood, or Flattery," said the king, "I would hang them both.

"Now by cryst," quath þe kyng · "and ich cacche myghte
Fals oþer fauel · oþer here felawe lyere,
Ich wolde be wreke on, þo wrecches · and on here werkus alle,
And do hem hongy by þe hals · and alle þat hem mayntenеþ.
Shal neuere man on þis molde · maynpryse þe leste,
[But] ryght as þe lawe lokeþ · let falle on hem alle!"

I command the constable to attach them, fetter Falsehood,

He comaundyd a constable · þat cam at þe furste,
"Go atache þo tyrauns · for eny tresour, ich hote,
Let feterye fast falsnesse · for eny kynnes ȝiftes,

194. *ryden*] thei riden F.
195. *And*] M *om.* *and*] *with* F. *alle*] MS *om.* *þuse*] þese MIFS.
196. *tome*] time MES; tonge F. *folweþ*] folwede MIS.
197. *manere*] F *om.* *men*] of men MS. *for—sent*] þat mede sent M; for mede · þat suyd fast F.
198. *to gyen*] to bigile M; & giede F. *þe*] þis I.
199. *hem*] men E. *and—mede*] wiþ mede þat wolde M.
200. *seih*] si M; seyȝ S; seþ E; seith I; seeth F. *alle*] wel MF. *a*] MFSE *om.*
201. *And*] He M; But F. *priked*] prikith F. *and*] an P.
202. *And*] He M. *to* (2)] and MIF. *he*] MIF *om.*
203. *And*] þo F.
204. *and*] if F.
205. *oþer—lyere*] or felawes of þat route F.
206. *wreke*] a-wreke M. *on* (1)] in S. *þo*] þat M; þe ES. *on* (2)] F *om.* *alle*] ille F; boþe M.
207. *do—hongy*] hange hem hy F. *þat*] M *om.* *hem*] þey S.
208. *man*] no man M.
209. [*But* MIF] And PES. *ryght*] ȝit I; M *om.*
210. *He*] And I; þo F. *a*] he a F. *at þe*] atte EI; ate S.
211. *Go*] To IF. *þo*] þe EMF. *tyrauns*] tyrauntes MFS; tyrauntz I.
212. *feterye*] fetere MFS; fecche I. *fast falsnesse*] fals faste M; falsnesse faste I. *kynnes*] kynne S.

And gurd of gyles hefd · and lete hym go no wyddere, **B 30** and cut off Guile's head.
And brynge mede to me · maugre hem alle.
And if ȝe lacche lyere · let hym nat a-skapie 215 Let not Liar escape."
Er he be put on [þe] pullery · for eny preier, ich hote!"
Drede stod at þe dore · and al þat dene herde, Dread was at the door, and heard the [din], and bade Falsehood flee.
What þe kynges wil was · and wyghtlyche he wente,
And bad falsnesse to flee · and hus fereñ alle.
Falsnesse for fere [þo] · flegh to þe freres, 220 Then fled Falsehood and Guile;
And gyle dud hym to gon · agast for to deye;
Ac marchauns metten *with* hym · and made hym abyde, but tradesmen prayed Guile to keep their shops for them.
And shutten hym in here shoppes · to shewen here ware,
And parailed hym lyke here prentys · þe puple to seruen. 224
Lyghtliche lyere · lep a-way þennes, Liar leapt away through by-lanes, being nowhere welcome.
Lorkynge þorw lanes · to-logged of menye.
He was nawher welcome · for hus meny tales,
Ouer-al houted out · and yhote trusse, 228
Til pardoners hadden pitte · and pullede hym to house. But pardoners took him in,

213. *gurd*] gurdeþ MI. *hefd*] hed EMS; heede F. *and*] MIFS *om.* *wyddere*] widere E; whider F.

214. *brynge*] bringeþ MIFS. *maugre*] malgre I.

216. *Er*] Or FSE. *put*] i-put M. [*þe* MI] PEFS *om.* *preier*] preior P. *ich hote*] M *om.*

217. *stod*] stond þow M. *al þat*] al *þis* S; al þe F; þat þe M; I *om.* *dene* I] deon M; done F; dune S; duene P; duende E (duene = dene = din).

218. *þe—was*] was þe kinges wille I. *and*] I *om.* *wyghtlyche*] whyghtlyche P; wittileche I.

219. *bad*] I *om.* *falsnesse*] fals M. *to*] forte M; F *om.* *feren*] feeres I; fer*us* FS.

220. *Falsnesse*] And falsnesse F. [*þo* IF] PEMS *om.* *flegh*] fli M; fly3 S; he fley F; flez*e* E.

221. *dud*] doth I.

222. *hym* (2)] hem F. *made—abyde*] hĩm abide made M. *abyde*] to abyde S.

223. *shutten*] bischetten I. *in*] F *om.* *shoppes*] schoppe I.

224. *parailed*] aparailede M. *hym*] F *om.* *lyke here*] as a M; lik a F.

225. *Lyghtliche*] Tho liȝtliche F. *a-way*] a-way þo fro PE; *but* MIFSG *omit* þo fro; *cf.* B-text.

226. *þorw*] in M.

227. *was*] E *om.* *nawher*] nawer P. *welcome*] wolcome P.

228. *Ouer*] But ouer F. *houted*] I-hunted F; i-honted M; hountyd S; *cf.* B-text. *out*] I *om.* *trusse*] *so* IESG; to trusse MF; trosse P.

229. *Til*] M *om.* *pitte*] pite of him M; pitee on him I. *pullede*] *so* EG; pulled I; pulde M; pellyd S; putten F; pollede P. *to*] in-to I.

A 27 washed him, clothed him, and sent him to church with pardons.

Thei woshe hym and wypede hym · and wonde hym in cloutes,
And sente hym [on] sonnedayes · *with* seeles to churches,
And ȝaf pardon [for] pans · pound-meel a-boute. 232

B 31 Then leeches begged him to dwell with them; and spicers asked him to be shopkeeper.

Thanne lourede leches · and letters þei senten,
þat lyer shold wony *with* hem · waters to loke.
Spicers to [hym] speke · to aspie here ware, 235
For he can on here crafte · and knoweþ meny gommes.

Minstrels entertained him half a year;

Ac mynstrales and messagers · mette *with* lyere one[s],
And *with*-helde hym half a ȝere · and elleue dayes.

but Friars fetched him thence, and clothed him as a Friar.

Ac Freres þorw fayre speche · fetten hym þennes; 239
For knowynge of comers · þei copyde hym as a Frere;
Ac he hath leue to lepen out · as ofte as hym lykeþ,
And ys welcome whanne he comeþ · and woneþ *with* hem ofte.

† Symony and Civil appealed to the Pope; but Conscience opposed them.

Symonye and cyuyle · senten to rome,
And putte hem þorw a-peles · in þe popes *grace*. 244
Ac conscience to þe kyng · a-cusede hem boþe,
And seide, "syre kyng, by cryst · bote clerkus amende,
Thi kyngdom þorw here couetyse · wol out of kynde wende, 247
And holy churche þorw hem · worth harmed for euere."

Thus all fled into corners for fear,

Alle fledden for fere · and flowen in-to hernes;

230. *woshe*] woschen E; weschen IS; wessche M; wuschen F. *wypede*] wrongen F. *cloutes*] cloþus F.

231. [*on* MIFSG] in PE. *churches*] chirche MI.

232. *ȝaf*] ȝaf hym P; ȝaf hem E; *but* MIFSG *omit* hym. [*for* MIFSEG] of P. *pans*] penes M; pens IF.

233. *Thanne*] þo M.

235. *Spicers*] And spicers PE; *but* MIFS *omit* And. [*hym* EMIFSG] hem P.

237. *Ac*] M *om.* *ones*] *so* MIG; on*us* FS; one PE.

238. *with-helde*] of-helden I. *half*] o*þer* half F. *a*] MIFS *om.* *elleue*] endleuen I.

239. *þorw*] *with* here E. *fetten*] fecchen I.

240. *For*] And for I. *comers*] cuntrees (*sic*) I.

241. *Ac*] M *om.* *ofte as*] F *om.*

242. *And*] He M. *welcome*] wolcome PF. *whanne*] wanne P. *comeþ*] wole F.

243. *senten*] þo · þei caired F.

244. *þorw*] *in* E.

245. *Ac*] And IS.

247. *here*] F *om.* *wende*] weynde P; *but see* iv. 19.

249. *fledden*] felden E; fledde þo F. *in-to*] in-to þe F.

Saue mede [þe] mayde · no mo dorste a-byde.
Ac treweliche to telle · hue tremblede for fere,
And boþe wrang and wepte · whanne hue was a-tached.

and only Meed durst stay; and even she wept when taken prisoner.

Hic explicit passus .iij^us.

250. [þe IFSEG] þat PM.
251. *trewelìche*] tryweliche P; truli M. *hue*] sche MS; scheo F; he I; ȝo E. *tremblede*] tremelede E; tremled F; tremelde M.
252. I *transposes* wrang *and* wepte. *And—wrang*] Wrong hure honden M. *wepte*] wepe E. *whanne*] wanne P. *hue*] *see* l. 251. *a-tached*] atachede P.
COLOPHON. *So in* E; *and in* GSF, *omitting* Hic.

PASSUS IV.

Incipit passus quartus.

A 28 B 32 Now is Meed, all alone, brought to the king.

NOw is mede þe mayde · and no mo of hem alle
Þorw bedeles and bailifs · brouht by-fore þe kynge.
The kyng kallid a clerk · ich can nouht hys name,
To take mede [þe] mayde · and make here at ese;
"I shall ask her," said the king, "whom she wishes to wed; and perhaps I may forgive her."
"Ich shal asaye hure my-self · and sothliche apose,
What man of þys worlde · þat hure is leuest haue?
And yf hue wirche wisliche · by wys [mennes] counsail,
Ich wolle for-gyue hure alle hure gultes · so me god helpe!"
So a clerk brought her to the chamber.
Cortesliche þe clerk þenne · as þe kynge hyghte,
Toke mede by þe myddel · and myldeliche here broughte
In-to boure *with* blysse · and by hure gan sitte.
Ther was myrthe [and] mynstralcy · mede to plesen;
That wenden to westmynstre · worshupde hure meny.

TITLE. *So in* EFS; Hic incipit quartus passus de uisione M; Passus Tercius de visione, vt prius I.

1. *þe*] þat M. *and*] MFS *om.*
2. *Þorw*] Wiþ MF. *by-fore*] to F.
3. *kallid*] clepede M. *hys*] ys P.
4. [*þe* IFSEG] þat PM.
5. *hure*] at hir I. *sothliche*] softliche M.
6. *What*] Wat P. *þat—leuest*] she is leuest to M; here is leuust to S; þat sche were leuest to F. *is—haue*] leuest hadde I.
7. *hue*] sche MIS; heo F; 3o E. *by*] and by I. [*mennes* F] menes M; men PEIS. *counsail*] rede F.
8. *alle—gultes*] þat gilt F. *hure*] IS *om.*
9. *þenne*] þo MF.
10. *myddel*] mydel P. *broughte*] ladde F.
11. *boure*] þe boure F. *blysse*] muche blisse F. *gan*] gan he F.
12. *Ther*] Ac þer I. [*and* MIFSE] of P. *mede*] þat maide for F.
13. *wenden to*] wonen in M; wente to F. *worshupde*] wurschepede F; honouren M; worschipe I; worschup S; worschopieþ E.

Gentelich *with* ioye · Iustices *somme*
Buskede hem to þe boure · ther þis berde dwellyd,
Confortynge hure as þei couthe · by þe clerk*us* leue,
And seyde, "morne nat, mede · [ne] make þow no sorwe;
For we wolle wisse þe kyng · and þy wey shape
For to weude at þy wil · wher þe luf lykeþ,
For alle consciences cast · [and] craft, as ich trowe!"
Mildeliche mede þo · merciede hem alle
Of hure grete goudnesse · and gaf hem echone
Coupes of clene gold · and coppes of seluer,
Rynges *with* rubies · and o*þer* riche ȝiftes,
The leste [man] of here meyne · a moton of golde.
Whenne thei had lauht here leue · at þys lady mede,
Thenne comen clerk*us* · to comfortye hure samen,
And beden here be blythe · "for we ben þyn owne,
For to worche þy wil · þe while we mowe dure."
And mede hendiliche · by-hyht hem þe same,
To louen hem leellich · and lordes hem make,
"And porchace ȝow prouendres · while ȝoure pans lasteþ,

Gladly the Justices went to see her, and said,

"Mourn not, Meed, we will get thee clear off."

Then Meed thanked them all, and gave them silver cups and ruby rings.

Then came clerks and said, "Be blithe, Meed, we will work thy will."

She promised to love them, and make them lords.

14. *Iustices*] þe iustises MI. F *has*—And iustices *with* ioye · gentelliche somme.
15. *þe*] þat M; S *om.* *boure*] borw M. *þis*] þat M; þe F. *berde*] burde ME; buyrde I; beorde F; brede S. *dwellyd*] dwelleþ E; was ynne F.
16. *Confortynge*] And comfortede MI. *hure*] hem F. *þe*] E *om.*
17. [*ne* MIF] PES *om.*
18. *wey*] weies E. *shape*] shappe P.
19. *wende*] wedde I. *luf*] leef MF; lef S; leue I.
20. *consciences*] concience S. *cast*] craft FS. [*and* IFSE] or MG; a P. *craft*] cast FS.
21. *merciede*] þankede M; ou*er*ȝede I.
22. *and*] a M.
23. *Coupes*] Cloþus F. *and*] MI *om.*
25. *leste*] menest F. [*man* I] PE MFS *om.*; *but see* B-text. *meyne*] men M.
26. *Whenne*] Wenne P; And whan F. *here*] MF *om.*
27. *Thenne*] þo M. *comen*] com comly F. *samen*] same M; þe same I; sone F; in same S; same man (*sic*) E.
28. *owne* FMS] oghne I; owen E; owe PG.
29. *þe*] MFS *om.* *while*] wile P. *we mowe*] þou might I. *dure*] endure MS.
30. *And*] Ande P; þo F. *mede hendiliche*] hendeliche mede F; mede mildeliche M. *þe*] þat M.
31. *and*] as E. *hem* (2)] to IF.
32. *And*] To F. *ȝow*] F *om.* *prouendres*] *so* MIFSE; prouenders P. *while*] wile P. *ȝoure*] here F. *pans*] penes M; pens I.

And bigge ȝow benefices · pluralite to haue,
And in constorie atte court · do calle ȝoure names.
"Naught shall prevent one whom I love from being A 30 advanced." Shal no lewednesse lette, · þe clerk þat ich louye,
Þat he ne worth ferst auanced · for ich am [biknowe],
Ther connynge clerkus · shulleþ clocke by-hynde."
Then came a confessor, and said, Thenne com *þer* a confessour · coped as a Frere;
To mede þat mayde · myldelich he sayde,
"Though learned and lay had all lain by thee, I would assoil thee B 34 for a load of wheat." "Thauh lered men and lewede · had layen by þe boþe,
And falshede yfounden þe · al þis fourty wynter,
Ich shal a-soily þe my-selue · for a seem [of] whete,
And ȝut be þy bedman · and brynge a-doun conscience
A-mong kynges and knyȝtes · and clerkus, if þe lyke."
Then Meed knelt to him, and shrove her, and gave him a noble. Thenne mede for hure mysdedes · to þis [man] knelyd,
Shrof hure of here synnes · shameles, y leyue,
Told hym a tale · and took hym a noble
For to be hure bedman · and bere wel hure erende,
Among knyȝtes and clerkus · conscience to turne.
Then he assoiled her, and said that if she would glaze a window, And he [as]soiled hure sone · and setthen he seide,
"We haue a wyndow a worchyng · wol stonden ous ful hye;

33. *ȝow*] hem F. *pluralite*] pluralitez I; here bonchef F (*which improves the alliteration, but is ill supported*).

34. *in*] in þe I. *atte*] at MIF; of þe E. *do*] to I. *calle*] knowe F.

36. [*biknowe* MIG] I-knowe FS; knowen PE. F *has*—We wole auauncen hi*m* wel · for we beþ I-knowe.

38. *Thenne*] þo M. *coped*] i-coped MFS; ycoped EI.

39. *To*] & to F. *þat*] þe IFSE. *sayde*] loutede M.

40. *lered*] lewed IFS. *lewede*] lerned men I; lered FS. *had*] haue I. *boþe*] echon M.

41. *falshede*] falsnesse F; folke sede (*by mistake*) E. *yfounden*] i-folewed M; folwed F; hy founde E.

42. [*of* MEFS] PI *om.* *whete*] wete P.

43. *And—bedman*] þi bede-man to be F. *and—conscience*] concienꝑe to folle M.

44. *knyȝtes*] knyȝthes P. *if*] and I. *lyke*] likeþ EM.

45. *Thenne*] Þo M. *þis*] þat M. [*man* MIFSG] frere PE. *knelyd*] loutede M.

46. *Shrof*] And schrof MFE; Sche schrof S. *synnes*] synne I. *leyue*] leue ES; leeue I; wene M; trowe F.

47. *Told*] Sche tolde MS; Heo tolde F. *tale*] mery tale F.

48. *bere*] to bere I. *erende* EI] arende F; erunde S; ernde M; ernede P.

50. *And*] MF *om.* *assoiled* IFE] asoilede MS; soiled P. *Cf.* l. 42. *sone*] sone *þerof* S; þo ful sone F. *setthen—seide*] seide þat F.

51. *We haue*] *placed at end of* l. 50 *in* PEMFS; *but here in* I; *cf.* B-text. *a*] in M; on I. *worchyng*] worcheng P.

Wolde ȝe glase þe gable · and graue *þer* ȝoure name,
In masse and in matyns · for mede we shulleþ synge
Solenliche and sothlich · as for a sustre of oure ordre."
Louelich þat lady · lauhynge seyde,
"Ich shal be ȝoure frende, frere · and faille ȝow neuere,
The while ȝe louyeþ þuse lordes ; þat lecherye haunten,
And lackieþ noȝt þuse ladies · þat louyeþ þe same.
Hit is bote frelete of flesch · ȝe fynden wel in bokis,
And a cours of kynde · wher-of we comen alle.
Ho may a-scapie þe sclaundere · þe scaþe may sone be mendyd,
Hit ys synne as of seuene · non soner relesed.
Haue mercy," quath mede · "on men þat hit haunten,
And [ich] shal keuery ȝoure [kirke] · and ȝoure cloistre maken,
Boþe wyndowes and wowes · ich wolle a-menden & glase,
And do peynten and portreyn · who paide for þe makynge,
þat eu*e*ry seg shal see, and seye · ich am sustre of ȝoure ordre."
Ac god to alle good folke · suche gr*a*uynge defendeþ,
To wryten in wyndowes · of eny wel-dedes,

she should be a sister of the order.

She said that she would always be his friend.

"Lechery," said she, "is a frailty of the flesh.

Be not hard on those who practise it, and I will glaze your windows."

B 35

But God forbids A 31 such painting of windows.

52. *þe*] *þat* EI. *þer*] þer-inne M.
53. *we shulleþ*] wolde we M; moste we F; we wolleþ E.
54. *Solenliche*] Solempneliche IS F; Sollempliche M. *sothlich*] softeliche MI. *for*] IF *om.* *a*] F *om.*
55. *lady*] lady þo · with F.
56. F *omits.*
57. *The while*] The wile P; Whiles M; þer whiles I. *þuse*] þese FS; M *om.* *þuse lordes*] þis lorde I. *haunten*] haunteþ IF.
58. *þuse*] þese F; þise IS; M *om.* *louyeþ*] loueth wel F.
59. *is*] nys nouȝt M; nys E. *in*] by I. *wel in*] hit be M.
60. *wher-of*] wer-of P.
61. *Ho*] Who IE; Whose M; Ho so S. *may a-scapie*] a-schapud M. *may—be*] is sone MF; myght sone be I. *mendyd*] amended EMSF.
62. *as of*] of M; of alle þe F. *non soner*] sennest M. *relesed*] relesede P.
63. *Haue*] Ha muche F. *on*] in S. *men*] hem M.
64. [*ich* E] i MIFSG; P *om.* *keuery*] couere IF. [*kirke* IMFS] churche PE; *observe the alliteration.*
66. *do*] I *om.* *who*] wo P; ho FS. *who paide*] and paie M. *for—makynge*] þerfore F.
67. *euery—seye*] eche sisour shal i-seo M; eche a segh schal I-see F. *and seye*] MFI *om.* *sustre*] a suster IM. *ȝoure ordre*] ȝoures M; þat ordre F.
68. *Ac*] But F. *folke*] men M.
69. *in*] on I. *wel*] goode M.

Leste prude be peyntid þere · and pompe of þe worlde.
For God knoweþ þy conscience · and þy kynde wille,
Thi cost and here couetyse · and who þe catel ouhte.
For þy leue lordes loue · leueþ suche wrytinges;
God in þe gospel · such grauynge noȝt a-loweþ,
Nesciat sinistra quid faciat dextera.
Let nat þy lyft half · oure lord techeþ,
Ywite what þow delest · with þy ryht syde.
ȝut mede myldeliche · þe meyre [hue] bysouhte—
Bothe shereues and seriauns · and suche as kepeþ lawes
To punyshen on pillories · and on pynyng-stoles,
As bakers and brewers · bouchers and Cokes—
(For þese men doþ most harme · to þe mene puple,
Richen þorw regratrye · and rentes hem byggen
With þat þe poure puple · sholde putten in hure womben;
For toke þey on triweliche · they tymbrid nat so heye,
Noþer bouhten hem burgages · be ȝe ful certayn:

For God knows thy conscience.

Cease, therefore, to write on windows.

Remember the text, Matt. vi. 3.

† But Meed pleaded with those who had power to punish butchers and bakers on the pillory.

(These men defraud the poor A 32 that buy by retail.

Were they true men, they would not be so rich.

70. *Leste*] An aunter I. *peyntid*] prended (*sic*) E; i-peinted M. *be—þere*] peynte him þerwith F.

71, 72. IE *omit last half of* l. 71, *and first half of* l. 72. *here*] hure M.

73. *For þy*] For-þi I; For-whi M; For þat F; For þe S. *loue*] IM *om.* *leueþ*] leue F. *wrytinges*] writyng M; writtus F.

74. *noȝt a-loweþ*] defendith F; *cf.* l. 68. *sinistra*] dextera I. *faciat*] facit F. *dextera*] sinistra I; dextera tua M; dextra manus F.

75. *half*] *so* E; hande IMFS. *techeþ*] telleth F.

76. *Ywite*] Wite M; Wete F.

77—85. *This is the passage printed in* Parallel Extracts from 29 MSS. (E. E. T. S. 1866); *which see.*

77. *ȝut*] But ȝit F. *myldeliche—meyre*] þe mayr · myldeliche I. *myldeliche*] þat maide M. [*hue*] *miswritten* hure P (*but see* l. 115); sche M; heo F; he I; ȝo E; *and note that other MSS. have* she, scho, heo, &c. S *has*—ȝut men scholde leue mede · & do þat resoun askuþ.

78. *seriauns*] sergeantz I. *kepeþ lawes*] kepeþ þe lawes I; lawes kepen M.

79. *on* (1)] vpon I. *on* (2)] in MS; vpon I.

80. *As*] F *om.*

N.B. The whole of lines 77—118 is a single long sentence, including two parentheses, viz. ll. 78—80, and ll. 81—114; the sentence begins again with l. 115, a repetition of l. 77. *Bysouhte* in l. 77 governs *to take* in l. 116; whilst *To punyshen* in l. 79 depends on *kepeþ* in l. 78.

81. *þese* MFIS] þees P. *men*] F *om.* *mene*] commune FS.

82. *byggen*] beggeþ I.

83. *With*] Whit P. *womben*] wombe MIFS; women (!) E.

84. *on*] al F; so S; M *om.* *tymbrid*] stieden M.

85. *Noþer—hem*] Noþer bigge F; And bouȝten hem no M; Ne boghten none I; Noþer boȝten ES. *ful certayn*] wel sure M.

Thei haue no [pite] of þe puple · þat parcel-mele mote biggen;
þauh þei take hem vntydy þyng · þei hold hit no treson,
And þauh þei fulle nat ful · þat for lawe [is seled],
He gripeþ þer-for as grete · as for þe grete treuthe.
Meny sondry sorwes · in cyte[es] fallen ofte,
Boþe þorw fuyr and flod · and al for false puple,
That by-gylen good men · and greueþ hem wrongliche,
The whiche cryen on hure knees · þat crist hem auenge,
Here on þys erthe · oþer elles on helle,
That so by-gyleþ hem of here good; · and god on hem sendeþ
Feueres oþer fouler yueles · oþer fur on here houses,
Moreyne oþer opere meschaunce · and menye tyme hit falleþ,
That innocence ys yherde · In heuene a-monge seyntes,
That louten for hem to oure lorde · and to oure lady boþe,
To graunten gylours on erthe · grace to amende,
And haue here penaunce on pure erthe · and noȝt þe pyne of helle.

† Such men are without pity.

† They expect full payment for short measure.

† These false dealers provoke God's vengeance,

† which brings fevers, fire, and murrain.

† Sometimes they are punished in this world.

86. [*pite* MIFEG] pyte S; puteye P. *of*] on MS. *puple*] pore peple M. *mote biggen*] biggeth F; biggen M.

87. *þauh*] And þogh I. *hem*] F *om.* *þei—treson*] no tresoun þey ne halde it I; no tresoun þei hit holden M; no tresun þey holden hit S; no trespace þei holdeþ F.

88. *lawe*] þe lawe M. [*is seled* MIFE] is selyd S; *miswritten* y seelde P.

89. *He gripeþ*] þei grïpen M. *He—þerfor*] þerfore gripeth he F. *þer-for—grete*] asgrete þerfore S. *as* (2)] E *om.* *grete* (2)] graith I.

90. *cytees*] citees IFE; cyteus S; cites MG; cyte P. *ofte*] ful ofte I.

91. *flod*] þurgh flood IF. *and* (2)] I *om.* *for*] þurgh I; þorw M; þorȝ S.

92. *That*] þey S. *good*] so goode E. *wrongliche*] wrongfulli M; with wroug F.

93. *whiche*] wiche P; whiche þat I.

94. F *omits.* *on* (2)] in IS.

95. *and—sendeþ*] þat god hem wolde senden I. *and*] MF *om.*

96. *Feueres*] Feuer I. *yueles*] so E; hyueles P; eueles M; euelys S; euelus F; euel I. *fur*] fyr IF; feor M; fuyre S.

97. *meschaunce*] meschances IM; myschaunses S. *tyme*] tymes I.

98. *seyntes*] þe seintes I.

100. *To*] I *om.*

101. *And*] To F; And to M. *pure*] M *om.* *þe*] to I; in þe P; *but* MFS EG *omit* in.

And þenne falleþ *þer* fur · on false menne houses,
And good men[ne] for here gultes · gloweþ on fuyr after.

† Some fires begin at a brewer's,

Al þys haue we seyen · that som tyme þorw a brewere
Meny burgagys [ben] ybrent · and bodyes *þer*-ynne;

† or from a candle that falls down.

And þorw a candel, clomyng · in a corsed place,
Fel a-do*u*n, and for-brende · forþ al þe rewe.
For-þy mayres þat maken free men · me þynkeþ þat þei ouhten
For to spure and aspye · for eny speche of seluer
What man*e*re mester · o*þer* merchaundise he vsede,

† Before a man is made "free" of a city, his character should be examined into.)

Er he were vnder-fonge free · and felawe in ȝoure rolles.
Hit ys noȝt semly forsoþ · in cyte ne in borwton,
þat vsurers o*þer* regratours · for eny kynne ȝyftes,
Be fraunchised for a free man · and haue [a] fals name)—

B 36 But Meed advised the mayor to take bribes,

Ac mede þe mayde · þe meyre hue by-souhte
Of alle suche sellers · suluer to take,
O*þer* presentes *with*-oute pans · and o*þer* pryueye ȝyftes,
And haue reuthe of þe regratours · þat han ryche hondes;

† Ps. xxv. 10 (Vulg.).

In quorum manibus iniquitates sunt: dextera eorum repleta est muneribus.

102. *And*] M *om.* *þer*] þe E. *fur*] fyre F; feor M; fuyr S. *menne*] *so also* S; men FE; m*e*nnes I; menes M.

103. *menne*] men PE; m*e*nnes I; menes M; mennu*s* SF; *but see last line.* *on*] a F.

104. *Al*] And F. *kaue we*] we han M.

105. [*ben*] *suggested by* han be M; beth F; PEIS *om.*

106. *clomyng*] clemyng EG; cleuynge I; glemyng F; cleuyng *or* clenyng SM.

107. *a-doun*] doun I. *for-brende*] forbrent IF; forbrente S; fur-brente M.

108. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *mayres*] E *om.* *men*] F *om.* *þynkeþ*] *miswritten* þynken P. *þat* (2)] M *om.*

109. *spure*] spere IF; sperie M. *and*] and to I.

110. *oþer*] of FS. *vsede*] vseth F.

111. *Er*] Or EFS. *ȝoure*] oure MS.

112. *cyte*] citees F. *borwton*] borwtoun M. burgh-toun I; borȝtown S; burwu*s* F.

113. *vsurers*] vsurie I. *oþer*] & FM. *eny kynne*] eny skyns (*sic*) I (*for* enys kynnes). *ȝyftes*] *miswritten* ȝeftes P; *but see* ll. 117, 126, 162.

114. *haue*] bere S. [*a* MIFSG] PE *om.*

115. *meyre*] meyere P; *but see* l. 77.

117. *pans*] pens I; penes M. *and*] or S.

118. *And*] I *om.* *of þe*] on þis I; on MFS. *dextera, &c.*] IG *om.*

"Loue hem for my loue" "quath this lady mede, and to suffer
"And soffre hem som tyme · to sulle a-ʒens þe lawe." them to cheat.
Salamon the sage · a sarmon he made 121 But Solomon thus speaks
In amendement of meyres · and oþere stywardes, against all
And witnessyth what worth of hem · þat wollen take receivers of
mede: bribes.

Ignis deuorabit tabernacula eorum qui libenter Job xv. 34.
accipiunt munera.

A-mong þese lettrede lordes · þis latyn ys to mene, 124 This Latin
means, that fire
Þat fur shal falle and for-brenne · al to blewe askes shall consume
The houses and þe homes · of hem þat taken ʒyftes. the tabernacles
of bribery.
The kynge fram consail cam · and callyd after mede, **A 33**
And sente for to see hure · ac ich say nat hym þat Then the king
ladde hure. 128 sent for Meed,

Corteisliche þe kyng tho · as hus kynde wolde, and courteously
spake thus:
Lackede here a litel wyht · for þat hue louede gyle,
And wilnede to be wedded · with-oute hys leue,
Tyl treuth hadde tolde hure · a tokne fram hym-
selue;
And seyde, "womman, vnwittylich · wrouʒt hast þow † "I have often
forgiven thee, in
ofte; 133 hope thou wouldst
amend.
Ich haue for-gyue þe meny gultes · and my grace
graunted
Boþe to þe and to þyne · in hope þow sholdest a-mende;

119. *this*] þat M.
120, 121. S *omits*. *he*] hue P.
123. *what*] wat P.
124. *þese* IFMS] þes P.
125. *þat*] I *om*. *fur*] Feer I; fire F; feor M; fuyre S. *for-brenne*] to-brenne S; eke brenne F. *blewe*] blo IFM; broun S. *askes*] asches I.
126. *ʒyftes*] mede M.
127. *fram*] þo fro S. *fram—cam*] cam fro þe consail M. *cam and*] I *om*.
128. *for*] I *om*. *ac*] but M. *ac—hym*] I myght not se I. *ladde hure*] heore ladde M. *ac—hure*] for here sory name F.
129. *Corteisliche*] For cortaysliche I; Ful curteisli M. *tho*] I *om*.
130. *Lackede*] Lokede on M. *litel* EIFM] lytul S; lytil G; lyte P. *þat*] M *om*.
131. *to*] forte M. *hys*] ys P.
132. *Tyl*] And til I. *fram*] of E.
133. *womman*] wommen (*by mistake*) P. *womman vnwittylich*] vntreweliche woman I; vnwithli woman M; woman wikkidly F.
134. *gultes*] a gult SM; a gilt IF. *Ich—gultes*] And many a gilt I haue þe forgyue I. *graunted*] ygraunted E.
135. *Boþe*] IM *om*. *sholdest*] woldest MF.

And ay þe lenger ich lete þe go · þe lasse treuthe ys *with* þe ;

Never hast thou done worse than now; but do so no more;

For worsse wrouhtest þow neuere · þan þo þow fals toke.
3ut ich for-gyue þe þis gult · godes for-bode eny more
þow [tene me and] treuthe ; · and þow mowe be y-take,

† lest thou be imprisoned in Corfe Castle, or in some still worse place.

In þe castel of corf · ich shal do þe close
Ther as an ancre · oþer in a wel wors wone,
And marre þe *with* myschef · by seint marye my lady,
þat alle wo*mmen* wantowen · shulleþ be war by þe one,
And biterliche banne þe · and alle þat bereþ þy name,
And teche þe louye treuthe · and take consail of reson.

I have a knight named Conscience; wilt thou marry him?"

Ich haue a kny3t, hatte conscience · cam late froo by-3onde,
Yf he wilneþ þe to wyue · wolt þow hym haue?"

B 37 "Yes," said she, "I will do your will."

"3e, lord," quath þe lady · "lord it me for-bede
Bote ich be holly at þyn heste ; · let honge me ellys!"

A 34 Then was Conscience called, who knelt and asked the king's will.

Thenne was conscience cald · to come and apeere
By-for þe kyng and hys consail · as clerkus and oþere.
Conscience knelynge · to þe kyng loutede,
To wite what hus wil were · and what he do sholde.

"Wilt thou wed

"Wolt thow wedde þis maide · yf ich wol assente,

136. *ich*] þat i S.
137. *þo*] M *om.* *fals*] to fals I.
138. *3ut*] 3if M. *ich—þis*] forgif I þe þi F. *þis*] þy S. *godes for-bode*] god forbede I. *eny*] a (*sic*) F.
139. *þow*] þat þou F. [*tene—and* IFMSG] *miswritten* tene & E ; tuene on P.
140—142. I *has*—
In þe castel of Corff · I schal do close þe as an anker,
Or yn a wal worse won · by seint mary my lady.
141. *as*] to be as F. *oþer—wel*] or ell*us* in F ; or in wel M. *wone*] wones M.
143. *alle*] F *om.* *wommen wantowen*] wantowne wy*m*men I ; wanton wemmen M. *shulleþ*] schulle MS ; schul I ; F *om.* *war*] i-war M.
145. *þe*] þe to IM. *of*] at FS.
146. *hatte*] hat F ; me calleþ M ; I *om.* *cam late*] þat late cam F.
148. *þe*] þat ME. *lord* (2)] god M.
149. *holly*] *so* IMFS ; *a better spelling than* holiche P ; holich E. *let honge*] hangeþ F.
150. *Thenne*] þo M. *cald*] I-called I ; i-cald M. *to*] I *om.* *and*] & to S.
151. *kyng—hys*] king*us* F. *hys*] ys P. *as*] of F ; M *om.*
152. *Conscience knelynge*] Knelinge conscience I. *knelynge—loutede*] cam to þe kyng · & knelyng lowtede F. M *has*—Knelyng to þe kyng · concience a-lou3tede ; *so also* G.
154. *maide*] meede I ; wi3t, q*uod* he F. *ich*] heo F. *wol*] *so* IS ; *better than* wolle PE ; wile M ; wole F.

For hue ys fayne of þy felaushep · and for to be þy make?" 155
this woman?" said the king.

Quath conscience to þe kynge · "Crist it me for-bede!
Er ich wedde suche a wif · wo mè by-tyde!
"Nay, Christ forbid," quoth Conscience.

For hue ys freel of hure faith · and fikel of hure speche,
"She is frail and fickle, and makes men sin.

And makeþ men mys-do · meny score tymes.
In trist of hure tresour · hue teneþ ful menye; 160
Wyues and wodewes · wantownesse hue techeþ,
She teaches women wantonness.

And lereþ hem to lecherie · þat louyeþ here 3yftes.
3oure fader hue felde · fals and hue to-gederes;
She caused your father's fall; and harms holy Church.

Hue haþ a-poisoned popes · hue apeireþ holy churche;
Ys nauht a betere baude · by hym þat me made! 165
By-twyne heuene and helle · alle erthe þauh me souhte.

For hue ys tykel of hure tail · talewys of tonge,
She is frail, and a tale-bearer; as common as a cartway to every knave. **A 35**

As comune as þe cart-wey · to knaues and to alle, 168
To monkes and to alle men; · the meseles in heggys
Lyggeþ by hure whenne hem lust · lered and lewed.

Sysours and somners · suche men hure preyseþ,
Assizers and summoners and sheriffs praise her.

Shereues of shires · were shent yf hue ne were. 172
For hue doþ men lese here londe · and here lyf boþe;
She makes men lose both land and life, and releases prisoners **B 38**

Hue leteþ passe prisoners · and paieþ for hem ofte,
And geueþ þe gailer gold · and grotes to-gederes,

155. *For*] M *om.* *þy* (1)] F *om.* *and*] FSM *om.*

156. *it*] M *om.* *for-bede*] for-bude P; *but see* l. 148.

157. *Er*] Ar IF; Or EM.

158. *speche*] tonge M.

160. *trist*] trust F. *hue*] *miswritten* he P; *see next line.* *teneþ* IFME] tenuþ S; tueneþ P. *ful*] wel M.

161. *Wyues*] And wyues F. *hue*] F *om.*

162. *lereþ*] lerneþ M. *to*] M *om.*

163. *felde*] afelde I.

164. *a-poisoned*] *so* IFES; *better than* a-poisened P. *haþ a-poisoned*] enpoiseneþ M. *hue*] & FM. *apeireþ*] peyred F.

165. *Ys*] þer nys M.

166. *alle*] and I. *me*] *so also* FG; men ISME.

167. *For*] E *om.* *tykel*] fikul S. *talewys* SI] tale-wis F; tale-wise E; talewijs M; talwys P. *of*] of hire E.

168. *As*] And M.

169. *and*] S *om.* *and—men*] to masours F. *the*] to M. *the—heggys*] sche moseles in hegge (*sic*) I. *in*] in þe S.

170. *Lyggeþ*] þer ligge F. *whenne*] wenne P. *hem*] here F. *lust*] likuþ S.

172. *Shereues*] *miswritten* Shereue P. *ne were*] nere IFEG.

173. *lese*] to lese F.

174. *leteþ*] lette M. *and*] I *om.*

175. *þe*] tò F. *gailer*] gaiolers I; gaylerus F.

by bribes. Tσ vnfetery þe false · and fle where hem lykeþ ; 176
She ties true men fast, and hangs the innocent. And takeþ trewe by þe top · and tieþ hem faste,
And hongeþ [him] for haterede · þat harmede neuere.
To be corsed in constorye · hue counteþ nauht a rusche ;
Hue copeþ þe comissarie · and coteþ hus clerkus, 180
She is assoiled when she pleases. Hue is assoilid þus sone · as hure [self] lykeþ.
Hue may ney as moche do · in a mounthe one
As ȝoure secret seel · in sexscore dayes.
She is intimate with the pope, and seals bulls. Hue ys priuy *with* þe pope · prouisours it knoweþ, 184
For symonye and hure-self · seeleþ hure bulles.
Hue blesseþ þese byshopys · þauh þei be negh lewede,
She maintains priests in concubinage. Hue prouendreþ *persons* · and prestes hue menteyneþ
To holde lemmanes and lotebyes · al here lif-dayes, 188
A 36 And bryngeþ forþ barnes · a-ȝens for-boden lawes ;
Sunt infelices · quia matres sunt meretrices.
Ther hue ys wel wyth eny kynge · wo ys þe reome,
For hue ys fauerable to fals · that defouleþ treuthe. 192
She corrupts judges with jewels. By iesus, *with* hure iewels · þe Iustices hue shendeþ ;
Hue lyth a-ȝen þe lawe · and letteþ hym þe gate,
þat faith may nat haue hus forþ · hure floreines goth so thycke ; 195

176. *vnfetery*] *so* E ; *better than* vnfeterye P ; IFMS *have* vnfetere. *and*] to F. *where*] were P. *hem*] him IFM.

177—181. F *omits*.

177. *takeþ*] *so* ME ; takþ I ; takuþ S ; *miswritten* take P. *trewe*] þe trewe E ; treuþe I. *tieþ—faste*] techeþ him falste I.

178. *And*] Sche M. [*him* IMG] PES *om*. *harmede*] harmede hure M ; *but* PISE *omit* hure.

179. *constorye* SG] þe constory I ; constorije M ; constory E ; *badly written* constarye P. *hue*] I *om*. *counteþ*] acompteþ I ; a-counteþ M.

180. *Hue*] For he I. *comissarie*] *so* IMES ; comessarie P.

181. *Hue*] And M. *assoilid*] asoilid P ; assoylled *in* dede E. *þus*] as M. *as*] ase P. [*self* SMG] silf E ; selue I ; lef P ; *see* B-text.

182. *ney*] myd hym E ; F *om*. *one*] ones IM.

183. *secret*] secree M ; secre S. *sex*] ȝeuene MF.

184. *it*] hure M.

185. *seeleþ*] selleth I ; a-selen M.

186. *blesseþ*] benefiseth F. *þese* IM FS] thees P. *þei*] þat þei M. *negh*] ny I ; nyȝ S ; riȝt F ; noȝt E ; M *om*.

188. *lemmanes*] *so* M ; lemmanus FS ; lemmans EI ; *miswritten* lemmenes P. *dayes*] tyme F.

189. *bryngeþ*] bringen M ; brynge S. *a-ȝens*] *with* F. *lawes*] lawe I.

191. *eny*] þe F. *þe*] þat I. *reome*] reume S ; rewme F ; Reaume I.

192. *that*] þe which I ; and M.

193. *þe*] ȝoure F ; S *om*. *Iustices*] Iustice I.

194. *lyth*] liȝt ofte F.

195. *may*] ne may PE ; *but* IFSMG *omit* ne ; *see* B-text. *hus*] hire E. *forþ*] cours F. *thycke*] wide E.

And ledeþ þe lawe as hure lust · And louedayes makeþ, — She directs the law as she likes, and appoints love-days.
þoruh which loueday ys lost · þat leaute myȝte wynne,
The mase for [a] mene man · þauh he mote euere. 198 — B 39
The lawe ys so lordlich · and loth to maken ende, — Law will not make an end without bribes.
With-oute *p*resentes o*þer* pans · hue pleseth ful fewe.
Trewe burgeis and bonde · to nauht hue bringeþ ofte, — She brings burgesses to naught.
And al þe comune in care · and [in] couetyse;
Religion hue al to-reueþ · and out of ruele to lybbe.
Ther nys cite vnder sonne · ne so riche reome 204
Ther hue ys loued and lete by · þat last shal eny while, — † She causes wars and wicked laws.
With-oute werre o*þer* wo · o*þer* wicked lawes,
And customes [of] couetyse · [þe] comune to distruye.
Vnsyttynge suffraunce · hure suster, and hure-selue
Haue maked al-most · bote marie þe helpe, 209 — † No land loves thee; and least of all thine own.
þat no lond loueþ the · and ȝut leest þyn owene.
For mede hath knyt clerkes · and couetyse to-geders,
þat al þe wit of þis worlde · ys woxen in-to gyle. 212
Thus þis lady ledeþ [þy] londe · now lord ȝeue hure sorwe! — Such is her evil power.
For pore men der nat pleyne · ne here pleinte shewe, — The poor cannot

196. *And*] Sche M; Hue S. *ledeþ*] lett I. *þe*] F *om.* *as*] at I.

197. *which*] wich P. *loueday*] louedaies E.

198. [*a* IMFES] þe P.

199. *The*] I *om.* *loth*] is loth I. *maken*] make eny I; make an SM.

200. *With*] Wit P. *pans*] pens I; penes M. *ful*] wel F.

201. *Trewe*] Boþe S. *burgeis*] *so* M; burgeys F; burges I; burgeysus S; borgeises E; *looks like* burgers *in* P; *but see* B-text. *bonde*] bolde F. *to—bringeþ*] ȝhe bringeþ to noght I.

202. *al*] cast F; S *om.* [*in* IMFSE] P *om.*

203. *and*] M *om.* (*Perhaps* and *should be omitted, but the other MSS. retain it.*) *to lybbe*] dryueth F.

204. *nys*] ne is I. *ne*] ne non IM; ne noon S; *apparently written* no P; *but* FE *have* ne.

205. *loued*] allowed I; alowed FS; lady (!) E.

206. *oþer* (1)] or oþer M. *lawes*] lawe I.

207. *customes*] custemes P. [*of* IMFSE] and P. [*þe* IMFSE] þat P.

208. *suffraunce*] sustienance I.

209. *maked almost*] almost I-made I.

210. *no lond*] no londe ne londe ne (*so, by mistake*) I; no lond ne F. *the*] F *om.*

211. *knyt*] knyt so F. *and*] wiþ M. *couetyse*] couetyce P; *see* l. 202. I *has*—For clerkes and couetise · meede haþ knet to-gidres.

212. *wit*] *so* MF; witt E; wyt S; witte I; whit P. *þis*] þe IFM. *ys woxen*] wox is F.

213. *þis—ledeþ*] lereth þis lady I. [*þy* EG] þi IFMS; þys P. *now*] oure M. *lord*] crist E.

214. *der*] dar IF; dur S; dor E; derre M. *pleyne*] plede S. *here*] no I.

make their complaints known." Then Meed was sorry, and asked leave to speak.

Suche a maister ys mede · a-mong men of goode."
Thanne mornede mede · menyng hure to þe kynge,
To haue space to speke · spede yf hue myghte.
The kyng graunted hure grace · with a good wyll;

The king bids her excuse herself.

"Excuse [þe] yf þow canst · ich can no more seggen;
For conscience acuseþ the · to congie þe for euere."
"Nay, lord," quaþ þat lady · "leyueþ hym þe werse,

A 37 "Disbelieve Conscience," said she;

When ȝe wyten witerliche · in wham þe wrong lyggeþ.
Ther [þat] myschief ys gret · mede may helpen.
And þat knoweþ conscience · ich cam noȝt to chiden,
Ne to depraue [þi] *per*sone · *with* a prout herte.

"for well knowest thou, Conscience, thou hast hung on my neck eleven times, and taken money from me,

Wel þow wost wyt*er*ly · bote yf þow wolle gabbe,
Thow hast hanged on myn hals · elleuen tymes,
And al-so grypen of my gold · and gaf it where þe lykede.
Why þow wratthest [þe] now · wonder me þynkeþ,
ȝut ich may, as ich myghte · menske þe *with* ȝyftes,
And menteyny þy manhod · more þan þow knowest.

and hast defamed me. And yet I B 40 never killed any king.

Ac þow hast famede me foule · by-fore þe kynge here;
For culde ich neuere no kyng · ne consailed so to done;
Ac ich saued my-self · and sexty þousand lyues,
Boþe her and elles wher · in alle kynne londes.

216. *menyng*] monyng F; and mened I.
217. *to*] for to F.
218. *with*] wit P.
219. [*þe* IFMG] PES *om.*
220. *to congie*] to cunge FS; and cungeþ M.
221. *Nay*] Leue F. *leyueþ*] leueþ FME; leeueþ I; leuuþ S.
222. *When*] Wen P. *wham*] wam P.
223. [*þat* IMSEG] as F; þe P. *Ther—gret*] For *per* as gret meschef is F. *helpen*] muche helpe F.
224. *knoweþ*] knowest þou IF. *to*] for to F.
225. [*þi* FME] þy GS; þe PI. *prout*] proute E; proud MIFS.
226. *Wel*] For wel F. *wyterly*] weye I. *wolle*] woldest M.
227. *hals*] half IM. *elleuen*] enleuen I; enleue S.
228. *of*] I *om.* *and*] án P. *gaf*] ȝaf E; gyue IMS; ȝoue F. *it*] M *om.* *where*] were P. *lykede*] likeþ IM.
229. [*þe* IMFSE] P *om.*
230. ȝ*ut*] & ȝit F. *ich may*] mai i M. *menske*] a-uaunce M.
232. *Ac*] & F. *kynge here*] kyng*us* ere F.
233. *For culde*] Forgulte E. *culde*] killede M. *no*] M *om.*
234. *saued*] haue saued I; haue i-saued M. *and*] IMFS *om.* *lyues*] tym*us* S.
235. *Boþe*] M *om.* *wher*] wer P. *alle kynne*] alle kynnes M; many kyng*us* F.

Ac þow þy-self sothliche · ho [so] it segge dorste,
Hast arwed meny hardy men · that hadden wil to fyghte,
To brennen and to bruten · to bete a-doun strengthes.
In þe contreis þer þe kyng cam · conscience hym lette,
Þat he ne felde nat hus foes · þo fortune it wolde,
And as hus werdes were ordeined · by wil of oure lorde.
Caytiflyche þow, conscience · consailedist þe kyng leten
In hus enemys honde · hys heritage of fraunce.
Vnconnyng ys þat conscience · a kyngdome to sulle,
Þat ys conqueryd þorw comune helpe; · a kyngdome oþer duche
May nat be sold soþly · so meny here part asken
Of folk þat fauht þer-fore · and folwed þe kynges wil.
þe lest lad þat longeþ to hym · be þe lond wonnen,
Lokeþ after lordshep · oþer oþere large mede,
Wher-by he may as a man · for euere-more lyue after.
And þat ys þe kynde of a kyng · þat conquereþ of hys enemyes,
To helpe heyeliche al hus host · oþere elles to graunte
Al þat hus men mowen wynne · to do þer-myd here beste.

† But thou hast rendered slothful many hardy fighting men.

† It was Conscience that prevented the king from defeating his foes.

† It is wrong to sell a kingdom or a duchy.

† Every lad in the army expects his share of the conquered land.

† A king ought to provide for all his followers.

236. [*so* MFSEG] IP *om.*
237. *arwed*] *so* I; arewyd S; i-arewed M; arwad E; I-had F. *meny*] F *om.* *hardy*] an hardi M.
238. *and—bruten*] and to bresten M; & to breke F; in Britaigne I. *to* (3)] and IMF.
239—241. M *omits.*
239. *þe*] IF *om.* *contreis*] contre F. *conscience*] þou conscience F. *lette*] lettest F.
240. *ne*] F *om.* *felde*] *so* IE; fulde S; feld PF. *þo*] þogh I; þe E.
241. *werdes*] wirdus F; wordes I. *ordeined*] I-þouȝt F. *by*] at þe I. *oure*] houre P. *oure lorde*] god almyȝty F.
242. *þe kyng*] him F. *leten*] to leten I; to letun S; to lete F.
243. *honde*] hend E; handes I. *hys*] ys P.
244. *þat*] it F. *þat conscience*] þi consail M. *sulle*] fulle E.
245. *þat*] For þat I. *ys conqueryd*] conquered is F. *þorw*] bi MF. *a kyngdome*] F *om.* *duche*] duchie I; a duche EMS; a ducherye F.
246. *May*] It may IF. *here*] I *om.*
247. *folk*] fewe folk F. *fauht*] folowede S. *þe*] FS *om.*
248. *þe*] But þe F. *longeþ*] lieth F. *to*] wiþ I.
249. *oþer*] or FSM. *oþere*] I *om.*
250. *Wher*] Wer P. *for*] M *om.* *more*] FM *om.* *after*] þer-after F.
251. *of* (2)] on MIFS. *hys*] ys P.
252. *heyeliche*] hoygeliche F; hugeli M. *to*] for to F.
253. *to*] I *om.* *do*] E *om.* *myd*] wiþ MIFS.

For-þy ich counsayle no kyng · eny counsayle aske
At conscience, yf he coueyteþ · to conquery a reome.
† I would never have made Conscience my marshal.
For sholde neuere conscience · be my constable, 256
Were ich a kyng ycoroned · by marye," quaþ mede,
"Ne be mareschal of my men · þer ich moste fyghte.
A 38 Had *I* been marshal then, he should have been lord of all the land!
Ac hadde ich, mede, be hus mareschal · ouer hus men in fraunce,
Ich dorst haue leid my lyue · and no lasse wedde, 260
He had be lord of þat londe · in lengthe and in brede,
And al-so kyng of þat cuth · hus kyn to haue holpen,
The leste brol of hus blod · a barones pere.
But *thou*, Conscience, didst counsel him to leave that lordship.
Vnkyndely þow, conscience · consailedest hym þennes,
To lete so hus lordshup · for a lytel moneye. 265
Hyt by-comeþ for a kyng · þat shal kepe a reame,
A king should reward them that serve him.
To ȝeue men mede · þat meklyche hym serueþ,
To alienes, to alle men · to honoury hem *with* ȝyftes;
Mede makeþ hym [be] by-loued · and for a man yholde.
B 41 Thus emperors and earls get their yeomen. Thus, too, the pope gives rewards to men.
Emperours and erles · and alle manere lordes
þoruh ȝiftes hauen ȝemen · to rennen and to ryde.
þe pope and alle prelates · presentes vnder-fongen, 272
And ȝeuen mede to men · to menteynye here lawes.

254. *For-þy*] For-whi M; For S. *aske*] to aske M.

255. *yf he*] þat I. *coueyteþ*] coueite MFESG. *conquery*] conquere IMES; wynnen F. *reome*] reume IS; reme F.

256, 257. I *has* one *line*—For schulde neuer conscience be my constable · were I a king, quod mede.

257. *ycoroned*] I-corowned F; i-crowned M; ycrouned ES; ycorononede P. *marye*] al þis croys F.

258. *of*] ouer IFES.

259. *ich*] F *om.*

260. *leid*] *so* MFS; leide IE; led P. *my*] þer-to my FM. *lyue*] hed M.

261. *He*] ȝe M. *had be*] schold haue ben I.

262. *cuth*] kith FS; coyn M. *hus*] ȝoure M. *to—holpen*] for to helpe I.

263. *brol* F] brolle I; broþil S; *miswritten* brel P; bral E; M *om. hus*] ȝoure M. *pere*] fere E.

264. *Vnkyndely*] Vncunnynglioh I. *þow*] I *om.* *þennes*] þanne IF.

265. *moneye*] mede F.

266. *for*] to F.

267. *meklyche*] mecklyche P.

268. *to alle*] and to alle IM. *honoury*] honóure IMS; honour FE. *ȝyftes*] ȝeftes P; *but see* ll. 162, 230.

269. *Mede makeþ*] þanne makith mede F. [*be* IFES] PM *om. yholde*] *so* ES; Iholde FM; be holde I; *miswritten* yolde P.

271. *ȝemen*] *so* EFS; ȝomen I; ȝimmen M; ȝemmen P. *rennen*] ȝerne I.

273. *to menteynye*] to meynteyne F; to mayntene I; to meyntene E; to mentayne S; þat meynteyneþ M.

A 39 Servants receive wages.

Seriauntes for here seruice · mede þey asken,
And taken mede of here maistres · as þei mow a-corde.

Beggars ask for gifts, and so do minstrels.

Beggers and bedmen · crauen mede for here prayers.
Mynstrals for here mynstralcye · a mede þei asken. 277
Maistres þat techen clerkes · crauen hure for mede.

Priests expect mass-pence.

Prestes þat prechen · and þe puple techen
Asken mede and masse-pans · and here mete boþe. 280

Trade and payment go together; none can live without reward."

Alle kyne crafty men · crauen mede for here aprentys,
Marchaundise and mede · mote nedes go to-gederes.
Is no lede þat leueþ · þat he ne loueþ mede,
And glad for to grype hure · gret lord oþer poure." 284

"Then Meed is worthy to rule," said the king.

Tho quath þe kyng to conscience · "by Cryst, at my knowynge,
Mede ys worthy, me þynkeþ · þe maistrye to haue."

"Nay," said Conscience, † "clerks know Meed to be a maintainer of guile. † See Ps. xxv. 10 (Vulgate).

"Nay," quaþ conscience [to þe kyng] · "clerkes wyten þe soþe,
þat mede ys euermore · a meyntenour of gyle, 288
As þe sauter sheweþ · by suche as ȝeuen mede,
þat vnlawfulliche [lyuen] · hauen large honden,
To ȝeue mede to men · more oþer lasse. 291

† But, besides

Ac þer ys mede [and] mercede · and boþe men demen

274. *Seriauntes*] Seruantz I; Seruauntes M.

276. *Beggers*] Boþe beggers I. *bedmen*] bedemen IFMS; bedred E.

277. *Mynstrals*] And mynstrall*us* F.

278. *Maistres*] Men F. *techen*] kenne I. (*which improves the alliteration*). *hure—mede*] huyre for heore mede M; here mede SF; *þer*fore mede I.

279. *þe—techen*] techeth þe lawe F.

280. *pans*] pens F; penes M. *here*] his M.

281. *crafty*] craftus S. *aprentys*] prentis E; prentes M; prentises I; hyre F.

282. *nedes*] nede EFS. *go*] I *om.*

283. *Is*] *þer* is F; þer nys M. *he*] *so* EIFMS; hue P (*by mistake*).

284. *hure*] hire EI; here F; heore M. *gret—poure*] boþe grete & smale F; gret lord and oþer M.

285. *Tho*] Now F; I *om.* *Cryst*] *miswritten* Cryest P. *at—knowynge*] as me þenkeþ I; as me semeth F.

286. *me*] as me F.

287. *Nay*] Certes F. [*to—kyng* FIMS] PE *om.* *wyten*] witeþ I; know F.

289. *sheweþ*] saith I. *as*] *þat* ES.

290. *þat*] & E. [*lyuen* ISG] liuen M; leueth F; PE *om.* (cf. Lat. quotation, l. 118 above). *large*] large of E (*wrongly*). *honden*] hondus F; handes IMS.

291. *To*] Forte M. *mede—men*] men mede IS; men of mede F. *to men*] M *om.* *more—lasse*] þe more or þe lasse F.

292. *ys mede*] meede is I. *mede*] a mede M. [*and* IF] and a M; a PES. *men*] of hem me F.

Meed, there is Hire, which men get for what they do.

A desert for som doynge · derne oþer elles. .293
Mede meny tymes · men ȝeuen by-for þe doynge;
And þat ys noþer reson ne ryht · ne no reame lawe
† Yet no one should be paid till he has earned his pay, nor should he undertake another's prepaid work.
þat eny man mede toke · bote he it myghte deserue,
And for to vndertake · to trauely for anoþer, 297
And wot neuere witterly · wher he lyue so longe,
Ne haue hap to hus hele · mede to deseruen.
† Men who ask for pre-payment are over-bold.
Ich halde hym ouer-hardy · oþer elles nouht trewe,
þat *pre manibus* ys payed · oþer elles paye askeþ. 301
Harlotes and hores · and al-so fals leches,
Thei asken hure huyre · er þey hit haue deserued.
† Good men do not pay till the work is done.
And gylours gyuen by-fore · and goode men at þe ende,
When þe dede ys ydo · and þe day yendyd. 305
† The payment is then no *Meed*, but *Hire*, and a debt due,
And þat ys no mede · bote a mercede,
A maner dewe dette · for þe doynge;
And bote if yt be payed prestliche · the payer is to blame, 308
† which should not be kept back.
As by þe bok, þat bit · no body to with-holde
þe hure of hus hewe · ouer eue til a morwe:

293. *doynge*] dede F. *derne*] *so* IMS; deorne F; durne E; deerne *or* doerne P.

294. *meny—ȝeuen*] ȝeue many men F. *þe*] here F.

295. *ys*] nys M. *no*] in no IFS. *reame*] reomes M.

296. *mede toke*] schal mede take F. *myghte*] may F.

297. *And—to*] Or trewly F. *trauely*] trauaile IM; trauayle ES; trauayl F.

298. *witterly*] *so* EI; witturly F; withturli M; wyturly S; whiterly P. *wher*] *so* MI; wer PE; wheþer FS.

299. *Ne*] Or F.

300. *ouer*] *so* IMES; to F; *badly spelt* ouere P. *nouht trewe*] vntrewe F; out of truwþe E.

301. *payed*] ypaied E; I-payd F. *elles*] his IMFS.

302. *Harlotes*] As harlotus F.

303. *deserued*] deseruede (*badly*) P.

304. *And*] For M. *and*] ac F. *at—ende*] at þende I; atte neende F.

305. *yendyd*] *so* PE; I-endyd S; i-ende M; endede F; endeth I.

306, 307. *One line in* FI; þat is no mede but mercede · & dette for doynge F; And þat is no mede but a mércede · a maner due dette I. *And þat*] Ac what M. *no*] M *om.* A] & a E. *maner*] maner of M. *dewe*] *so* M; diwe P; due S; þywe (*sic*) E. *þe*] þi M.

308. *if*] ȝif E; IMFS *om.* *be—prestliche*] be prestliche payd FS; prestly be payd I.

309. *As—þat*] For as þe holy book F. *to*] schuld F; IMS *om.* *with-holde*] wit-holde P.

310. *hure*] huyre M; hire F. *hewe*] *so* I; hywe P; hyne EFMS. *ouer—a*] til it be oþer F.

Non morabitur opus mercenarij [tui] apud te usque mane. † Levit. xix. 13.

And þer is reson as a reue · rewarding treuthe,
And boþe þe lord and þe laborer · ben leelliche yserued.
The mede þat meny prest[es] takeþ · for masses þat þei syngen, 313
Amen, amen, Matheu seyth · *mercedem suam recipiunt.*
In marchaundise ys no mede · ich may it wel avowe;
Hit is a *per*mutacion a-pertelich · o pene-worth for oþer. 316
And þauh þe kyng of hys cortesye · kaiser, oþer pope,
ʒeue lond oþer lordshup · [or] oþer large ʒiftes,
To here leelle [and] lyge · loue ys þe cause.
And yf þe leelle and þe lyge · be luther men after, 320
Boþe kyng and kayser · and þe coroned pope
May desauowe þat þey dude · and douwe þer-with oþer,
And a-non by-nymen hym hit · and neuere [more] after
Noþer þei ne here Ayres · hardy to cleyme, 324
That kyng oþer cayser hym gaf · catel oþer rente.
For god gaf to salamon · grace vp-on erthe,
Rychesse and reson · whyle he ryht lyuede, 327

A 40 B 42 Priests that take money shall have the reward St **B 43** Matthew speaks of (Matt. vi. 5). In trading is no Meed, but only *barter*.

† If the king give away lands, he does it out of *love*,

† and he may revoke the gift, and give it to another.

† Thus God gave Solomon riches while he lived well,

mercenarij EMS] *spelt* mercennarij PF. [*tui* FS] PEMI *om.*
311. *as*] M *om.* *rewarding*] to rewarde F. *treuthe*] þroʒ (!) E.
312. *And*] Þat IMFS.
313. *prestes* ME] prestis I; prestus S; men F; prest P. *masses—syngen*] here mass*us* syngyng F.
314. *Matheu*] Matheus M. *suam*] F *om.* *recipiunt*] receperunt MFS.
315. *ys*] *þer* is F; nys E.
316. *apertelich*] F *om.* *o*] *so* PEI; a MF; on S. *pene-worth*] peny F.
317. *hys*] F *om.*
318. [*or* IMFSG] PE *om.* *ʒiftes*] ʒeftes P; *see* l. 230.
319. *leelle*] I *om.* [*and* M] and to I; PEFS *om.* (*but see next line*). *lyge* S] lige M; lege PIE (*but see next line*); lyge-men F. *ys*] I *om.*
320. *þe* (1)] þo M. *þe* (2)] IME *om.* *lyge*] liege I; liche E.
322. *desauowe*] disalowe FS. *douwe*] dowe E; dewe F; do IMS. *þer-with*] þer-whit P. *oþer*] an oþer IFS; a noþer M.
323. *anon—hit*] bynyme it hem anon I. *hym hit*] hem hit S; hit hem M; it hem F. [*more* IFMG] PES *om.* *after*] *þer*-aftur F.
324. *þei ne*] eny of I. *hardy*] be hardy hit F.
325. *That*] Of þat þe F. *hym*] hem IS; F *om.* *catel oþer*] of catel & of F.
326. *to*] IM *om.* *grace*] gret grace F. *erthe*] þe erthe P; *but* EIMFS *omit* þe.
327. *Rychesse*] Boþe ricchesse F. *whyle*] þer-whil I. *ryht*] wel F.

And as sone as god seih · he suwed nouht hus wille,
† but afterwards took them away, and he is now in hell. He reuede hym of hys richesse · and of hus ryht mynde,
And soffrede hym lyue in mysbyleue · ich leyue he be in helle;
So þat god geucþ no þyng · þat synne ne ys þe glose.
† So likewise both king and pope may both grant and revoke. And so ryght sothliche · may kyng and pope
Boþe gyue and grauntye · þer hus grace likeþ,
And eft haue hit a-ʒeyn · of hem þat don ille.
† So are Meed and Reward like two *Relations*, viz. *Direct* and *Indirect*, Thus ys mede [and] mercede · as two manere relacions,
Rect and indyrect · rennyn*g*e bothe
On a sad and a syker · semblable to hym-selue—
† like Adjective and Substantive in grammar." [As] adiectif and substantyf · vnite asken,
Acordaunce in kynde · in cas and in numbre,
And ayþer ys oþeres help—· of hem comeþ retribucion,
þat ys þe ʒifte þat god ʒyueþ · to alle leelle lyuynge,
Grace of good ende · and gret ioye after;
Retribuere dignare, domine deus, omnibus [*nobis*], *et cetera.*"
† "What do Direct and Indirect Relation mean?" said the king. Quaþ þe kynge to conscience · "knowen ich wolde
What is relacion rect · and indyrect after,
And þanne adiectyf and substantif · for englisch was it neuere."

328. *seih*] sey EF; si M; seiʒ S.
329. *reuede*] reft I. *hys*] S *om.*
330. *lyue* SEI] liue M; leue P. *leyue*] trowe M.
331. *þat*] IMFS *om.* *synne*] si (*sic*) I. *þat—þe*] *with*-outen any F.
332. *may*] so may I; may þe F.
333. *grauntye*] graunte MIES; graunt eke F.
334. *eft*] *so* IMS; efte E; eft-sone F; *miswritten* eeft P. *hem—don*] men þat do riʒt F.
335. [*and* IFG] a PEMS. *manere*] maner of M; F *om.*
336. *Rect*] Wheche beþ recte F. *Rect—indyrect*] Ryght & vnryght S (*and in* l. 344).
337. *and*] & on F. *semblable*] semeliche F; semblance I. *hym-selue*] hem-seluen I; hem-self F; hem-selue S.
338. [*As* MS] Ac PEIF (As *makes the better sense*). *asken*] þei asken F.
339. *Acordaunce*] And accordance IFS; And a-corden M.
340. *retribucion*] rewardyng F.
341. *þat ys*] And þat I. *ʒifte*] *so* E; gifte IMF; ʒefte P; gefte S. *leelle lyuynge*] gode lyues F.
342. *Grace of*] þe grace of god *with* F. *after*] þer-aftur F. [*nobis* MS] PEIF *om.* F *omits all the Latin.*
344. *What*] Wat P. *relacion rect*] recte relacioun F. *after*] þeraftur F.
345. *And*] I *om.* *þanne*] þe M; F *om.* *substantif*] þe sustantijf M; sustentif (*here and in* l. 338) F.

"Relacion rect," quath conscience · "ys a recorde of treuthe,
Quia antelate rei est recordatiuum,
Folwyng and fyndyng out · þe foundement of strenthe,
And styuelyche stonde forth · to strẽngthe of þe foundement,
In kynde and in case · and in cours of noumbre;
As [a] leel laborer · þat by-leuyþ *with* hus maistre
In hus paye and in hys pyte · and in hus pure treuthe,
To paye hym yf he *per*formeþ · and haue pyte yf he faylleþ,
And take hym for hus trauaile · al þat treuthe wolde.
So of hol herte comeþ hope · and hardy relacion
Sekeþ and suweþ · hus [substantif] sauacion,
That ys [god], þe grounde of al · a graciouse antecedent.
And man ys relatif rect · yf he be ryht trewe;
He a-cordeþ *with* crist in kynde · *uerbum caro factum est;*
In case, *credere in ecclesia* · In holy [kirke] to byleyue;
In numbre, rotie and aryse · and remyssion to haue,

† "Direct Relation," said Conscience,

† "Is an agreement in gender, case, and number,

† as when a labourer is regularly employed by a master.

† So also Man agrees with Christ in gender, case, and number; the *gender* being Human Nature; the *case*, Belief in the church; and the *number*, Remission of sins.

346. *a*] F *om.* *a recorde*] acorde (*sic*) I. *recordatiuum*] *so* IFEG; *apparently* recordantium P.

347. *fyndyng*] a fyndyng PE; *but* IMFSG *omit* a. *þe*] of þe I. *foundement*] fundament F. *of*] of a IM. F *omits the last three words of* l. 347, *and all* l. 348.

348. *stonde*] to stonde M. *of*] ISM *om.*

350. [*a* IMFSEG] P *om.* *þat*] MF S *om.* *by-leuyþ*] leeueth F. *þat—with*] bileeueþ þat I.

351. *and*] E *om.* *in* (2)] MF *om.* *hys pyte*] pitaunce F. *in* (3)] M *om.*

352. *performeþ*] performe I. *haue*] F *om.* *faylleþ*] falleþ M; faile F.

354. *So*] F *om.* *hol*] holy I; M *om.* *hardy relacion*] holy relatiuus F.

355. *Sekeþ*] þat sekith F. [*substantif* IS] substantif E (*as in* l. 345); sustentif P; sustantijf M. *hus—sauacion*] here souerayn by kynde F.

356. [*god* IMFSG] PE *om.* *See* next line.

357. *And*] A M. *trewe* ISE] triwe P; in trewþe F.

358. *acordeþ*] acorde (*sic*) I. *kynde*] ys kynde P; *but* EIMFSG *omit* ys. *uerbum*] is verbum F. *est*] F *om.*

359. *credere—ecclesia*] *with* corseyntus F. [*kirke* I] churche PEF MS. *to*] F *om.*

360. *rotie*] rotiȝe M; to rote F. *and* (2)] *with* S; F *om.*

Of oure sory synnes · asoiled and clansed, 361
And lyue, as oure crede ous kenneþ · *with* crist *with*-outen ende.

† This is like Adjective and Substantive.
Thus is relacion rect · ryht as adiectif and substantif
A-cordeþ in alle kyndes · with his antecedent. 364

† Indirect Relation is when there is no agreement in gender or number.
Indirect þyng ys · as ho so coueited
Alle kynne kynde · to knowe and to folwe,
With-oute [case] to cacche [to] · and come to boþe numbres;
In which beþ good and nat good · and graunte here noþers wil. 368

† It is no Direct Relation if I refuse to use my father's surname.
þat is [noȝt] reisonable ne rect · to refusy my syres sor-name,
Sitth y, his sone and seruaunt · suwe for his ryghte.
For who so wol haue to wyue · my worldliche daughter,
Ich wol feffe hym *with* hure fayre · and *with* hure foule taylende. 372

† Indirect Relation covets to agree in all
So indirect þyng ys · Inliche to coueyte
To a-corde in alle kyndes · and in alle kynne numbre,

361. *Of*] & of F. *sory*] seuene M. *synnes*] sennes P. *asoiled*] to be asoiled I. *clansed* M] clansede P; clansid ES; I-clansed F; y-clensed I.

362. *lyue*] bileue M. *crede*] *apparently* credo *in* P; *but* crede *in* EIMFS. *ous*] vs EFIS; us M. *kenneþ*] telleþ F.

363. *Thus*] This I. *as*] I *om.* F *has*—And þus suweþ relacioun rect · re (*sic*) rewle of sustentyuus.

364. *A-cordeþ*] Acordyng F. *with his*] whit is P.

365. *coueited*] coueiteþ M; coueyte S. F *has*—Indirect is contrarius · inliche to coueyte; *cf.* l. 373.

366. *kynne* IES] kyne P; kyn MF. *kynde*] kyndes F.

367. *With-oute*] And wiþoute I. [*case* MF] cause PEISG. [*to* MFG] two PES; I *om.*

368. *which*] wich P; þe whiche S. *beþ*] buþ M; ben IS; be F. *here*] M *om.* *noþers*] noþeres M; neyþer I; neþer S. *and—wil*] grace to forsake F.

369. *þat*] Hit F; And þat I. *is*] nys M. [*noȝt* E] nout M; nat FSG; not I; noþer P. *ne*] M *om.* *rect*] right IS. *refusy*] refuse EMIFS. *syres*] sire MIS. *surname*] surname E; sirename M; name I. *to—surname*] surname to refuse F.

370. *y*] I am I; F *om.* *his* (1)] is P. *and*] and his MI.

371. *who* EMI] wo P; ho FS. *haue*] haue me (!) M; S *om.* *worldliche* IES] wordliche F; *mismritten* worliche P; worschepeful M.

372. *wȯl*] wolde I; F *om.* *hure*] al hir I. *fayre*] fair face F. *taylende*] tailende IMEG; tail-eende F (*wrongly*).

373. *indirect þyng*] relacioun indirect F. *þyng*] IS *om.*

374. *kyndes*] kynde IMFS. *and*] M *om.* *in* (2)] F *om.* *kynne* MFSE] kyne P; kyns I.

genders and numbers.

With-oute cost and care · in alle kynne trauaile,
[With-oute resoun to rewarde · nauȝt recching of þe peple]. 376

† Direct Relation is that which exists between the king and his commons.

Ac relacion rect · is a ryhtful custome,
As, a kyng to cleyme · þe comune at his wille
To folwe hym, to fynde hym · and fecche at hem hus consail, 379

That here loue þus to [him] · þorw al þe londe a-corde.

† The king is the Antecedent, their head and king, standing like a fixed land-mark.

So comune cleymeþ of a kyng · thre kynne þynges,
Lawe, loue, and leaute · and hym lord antecedent,
Boþe here hefd and here kyng · haldyng with no partie,
Bote stande as a stake · þat stykeþ in a muyre 384
By-twyne two londes · for a trewe marke.

† Yet many of the people wish for Indirect Relation.

Ac þe moste partie of þe puple · pure indirect semeþ,
For þei wilnen and wolde · as best were for hem-selue,
Thauh þe kyng and þe comune · al þe cost hadde. 388
Al reson reproueþ · such imparfit puple,
And halt hem vnstedefast · for hem lackeþ case.

† Indirect Relatives care nothing about the case; all they care for is to get money.

[As] relatifs indirect · recche þei neuere
Of þe cours of þe case · so þey cacche suluer, 392
Be þe pecunie y-payed · þauh parties chide.
He þat mede may lacche · makeþ litel tale,
Nyme he a numbre · of nobles oþer of shullenges;

375. *and*] or M. *in*] and IM. *alle*] eche F. *kynne* MFSE] kynde P; kyn I.
376. *In* F *only.*
377. *a—custome*] ryȝte leuynge F.
378. *his*] is P.
379. *to*] and M; and to I. *fecche*] seche I. *and—consail*] at him counseil to fette F.
380. *þus*] is E. *þus—him*] to his lawe I. [*him* MFS] hem PE.
381. *comune*] comunes M. *of*] at S. *kynne*] kyne M; kynnus S.
382. *loue*] & leue (*for* & loue) I.
383. *here* (1)] I *om.* *hefd*] hed EM; heued I; heed F. *haldyng—partie*] with no party to holde F.
384. *stande*] standyng IS; stande stif F. *a* (2)] þe IF.
385. *Bytwyne*] Euen bitwix F. *londes*] lordes I.
386. þe (2)] þis M; I *om.* *pure*] nowe pure I.
387. *wilnen—wolde*] wesche & wyllen F.
389. Ac resoun redily reproueth · such reccheles peple F; Such inperfyt poeple · repreueþ alle resoun I.
391. [*As* EIFS] Ac P; As þe M. *relatifs*] relatijf ME; relatyuus FIS.
392. þe (1)] S *om.* þe (2)] here FS; I *om.*
393. *pecunie*] so IFS; pecunize M; peccunie P; peccunye E. *þauh*] þauȝ þe S; þaw þe M.
394. *makeþ*] telleþ M.
395. *oþer*] or IMFS. *shullenges*] schullynges ES; schillynges IMF.

How þat clyentes a-corde · mede a-counteþ lytel. 396

† But Adjective and Substantive agree in *case*, *gender*, and *number*;

Ac adiectif and substantif · ys as ich er tolde,
þat ys, vnyte, acordaunce · in case, gendre, and numbre;

† signifying that all men should agree in one *gender* or Nature, should have Belief in holy church, and should covet Remission of sins.

And ys [to] mene in oure mouth · more ne mynne,
Bote þat alle manere men · wommen, and children,
Sholde conformye to on kynde · on holy [kirke] to by-leyue, 401
And coueite þe case · when þei couthe vnderstonde,
To [sike] fore hure synnes · and suffre harde penaunce,
For þat ilke lordes loue · þat for oure loue deyde,

† The *gender* (as I said) is our Lord's Human Nature.

And coueited oure kynde · and be cald in oure name,
Deus homo, 405
And nymen hym into oure numbre · now and euere more;

† 1 Jo. iv. 16.

Qui in caritate manet in deo manet, et deus in eo.

† Thus is mankind a Substantive, requiring an Adjective.

Thus is man and mankynde · in manere of a substantif,
As *hic & hec homo* · [askyng] an adiectif 408
Of þre trewe termysons : *trinitas unus deus;*
Nominatiuo, pater & filius & spiritus sanctus.

† Men may read, in Kings, how Meed caused

Ac ho so rat of *regum* · rede me may of mede,
Hou hue absolon · to hongynge brouhte;

396. *þat*] þe M. *mede acounteþ*] acounteþ mede I.

397. *ys*] F *om.* *er tolde*] here telle I.

398. *þat*] And þat M; Ther I. *vnyte*] clene F. *gendre*] & gendre I.

399. *ys*] M *om.* [*to* EIFMSG] no P. *mene in*] nempne on I.

400. *children*] childre I; childur F.

401. *conformye*] conforme FES; conforme hem IM. *on* (1)] o IFS. [*kirke* I] churche PEFS; chirche M.

402. *coueite*] to coueite F. *when*] wen P.

403. [*sike* EIG] siken M; syke FS; asky P. *suffre*] do M. *harde*] scharp F; *miswritten* arde P. *penaunce*] penances I.

404. *ilke*] I *om.*

405. *and*] suþ (*sic*) E.

407, 408, 409. F *has*—And þanne ys man-kyn I-made · a sustentyf of trewþe, Acordyng with his adiectif · of *trinitas vnus deus.*

407. *man*] he man I. *a*] IS *om.*

408. *As*] Ac I. [*askyng* IMSG] and a kyng P (*which gives no sense*); E *has*—& adiectif & a kyng.

409. *þre*] þe E. *trewe* EIM] trew S; trywe P. *termysons*] *so* ES; *ter*misouns I; terminours M.

410. *Ac*] And M. *ho*] who IME. *Ac—so*] þat renk þat F. *rat*] *so* I; ret S; rate F; raat M; *þat* (*wrongly*) E. *of*] in M. *me*] *so* IES; he MFG.

411. *hue*] he I; sche M; 3o E; þat hore F. *hongynge*] hontyng M; hongement F. *brouhte*] a-brou3te F.

And sitthe, for saul · sauede a kyng for mede
A-geyn godes comaundement · god toke suche ven-
iaunce,
þat saul for þat synne · and hus sone deyde,
And gaf þe kyngdome to hus knaue · þät kept sheep
and lambren:
[As] men [rat] in *regum* · after [Ruth], of kynges,
Hou god sente to saul · by samuel þe prophete,
þat agag of amalek · and al hus lyge puple
Sholde deye delfulliche · for dedes of here eldren.
'Saul,' quath samuel · 'god hym-self hoteþ
To be boxome at my bidding · hus bone to fulfylle.
Haste þe *with* al þyn ost · to þe lond of amalek,
And al þat lyueþ in þat londe · oure lord wol þat þow
slee hit,
[Man, woman, and wif · child, widowe, and bestes];
Mebles and vnmebles · man and alle þynges,
Bren hit, ber nouht away · be hit neuere so riche,
For eny mede of moneye · al þat þow myght spille;
Spar hit nat · and þow shalt spede þe betere.'
And for he coueited hyre catel · and þe kyng
spared,

Absalom to be hung (2 Sam. xviii. 9);

† and how Saul's kingdom was given to a keeper of sheep.

A 41 (B 43) Hast thou not read, in Kings, how God told Saul to slay Agag for Amalek's sin against Israel?

(1 Sam. xv.; Exod. xviii. 8). Samuel said to Saul,

'Go to Amalek, and burn all thou findest there.'

412. *sitthe*] sethe I; seþþen M; suþ E; suþþe S. *for*] S *om.* *saul*] sir saul F. *kyng*] knyȝt E.
413. *toke suche*] took such a I; gaf on him F.
414. *deyde*] deyede EI; dide F; deieden M.
415. *hus*] a F. *þat*] and I. *kept*] kepe I. *lambren*] lambre I; lambus F.
416. [*As* IMFG] And PE. [*rat*] *miswritten* þat PES (*but see* l. 410); redeþ MG; rette I; rede F. [*Ruth* I] reuþe MS; þe reugthe F; reweþ P; redeþ E (*it means the* Book of Ruth).
418. *of*] & F. *al*] M *om.* *lyge*] liege I.
419. *delfulliche*] deilfulliche E; ful delfulli M; ful dredfully F; derfly I. *eldren*] eldres IM; eldrus F.
421. *To*] F *om.* *bone*] loue IF.
422. *al*] F *om.* *to—of*] in-to F.
423. *in*] on I. *slee hit*] hem sleo M.
424. *From* I; *also in* MFSG; PE *omit.* I *has*—and woman; *but* MF *omit* and. *childe widowe*] wedewe child FS; widewe child M.
425. *Mebles*] *Before* moebles I *inserts*—þat duelleþ in amalek; *which is not wanted.*
426. *Bren*] Bern I. *ber*] I *om.*
427. *myght*] may F. *spille*] I *omits, but has* Spille it *at beginning of next line.*
428. *nat*] nauȝt I; nouȝt M. *þe*] soueraynly þe F.
429. *hyre*] F *om.* *þe*] here F.

But because he did not so,

For-bar hym and hus beste bestes · as þe byble witnesseþ,
Oþerwise þan god wolde · by warnyng of þe prophete,

God sent to say that he should die.

God seide to samuel · þat saul sholde deye,
And al hus for þat synne · and shendfulliche ende.

Thus did Meed make God hate him.
B 44
A 42

Thus was kyng saul ouercome · for couetyse of mede,
That god hatid hym for euere · and alle hus ayres after.
The *culorum* of þis cas · kepe ich nat to shewe,
An aunter hit nuyede me · non ende wol ich make.

But now-a-days, a truth-teller is blamed.

For so ys þe worlde went · with [hem] þat han þe power,
That he þat seith most sothest · sonnest ys y-blamed.

I, Conscience, well know that Reason shall reign.

Ich conscience knowe þis · for kynde witt me tauhte,
þat reson shal regne · and reames gouerne,
And ryht as agag hadde · happen shulleþ somme.

Saul shall be blamed, and David diademed;

Samuel shal sle hym · and saul shal be blamed,
And dauid shal be diademyd · and daunten alle oure enemyes,
And on cristene kyng · kepen ows echone.
Shal no mede [be maister] · neuere more after,

and there shall be Love,

Ac loue and louhnesse · and leaute to-gederes

430. *byble*] bille S. *witnesseþ*] so EI; whitnesseþ P; telleþ MF.
431. *by—of*] and warned him by I; warnyng F.
432. *God*] So god I. *seide*] sente M.
433. *and*] IMFSG *om. shendfulliche*] schenfulliche M; schamfullich F. *ende*] aneende F.
434. *kyng*] F *om. for*] þorȝ S. *for couetyse*] þurw schentful schame F.
435. *hatid hym*] I *om. hus*] here I.
436. *The*] Ac þe F. *culorum*] colour M; consequent F. *to*] S *om.*
437. *hit*] ȝif hit M; leste hit S. *nuyede*] noiede M; anoied F; mighte noyen I. *me*] I *om. non*] an IMS. *wol*] wolde E.
438. *ys*] is now F. *went*] i-wend M; schent F. *with*] wit P. [*hem* IMFG] hym S; þulke E; P *om. han—power*] power haue F. *þe*] S *om.*
439. *most sothest*] men soþest IS; men here soþe F. *seith—sothest*] oftest seiþ soþ M. *sonnest ys*] is sennest M; sone is F.
440. *þis*] it wel F.
441. *shal*] ȝit schal F. *and reames*] rewmus to F.
442. *happen*] hap · so F. *shulleþ somme*] so MFES; schal come I.
443. *Samuel*] For samuel F.
444. *shal be*] F *om. diademyd*] I-diademed FM. *and*] ande P; to F. *daunten*] a-daunte M. *alle*] F *om.*
445. *on*] o I; a F. *ows*] ous S; vs IF; us M.
446. [*be maister* MIFSG] PE *om.*
447. *Ac*] & F. *louhnesse*] leel lowne F.

Shullen be maistres on molde · trewe men to helpe; — Humility, and Loyalty; Loyalty shall punish trespassers.
And ho so takeþ ayen treuthe · oþer transuerseþ ayens reson,
Leaute shal do hym lawe · and no lif elles.
Shal no seriaunte for þat seruyse · were a selk houe,
Ne pelour in hus paueylon · for pledyng at þe barre.
Muchel yuel is þorw mede · meny tyme suffred, — † Meed perverts the law by her large bribes.
And letteþ þe lawe · þorw here large ȝyftes.
Ac kynde loue shal come ȝut · and conscience to-gederes, — But Common Love shall yet return, and make Law a labourer.
And make of lawe a laborer · suche loue shal aryse,
And such pees among þe puple · and a parfyt treuthe,
þat Iewes shal wenè in here witt · and wexe so glade, — Then shall Jews think that Moses or Messiah is come.
That here kyng be ycome · fro þe court of heuene,
Moyses oþer messias · þat men be so trewe.
For alle þat bereþ baselardes · bryght swerde, oþer launce, — B 45 Men shall beat their swords and axes into sickles and scythes.
Axe, oþer acchett · oþer eny kynne wepne,
Shal be demed to þe deþ · bote yf he do hit smythie
In-to sykel oþer into sithe · to shar oþer to culter;

Conflabunt gladios suos in uomeres, & lanceas suas in falces; — Isaiah ii. 4.

Ech man to pleye *with* a plouh · a pycoyse oþer a spade,
Spynnen, and spek of god · and spille no tyme:
Prestes and persons · *placebo* and *dirige*, — Priests shall

448. *Shullen*] þo scholle I.
449. *oþer*] or IFM. *transuerseþ*] *so* ES; trauerseth IMF. *ayens*] F *om.*
451. *þat*] such F; his M; I *om.* *a*] S *om.* *selk*] selken IS.
452. *Ne*] *so* FMES; Ne no I; Ne (*or* No?) P. *in*] on S. *hus paueylon*] partye F; his pauiloun IM. *pledyng*] pletyng F. *at þe*] atte I; ate S.
453. *Muchel*] For muche F. *yuel*] I *om.* *meny*] ofte S. *tyme*] tymes I.
454. *And letteþ*] Heo letteth lithurly F.
455. *Ac*] But F; As I. *loue*] lome (!) I.
456. *lawe*] F *om.* *a*] and I; È *om.*
457. *and*] *with* F.
458. *shal*] schulleþ E. *so*] ful F.
460. *Moyses*] þe which moyses (*sic*) I. *messias*] messie IMF. *þat*] S *om.* *men—trewe*] be so trewemen F.
461. *bereþ*] berth I; beren M; bere F. *baselardes*] bâselard I.
462. *kynne*] kynnes M.
463. *yf*] F *om.*
464. *into*] to S; MF *om.* *to* (1)] or M. *oþer to*] oþer MF; or in-to E. *suas*] I *om.*
465. *pycoyse*] pikois M; pikcoyse E; plow (*by mistake*) F.
466. *and* (1)] or IFS.
467. *placebo*] *with* placebo F.

hunt with *placebo* only, or lose their benefices.

Here sauter and here seuene psalmis · for alle synful preyen.
Haukyng oþer hontyng · yf eny of hem hit vsie,
Shal lese þer-fore hus lyue-lode · and hus lif parauenture.

Kings and knights shall not oppress the commons.

Shal noþer kyng ne knyȝt · constable ne meyre
Ouer-cark þe cōmune · ne to þe court sompne,
Ne putte men in panell · ne do men plighte here treuthe;
Bote after þe dede þat ys ydo · the dome shal recorde,
Mercy oþer no mercy · as most trewe a-corden.

The king's court and the commons' court shall be one.

Kynges court and comune court · constorie and chapitre,
Al shal be bote on court · and on berne be Iustice;
That worth trewe-tunge a [tydy] man · þat tenede me neuere.

War shall cease.

Batailles shulle neuere eft be · ne man bere eg-tool,
And yf eny man [smyþie] hit · be smyte þer-with to deþe;

Isaiah ii. 4.

Non leudbit gens contra gentem gladium, nec excercebuntur ultra ad prelium.

Ac er þis fortune by-falle · fynde me shal þe worste,

Signs and wonders will be seen."

By syx sonneȝ and a ship · and half a shef of arwes.
And þe myddell of a mone · shal makye þe Iewes turne,

468. *alle synful*] synful to F.
469. *oþer*] or IF; and M. *vsie*] vse IMFES.
471. *meyre*] oþur F.
472. *Ouer-cark*] Ouer-care I. *sompne*] hem somene M.
473. *panell*] pauyloun F. *men* (2)] hem MF.
474. *after*] as F. *þat*] MF *om.*
475. *trewe*] trewþe S. *trewe acorden*] truþe asenteþ M.
476, 477. M *has*—Kynges court and comune court · al schal be but on court, Constorie and chapitle · and on barn Iustice. *chapitre*] chapitle M; chapetle F. *berne*] buyren I; baren F; barn M.
478. *That*] And þat MI. *worth*] schal be F. *a*] & E; F *om.* [*tydy* ISG] tyde F; teþyng M; trewe PE. *tenede* EG] tened IFM; teunede P; tenuþ S. *me*] me ȝit F.
479. *ne—tool*] no egge-tool man bere F.
480. *And*] F *om.* *yf*] but ȝif S; I *om.* [*smyþie*] smithie R (B-text); smythi F; smeþi M; smythe I; smyþen (*badly*) PESG; *see* l. 463. *be smyte*] be smete MF; þe smyþe (*sic*) E. *leuabit*] leuabunt M. *nec*] non I.
481. *er*] or EF. *by-falle*] falle I. *me*] men M. *þe worste*] furst F.
482. *and* (1)] in I. *ship* MS] schippe I; schip EF; shup P. *half*] halwe I. *arwes*] harwes E.
483. *And*] But M. *myddell*] I *om.*

And sarasyns for þat syght · shullen synge *credo in* B 46
spiritum sanctum. 484
For makamed and mede · shullen myshappen þat tyme,
For *melius est bonum nomen quam diuicie multe.*" Prov. xxii. 1.
As wroth as þe wynd · [wex] mede þer-after—
"Lo what salamon seith," quaþ hue "in sapience þe Meed replies by quoting Scripture,
byble, 487
'þat 3eueþ 3yftes, take 3eme · þe victorie he wynneþ,
And moche worshep þer-*with*' · as holy writt telleþ:
Honorem acquirit qui dat munera." Prov. xxii. 9 (Vulgate).
"Ich leue þe, lady," quaþ conscience · "[for þat latyn is trewe:]
Thow art lyke a lady · þat a lesson radde, "You are like a lady," said Conscience,
Was, *omnia probate* · [þat] plesed hure herte; 492 "who read but half a text (1 Thess. v. 21);
That [leef] was no lengere · and at þe leues ende. the rest of it was over the leaf.
Ac hadde hue loked on þe lift half · and þe leef turned,
Hue sholde haue yfounde folwynge · fele wordes after,
Quod bonum est tenete · a tyxte of treuthes makyng.
So he þat secheþ sapience · fynde he shal þat folweþ And what says the rest of *your* text? It
Tristilich a teneful tixt · to hem þat takeþ mede, 498 condemns you."

484. *sarasyns* E] saresyns P; sarisyns I; sarsynes M; saracen*us* F. *syght*] S *om. for—synge*] syng for þat si3t F. *credo, &c.*] M *om.*

485. *makamed*] makameth I; makemete MS; makameet F. *mede*] mede boþe F. *shullen*] and (*sic*) I. *For*] *Quia* I.

486. *as*] y-wis as F. *þe*] eny S; I *om.* [*wex* G] *so in* B-text; *badly spelt* waxe PEIS; wax MF. *þer-after*] aftur F.

487. *salamon seith*] seiþ salamon M. *hue*] sche IM; she S; scheo F; 3o E. *in sapience*] sapiens in F; insipience in I; in sapience in S.

488. *3eueþ 3yftes*] 3eue 3iftus F; 3iftes 3yueþ I. *take*] takeþ IMFS. *he*] 3e F.

489. *worshep*] worschepe M; wurschepe F; worschipe I; worschip ES. *þer-with*] *þer with* al F. *acquirit*] adquirit F; adquiret IS; quiret M.

490. E *omits. leue* IMFS] leyue P. *þe*] wel F. [*for—trewe* IMFSG] as holy wri3t telleth P; *cf.* l. 489.

491. *art* IMFS] ert PE. *radde*] redde F.

492. *Was*] That was PE; *but* IMFS *omit* That. [*þat* IMFSG] wiche P; whuch E.

493. [*leef* IFSG] PME *om.; the right word is* lyne; *see* B-text. *was*] ne was M. *and*] but M. *þe*] a M. *and—leues*] for hue was at S.

494. *Ac*] But M. *loked*] i-loked M. *on*] to E. *on—half*] in þe luft half I; on þat oþer half M; a lefhald (*sic*) F. *turned*] i-turned MF.

495. *yfounde*] founde IFSE.

496. *tyxte*] text IF. *treuthes*] trewe I.

497. *he—secheþ*] who-so techeþ I.

498. *Tristilich a*] Trustilich a I; A ful I. *teneful* ISE] tenful M; teonful F; tuenful P. *tixt*] text IF. *to*] of M · for S.

The whiche hatte, (as ich haue rad · and oþer þat conne rede,)

B 47 Prov. xxii. 9 (Vulgate). *Animam aufert accipientium:*

'Worshup [he] wynneþ · þat wol ȝeue mede,
Ac he þat receyueþ oþer receteþ hure · ys recettor of gyle.'" 501

Hic explicit passus quartus.

499. *whiche*] wiche P. *hatte*] þat hatte I; hiȝt F. *The—hatte*] þei schulle happe M. *rad*] i-rad M; herd F. *and—conne*] of hem þat cowde F.

500. *Worshup*] Muche wurschepe F. [*he* IMFSEG] hue P. *he wynneþ*] may he wynne F.

501. · *he þat*] ho so F. *oþer*] or IMF. *receyueþ*] receyueþ hire I. *receteþ*] reseteþ M; receheþ I. *hure*] hire IE; heore F; hit M. *recettor*] recettoure EI; recetur M; rectur S.

COLOPHON. *So* PG; MI *omit. Hic*] FSE *om.*

PASSUS V.

Incipit passus quintus.

"CEsseþ," saide þe kyng · "ich soffre ȝow no lenger; A 43 B 48
ȝe shulleþ sauhtne for soþe · and serue me boþe. "Be reconciled," said the king,
Kus hure," quaþ þe kyng · "conscience, ich hote." "and kiss her, Conscience."
"Nay, by crist," quaþ conscience · "conge me rather! "Not unless
Bote reson rede me *þer*-to · raþer wol ich deye." Reason advises me so to do."
"And ich comaunde," quaþ þe kynge · to conscience "Then ride and fetch Reason
þenne, here," said the king.
"Rape þe to ryde · and reson þat þow fecche;
Comaunde hym þat he come · my consail to hure,
For he shal rulye my reame · and rede me þe beste, "He shall give us good advice."
Of mede and of o*þer* mo · and what man shal hure wedde,
And a-counte *with* þe, conscience · so me crist helpe,
How þow ledest my puple · lered and lewede."
"Ich am fayn of þat forwarde · in fayþ," þo quaþ con- Conscience gladly rode off,
science,

TITLE. *So* FSEG; Hic incipit quintus passus de uisione M; Passus quartus de visione vt prius I.

1. *Cesseþ*] Seceth now F; Setthe (*sic*) I. *saide*] seiþ S.

2. *shulleþ*] schulle M; schal IF. *sauhtne*] saughten I; sauȝte M; sauȝtle S; sauȝtne F.

3. *Kus*] Kisse I; Kys MF.

4. *conge*] congeie I; congeþ M; cunge S. *rather*] are I.

5. *rede*] radde F. *þer-to*] þertille I. *wol*] wolde IF; wilde M.

6. *ich*] M *om.*

7. *Rape* IMFSE] Rappe P. *and —þow*] and reson þow M; resoun to F.

8. *Comaunde*] & comaunde F. *hure*] here MIF.

9. *rulye*] reule IS; rewle F; rewele M; rule E.

10. *oþer mo*] mo oþer I. *what man*] ho F. *wedde*] haue S.

11. *a-counte*] counte E.

12. *puple—lewede*] lond · · & þe leeue peple F.

13. *Ich—fayn*] Fayn am IF. *in fayþ*] M *om.* *þo*] F *om.*

and gave Reason the king's message. **A 44**

And rod forth to reson · and rouned in hus ere,
And seide hym as þe kyng saide · and sitthe tok hus leue.
"Ich shal a-raye me to ryde," quaþ reson · "rest þow a whyle:"—

Reason bids his knave Cato saddle his horse called Suffer-till-I-see-my-time. **B 49**

And called caton hus knaue · corteys of speche,
And al-so tomme trewe-tonge- · telle-me-no-tales-
Ne-lesynges-to-lauhen-of- · for-ich-louede-hit-neuere—
"And sette my sadel vppon soffre- · til-ich-see-my-tyme,
Let warroke hym wel · *with* a-vyse-[þe]-by-fore,
For it is þe wone of wil · to wynse and to kyke;
Let peitrel hym and pole hym · with peyntede wittes."

Then Conscience and Reason rode to the king, and

Thenne conscience on hus capel · comsed to prykie,
And reson *with* hym ry3t · rounyng to-geders
Which a maister mede was · a-mong poure and riche.
Then waryn wysman · and wyly-man his felawe

Wiseman and Wilyman followed them, for they wanted Reason's advice.

Fayn were to folwen hem · and fast ryden after,
To take red at reson · þat recorde sholde
By-fore þe kyng and conscience · yf þei couthen pleyne
On wily-man and wittiman · and waryn wrynge-lawe.

Conscience knew these two were covetous,

Ac conscience knew hem wel · and carped to reson:
"Here comeþ," quaþ conscience · "þat couetyse seruen;

14. *And*] He MF.
15. *sitthe*] synnes he I; suþ E.
16. *shal*] F *om.* *to—reson*] quod resoun to ride F. *rest*] now rest F; resteþ E. *þow*] þe IF; MSE *om.* *a*] I *om.* *whyle*] wyle P.
17. *And*] He M. *corteys*] was curteys F.
18. *no* MIFS] none P; non E.
19. *Ne*] Nor F; No M. *lesynges* IME] lesyngus FS; lesenges P. *louede*] ne louede M.
21. *Let*] And let I; & F. *warroke* EIMSG] warrok F; worrok P. *hym wel*] þat with wel F; wil I. *with*] F *om.* [þe IFSG] PEM *om.*
22. *is*] his P. *kyke*] so EIS; kike MF.
23. *Let—hym*] For-þy let peytrele wil I. *pole*] pul I. *with*] wit P. *wittes*] woordus F.
24. *Thenne*] Now F. *conscience—capel*] on his capul concience M. *comsed*] becomseth F; biginneþ M. *prykie*] prike I.
25. *ry3t*] ritte I (*cf.* B-text); riit M; *but* EFS *have* ri3t *or* ryght.
26. *Which*] Wich P; Swich·M.
27. *Then*] On I. *wyly*] wyle P; wily IFSE; wili M. *felawe*] broþur F.
28. *fast ryden*] riden faste M. *ryden*] wenten F.
29. *at*] of IMSE.
30. *þei couthen*] þe comune I.
31. *wily-man* IMFSE] williman P.
32. *to*] þo to F.

Ryd forth, syre reson · and recche nat of here tales,
For þer wratthe and wranglyng ys · ther þei wolle a-byde;
Ac þer loue and leaute ys · hit lykeþ nat here hertes: and shunned Love and Loyalty.
Contricio & infelicitas in uiis eorum, & uiam pacis non cognouerunt; non est timor dei ante oculos eorum. Ps. xiii. 7 (Vulgate).
Thei geueþ noȝt of good faith · god wot þe soþe;
Thei wolde don for a dyner · oþer for a dosene capones "They will do more," said he, **B 50** "for a dozen chickens than for our Lord's sake."
More þan for oure lordes loue · oþer oure lady hus moder."
Thanne reson rod forth · and tok reward of no man,
And dude as conscience kenned · til he þe kyng mette.
Corteslich þe kyng þen · cam and grette reson, The king receives them courteously.
And by-twene hym[self] and his sone · sette þo syre reson,
And speken þo wise wordes · a long while to-gederes. **A 45**
Thenne cam pees in-to parlement · and putte vp a bylle, Enter Peace, with a plea against Wrong.
How þat wrong wilffullich · hadde hus wif for-leyen,
And how he rauyschede rose · þe riche wydewe, by nyghte,
And margarete of here maidenhod · as he mette hure late.

34. *syre*] quoþ sire I; quod M; riȝt F. *See* l. 40. *nat*] þow nouȝt M.
35. *In* I, ys *follows* þer; *in* F, *it follows* wraþ. *þei wolle*] wol þey I.
36. *In* I, ys *follows* þer; *in* F, *it follows* loue. *Cf.* l. 35.
38. *Thei*] For þey I. *wolde*] wole F. *for* (2)] fore P; IF *om.*
39. *oþer*] or for M. *hus*] goddes I. *lady—moder*] ladies owþer F.
41. *And*] But IF. *kenned*] him kennede IM; him kynde S; him kende F; kende E.
42. *þen*] þo MF. *grette*] cussede F.
43. *And*] MF *om.* *by-twene* EM FS] bituen I; by-twine P. [*self* IM] PEFS *om.* *his*] is P. *sette*] he sette IM; settith F. *þo*] M *om.* *þo—reson*] him þanne F.
44. *þo*] IMFS *om.* *while*] wile P.
45. *Thenne*] And þanne I; þo M. *Thenne—pees*] Til pees cam F. *bylle*] bulle M.
46. *þat*] I *om.* *hadde—wif*] his wif had F.
47. *rauyschede*] rauysede P; rauysched E; raueschede S; i-raueissed M. *by nyghte*] be myȝte M; douȝtur F.

"Wrong (said he) has stolen my geese and pigs.

† I dare not go to the fair on St Giles's down.

He has stolen my horse Bayard;

murdered my men, stolen my wheat, and given me but a tally for ten quarters of it."

"Boþe my [gees] and my grys · and my gras he takeþ,
Ich dar nouht for his felaweshepe · in faith," pees seide,
"Bere sikerlich eny seluer · to seint gyles doune;
He waiteþ ful wel · whanne ich [seluer] take,
What wey ich wende · wel ȝerne he aspieþ,
To robbe me and to ryfle me · yf ich ryde softe.
ȝut he is bold for to borwe · and baddelich he payeþ;
He borwede of me bayarde · and browte hym [hom] neuere,
Ne no ferþyng þer-fore · for nouht ich couthe plede.
He menteyneþ hus men · to morthre myn hewes,
And for-stalleþ myn faires · and fyghteþ in my chepynges,
And breke[þ] vp my bernes dore · and bereþ away my whete,
And takeþ me bote a taile · for ten quarters o̥þer twelue.
ȝut he manasceþ me and myne · and lyth by my mayde,
Ich am nouht hardy for hym · [vnneþe] to loke."
The kyng knew þat he seide soþ · for conscience hym tolde,

B 51 How wronge was a wickede man · and moche wo wrouhte.

49. *[gees* IMEG] goos PF; gos S.
50. *his*] is P. *in—pees*] by my faith he F.
51. *sikerlich—seluer*] siluer sikurly F.
52. *He*] And he I. *waiteþ*] awaiteþ MF. *whanne*] wanne P. [*seluer* MG] siluer IE; siluur S; sulfere P. *Cf.* l. 51. *whanne—seluer*] what seluer i M; wynnyng whan i F.
53. *What*] & what F. *wende*] wynde S. *wel*] ful I. *wel ȝerne*] ful wel S.
54. *me* (1)] F *om.* *and*] or I. *me* (2)] ME *om.*
55. *ȝut*] F *om.* *he is*] is he I. *baddelich*] *apparently* baldelich P; *but we find* baddeliche IM; badliche EGE.
56. *He*] For he I. [*hom* IFS] PE *om.* *hym hom*] me him M.
57. *ferþyng* MEIF] ferþeng P; ferþyn S. *nouht*] ouȝ þat (*sic*) S.
58. *He*] & F. *hus*] my (!) S. *myn*] men E. *hewes* IG] hywes PE; hynus F; hynnus S; hinene M.
59. *And*] F *om.*
60. *And*] He F. *breke*þ IMF] brekuþ S; brekyþ G; breke PE. *bernes dore*] berne-dores I; berndoorus F. *whete*] wete P.
61. *takeþ*] tak I. *oþer twelue*] ootus F; otes I; of otes M.
62. ȝut] And ȝit IMF. *he*] I *om.*
63. [*vnneþe* IMFSG] vneþ E; owneþe P.
64. þat] IMF *om.*
65. *How*] þat F.

Tho was wrong a-fered · wysdome he by-souhte;
On men of lawe wrong lokede · and largelich hem profrede,
And for to haue of here help · handy-dandy payede.
"Had ich loue of þe lorde · litel wolde ich recche
Of pees and of hus power · thauh he pleynede euere!"
Thoruh wrong and hus werkes · þer was mede yknowe,
For wysdome and wit þo · wenten to-gederes,
And toke mede myd hem · Mercy to wynne.
3ut pees putte forth hus hefd · and hus panne blody,
"*With*-oute gult, god wot · gat ich þys scaþe;
Conscience knoweþ hit wel · and alle þe trewe comune."
Ac wyles and wit · weren a-boute faste
To ouercome þe kynge · þorw catel, yf þei myghte.
þe kyng swor þo by crist · and by his corone bothe,
That wrong for hus workus · sholde wo þolie,
And comaundede a constable · to caste wrong in yrenes,
Ther he ne sholde in seuen 3ere · see fet ne hondes.
"God wot," quaþ a wis on · "þat were nat þe beste;
Yf he may amendes do · let meynpryse hym haue,

Then was Wrong afraid, and tried to bribe Wisdom to plead for him.

A 46

Then Wrong begged Wisdom and Wit to take Meed with them.

Peace shows the king his bloody head.

But Wiles and Wit try to overcome the king.

A 47

The king swears Wrong shall suffer, and shall be cast into irons.

A wise one offers bail, and says

B 52

66. *was wrong*] wrong was F. *a-fered*] aferd MFSE; aferde I. *wysdome*] and wisdom IF. *by-souhte*] soghte I.

67. *On—lokede*] & lowtede to men of lawe F. *hem*] F *om.*

68. *of*] IM *om.* *handy-dandy*] handeli he M.

69. *ich*] I *quod* he F. *þe lorde*] lordes M. *wolde*] wul S.

70. *and*] or F. *of*] IM *om.* *hus power*] powere E; pouerte F. *he*] þei MFS. *pleynede*] pleyne I.

71. *þer*] þo F.

72. *wit þo*] wrynglawe F. *wenten*] wenten þo F.

73. *myd*] *with* SI. *myd hem*] þat maide M.

74. *3ut—putte*] þo put pecs F. *hefd*] heued I; hed ME; heed F.

75. *gult*] gilte I; gilt FS. *gat ich*] was 3eue me I. *þys*] þis ilke F.

76. *knoweþ*] knew F. *trewe comune*] comune trewe I; trewe folk*us* F.

77. *wit*] wrong wit F.

78. *To*] Forte M. *kynge*] curteys kyng F. *þorw*] þor3 SEI; þurw F; wiþ M; *miswritten* þow P; *cf.* l. 138.

79. *þo*] I *om.*

80. *þolie*] þole F; dolye (!) S.

81. *And comaundede*] He comaundeþ M. *wrong*] him MF. *yrenes*] iren E; stokk*us* F.

82. *ne sholde*] ne schal M; schulde not I. *in*] þis M. *fet*] his feet IF; fot M; fote E; foot S. *ne* IMSE] no *or* ne P. *ne hondes*] onus F.

83. *on*] oon F; man E.

84. *may amendes*] amendes may I. *do*] make F.

Wrong will pay damages.

And be borw of hys bale · and byggen hym bote,
And a-mende þat ys mys-do · and euere-more þe betere."

Wit seconds this.

Wit a-corded her-with · and witnessede þe same;
"Betere ys þat bote · bale a-doun brynge,
Than bale be [y]bete · and bote neuere þe betere."

Then Meed proffers Peace a present of gold,

Thanne gan medé meken here · and mercy by-souhte,
And profredè pees a present · al of pure golde;

and engages that Wrong shall keep the peace.

"Haue þis, man, of me," quaþ hue · "to amende þy scaþe;
For ich wol wage for wrong · he wol do so no more."

Peace begs Wrong off, and forgives him, since Meed has made amends.

Pytouslich pees þo · preyede þe kyng
To haue mercy on þat man · þat meny tyme greuede hym—
"For he hath waged me wel · as wisdome hym tauhte;
A 48 Mede hath mad myne amendes · ich may no more asken;
So alle myne claymes ben quyt · by so þe kynge asente."

But the king swears that Wrong shall not get off so lightly.

"Nay, by crist," quath þe kynge · "for consciences sake,
Wrong goþ nat so away · ar ich wite more;
Loupe he so lyghtlich · lauhen he wolde,
And eft be þe boldere · to bete myne hewes;
Bote reson haue reuthe of hym · he shal reste in stockes

85. *And*] þat F. *of*] for IFSE. *hys*] ys P. *and*] to F. *byggen*] bringen I; bringe M.

86. *þe*] be þe M.

87. *a-corded*] acordeþ IM; acorde S. *her-with*] þerwith I. *witnessede*] withnesseþ M; witnesse S.

88. *Betere*] þat better F.

89. *ybete* I] I-bete FS; i-beten M; bete PE.

90. *meken* SE] meke M; mekene F; to meken I; muken P. *mercy*] merci sche MI.

91. *pure*] pured M; oure pure E.

92. *þis* IMFSE] þus P. *of me*] S *om.* *amende*] mende F. *þy*] þe S.

94. *preyede*] bi-souȝte M.

95. *tyme*] tymes IS. *greuede*] haþ greued M; greuyþ S. *greuede hym*] hym greued I; greued E. *þat—hym*] had greued him so oft F.

96. *hath*] I *om.* *wel*] F *om.*

97. *Mede*] And meede I. *myne*] my I; me F. *amendes*] mendes I.

98. *So*] And M; But F. *quyt*] I-quyt F. *by so*] be so I; so þat MF.

99. *consciences*] conscience E.

100. *ar*] or MFE; er S.

101. *Loupe*] Lope IM; Lupe S; Lepe E; For lepe F. *After* lyghtlich PE *insert* a-wey, *repeated from* l. 100. *wolde*] wolde aftur M.

102. *eft*] ȝeft S. *be—boldere*] þe boldere be I. *hewes* I] hywes PE; hynus FS; hynen M.

103. *of*] on IMFS. *shal reste*] schal M; resteth ȝit F. *in*] in-to M; in my I; on SE.

As longe as ich lyue · for hus luther werkes." 104
Somme radde reson þo · to haue reuthe on þat shrewe,
And for to consail þe kyng · on conscience þei loked;
Þat mede myghte be menepernour · reson þei by-souhte.
" Red me nat," quaþ reson · " no reuthe to haue, 108
Til lordes and ladies · louen alle treuthe,
And haten alle harlotrie · to huyren oþer to mouthen hit;
And purneles porfil · be put in þe whucche,
And children cherissing · be chasted with ȝerdes, 112
And harlotes holynesse · be an hey ferye;
Til klerken couetise · be cloth for þe poure,
Here pelure and here palfrayes · poure menne lyflode,
And religious out-ryders · reclused in here cloistres,
And be as benit hem bad · domenik and fraunceis;
Tyl þat lerede men lyue · as þei lere and techen,
And til þe kynges consayl · be al comune profit;
Tyl bisshopes [ben] bakers · brewers and taylours, 120
For alle manere men · þat þei fyndeþ nedfol;
Tyl seynt Iame be souht · þer poure syke lyggen,
In prisons and in poore cotes · for pilgrymages to rome,
So þat non go to galys · bote it be for euere; 124

Then some advised Reason to take pity on Wrong. B 53

"Nay," says Reason, "not till all lords and ladies love truth,

rioters are holy, clerks charitable to the poor,

A 49 and priests practise what they preach;

till men go no more to Galicia,

104. *As*] Also F. *ich*] y may S.
105. *haue reuthe*] rewe F. *on*] vppon I.
106. *þei*] sche I.
107. *menepernour*] meynpernour MI. *reson*] Meede I.
108. *Red*] Bid M.
110. *huyren*] heren it IM; heere F; hurен E; herun S. *oþer*] or IMF. *hit*] M *om.*
111. *And*] And til I. *porfil*] purfil MFS; purfiel I. *in þe*] in-to M; in hir IFS. *whucche*] wucche P; whicche FS; whoche E; hucche IM.
112. *children*] childres M. *cherissing*] chēssing P; chirsyng E; chersynge S; cherissching I; cheresschynge M; cherschinge F; *cf.* B-text. *chasted*] chastyng S.
114. *Til*] And til S.
115. *Here*] And here SI. *here* (2)] I *om.* *poure*] be pore S. *menne*] men SE; mennes IMF. *lyflode*] foode F.
116. *reclused*] be reclusid S; be reclus I; be closed M.
117. *benit*] benet MIFE.
119. *til*] E *om.*
120. *Tyl*] And til I. *bisshopes*] *apparently* bisschepes P. [*ben* IM] be F; beo G; and PES. *brewers*] & brewrus (*sic*) S.
121. *men*] of men IMF. *þei fyndeþ*] me fynt I. *nedfol*] nedy F.
122. *Tyl*] And til I.
123. *in*] M *om.* *cotes*] cottes E. *for*] pe (*sic*) I. *pilgrymages*] pilgrimage FI; pilgrimes M.
124. *it be*] he go IS; ȝif he go F; ȝif hit be M.

and Rome-seekers no more bear the king's coin over the sea,

And alle rome-renners · for robbers in fraunce
Bere no suluer ouer see · þat kynges sygne shewe þ,
Neiþer graue ne vngraue · of gold ne of suluer,
Vp forfeture of þe fee · ho so fynt hym ouerwarde, 128

unless they be merchants, messengers, provisors, or priests.

Bote it be marchaunt oþer hus man · oþer messager *with* lettres,
Prouisour oþer prest · oþer penaunt for hus synnes.

B 54 I will have no pity while Meed is here.

And ȝut," quaþ reson, "by þe rode · ich shal no reuthe haue,
Whyl mede hath þe maistrye · þer motyng is atte barre.
Ac ich may seye ensamples · as ic see oþere; 133
Ich seye it for my-selue," quath reson · "and hit so were,

Were *I* king, no Wrong should go unpunished, or get grace by bribes.

þat ich were kyng *with* corone · to kepe eny reame,
Shold neuere wronge in þis worlde · þat ich wite · myghte, 136
Be vnpunysshed in my power · for peril of my soule,
Ne gete my grace þorw eny gyft · ne glosyng speche,

A 50 No evil ought to go unpunished, nor good unrewarded.

Ne þorw mede do mercy · by marye of heuene!
For man, *nullum malum* · mette with *impunitum*, 140
And bad þat *nullum bonum* · bee *irremuneratum*.
Lete þy confessour, syre kyng · construe þis in english,
And ȝif ȝe worchen hit in werke · ich wedde boþe myn handes,

Were this rule kept, Law might

That lawe shal be a laborer · and lede a felde donge,

125. *robbers*] ruyflers I.
126. *Bere*] To bere I. *see*] þe se M. *kynges sygne*] signe of king I; kynges coyne M.
127. *Neiþer*] M *om.* *ne* (1)] nor F. *ne* (2)] nor F; or I.
128. *Vp*] Vp-on M. *þe*] þat IF. *ho so*] who I. *fynt*] fyndeþ I. *hym*] hem I. *ouerwarde*] gilty F.
129. *it*] he I. *messager*] messagerus F.
130. *Prouisour*] Oþur prouisour F. *penaunt*] penytaunt F.
131. *ȝut*] I *om.*
132. *Whyl*] Wyl P; Whiles I. *is*] his P. *atte*] at þe MSE; at I.
133. *seye*] seiȝe M; sein I.
134. *it*] it nat I. *Ich—selue*] For soþe I seie F.
135. *þat*] And IS. *eny*] my I.
137. *in*] by F; be M. *my*] I *om.*
138. *gete my*] graunte M.
139. *þorw*] for F. *do*] haue I. *marye*] mary loue F.
140. *man*] no man E; scholde F. *man—malum*] nullum malum man I. *mette*] meeté F.
141. *bad þat*] bad I; also F. *bee*] with F.
142. *in english*] to þe F.
143. *worchen*] *miswritten* worten (*for* worcen = worchen) P.
144. *be*] be but I.

And loue shal lede þy land · as þe leef lykeþ." 145 go and cart manure, and Love should rule over all."
Clerkus þat were confessours · couplede hem to-gederes,
To construe this clause · kyndeliche what hit menede.
Mede in [þe] mote-halle þo · on men of lawe gan wynke, Then Meed winked at the lawyers.
In sygne þat þei sholde · *with* som sotel speche 149
Reherce þo a-non ryght · þat myghte reson stoppe.
And alle ryghtful recordeden · þat reson treuthe seyde, B 55 All true men thought Reason was right.
And kynde wit and conscience · cortesliche þankede;
Reson for hus ryght speche · riche and poure hym louede, 153
And sciden, "we seth wel · syre reson, by þy wordes,
That meknesse worth mayst*er* · ouer mede atte laste."
Loue let lyght of mede · and leaute ȝut lasse, 156 As for Love, he laughed Meed to scorn, and said,
And cryed vp-on conscience · þe kynge hit myghte yhure,
"Who so wyleþ hure to wyue · for welthe of hure goodes, "Whoever marries her will surely prove a cuckold."
Bote he be knowe for cokewold · kut of my nose!"
Mede mornede þo · and made heuy cheere, 160
For þe comune called hure · queynte comune hore.
A sysour and a somner þo · softeliche forth ȝeden A somner and others comfort Meed.
With mede þe mayde · out of þe mot-halle.

145. *leef* MFSE] leeue I; luf P.
146. I *has only*—Clerkes couplede hem togidres. *couplede*] companiede M.
147. *this*] þat comly F. *clause*] cause I; case M. *what*] wat P. *menede*] meneth IS.
148. *Mede*] & mede F. [*þe* MFI SE] þat P. *þo*] M *om.* *gan wynke*] wynkede M.
150. *þo*] sumwhat F; þer I. *þat*] what M. *stoppe* IMFSE] stope P.
151. *And*] Ac I. *recordeden*] recorden M.
153. *Reson*] & resoun F. *ryght*] rightful IMF. *riche—poure*] pore & riche S.
154. *seth*] seon M; see S; seeyne I; se F. *reson*] M *om.* *þy*] þe S.
155. *worth mayster*] schal maister be F. *atte*] at þe MFE; at S.
156. *Loue let*] Tho lete loue F. *lyght*] litel M. *lyght—mede*] of meede lighte I. *ȝut*] wel M; muche F.
157. *vp-on*] to I. *hit myghte*] myght it I. *yhure*] hure E; huyre S; here MIF.
158. *wyue*] wynne F; wynne quod he I.
159. *knowe*] i-mad M. *for*] for a IS; M *om.* *kut*] cutteþ M; kytt E.
160. *þo*] muche þo F. *made*] made an I.
161. *called* FSE] cald P; calde I; calden M.
163. *þe*] þat M. *mayde*] mayde þo I; maide mournyng F.

A shereyues clerk cryede · "a! *capiatis* mede, 164
Et saluo custodias · sed non cum carceratis."

A 51 The king decreed that Reason was right,

The kynge to his consail tho · tok conscience and reson,
And [modiliche] vp-on mede · meny tyme lokede,
And lourede vp-on men of lawe · and lightliche seide,

and reproves his lawyers;

"Thorȝ ȝoure lawe, ich leyue · ich lese menye escheytes;
Mede and men of ȝoure craft · muche treuthe letteþ.
Ac reson shal [rekene] *with* ȝow · yf ich regne eny whyle, 171
And deme ȝow by þys day · as ȝe haue deseruyd.

B 56

Mede shal nat meynprise ȝow · by marye of heuene,

and declares that justice shall be done.

Ich wolle haue leaute for my lawe; · let be al ȝoure ianglyng; 174
By leel men and lyf-holy · my lawe shal be demyd."

Conscience says it is hard to govern thus.

Quath conscience to þe kynge · "with-oute [þe] comune help,
Hit is ful hard, by myn hefd · þer-to hit to brynge,
And alle ȝoure lege ledes · to lede þus euene." 178

Reason declares it is easy.

"By hym þat rauhte on rode" · quaþ reson to þe kynge,
"Bote ich rewely þus alle reames · reueþ me my syght;
And brynge alle men to bowe · with-oute byter wounde,

164. *cryede*] þo cride F. *a*] aa F. *capiatis*] capias I; capiatis nunc M.

165. *Et—custodias*] In salua custodia F; Et salua custodia S. *cum*] S *om.* *carceratis*] incarceratis F.

166. *his*] þe M; I *om.*

167. [*modiliche* MFSEG] moodiliche I; myldeliche (*wrongly*) P. *meny*] many a F.

168. *vp-on*] up M.

169. *Thorȝ*] þorȝ SE; Thorgh I; þorw M; þurw F; Thorȝe P. *lawe*] lawes S. *ich*] as i MIFS. *escheytes*] chetes I; cheetus F; cheytus S.

170. *Mede*] For mede F. *letteþ*] lette F.

171. [*rekene*] rekne I; rikene M; regne PEFS; *cf.* B-text. *regne*] lyue M. *whyle*] wyle P.

173. *marye*] Mary loue F.

174. *let*] and late I. *al*] I *om.* *ianglyng* M] ianglend (*badly*) P; iangle EIFS.

175. *By—men*] And by leele I. *be* IMFSE] by (*by mistake*) P.

176. *Quath*] Tho carped F. *with-oute*] whith-oute P. [*þe* EIS] PMF *om.*

177. *hefd*] heued I; hed MSE; heed F. *þer-to*] herto I. *hit—brynge*] hit for to bringe F; to bringen it I.

178. *þus*] now þus F.

179. *rauhte*] reste MS; rest him F; deied E. *on*] on þe F; vp þe I.

180. *Bote*] But ȝif S. *ich rewely*] ich ruly E; I rewle F; I rule S; i lede M; ȝe reule I. *alle reames*] þi reme F. *reueþ*] elles reueþ M; by-reueth F.

181. *And brynge*] And but I bringe F. *wounde* IMFSE] wonde P.

With-oute mercement oþer manslauht · amenden alle reames."

"Ich wolde hit were," quaþ þe kyng · "wel al a-boute. The king says he assents to Reason's counsel; and hopes he will stay with him.
For-þy, reson, redelyche · þow shalt nat ryden hennes,
Bote be my chyf chaunceler · in chekyr and in *parle*-ment,
And conscience in alle my courtes · be as kynges Iustice."

"Ich a-sente," seyde reson · "by so þy-self y-huyre, "I will stay if † certain-in-justices are redressed.
Audi alteram partem · a-mong aldermen and comuners;
And þat vnsittynge suffraunce · ne seele ȝoure pryueie letteres,
Ne sende *supersedeas* · bote ich asente," quath reson;
"And ich dar legge my lyf · þat loue wol lene [þe] † Love will provide you with more money than the Lombards can."
suluer,
To wage thyne, and help wynne · þat þow wilnest after,
More þan al þy marchauns · oþer þy mytrede bisshopes,
Oþer lumbardes of lukes · þat lyuen by lone as Iewes."
The kyng comaunded conscience tho · to congie alle † The king bids Conscience dismiss all corrupt officers.
hus officers,
And receyuen þo þat reson louede; · and ryȝt with þat END OF THE FIRST VISION.
ich a-wakede.

Hic explicit passus quintus.

182. *mercement—manslauht*] manslauȝt or mercement F.
184. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *ryden*] wende M.
185. *chekyr*] chesquier I. *in* (2)] F *om.*
186. *as*] a I; þe F. *kynges*] chef M.
187. *by so*] so þat MF. *þy*] ȝou F; ȝowe I. *y-huyre*] yhure E; yhyre S; i-here MI; wole here F.
188. *Audi*] Audias M; Audiatis I. *alteram*] aliam M. *comuners*] comunes M; oþure F.
189. *seele*] asele S.
190. *sende* IMSE] seynde P; sende out F. *sende supersedeas*] no supersidias sende I. *bote—reson*] but stile (*or* scile) assente with þe F.
191. *legge*] ley þanne F. *lyf*] hed M. [þe IMFSEG] þat P.
192. *and*] I *om.* *wynne*] to wynne M. *þat*] al þat M. *wilnest*] willest F.
193. *oþer þy*] and F.
194. *Oþer*] Of I. *of*] or FS. *lukes*] lukus S; luc*us* oþ*ur* F. *as*] & F.
195. *congie*] congeie I; conge M; cunge FS. *alle*] F *om.* *hus*] M *om.*
196. *louede*] loueþ E; wolde F. *with*] wit P. *a-wakede*] wakede MIF.
COLOPHON. MI *omit.* *Hic*] FSEG *om.*

PASSUS VI.

Incipit passus sextus.

† Then I awoke, and lo! I was living in Cornhill, Kit my wife and I, and I was clothed like a "loller,"

Thus ich a-waked, god wot · whanne ich wonede on cornehulle,
Kytte and ich in a cote · cloþed as a lollere,
And lytel [y-lete] by · leyue me for soþe,

† yet not much liked by "lollers," because I wrote about them.

Among lollares of london · and lewede heremytes;
For ich made of þo men · as reson me tauhte.
For as ich cam by conscience · with reson ich mette

† One hot harvest, I met with Reason, being then sound in health but lazy.

In an hote heruest · whenne ich hadde myn hele,
And lymes to labore with · and louede wel fare,
And no dede to do · bote drynke and to slepe.
In hele and in vnite · on me aposede;
Romynge in remembraunce · thus reson me aratede.

† Reason questioned me, saying, "Can you sing in a church,

"Canstow seruen," he seide · "oþer syngen in a churche,
Oþer coke for my cokers · oþer to þe cart picche,

TITLE. *So* ESFG; Hic incipit passus sextus de uisione M; Passus quintus de visione, vbi prius I.

1. *a-waked*] haue waked F. *god wot* MFE] wot god PSI. *whanne*] wanne P. *on*] in I.

2. *cloþed*] y-cloþed EI.

3. *And*] And a P; *but* IMSE *omit* a; & ful F. [*y-lete* IMSG] late F; *miswritten* ich let P; ich lete E. *leyue*] leue ME; leueth IFG; by-leuuþ S.

4. *lollares*] lollers EI; lollard*us* F; loreles M. *london* S] londen *or* london P; londen EM; londou*n* IF. *heremytes*] hermites I; ermi3tes M.

5. *made*] rou3te F.

6. *For as*] & þo F. *with*] wit P; M *om.* *ich*] me M.

7. *whenne*] wenne P.

8. *fare*] to fare MFS.

9. *to do*] for to doo F. *drynke*] to drynke S. *and to*] and S; wel and F.

10. *vnite*] inwitte I; hete F.

11. *Romynge*] & romyng F; Romblynge (= *rambling*) M.

12. *Canstow*] Canst þow MFS; Can þou I. *a*] E *om.*

13. *coke*] coken M; loke (*wrongly*) I. *my*] S *om.* *cokers*] cokares I; cokerus FS.

Mowe oþer mowen · oþer make bond to sheues,
Repe oþer be a repereyue · and a-ryse erliche,
Oþer haue an horne and be hayward · and liggen oute a nyghtes,
And kepe my corn in my croft · fro pykers and þeues?
Oþer shappe shon oþer cloþes · oþer shep oþer kyn kepe,
Heggen oþer harwen · oþer swyn oþer gees dryue,
Oþer eny [oþer] kyns craft · þat to þe comune nedeþ,
Hem þat bedreden be · by-lyue to fynde?"
"Certes," ich seyde · "and so me god helpe,
Ich am to waik to worche · *with* sykel oþer with sythe,
And to long, leyf me · lowe for to stoupe,
To worchen as a workeman · eny whyle to dure."
"Thenne hauest þow londes to lyue by" · quath reson,
"oþer lynage riche
That fynden þe þy fode? · for an ydel man þow semest,
A spendour þat spende mot · oþer a spille-tyme,
Oþer beggest þy bylyue · a-boute at menne hacches,
Oþer faitest vp-on frydays · oþer feste-dayes in churches,
The whiche is lollarene lyf · þat lytel ys preysed,

† or mow, or bind sheaves, or reap, or be a hayward, and keep corn from thieves,

† or mend shoes, or keep cows, or drive swine or geese?"

† "I am too weak to work," said I, "and too tall to stoop."

† "Then have you lands or rich kindred?

† Or do you beg about at men's hatches, or at churches, which is leading the life of 'lollers'?

14. *mowen*] mouwen M; muwe F; mywen I (*mow* = to put in a mow, to stack). *bond*] bend F. *to*] for M.

15. *repereyue*] repereue IF; ripreue M; rippreue E; rype-reue SG. *erliche*] vp erli M.

16. *haue*] *with* F. *and*] F *om.* *be*] be an ME; be a S. *oute*] þeroute I. *a*] on M.

17. *And*] To F. *fro*] for MF. *pykers*] prikieres M. *and*] or M.

18. *shon — cloþes*] cloþus oþur schoon F. *cloþes*] cloþe MI.

19. *Heggen* IMF] Eggen PES. *harwen*] harewen MS. *swyn*] swyne kepe E. *gees*] hogges M.

20. *eny*] E *om.* [*oþer* MIFSG] PE *om.* *kyns*] kynnes MES; kyn F. *þe*] E *om.* *nedeþ* IME] nudeþ P.

21. *bedreden*] be-dradde F; in drede M. *by-lyue*] by-leue E; lijflode M. I *has*—þey I be bete*r*ed þe by · þat by-leue þe fynden.

22. *Certes*] Certes nai M; Certus sir F.

23. *waik*] woke E; wow M.

24. *leyf*] lef þow M. *for*] I *om.*

25. *a*] S *om.* *whyle*] wyle P.

26. *hauest*] hast IMFSE. *londes*] land M. *quath reson*] quod he F (*inserted after* þow).

27. *fynden*] fyndeþ MIFS. *þe*] þe þus F. *an*] F *om.* *ydel*] hydel P.

28. *spende*] spene I.

29. *bylyue*] bylyf E. *at*] ate P. *menne*] men ES; mennes IMF.

30. M *omits.*

31. *whiche*] wiche P. *lollarene*] lollerne I; loller*us* F; a lollerus S; loreles M; *miswritten* sollarene E. *þat—ys*] and litel M. *preysed*] I-preysed IMFS.

Þer ryghtfulnesse rewardeþ · ryght as men deserueþ,
† Ps. lxi. 13 (Vulgate). *Reddit unicuique iuxta opera sua.*
'Oþer þow art broke, so may be · in body oþer in membre,
† Or are you maimed?" Oþer ymaymed þorw som mys-hap · wher-by þow myȝt be excused?"
† "When I was young," said I, "my father put me to school; "Whanne ich ȝong was," quath ich · "meny ȝer hennes,
My fader and my frendes · founden me to scole,
Tyl ich wiste wyterliche · what holy wryt menede,
And what is best for þe body · as þe bok telleþ,
And sykerest for þe soule · by so ich wolle continue.
† and, since my friends died, I like no life but one in these long clothes. And ȝut fond ich neuere in faith · sytthen my frendes deyden,
Lyf þat me lyked · bote in þes longe clothes.
Yf ich by laboure sholde lyue · and lyflode deseruen,
That labour þat ich lerned best · þer-with lyue ich sholde;
† 1 Cor. vii. 20. *In eadem uocatione* [*in*] *qua uocati estis,* [*manete.*]
And ich lyue in londone · and on londone bothe,
† The tools I work with are *Paternoster, Placebo,* and *Dirige.* The lomes þat ich laboure with · and lyflode deserue
Ys *pater-noster* and my prymer · *placebo* and *dirige,*
And my sauter som tyme · and my seuene psalmes.
† I sing for men's souls. Thus ich synge for hure soules · of suche as me helpen,
And þo þat fynden me my fode · vouchen saf, ich trowe,

32. *ryghtfulnesse*] as riȝt F. *Reddit*] Reddet MF.
33. *art* IMFS] ert PE. *broke*] croket M.
34. *wher-by*] wer-by P; where-þurgh F.
35. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *quath ich*] I *om.*
37. *what*] wat P. *menede*] bimenede M.
38. *what*] wat P. *is*] was FS.
39. *And*] & also F. *by so*] so þat MF.
40. *ȝut*] IF *om.* *ich*] I *om.*
41. *lyked*] liked wel F.
42. *Yf*] ȝif MFSE; Hyf P; And ȝif I.
43. *best*] furst M. *þer-with*] þerwhit P. *sholde*] wolde E. [*in* M] PEIFS *om.* [*manete* M] PEIFS *om.*
44. *And*] And so I. *londone* MSE] londoun IF; londene P. *on londone* SE] on londen P; by londoun F; out of londone M; vp-londe I.
46. *Ys*] *so in all.* *my*] F *om.* *dirige*] my dirige F.
47. *seuene psalmes*] psalmes seuene M.
48. *Thus*] þis I. *synge*] sigge I. *hure*] þe FS. *soules*] soule S.
49. *me*] E *om.* *vouchen* M] fouchen IS; vochen PE; fouche F.

To be welcome whanne ich come · oþer-whyle in a monthe,
Now with hym and now with hure · and þus-gate ich begge
With-oute bagge oþer botel · bote my wombe one. 52
And al-so more-ouer · me þynkeþ, syre reson,
Men sholde constreyne no clerke · to knauene werkes ; † No clerk should be made to do labourer's work,
For by lawe of *leuitici* · þat oure lord ordeynede,
Clerkes þat aren crouned · of kynde vnderstondyng 56
Sholde noþer swynke ne swete · ne swere at enquestes,
Ne fyghte in no vauntwarde · ne hus fo greue ; † nor should he fight. 1 Thess. v. 15. Levit. xix. 18.
Non reddas malum pro malo.
For it ben aires of heuene · alle þat ben crouned, 59
And in queer [and in kirkes] · cristes owene mynestres,
Dominus pars hereditatis mee ; & alibi : Clementia non constringit. † Ps. xv. 5 (Vulgate).
Hit by-comeþ for clerkus · crist for to seruen,
And knaues vncrouned · to cart and to worche.
For sholde no clerk be crouned · bote yf he ycome were † No clerk should receive the tonsure unless he be sprung from a franklin or free man.
Of franklens and free men · and of folke ywedded. 64
Bondmen and bastardes · and beggers children,
Thuse by-longeþ to labour · and lordes [kyn to] seruen

50. *welcome*] wolcome P. *whanne*] wanne P. *whyle*] wyle P. *oþer-whyle*] oonus F.
51. *and*] I *om.* *and—gate*] on þis wise I.
52. *wombe*] bodi M.
53. *And*] F *om.* *more-ouer*] more-ouer now F. *þynkeþ*] meeneth wel F.
54. *Men*] Me I. *knauene*] no knaues I.
55. *lawe*] þe lawe IM. *ordeynede*] made F.
56. *þat aren*] I *om.* *aren*] arn M; ben E; be F. *crouned*] i-crowned MI.
57. *noþer*] nouȝt M.
58. *vauntwarde*] vandwarde M; faumwarde I; famwarde S; fawarde F. *hus fo*] here foos F. *reddas*] reddes F.
59. *it ben*] it beeth FS; þei ben M. *aires*] eires ME; heires IF. *alle*] and alle PE; *but* IMFS *omit* and. *ben*] beþ F. *crouned*] crounede P; I-crouned IFMS.
60. *queer*] quere FIE; quer MS. [*and in kirkes* I] and in chirches MS; in churches PE; in kirkus F. *owene*] I *om.* *mynestres*] menestrales M.
63. *yf*] IFM *om.* *ycome*] come IFS.
64. *and*] or F (*twice*). *ywedded*] yweddede P.
65. *Bondmen*] But bonde-men F.
66. *Thuse*] þese IMF. *by-longeþ*] longeþ M. [*kyn to* MF] to (kyn *omitted*) I; children sholde PES (*which clogs the line*); kyn scholde G.

Bothe god and good men · as here degree askeþ;
Some to synge masses · oþer sitten and wryte,
Rede and receyue · þat reson ouhte spende;
† For, since bondmen's children have been made bishops, [Ac] sith bondemenne barnes · han be mad Bisshopes,
And barnes bastardes · han ben archidekenes,
And sopers and here sones · for seluer han be knyghtes,
† and lords' sons have become labourers, And lordene sones here laborers · and leid here rentes to wedde,
For þe ryght of þis reame · ryden a-ʒens oure enemys,
In confort of þe comune · and þe kynges worshep,
† and monks' kindred are made knights, And monkes and moniales · þat mendinauns sholden fynde,
Han mad here kyn knyghtes · and knyghtfees purchase[d],
† popes and patrons refuse poor gentle blood. Popes and patrones · poure gentil blod refuseþ,
And taken symondes sone · seyntewarie to kepe.
† Holiness and Love have long left us. Lyf-holynesse and loue · han ben longe hennes,
And wole, til hit be wered out · or oþerwise ychaunged.
For-þy rebuke me ryght nouht · reson, ich ʒow praye;
For in my conscience ich knowe · what crist wolde þat ich wrouhte.
† Prayers and penance are the best labour." Preyers of [a] parfyt man · and penaunce discret
Ys þe leueste labour · þat oure lord pleseþ.

67. *Bothe*] I *om.* *degree*] gre M; degreus S.
68. *oþer*] & summe to F.
69. *ouhte spende*] auʒte dispende M; oweth to spene I; rewarde hadde F.
70. [*Ac* IMSG] And PEF. *bondemenne*] bondmens IF. *han—Bisshopes*] ha be mytred made F.
71. *bastardes*] bastard born F.
72. *sopers*] sory soperus F; schipherdes I. *han be*] be made F.
73. *lordene*] lordes IMFS. *here laborers*] han be heore men M. *here*] F *om.* *rentes*] landes M.
74. *þis* IMS] þes P; þe EF.
75. *and*] & of F. *worshep*] honour F.
76. *mendinauns*] mendinaunt S.
77. *Han mad*] I-made I. *knyghtfees*] feus S. *purchased* EMFSG] y-purchased I; purchase P.
78. *gentil*] gentel men E. *refuseþ*] refused IF.
79. *seyntewarie*] sanctuarye F.
80. *and*] to F.
81. *or*] and M.
82. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *ʒow*] þe IM.
83. *þat*] IMF *om.*
84. *Preyers*] For preiers F. [*a* IMFEG] PS *om.*
85. *Ys*] *see* l. 45. *labour*] þyng M. *pleseþ*] askeþ M.

Non de solo," ich seide · "for soþe *uiuit homo,*
Nec in pane & pabulo · þe *pater-noster* witnesseþ ; † Matt. iv. 4; vi. 10.
Fiat uoluntas tua · fynt ous alle þynges." 88
Quath conscience, "by crist · ich can nat see this lyeþ ;
Ac it semeth nouht parfytnesse · in cytees for to begge, † "Few are privileged to beg," said Conscience.
Bote he be obediencer · to pryour oþer to mynstre."
"That ys soth," ich seide · "and so ich by-knowe, 92
That ich haue tynt tyme · and tyme mysspended ; † "I grant that I have lost time;
And ȝut, ich hope, as he · þat ofte haueþ chaffared,
þat ay hath lost and lost · and [atte laste] hym happed
He bouhte suche a bargayn · he was þe bet euere, 96 † yet I hope some day to redeem all."
And sette hus lost at a lef · at þe laste ende,
Suche a wynnynge hym warth · þorw wordes of hus grace ;
Simile est regnum celorum thesauro abscondito in agro, & cetera : † Matt. xiii. 44; Luke xv. 9.
Mulier que inuenit dragmam [*vnam*], *et cetera ;*
So hope ich to haue · of hym þat is al-myghty
A gobet of hus grace · and bygynne a tyme, 100
þat alle tymes of my tyme · to profit shal turne."
"Ich rede þe," quath reson þo · "rape þe to by-gynne † "I advise thee to begin a holy life," said
þe lyf þat ys lowable · and leel to þe soule"—

86. *de solo*] in solo pane M. *for soþe*] M *om.* *for—homo*] viuit home forsothe F.
87. *&*] et in I; nec in MS. þe] as F.
88. *Fiat*] For fiat F. *tua* EM] Dei IFS ; *miswritten* tuas P. *fynt*] þat fynt I ; it findeth F. *ous*] *so* S ; vs IFME.
89. *by*] þo by F. *ich—lyeþ*] I know þat þu gabbes F.
90. *nouht*] no I. *parfytnesse*] sad parfitnesse IFS. *for*] IS *om.*
91. *Bote*] And M. *obediencer*] vnbedienter (*sic*) E ; obedient F. *oþer to*] or to oþer M. *mynstre*] mynystre SM.
92. *ich* (2)] I am MF.
93. *tynt*] loste E. *mysspended*] mysspende E ; mysdespendyd F.
94. *And*] Ac MIF. *ȝut*] riȝt F. *he*] dooth he F.
95. *þat*] And IME. *hath*] I *om.* *and lost*] S *om.* [*atte laste* EIFS] at þe laste MG ; at þe latiste P.
96. *He bouhte*] Aboute I ; þat he bieth F. *was*] is F. *bet*] better IM ; bet for F.
97. *hus*] al his I. *lost*] los I. *at —lef*] aloof E. *at þe*] atte IFS.
98. *hym*] þer F. *warth*] *so* PI ; worþ MSE ; wurth F. *wordes* IFSE] wyrdes P ; werkes M. *hus*] IMFS *om.* [*vnam* M] PEIFS *om.*
99. *hope ich*] ich hope E. *is*] his P.
100. *gobet*] good gobet F.
101. *alle*] alle þe F.
103. *lyf*] leef I. *lowable*] louable I ; loueable F. *þe*] þy EIF.

Reason;—"and tb continue in it," said Conscience.

"ȝe, and *con*tinue;" quath conscience · and to þe [kirke] ich wente. 104

† Then I went to church, and there prayed till I again fell asleep. THE SECOND VISION BEGINS.

And to þe [kirke] gan ich go · god to honourie,
By-for þe crois on my knees · knocked ich my brest,
Sykinge for my synnes · seggynge my *pater-noster*,
Wepyng and wailinge · tyl ich was a slepe. 108

A 52 B 57

Thenne mette me moche more · þan ich by-fore tolde
Of þe mater þat ich mette fyrst · on maluerne hulles.
Ich sauh þe feld ful of folk · fram ende to oþer,
And reson reuested · ryȝt as a pope, 112

The sermon of Reason upon the pestilences and the violent wind of Jan. 15, 1362.

And conscience his crocer · by-fore þe kynge stande.
Reson reuerentliche · by-for al þe reame
Prechede, and prouede · þat þuse pestilences

A 53

Was for pure synne · to punyshe þe puple; 116
And þe south-west wynd · on sat*er*day at eue

B 58

Was pertelich for prude · and for no poynt elles.

Pear-trees, plum-trees, beeches, and oaks were blown down.

Piries and plomtrees · were poffed to þe erthe 119
In ensample to syggen ous · we sholde do þe betere;
Beches and brode okes · weren blowe to þe grounde,
And turned vpward here tayl · in tokenynge of drede
That dedlich synne er domys day · shal for-do ous alle.

104. [*kirke* IF] churche PEMS. *wente*] wende E.

105. *And to*] Vnto M. [*kirke* IF] churche PEMS. *gan ich*] I gan I. *honourie*] *so* E; honoure MFI; hono*ur* S.

106. *knocked ich*] knockynge M. *brest*] herte F.

107. *Sykinge*] Siȝhinge F; Syȝȝynge S; Schryuyng I. *synnes*] sennes P; *cf.* l. 116. *seggynge*] syngyng EM; & seide F.

109. *Thenne*] And þanne I. *mette* IMFSE] mete P; *and in l.* 110. *me*] i MFS.

110. *þe*] F *om.* *ich*] me I.

111. *þe*] a M. *to*] til IM. *oþer*] þe oþer P; *but* IMFSE *omit* þe.

112 *reuested*] i-reuested MI; reuesthed ryally F.

113. *conscience his*] *so all.* *crocer*] croser IM; croycer F; croyser SE. *stande*] stoden M.

114. *Reson*] Þanne resou*n* F. *by-for*] tofore I.

115, 116. Prechede and preued þat þis pestilence · was for pur*e* synne I. *þuse*] þese MF; þes E. *Was*] *so* EIS; Weren M; It was F.

117. *on*] on a IM; or S.

118. *prude*] pride MF.

119. *Piries*] Puries E; Puryus S; Pere-trees I. *poffed*] puffed FS; possed IE; i-puffed M.

120. *syggen*] schewe M. *to—ous*] þat I. *we sholde*] forte M.

121. *weren blowe*] blewe I. *blowe*] blow F; i-blowe M.

123. *er*] ar I; or MSE. *ous*] hem I.

Of þis mat*er* ich myghte · momely [ful] longe;
Ac ich shal seye as ich seih · slepynge, as it were,
How reson radde al þe reame · ryght for to lyuen.
He bad wastours go worche · and wynne here sustinaunce
þorw som trewe trauail · and no tyme spille.
He preide purnele · here porfil to leue,
And kepe hit in here cofre · for catell at hure nede.
He tauhte Thomme stowe · to take two staues,
And fecche felice home · fram wyuen pyne.
He warnede watte · hus wif was to blame,
For hure hefd was worth half mark · and hus hod nat a grote.
He bad bette go kutte · a bowh oþer tweye,
And bete beton þer-myd · bote hue wolde worche.
He charged chapmen · to chasten here children,
And lete no wynnynge for-wene hem · þe while þei ben 3onge;
For ho so spareþ þe spring · spilleþ hus children;
And so wrot þe wise · to wissen us alle,
Qui parcit uirge, odit filium.
And sitthe he preide prelates · and prestes to-geders,

The dreamer gives an outline of Reason's sermon.

Reason bids wasters work,

and tells Pernel to put her finery away.

Thomas is to fetch home his wife Felice; and Wat's wife is to blame.

Bette is to beat lazy Beton.

Chapmen are to chastise their children.

B 59

Spare the rod, and spoil the child (Prov. xiii. 24).

A 54

124. *momely*] momele MF; mamele I; mene S. [*ful* IMFSEG] wel P; *cf.* B-text.
125. *seih*] si M; sy F.
126. *ryght for*] riȝtly F; I *om.* *lyuen*] heuene I.
127. *go*] to MI. *wynne*] gete M.
129. *He*] Also he F. *here*] of hure M.
130. *at hure*] oþer F. *nede* IMEF] nude P.
131. *stowe* E] stone P; stouue S; stowue IF; of stowe M. *He—stowe*] Tomme stowue he taghte I. *two*] þe S.
132. *fecche*] fette IF. *fram*] fro þe M. *wyuen*] wyfen E; wyuene IMF.
133. *hus—was*] waite · his wif F. *to*] S *om.*
134. *hefd*] hede IF; hed MES. *mark*] a mark S. *hod*] F *om.* *nat*] nouȝt worþ M.
135. *bette*] will E. *go*] to IFS. *tweye*] tweine M.
136. *þer-myd*] þer-wiþ IF. *bote*] but ȝif IM. *hue*] *written* he P; heo F; ȝo E; sche IM; *cf.* Pass. v. 92.
138. *And*] IF *om.* *for-wene*] forwanyen I. *þe while*] þe wile P; þerwhil I; while þat MF.
139. *ho so*] who I. *spring*] sprigge FI; ȝerde E. *spilleþ*] he spilleþ MS. *hus*] here I. *children*] heir*us* F.
140. *wise*] wise man M. *wissen* IMFSE] wisen P. *us*] hus P. *filium*] filium suum F.

Priests should practise what they preach.

That hij preche þ to þe puple · prouen hit hem-selue;
"Lyue ȝe as ȝe lere þ ous · we shulle þ leyue ȝow þe bettere."

Religion should rule strictly.

And sitthe [he] radde religion · here ruele to holde, 144
"Leste þe kyng and hus consail · ȝoure comunes a-peyre,
And be stywardes of ȝoure stedes · til ȝe be [stewed] betere.

A 132
B 158
Pope Gregory says, 'as fish die out of water, so does Religion when out of a convent.'

Gregorie þe grete clerk · gart write in bokes
The ruele of alle religious · ryghtful and obedient. 148
Right as fisshes in flod · whenne hem faile þ water,
Deyen for drouthe · whenne þei drye liggen,
Ryght so religion · rote þ and sterueth,
þat out of couent and cloistre · coueyte þ to dwelle. 152

If heaven be on earth, it is in a cloister.

For yf heuene be on þys erthe · o*þer* eny eyse for saule,
Hit is in cloistre o*þer* in scole · by meny skyles ich fynde.
For in cloistre come þ no man · to chide ne to fighte;
In scole ys loue and lownesse · and [lykyng] to lerne.

† But now monks and canons do not keep their rule;

Ac meny day, men telle þ · bo*þe* monkes and chanouns
Han ride out of a-ray · here ruele vuel [y]holde, 158
[Lederes of louedaies · and landes purchassed,]

142. *hij*] ȝe I. *hem*] ȝow I.
143. *Lyue*] Lyueth IM; & lyue F. *ȝe* (1)] MF *om.* *ȝe* (2)] þei F. *shulle þ*] schulle M; schol S; schal IF. *leyue*] leue ISE; loue M; leeue F.
144. [*he* IMFSEG] P *om.* *religion*] religious MF.
145. *kyng and*] kyngus F. *ȝoure*] her F. *a-peyre* IMFSG] apeyere PE.
146. *stywardes*] steward FS. *of*] ouer E. *ȝe*] he F. [*stewed* F] stuede PE; stuyd S; stowed I; stywed G; turned M.
147. See B. x. 292. *gart*] lete E. *in*] I *om.*
148. *alle*] F *om.* *religious*] religion MF; religiouns I. *and obedient*] to beholde F.
149. *Right*] þat riȝt F. *in*] in a M; on þe I. *whenne*] wenne P; *and in l.* 150. *hem*] þay I.
150. *drouthe*] drouthe *or* drouthe P; druþe E; drowþe M; droghþe I; drouȝte F. *drye*] *miswritten* dryen P.
151. *religion*] religious M.
152. *and*] and of I; or M.
153. *for saule*] to þe soule I; of soule M.
154. *cloistre*] a cloistre P; *but* IM FSE *omit* a; *so also in* l. 155. *meny*] sundry F; E *om.*
155. *chide—fighte*] fiȝte ne to chide M.
156. [*lykyng* EIMF] lokynge PS.
157. *meny—men*] ~~as~~ many man F.
158. *ride*] riden F; i-ride M; ridde E. *vuel*] euel IMF. *yholde* EG] i-holde MIFS; holde P.
159. *From* M; *also in* IFSG; PE *om.* *louedaies*] lawedayus FSG; ladies I.

And priked a-boute on palfrais · fro places to maners,
An hepe of houndes at hus ers · as he a lord were; and each one behaves like a great lord.
And [but] hus knaue knele · þat shal hus coppe holde,
He lokeþ al louryng · and 'lordein' hym calleþ.
Lytel hadde lordes a-do · to ȝeue londe fro here aires Lords ought not to give to monks.
To [religious], þat han no reuthe · þauh hit reyne [on] B 159
here auters. 165
In places þer þei persons beþ · by hem-self at ese,
Of þe poure han þei no pyte · þat is here pure charite.
Ȝe leten ȝow alle as lordes · ȝoure londe lyth to brode.
Ac ȝut shal come a kyng · and confesse ȝow alle, 169 But a king shall come and reform Religion.
And bete ȝow, as þe byble telleþ · for brekyng of ȝoure reule,
And amende ȝow monkes · moniales, and chanons,
And putte ȝow to ȝoure penaunce · *ad pristinum statum ire.* 172
And barons and here barnes · blame ȝow and reproue;
Hii in curribus & hi in equis: ipsi obligati sunt, & ceciderunt. Ps. xix. 8, 9 (Vulgate).
Freres in here freitour · shulle fynde þat tyme
Bred *with*-oute beggynge · to lyue by euere after,
And constantyn shal be here cook · and couerer of here churche. 176

160. *priked*] i-priked M. *fro*] to S. *to* IM] & to ES; in-to P. *fro—maners*] to places aboute F.
162. [*but* MFS] but if I; bit PE. *hus*] þe M.
163. *louryng*] loureng P. *lordein* IME] lurdein FS; lorden P.
164. *aires*] heires IF; eires MES.
165. [*religious* IMFSE] religion P. *reyne*] ryne P. [*on* IMFSG] in PE.
166. *places*] place F; many places I. *þei*] þe I. *by*] ben M.
167. *Of*] On E. *þat*] and þat I. *is*] his P. *pure*] *miswritten* poure P. *þat—charite*] þogh þei pyne & sterue F.
168. *Ȝe*] Ac ȝe I. *lyth*] it lyth F. *to*] so IM.
169. *Ac ȝut*] Ac þer I; But ȝit F; And ȝut M; ȝit ȝit (*sic*) E. *kyng*] cristene king F. *confesse*] chastise F.
170. *telleþ*] seyth F. *reule*] reules I.
171. *monkes*] mery monk*us* F. *moniales*] boþe monials I. *chanons*] alle F.
172. *penaunce*] pitaunce F. *statum*] gradum M.
173. *barnes*] baronasse (*sic*) E.
174. *freitour*] fretour P.
176. *constantyn*] costantyn P. *shal*] S *om.* *couerer*] keue*rour* FS; ceuerour M. *churche*] kyrke M; chirches IG; kychene S.

Then shall the abbot of England receive a knock.

For þe abbot of engelonde . and þe abbesse hys nece
Shullen haue a knok on here crounes · and in-curable
þe wounde;

B 160 Isaiah xiv. 5, 6.

Contriuit dominus baculum impiorum, uirgam dominancium, plaga in-sanabili.

Before that king comes, [† clerks shall be clothed anew.]

Ac er þat kyng come · as cronycles me tolde,
Clerkus and holychurche · shal be cloþed newe.
(**A 54**) (**B 59**) And sitthe he consailed þe kyng · hus comune to louye;

The king should love the commons.

For þe comune ys þe kynges tresour · conscience wot wel,
And al-so," quath reson · "ich rede 3ow riche,
And comuners to a-corden · in alle kynne treuthe.
Let no kynne consail · ne couetyse 3ow departe,
þat on wit and on wil · alle 3oure wardes kepe.

† In heaven there was a holy commonwealth, till Lucifer thought himself above his master.

Lo! in heuene an hy · was an holy comune,
Til lucifer þe lyere · leyued þat hym-selue
Were wittyour and worthiour · þan he þat was hus maister.
Hold 3ow in vnite · and [he] þat oþer wolde
Ys cause of alle combraunce · to confounde a reame."

The pope should † promote love.

And sitthen he preide þe pope · haue pyte of holychurche,
And no grace to graunte · til good loue were
Among alle kynne kynges · ouer cristene puple:

177. *þe abbesse*] abbace F; abbas M. *hys*] ys P.
178. *knok*] knotte F. *on*] vpon I. *here crounes*] þe croune M. *wounde* IFSE] wonde P. *and—wounde*] incurable schulle þei wende M.
179. I *omits*. *er*] er þan M; ar S; or FE. *þat*] þis S.
180. *churche*] kirke *would better suit the metre.*
181. *to*] S *om.*
182. *For*] F *om.* *þe*] F *om.* *conscience*] as conscience F.
183. *riche*] þat be riche F.
184. *And—a-corden*] Acordeth with þe comune F.
185. *kynne*] kynges M; careful F. *couetyse*] conscience M. *departe*] parte I; to parte M.
186. *on*] o IFS (*twice*).
187. *heuene—hy*] in þe heye heuene F; heuen and in erþe I.
188. *leyued*] leued IMFSE.
190. *Hold*] Holdeþ M. *Hold—in*] Holliche holduth F. [*he* IMSEG] 3e P. *he þat*] ho so F. *oþer*] hoþer P. *wolde*] wille F.
191. *alle*] careful F. *combraunce*] comberances I.
192. *sitthen*] þanne F. *pope*] peple · to M. *of*] on IMFS.
193. *to*] ne I.
194. *kynne*] cristene M. *ouer*] ouere P; of S.

"Comaunde þat alle confessours · þat eny kynge shryueþ, † Confessors should enjoin kings to keep the peace.
Enioynye hem pees for here penaunce · and perpetuel
forȝeuenesse 196
Of alle manere acciouns · and eche man loue oþer.
And ȝe þat secheþ seint Iame · and seyntes of rome, B 60 Pilgrims should seek St *Truth*.
Secheþ seint treuthe · in sauacion of ȝoure saules:
Qui cum patre & filio · þat faire hem by-falle
þat suweþ my sarmon" · and þus ended reson. 201

Hic explicit passus sextus.

195. *kynge*] kynges M.
196. *Enioynye*] Enioyne IMFS. *here*] F *om.*
197. *Of*] For I. *eche*] eche a F.
198. *of*] at M.
199. *Secheþ*] Seicheþ P. *treuthe*] truþe at hom M. *ȝoure*] here E.
200. *patre*] deo patre S. *hem*] him mote M.
201. *suweþ*] shewеþ S. *and*] I *om.* *ended*] endeþ IMFSE. *ended reson*] resoun eendeth F.
COLOPHON. *So* PG; IM *omit.* *Hic*] FSE *om.*

PASSUS VII.

Incipit passus septimus.

(A 54) (B 60) With þat ran repentaunce · and reherced hus teme,
And made wille to wepe · water *with* hus eyen.
I. PRIDE. Pernel repents her pride, Purnele proute-herte · platte hure to þe erthe,
Longe was er hue loked vp · and 'lord, mercy,' criede,
And by-highte to hym · þat ous alle made,
and vows to wear a hair shirt, and to be ever humble. Hue sholde vnsowen hure smok · and sette þer an heire,
To afaiten hure flesch · þat fers was to synne.
"Shal neuere [heigh] herte me hente · bote holde me lowe,
And suffre to be myssaide · and so dude ich neuere.
Bote now wolle ich meke me · and mercy by-seche
Of alle þat ich haue · yhated in myn herte."
† Repentance bids her repent. "Repente þe," quath repentaunce · "as reson þe tauhte,
And shryf þe sharpliche · and shak of alle pruyde."—

TITLE. *So in* PSEFG; Hic incipit passus septimus de uisione M; Passus sextus de visione, &c., I.

1. *With*] Right wiþ I.

2. *eyen*] eyes I; eye F.

3. *Purnele*] And parnel F. *proute*] proud IS; prowd F. *platte*] flatte S.

4. *Longe*] And longe I. *was*] F *om.* *er*] her P; or EMFS; ar I. *hue*] *so* S; heo F; ȝhe I; ȝo E; sche M. *criede*] sche criede M.

5. *hym*] him an hy F.

6. *Hue*] þat heo F; ȝo E; Sche IM. *vnsowen* I] vnsowe F; unsewe M; onsewe S; vnsuwe E; vnsywe P. *smok*] serk IMF; scherte S. · *þer*] þeron I; on hure M. *an*] on S.

8. *neuere*] no F. [*heigh* I] hy FS; hi M; hyȝ G; my E; myn P; *cf.* B-text.

10. *Bote*] & F. *wolle ich*] i wole M. *meke*] mȕke P.

11. *alle*] alle hem F; alle *þingus* S. *yhated*] hated IFMS.

12. *þe* (2)] me E.

13. *þe*] þe now F. *of alle*] away þy F; awey G. *pruyde*] pride IMF.

CONFESSIO SUPERBIE.

"Ich, pruyde, pacientliche · penaunce ich aske;
For ich formest and ferst · to fader and to moder
Haue ybe vnboxome · ich biseche god of mercy;
And vnboxome ybe · nouht a-baissed to a-gulte
God and alle good men · so gret was myn herte;
In-obedient to holy churche, and to hem þat þer seruen;
Demed for hure yuel vices · and excited oþers
þorw my word and my wit · hure yuel workes to shewe;
And scorned hem and oþere · yf [ich] a skyle founde,
Lauhynge al a-loude · for lewede men sholde
Wene þat ich were witty · and wyser þan a-noþere;
Scorner and vnskilful · to hem þat skil shewede,
In alle manere maners · my name to be yknowe;
Semyng a souereyn on · wher-so me by-fulle
To telle eny tale · ich trowede me wiser
To carpen oþer to counsaile · þan eny lered oþer lewede.
Prout of aparail · in porte amonge þe puple
Oþer-wise þan ich haue · with-ynne oþer with-oute,

† I, Pride, [a male] was disobedient to my parents,

† and to holy church,

† a scorner of others,

† and always putting myself forward.

B 225
I was proud of my apparel,

Confessio superbie] *so in* PEG; Superbia F.

14. *Ich*] In F. *pruyde*] pride IMFE. *pacientliche*] pacientliche quod heo F. *ich*] I *om.*

15. *to*] to my I (*twice*). *to* (2)] F *om.*

16, 17. S *has* Haue vnbuxum y-be, *omitting all words between.*

16. *ybe*] be IF; ben M. *of*] EG *om.*

17. *And*] Ful F. *ybe*] i-be M; haue I be F. *a-baissed*] abasscht I; abassched M; a-baschid S; a-gaste E. *nouht a-baissed*] abesched me nat F. *a-gulte*] agilte I; gilte F.

18. *God*] To god F. *alle*] I *om.*

19. *to* (2)] F *om.*

20. Demed for her doyngus · & daunselde many oþure F.

21. F *repeats this line after l.* 24. *and*] and al PE; *but* IMFS *omit* al. *yuel*] vuel P; *but see* l. 20. *yuel workes*] wikkidnes F.

22. *oþere*] sum oþur F. [*ich* E] i MIFS; y G; P *om.*

23. *Lauhynge*] With lawhing F. *al*] E *om. men*] F *om.*

24. *Wene*] FM *put this at end of* l. 23. *witty*] withtiere M; wittyere S. *a-noþere*] oþer E.

25. *Scorner*] As scornere F.

26. *yknowe*] knowe IFESG.

27. *Semyng*] Semeng P; To semen F. *on*] F *om. wher*] wer P. *by-fulle*] befille F; bi-felle M.

28. *To*] For to F. *me*] me þe EM; I was F.

29. *lered*] clerk IF. *oþer lewede*] of skoole F.

30. *Prout*] Proud MSI; Prute E; & prowde F. *in*] & F.

31. *haue*] hadde F.

† anxious to be supposed rich,

Me [wilnynge] þat men wende · ich were, [as] in aueyr,
Riche, and resonable · and ryghtful of lyuynge,
Bostynge and Braggynge · wyth meny bolde oþes,

† always bragging,

Auauntyng vp-on my veine glorie · for eny vndernymynge;
And ȝut so synguler by my-self · as to sight of þe puple,
Was non suche as my-self · ne non so [pope]holy,

† sometimes a disciple of one sect, and sometimes of another.

Som tyme [in on] secte · som tyme [in] anoþer;
In alle kynne couetyse · contreuede how ich myghte
Be holde for holy · an hondred sithe, by þat encheison;

B 226

Wilnede þat men wende · my werkes were þe beste,
And konnyngest of my craft · clerkes oþer oþere,

I boasted of my strength, good looks,

And strengest vp-on stede · and styuest vnder gurdell,
And louelokest to loken on · and lykyngest a bedde;
And lykynge of such a lif · þat no lawe preyseþ,

fine voice,

Prout of my faire fetours · and for ich songe shulle.

and liberality.

And what ich gaf for godes loue · to god-sybbes ich tolde,
Thei to wene þat ich were · wel holy and wel almesful,

32. *Me wilnynge*] *such must be the true reading, though miswritten* Me wynnynge I; Me wilneþ M; Me wilned PESG; I willede F. *It is merely a variation of* Hym wilnynge *in* B-text, xiii. 280 (*footnote*); *cf.* l. 41. [*as* IMFESG], P *om.* *aueyr*] auoir F (*correctly*); *corrupted to* an eyre E; noon oþur SG; maner I; i am nauȝt M.

33. *Riche*] Boþe riche S; Boþe riȝtful F. *ryghtful—lyuynge*] ryche *with* alle F.

34. *wyth*] wyt P.

35. *Auauntyng*] Vauntyng I. *vp-on my*] vp my I; in F. *vnder-nymynge*] vnder-nemynge P.

36. *synguler* I] syngeler P; syngler FS. *to*] to þe S. *þe*] I *om.*

37. [*pope* F] pop IMSG; poppe E; pomp P. *See* B-text, xiii. 284.

38. [*in on* M] in o ISG; on an E; on oo F; on a P. *secte*] sith M. *som*] & sum FM. [*in* IFMSG] on PE.

40. *holde*] holden I; yholde EM. *for*] hy & F. *an—sithe*] & honoured I. *an—encheison*] in hope to haue ȝiftus F.

41. *Wilnede*] Wilnynge I; And wilnede M.

42. *And*] And þe I. *of*] as of F. *clerkes—oþere*] of þe comune peple.

43. *stede*] stede-bac F; my stede P; *but* IMFSE *omit* my. *Cf.* B-text, xiii. 294. *styuest*] steffest I; steuest F; stiffest M.

44. *And louelokest*] Loueliest M. *on*] vp-on IMF. *lykyngest*] lykynggest P.

45. *lykynge of*] laiking in F. *þat*] as F.

46. *Prout*] Proude IEM; Prowd F. *fetours*] fetures IEM; feþerus SF. *ich*] I *om.* *shulle*] schulle E; schille FS; shill M; schrille I.

47. *god-sybbes*] gossibbes IMS; gossipes F.

48. *Thei*] Þey IFMSEG; Ther *or* Thei P. *wel—almesful*] wellyng ful of almus F. *wel* (2)] MESG *om.*

And non so bold beggere · to bydden and craue; 49 I was the boldest of beggars,
Tales to telle · in-tauernes and in stretes,
Thyng þat neuere was þouht · and 3ut ich swor ich sauh hit,
And lyed on my lykame · and on my lyf boþe. 52
Of werkes þat ich wel dude · wittnesse ich take, boasting of my good deeds,
And sygge to suche · þat sytten me by-syde,
'Lo, yf 3e leyue me nouht · oþer þat 3e wene ich lye,
Aske of hym oþer of hure · and þei conne 3ow telle 56
What ich soffrede and seih · and som tyme hadde,
And what ich knew and couthe · [and] what kyn ich kam of;'—
Al ich wolde þat men wuste · when hit to pruyde sounede, B 227 wishing men to know all about me.
As to [be] preised a-mong þe puple · þauh ich poure semede: 60
Si hominibus placerem, christi seruus non essem. Gal. i. 10.
Nemo potest duobus dominis seruire." Mat. vi. 24.
"Now god of hus goodnesse · geue þe grace to Amende,"
Quath repentaunce ryght *with* þat; · And þenne roos enuye.

49. *bold*] bold a I. *bydden*] beggun S. *craue*] to craue IMF.
50. *to*] þerfor to F. *in* (2)] M *om.* *stretes*] strete F.
51. *Thyng*] Of þing F. *þouht*] þouhte P; y-thoght I; i-wrouȝt M. *ich* (1)] he (*wrongly*) I. *sauh*] say IS.
52. *lyed*] M *om.*
53. *werkes*] dedus S. *wittnesse*] witnesses I. *ich take*] toke I; took i S; to take MF.
54. *sygge*] sigge IF; syggen PM; þan I seyde S. *suche*] suche folk F. *þat*] as M.
55. *leyue*] leue IFSE; leueþ M. *me nouht*] nouȝt me M. *oþer—lye*] or þat I lie wenen I.
56. *Aske*] Askeþ IFS. *of*] at IMFS (*twice*). *þei—ȝow*] þanne cunne ȝe M.
57. *soffrede*] haue suffred F. *seih*] si M; sayd S; seith I; y-seye F. *and*] E *om.* *tyme*] tymes I.
58. *And*] M *om.* *knew—couthe*] coube and knewe I; knew & I cowde F. [*and* MF] and of IS; of PE. *what*] wat P. *-kam*] com I.
59. *Al ich*] Of al he I. *sounede* S] souned E; sownede F; sonede P; souneth I; longeþ M.
60. M *omits.* & þus haue I lade my lif · lord I cry þe mercy F. [*be* ISEG] P *om.* *ich—semede*] he pore seme I. *christi seruus*] seruus dei F.
61. *of*] for I.
62. *roos*] ros ES; aros IM.

A 55 B 61 CONFESSIO INUIDIE.

II. ENVY. Envy confesses his misdeeds.

Enuye *with* heuy herte · asked after shrifte,
And criede '*mea culpa*' · corsynge alle hus enemys. 64

† His clothes are cursing and keen words.

Hus cloþes were of corsement · and of kene wordes;
He wroth hus fust vp-on wratthe · hadde he wysshes at wille,
Sholde no lyf lyuye · þat on hus londe passede.
Chidynge and Ianglyng · þat was hus chef lyflode, 68

B 227 He blamed men behind their backs. He told Will's faults to Watkin.

And blame men by-hynde hure bak · and bidde hem meschaunce.
Al þat he wiste by wylle · to watkyn he told hit,
And þat he wiste by watkyn · tolde hit wille after;
And made foos of frendes · þorw fals and fykel tonge:
"Oþer þorw myghte of mouthe · oþer þorw meny sleyghthes 73
Venged me fele tyme[s] · oþer brend my-self with-ynne

B 228 "I fret myself like a pair of shears.

Lyke a shappesters sheres · and shrewede myn emcristyne,
Azens þe consail of crist · as clerkes fynden in bokes:

Ps. x. 7. *Cuius maledictione os plenum est & amaritudine [& dolo]: sub lingua eius labor & dolor.*

Ps. lvi. 5 (Vulg.). *Filij hominum, dentes eorum arma & sagitte, & lingua eorum gladius acutus.*

63. *heuy*] hi M.
65. *corsement*] curse-men I.
66. *wroth*] *so also in* IFMS; wrong E. *hadde he*] he hadde M; hadde I. *wysshes*] wysch F.
67. *lyuye*] lyue IE. *hus*] þis M.
68. *and*] or I. *Ianglyng* FM] Ianglenge P; Iangelyng S; yanglyng E; chalangyng I. *þat was*] is M.
69. *bidde*] bad F.
70. *Al*] And M. *watkyn* IFSE] watekyn P; wadekyn M; *so in* l. 71.
71. *þat*] al þat IE. *tolde*] he tolde MFE. *hit*] hit to PE; *but* IMFS *omit* to.
72. *foos—frendes*] of freendes foos I. *fals—fykel*] fikel & fals I. *and*] of E.
73. M *omits*. *Oþer*] & F. *mouthe*] moneye F. *meny*] mannes I. *oþer—meny*] & many mo F.
74. *fele*] vele I; many FG. *tymes* IMSG] tyme PEF. *brend*] *so* E; brent I; vrede F; vride S; wreþed M; *but the right word is* fret; *cf.* B. xiii. 330. *my-self*] me FMS.
75. *shappesters*] shapesters F; shepsteres MI; schyppesteres ES. *sheres*] shere MI. *emcristyne*] euencristene IF.
76. [*& dolo* FSM] PEI *om.*

Whenne ich ne may haue þe maistrie · suche málancolie ich táke, 77
þat ich cacche þe crampe · þe cardiacle som tyme,
Oþer an ague in suche an angre · and som tyme a feuere,
þat takeþ me al a twelfmonthe · til þat ich dispice 80
Leche-craft of oure lorde · and leyue on a wicche,
And sigge þat no clerk can · ne crist, as ich leyue,
To þe souter of south-werk · such is hus grace.
For god, ne godes wordes · ne grace ne halp neuere, 84
Bote þorw a charme hadde ich a chaunce · and my chief hele.
Ich myghte nat ete meny ȝer · as a man auhte,
For enuye and vuel wil · ys vuel to defye.
May no suger ne swete þyng · A-swage my swellynges,
Ne dereworthe drynke · dryuen hit fro myn herte, 89
Neyþer shame ne shrift · bote ho so shraped my mawe?"
"ȝus, redilyche," quath repentaunce · "and þow be ryght sory,
For þy synne soueraynliche · by-sechyng god of mercy."
"Ich am euere sory," sayde enuye · "ich am bote selde oþer; 93
þat makeþ me so megre · for ich ne may me Auenge.

When I cannot succeed, I catch a cramp or an ague;

and then I apply for help to a shoemaker of Southwark.

B 63

A 57

Can nothing assuage my indigestion?"

Repentance bids him be sorry.

A 58

"I am never otherwise," said he.

77. *Whenne*] And whan I; Wenne P. *ne may*] mai nouȝt M. *ne—maistrie*] may nat þe maistrie haue I.
78. *þe* (2)] and þe M; & F.
79. *in suche*] with F. *an* (2)] I *om.* *som—feuere*] a feuour aftur F.
80. *twelfmonthe*] twelfmonnthe P.
81. *of*] or F. *leyue*] leue IFS; bileue ME. *a*] E *om.*
82. *can*] ne can I. *leyue*] leue IMFSE.
83. *To*] Bute M.
84. *ne* (1)] and M. *wordes*] worde I. *ne halp*] halp me M; halp F; ȝit halpe me I.
85. *a* (2)] MIF *om.*
87. *vuel*] yuel IES; euel M; euyl F.
88. *ne*] ne no I. *swellynges*] swelling IF.
89. *Ne*] Ne no I; Ne non M.
90. *Neyþer*] Ne neiþer I. *shraped*] schrape F; schaued S.
91. *ȝus*] ȝis F; Thus (*sic*) I. *and*] ȝif F.
92. *synne*] synnes IMFS. *by-sechyng*] and biseke IM. *of*] E *om.* *mercy*] grace F.
93. *Ich—euere*] Euer am I F. *sayde*] quod F. *am* (2)] nam I.
94. *þat*] And þat I. *me* (2)] F *om.* *Auenge*] venge I.

ȝut am ich brocor of bakbytynge · and blame mennes ware
A-mong marchauns many tymes · nameliche in londoun;
"I have often lied against my neighbour; but will try and make amends." Whanne he solde and ich noght · þenne was ich a-redy
To lye and to loury · and to lacke myn neghebores,
Here werkes, here wordes · wher-so ich sete.
Now hit a-thynkeþ me in þouht · þat euere ich so wrouhte;
Lord, er ich lyf lete · for loue of þy-selue,
B 64 Graunte me, goode lorde · grace of amendement."

CONFESSIO IRE.

III. Ira. Wrath comes, with two white eyes. Thenne a-waked wratthe · with to white eyen,
With a nyuylynge nose · nyppyng hus lyppes.
† "I am Wrath," said he, "who steal upon my enemy. "Ich am wratthe," quaþ þat wye · "wol gladliche smyte
Boþe with ston and with staf · and stele vp-on myn enemy;
For to slee hym slehliche · slehthes ich by-þenke.
Thauh ich sytte þys seuen ȝer · ich sholde nat wel telle
The harme þat ich haue idon · with hand and with tonge.
† I am often impatient, and Vnpacient in alle penaunces · and pleyned, as hit were,

95. *ȝut*] And ȝut M. *am ich*] i am a M. *bakbytynge* SIMF] baggebytynge PE. *blame*] to blame I.

96. *tymes*] tyme FM. *nameliche*] and nameliche IMF.

97. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *he*] hy E. *a-redy*] redy IFS.

98. *loury and*] loure on him F. *to lacke*] lacke M. *myn neghebores*] my neiebore M; neȝburhade F.

99. *Here*] & here F. *werkes*] werke I. *here*] and heore M; *with* my F. *wher*] wer P. *so*] þat I. *sete*] *so also* MFE; sette S; sitte I.

100. *in*] in my I.

101. *lyf*] þe lijf M. *lete*] leue I.

102. *of amendement*] to amende F.

103. *with*] whit P. *to*] tweie I; two ful F. *eyen*] eyhes I.

104. *With*] Whit P; And with IMF. *nyuylynge*] nyuilinges I; snyuelyng SG.

105. *quaþ*] M *om.* *wye*] weie I; weiȝe M; wiȝt MF; wif (!) E. *wol*] wolde M. *gladliche*] wilfulliche F.

106. *with*] whit P (*twice*). *and stele*] stole S. *vp-on*] on M. *enemy*] foman F.

107. *For*] & for F; I *om.*

108. *sytte*] sette S; sete IF. *sytte —ȝer*] seuene ȝere sete F. *wel*] sothli F; M *om.*

109. *idon*] dσ IS. *with* (1)] wit P. *with* (2)] whit P.

110. *Vnpacient*] Inpacient IS; Nat pacient F. *alle*] F *om.* *penaunces*] penaunce FS. *and*] but F.

On god, whenne [me] greued ouht · and grucche[d] of hus sonde, — repine at what God sends.
As, som tyme in somer · and al-so in heruest,
Bote ich hadde wedir at my wil · ich wited god þe cause,
[In] alle manere angres · þat ich hadde oþer felede.
A-monges alle manere men · my dwelling ys som tyme, — † I dwell with men who delight in harming others, and with friars and prelates.
With lered and with lewede · þat leef ben to hure
Harm of eny man · by-hynde oþer by-fore.
Freres [folowen] my vore · fele tyme and ofte,
And prouen vnparfit · prelates of holy churche;
And prelates pleynen of hem · for þei here parshenes shryuen — The prelates and the friars are wroth with one another and despise one another.
With-oute lycence and leue · and herby lyueþ wratthe.
Thus þei speke and dispute · þat eche dispiseþ oþer.
Thus beggers and barouns · at debat aren ofte,
Til ich, wratth, waxe an hyh · and walke with hem bothe;
Oþer til boþe be beggers · and by spiritualte lybben, — B 65 I keep them excited.
Or alle riche þus ride · rest shal ich nauht, wratthe,
þat ich ne mot folwy þis folk · my fortune ys non oþer.

111. [*me* IMFEG] men PS. *greued*] greueþ S. *grucched* IES] grucchud M; grucchide G; grucche PF.

112. *As*] And F. *and—heruest*] in cesoun of heruest-tyme F.

113. *wited*] witte IM.

114. [*In* IMFSG] And PE. *hadde*] abode F. *felede*] felte I; felde E; hadde F.

116. *With*] Whit P. *with*] wit P; IMFS *om. lered—lewede*] lewed and lered I; lewed & lered boþe F. *leef* FS] lef E; leue I; luf P. *leef ben*] han wille M. *hure*] here IMF.

117. *of eny*] & hate of many F. *by-hynde*] bi-hynde him M.

118. [*folowen* E] folewen M; folwen I; folweþ SG; þei folwe F; flowen P. *vore*] fore IS; foor F. *my vore*] me forþ M; me by-fore G.

119. *prouen*] profren E. *vnparfit*] pure imparfit F.

120. *of*] on IMS. *parshenes*] paresschenus S; parechenes E; parischenes M; parisch F.

121. *With*] Whit P. *and*] oþur F; or M.

122. *eche*] ichon I. *þat eche*] & F. *dispiseþ*] spiseth IE.

123. *beggers—barouns*] beggers & bischopus F; barouns and beggeres M. *at—aren*] ben at debate F; at þe bate buþ M; þe bate areren E.

124. *ich*] F *om. walke*] wagge S.

125. *Oþer*] F *om. boþe*] þai boþe I; boþe of hem F. *be*] þe E. *and—spiritualte*] and by spirituel I; or spiritualiter F.

126. *þus*] and I. *shal*] ne schal M. And or I ride on alle riche · I reste me neuere F.

127. *mot*] moste M. *þis*] þat F.

43473

One of my aunts is a nun, and another an abbess.

Ich haue an Aunte to a nunne · and to an abbodesse;
Hem were leuere swouny oþer swelte · þan suffry eny peyne. 129

I was cook in their kitchen.

Ich haue be cook in here kychene · And þe Couent serued
Meny monthes *with* hem · and with monkes boþe.
Ich was þe prioresse potager · and oþer poure ladies,

I got up all kinds of scandal.

And made here ioutes of iangles; · 'dame Iohane was a bastarde, 133
And dame Clarice a knyghtes douhter · a cokewold was hure syre,
Dame purnele a prestes file · prioresse worth hue neuere;
For hue hadde a childe in the chapon-cote · hue worth chalenged at eleccion.' 136

The sisters disputed till they called each other liars.

Thus þei sitte, þo sustres · som tyme, and disputen,
Til 'þow lixt' and 'þow lixt' · be lady ouer hem alle;
And þenne a-wake ich, wratthe · and wold be auenged.
Þanne ich crie and cracche · with my kene nailes, 140
Boþe byte and bete · and brynge forth suche þewes,
Þat alle ladies me loþen · þat louen eny worschep.

† I sit in pews with wives and widows.

Among wyues and wodewes · ich am ywoned sitte
Yparroked in puwes; · þe person hit knoweth 144

128. *a*] IMS *om.* *nunne*] monchen E. *to* (2)] IF *om.* *abbodesse*] abbesse IFS; abbasse M.

129. *Hem*] Hir I; Here M. *leuere*] certus leeuer F. *swouny*] sounye P; swony E; swowne F; swowe I; swoun S; to swoune M. *oþer swelte*] F *om.* *þan—peyne*] ne suffre eny penaunce M.

130. *haue be*] was E.

132. *prioresse*] prioresses MS.

133. *here*] hem IF. *of*] wiþ M. *iangles*] iangelynge IM. *dame*] þat dame F. *Iohane*] ione IFM; Ion S.

135. *Dame*] And dame IMF. *file*] fille M; sibbe S; pile (!) E. *hue* S] he PF; sche IM; ȝo E.

136. *a*] IMFS *om.* *chapon*] capoun EF; capen M. *hue — eleccion*] chalangeable heo semeth F.

137. *Thus—sustres*] Before þe eleccioun þe sustr*us* sitte F. *þei—þo*] sitte þey I; sitten to M. *sustres*] susteren MS. *and*] & þus F.

138. *lixt* EIMFS] luxt P. *lady*] ledere F. *hem alle*] boþe M.

139. *And*] M *om.*

140. *Þanne*] And þanne IMF. *kene*] longe M.

141. *Boþe byte*] Byte I; Bite boþe S. *bete*] eke bete F; smyte M.

142. *loþen*] loþud S. *worschep*] hele F.

143. *wyues*] þe wyues F. *ich am*] am i M. *ywoned*] wont to IFS; wonet to M.

144. *þe—hit*] as our parsoun F.

How lytel ic louye · letice at þe style;
For hue hadde haly bred er ich · myn herte by-gan to chaunge. † I fought with Letice because she received the holy bread before me.
After-ward after mete · hue and ich chidde,
And ich, wratth, was war · and wroth on hem boþ,
Til aiþer [cleped oþere 'hore'] · and of with-þe cloþes,
Til boþe here heuedes were bar · and blody here chekes.
A-mong monkes myght ich be · ac meny tyme ich spare, B 66 I rather shun monks;
For *þer* beþ meny felle frekus · myne afferes to aspye;
Þat ys, þe priour and þe suppriour · and oure *pater abbas*.
And yf ich telle eny tales · thei taken hem to-geders, for priors and abbots make one do penance for talebearing.
And don me faste fridaies · to bred and to water.
Ȝut am ich chalenged in chapitele-hous · as ich a childe were,
And baleysed [on] þe bar ers · and no breche by-twyne.
Ich haue no lust, leyue me · to lenge a-mong monkes;

145. *ic louye*] it is þat I loue F. *at þe*] atte FI.
146. *by-gan*] gan IS.
147. *After-ward — mete*] After mete aftirward I. *hue—ich*] Annot & heo F.
148. *war*] i-war MF. *wroth*] worþ M; warþ I; wax F.
149. [*cleped—hore* IMFSG] cleped eiþer oþer (*sic*) E; cliped oþere P. *of—cloþes*] cast of here hood*us* F; on wiþ þe clawes I.
150. *here*] M *om.* *here* (2)] boþe F.
151. *myght—be*] I mighte be I. *ich be*] S *om.* *ac*] and M. *myght—spare*] I am · many a tyme & ofte F.
152. *For*] M *om.* *þer beþ*] þer arn IMS; þei ar F. *meny felle*] felle fers F. *myne—to*] her fer*us* i F. *aspye*] spie M.
153. *þe*] I *om.* (*twice*). *oure*] oþer M. F *has*—& put hem to þe p*r*iour · or ell*us* to pater abbas.
154—163. *For these*, F *has*—
With-oute loue or leaute · & lye on hem wit*h* talus,
& make hem eue*r* ete flesch · for ech of hem ete o*þur*.
Þe wikkednesse þat I wiste · by any of þe route,
I cowhed it up in our cloistre · þat al þe couent wist it.
& ȝit I spak no speche · it swal so my breste,
Þat I chewed it as a cowe · þat code chew*ith* ofte.
Þan was I chalanged in chapitre · as I childe were,
& balised on þe bare ers · & no brech bitwene.
154. *yf*] ES *om.* *hem*] E *om.*
156. *chapitele*] oure chapitre I; þe chapitele M; chapitr*e* E.
157. *baleysed*] bylasched E; bete G. [*on* IMFSG] in PE.
158. *leyue*] leue IME; lef S. *lenge*] longe I; lyue M; dwelle E.

For hij eteþ more fisch þan flesh · and feble ale drynken.

But when I *can* get at the wine, my tongue runs fast indeed."

Ac oþer-while whanne wyn comeþ · and whenne ich drynke late,

Ich haue a flux of a foul mouth · wel fyf dayes after.
Al þat ich wiste wickede · by eny of oure couent,
Ich cowede hit vp in oure cloistre · þat al þe Couent wot hit."

"Repent," said Repentance;

"Now repente þe," quaþ repentaunce · "and reherce neuere
What counsail þat þow knowest · by contenaunce ne by speche.
And drynk nat ouer delicatliche · ne to depe neiþer,
Þat þy wil ne þy wit · to wratthe myghte turne.

B 67 "and keep yourself sober."

Esto sobrius," he seide · and a-soiled hym after,
And bad hym bidde to god · be hus help to amende.

CONFESSIO LUXURIE.

A 55 B 60 IV. LECHERY. Lechery repents,

Thenne seide lecherie 'alas!' · and to oure lady cryede,
"Lady, to þy leue sone · lowte for me nouthe,
That he haue pyte on me putour · of hus pure grace and mercy,

B 61 and vows henceforth to drink only with the ducks.

With þat ich shal," quath þat shrewe · "saterdayes, for þy loue,
Drynke bote *with* þe douke · and dyne bote ones.
Ich, gulty in gost · to god ich me shryue

159. *hij eteþ*] I ete I. *drynken*] drenken P; *but see* l. 166.
160. *while whanne*] wile wanne P. *whenne*] wenne P. *drynke*] drenke P. *late*] late an eue I.
161. *of*] or MS.
162. *Al*] And alle I. *wickede*] wikke I.
163. *cowede*] couþede S; schewede M; couþe I. *hit*] M *om.* þe] oure MS.
164. þe] I *om.*
165. *What*] þat M; I *om.* þat] S *om.* *ne by*] no F.
166. F *omits.* *depe*] dupe P. *neiþer*] noþer ES.
167. FE *omit.*
168. *he*] y I. *hym*] hem S.
169. *be*] of M. *be—amende*] þat he were amended F.
171. *to*] for M.
172. *putour*] putrour I; F *om.* *of*] for MF. *grace and*] IMFS *om.*
173. *With*] Whit P. *saterdayes*] saturday F. *þy loue*] þy moder loue I; euere F.
174. *bote* (1)] M *om.*
175. *Ich*] For i F.

As in lykynge of lecherie · my licames gultes,
In wordes, in wedes · in waitynge of eyen.
To eche maide þat ich mette · ich made hure a sygne
Sęmynge to synne-warde · and somme gan ich taste
A-boute þe mouthe, and by-nythe · by-gan ich to grope,
Til oure boþers wil was on; · to werke we ȝeden
As wel fastyngdaies [as] frydaies · and heye-feste euenes,
As luf in lente as oute of lente · alle tymes liche—
Suche werkus *with* ous · were neuere out of seson—
Til we myghte no more; · þanne hadde we murye tales
Of puterie and of *paramours* · and proueden þorw speches,
Handlynge and halsynge · and al-so þorw cussynge
Excitynge oure aiþer oþer · til oure olde synne;
Sotilede songes · and sende out olde baudes
For to wynne to my wil · wommen with gyle;
By sorcerye som tyme · and som tyme by maistrye.
Ich lay by þe louelokeste · and loued hem neuere after.
Whenne ich was old and hor · and hadde lore þat kynde,
Ich had lykynge to lauhe · of [lecherous] tales.
Now, lord, for þy leaute · of lechours haue mercy!"

† He confesses his many sins,

B 228

B 229.

which with him were never out of season.

† "I won women over with guile or sorcery.

† In my old age, I loved ribald tales."

177. *wordes*] worde and I. *in* (3)] on I.
178. *To eche*] To eche a F; For ich a I. *hure*] to hure P; *but* IMF SE *omit* to.
179. *gan ich*] I gan I.
180. *þe*] F *om.* *by-gan*] gan S.
181. *oure boþers*] boþe oure IM. *boþers*] beiþur F; beyres E; boþe IMS. *to*] & to S; and to þe I.
182. *As wel*] F *om.* [*as* IE] and PFSG. *as frydaies*] M *om.* *heye*] eye P; heie I; hi M; hye F. *euenes*] eues MFE.
183. *As*] And M. *luf*] lef E; lief I; leef FS; wel M. *tymes*] tyme IM. *liche*] yliche IMS.
186. *and* (1)] F *om.* *proueden þorw*] perelous F. *speches*] speche IM.
187. *Handlynge*] And handelyng I. *also—cussynge*] hory kissyngus F.
188. *oure* (1)] ous S; IM *om.* *oure* (2)] I *om.* *olde* IFSE] elde M; holde P.
189. *sende*] sente IMF.
190. *For*] I *om.*
191. *som—maistrye*] alle suche sleiȝtus F.
192. *hem*] hir I.
193. *lore*] y-lore I; i-lorn M; lost F.
194. *lauhe*] lauȝe E; lauȝȝe S; liȝe M; lithe I. [*lecherous* MF] lecherye PIES; lecheryes G.
195. *for*] of S. *of*] on IMF.

A 58 B 67 CONFESSIO AUARICIE.

V. AVARICE. Then came Avarice,

Thenne cam couetyse · ich can nat hym discryue, 196
So hongerliche and so holwe · heruy hym-self lokede.
He was bytelbrowed and baberlupped · with two blery eyen,
And as a leþerene pors · lollid hus chekus,
[Wel] sydder þan hys chyn · ychiueled for elde: 200
As bondemenne bacon · hus berd was yshaue,
With hus hod on his heued · and hus hatte boþe;
In a toren tabarde · of twelue wynter age;
[But ȝif a lous couþe lepe · I leue hit, as y trowe, 204
He scholde not wandre on þat welch · so was hit þrede-bare.]

with a beard cut smooth like a bondman's piece of bacon, and a torn and threadbare coat.

"I acknowledge I am covetous, for I once served Sim at the Stile,

"Ich haue be coueitous," quaþ þis caityf · "Ich by-know hit here.
For som tyme ich serued · symme at þe style, 207
And was his prentys yplyght · hus profyt to waite.

where I learnt lying and false weights.

Furst ich lerned to lye · a lesyng oþer tweye;
Wickedliche to weye · was my furst lesson.

B 68 I went to Winchester and Weyhill fair, and

To wy and to winchestre · ich wente to þe faire
With many [maner] marchandises · as my [maister] heghte; 212

196. *Thenne*] And þanne F.
197. *hongerliche*] hongri MF. *and*] an P; I *om.* *so*] IMFS *om.* *heruy hym-self*] *sir* heruy him I; syr heruy he F. *heruy—lokede*] heruy was his name M.
198. *He was*] F *om.* *bytelbrowed*] Bittur-browed F. *with*] whit P. *two*] tueye I. *blery*] blered IMFS.
199. *a*] S *om.*
200. [*Wel* IMFSEG] Al P. *hys*] ys P. *ychiueled*] he chyuelede F; i-reueled M.
201. *As*] As a M; And as a I. *bondemenne*] bedemones M.
202. *With*] Whit P.
204, 205. *From* S; *also in* IMFG; PE *omit.*
204. *couþe*] I *om.* *hit*] IM *om.* *as*] I *om.*
205. *not*] I *om.* *wandre*] walke M. *on*] vp I. *welch*] walk I; welþe F; cloþ G.
206. *þis caityf*] þat caitijf M; þe caytif E; heo F.
207. *at þe*] atte F; at S.
208. *his*] is P. *yplyght*] truþe-plith M. *waite*] awayte S.
209. *lesyng*] lees I. *a—tweye*] and leuyng al truþe M.
210. *to*] for to F. *weye*] wynne M. *furst*] S *om.*
211. *wy*] þe weo M. *ich wente*] went i F. *wente*] wende E.
212. [*maner* MIFSEG] P *om.* *marchandises*] marchandise IF. [*maister* MIFSEG] maistres P.

Ne hadde þe grace of gyle · gon among my ware, — sold my wares by cheating.
Hit hadde ben vnsold þys seuen ȝer · so me god helpe!
Ich drow me among drapers · my donet to lerne, — **A 59**
To drawe þe lisure a-longe · þe lenger it semed. — Then I went to the drapers, and learnt from them false measure.
Among þe riche rayes · ich rendred a lesson,
To brochen hem *with* a batte-nelde · and bond hem to-gederes; — There I learnt to fasten pieces of stuff together,
Ich putte hem in *pressours* · and pynned hem þer-ynne, — and press them out till they seemed longer.
Tyl ten [ȝerdes] o*þer* twelue · tilled out þrettyne.
My wif was a webbe · and wollen cloþ made; — My wife made woollen cloth,
Hue spak to þe spynnesters · to spynnen hit oute. — and paid for it by false weight.
þe pound þat hue paiede hem by · peysed a quarter
More þan myn Auncel · whenne ich weied treuthe.
Ich bouhte hure barliche · hue brew hit to selle, — She brewed barley, and made mixed drinks for poor people,
Peny-ale and podyng-ale · hue pourede to-geders,
For laborers and lowe folke · that laye by hem-selue.
The beste laye in my bour · and in my bed-chambre,
And [who] so bommede þer-of · he bouht yt þer-after,
A galon for a grote · and ȝut no grayþ mesure, — **B 69**
Whanne it cam in coppe-mel; · þis craft my wif vsede. — and sold ale at a groat a gallon.
Rose þe regratour · was hure ryght name; — Her name is Rose the regrater."
Hue hath yholde hockerye · þis eleuene wynter."

213. þe] F *om.*
214. *hadde—vnsold*] nad be sold F.
215. *Ich drow me*] þan drogh I me I. *among*] to F. *lerne*] lere I.
216. *lisure*] lesure E; liste M.
218. *hem* (1)] S *om.* *batte-nelde*] batnedele I; paknelde M; packenedle SF. *bond*] bynde F; band I.
219. *Ich*] And S; IMF *om.* *hem* (1)] E *om.* *pressours*] a pressour I. *pynned*] pennede M; pynne F. *þer-ynne*] with-ynne F.
220. [*ȝerdes* IMFSE] ȝorde P. *twelue*] *miswritten* twlue F; tewlue S. *tilled*] *so* FMSE; tolde I. *out*] hem E.
222. *Hue*] ȝo E; Sche M; Heo F; And I. *spynnesters*] spinnere M. *hit oute*] here oute M; hit softe F.
223. *hue*] I F; *cf. l.* 222.
224. *Auncel*] auncer MIS. *whenne*] wenne P. *weied*] way F.
225. *hue*] sche IMFS; ȝo E; *so in* ll. 226, 233. *to selle*] here selue F.
226. F *omits.* *pourede*] putte M.
227. F *omits.* *lowe folke*] loþfolc M. *hem-selue*] hym-silue E.
228. *The beste*] Ac þe best ale I.
229. [*who* IMFSG] PE *om.*
230. *grayþ*] gret M.
231. *Whanne*] Wanne P. *in*] on I.
233. *hath*] hadde I. *hockerye*] hukkerye F; huckustrye S. *þis*] al þis F; þes P. *eleuene*] endeleuen I; enleuene M; elleue E; enleue S.

"Have you never made restitution?" said Repentance.

"Repentest þow neuere?" quaþ repentaunce · "ne restitucion madest?"

"Yus, ones," quaþ he, "ich was yherborwed · *with* an hep of chapmen;

"Yes; I once rifled some pedlars' packs."

Ich a-ros and rifled here males · whenne þei a reste were."

"Þat was a reufol restitucion" · quaþ repentaunce, "for sope;

Thow wolt hongy heye *þer*-fore · her oþer in helle!

"Did you ever lend on usury?"

Vsedest þow euere vserie · in al þy lyf-tyme?"

"Nay, sothliche," *he sayde* · "saf in my youpe.

"Only in my youth, when I learnt to clip coin.

Ich lerned among *lumbardes* · *a lesson, and of Iewes,*

To weie pans *with* a peis · and pared þe heuyeste,

And lente for loue of þe wed · þe whiche ich let betere,

And more worth þan þe moneye · oþer men þat ich lenede.

I lent to such as were careless of their money.

Ich lenede folk þat lese wolde · a lippe in eche noble,

And *with* lombardes letters · ich lenede gold at rome;

So what bern of me borwed · he bouhte þe tyme."

"Lenedest þow euere to eny lorde · for loue of menteynaunce?"

"Ich haue ylent to lordes and to ladies · þat louede me neure after.

234. *Repentest þow*] Rependestow I. *madest*] made F.

235. *he* IM] hue PS; 3o E; heo F. *with*] among M.

236. *a-ros*] ros IS; roos F. *males*] ware S. *a*] on M; at I; in E.

237. *a*] F *om.* *a reufol*] an vnri3tful M.

238. *hongy*] honge MES; hange F; be honged I.

239. *Vsedest þow*] Vsedestow I. *þow euere*] euer þou E; euere M.

240. *he* IME] hue PS; heo F.

241. *among*] of F; among þe M.

242. *pared*] pare MF. *heuyeste*] heuye F.

243. *lente*] lene F.

244. *lenede*] lenede *or* lonede P; lened ES; leenede F; lente M.

245. *lenede*] lenede *or* lonede P; lonede *or* louede F; lene I; lened E; lenede S; lente M. *wolde*] wole I. *in eche*] of ich a I.

246. *ich*] IS *om.* *lenede*] lente FM; lene I. *at*] to I.

247. *bern*] *so* E; barn MSF; buyrn I. *borwed*] borwe M.

248. *Lenedest*] Lentest MFS; Lenest E. *þow*] I *om.* *to*] I *om.* *of*] of his I. *menteynaunce*] mayntenance I.

249. *ylent*] lent IFS. *to*] IM *om.* (*twice*). *and—ladies*] F *om.* *me*] M *om.*

Ich haue mad meny [a] knyght · boþe mercer and draper, — I have made knights mercers and drapers."
Payede neuere for here prentishode · nauht a payre gloues;
þat chaffared with my chyuesaunce · cheuede selde after." 252
"Now redelich," quaþ repentaunce · "and by þe rode, B 71
ich leyue,
Shal neuere executor wel by-sette · þe suluer þat þow hym leuest, — "I believe that your heirs will have no joy with your winnings."
Ne þyn ayres, as ich hope · haue ioye of þat þow wan.
For þe pope and alle hus penetauncers · power hem faylleþ, 256
To a-soyle þe of þy synnes · *sine restitutione;* B 72
Nunquam dimittitur peccatum, nisi restituatur ablatum."
"With false wordes and wittes · ich haue wonne my goodes, † "I made my winnings by guile," said he.
And with gyle and glosynge · gadered þat ich haue,
Meddled my marchaundise · and mad a good B 229
moustre;
The werst lay with-ynne · a gret wit ich let hit. 261
And yf my neyhȝebore hadde an hyne · oþer eny best ellys — "If my neighbour had what I wanted, I stole it.
More profitable þan myn · ich made meny wentes,

250. *Ich—mad*] And i haue mad MSF; And haue y-made I. [*a* EIMS] PF *om.*
251. *Payede*] þat payede S; þat made F. *neuere*] F *om.* *here*] his I; M *om.* *nauht*] nat ȝeue (!) F. *payre*] payere P; paire I; peire MFSE.
252. *chaffared*] chaffaren M. *chyuesaunce*] cheuyssances I. *cheuede*] þryuen M. *selde*] euel F.
253. *leyue*] leue IMFSE.
254. *executor*] secutour I; seketour SF. *wel*] F *om.* *suluer*] siluer IF; seluer ME. *hym*] MF *om.*
255. *ayres*] eyres EMS; heires IF; ayeres P. *wan*] wonne MI; weldest F.
256. *For*] F *om.* *alle*] MF *om.*
257. *synnes*] synne I.
258. *wittes*] weyhtes I; wyȝtus F. *ich haue*] haue i I.
259. *gyle and*] S *om.* *gadered*] i-gadered MI.
260. *moustre*] maystre S.
261. *a*] and M. *let hit*] hit lette M; heeld hit S.
262. *And*] F *om.* *hadde*] haue S. *an*] eny M.

How ich myght haue hit · al my wit ich caste.
And bote ich hadde hit by [oþer wey] · atte laste ich stal hit,
Oþer pryuyliche hus pors shok · vnpiked hus lokes.
B 230 In ploughing, I took a piece of his field. And yf ich ȝede to þe plouh · ich pynchede on hus half acre,
Þat a fot londe oþer a forwe · fecchen ich wolde,
Of my neyhȝeboris next · nymen of hus erthe.
And yf y repe, ouere-reche · oþer ȝaf hem red þat repen
To sese to me with here sykel : þat ich sew neuere.
At mass, I only mourned over my losses. In halydayes at holy churche · whenne ich hurde messe,
Ich hadde neuere [wil] witerlich · to by-seche mercy
For my mysdedes · þat ich ne mornede ofter
For lost of good, leyue me · þen for lycames gultes.
Þauh ich dedliche synne dude · ich dradde hit nat so sore
As whenne ich lenede and leyuede hit lost · oþer longe er hit were paied.
B 231 If I sent my servants abroad, And yf [ich] sente ouer see · my seruaunt to brugges,
Oþer in-to prus my prentys · my profit to a-waite,
To marchaunde with monye · and maken here eschaunge,
Myghte neuere man comforty me · in þe meyn tyme,

264. *How*] & how F. *hit*] hym S. *ich*] I *om.*

265. *And*] F *om.* *hadde hit*] it hadde IFS. [*oþer wey* IMFSG] oþes a-way PE; *see* B-text, xiii. 367.

266. *vnpiked*] and vnpiked IMS.

267. *And—þe*] & atte F. *on*] vp-on F.

269. *nymen*] and nymen MF.

270. *And*] Or F. *repe*] *so* ES; rope F; raape I; ripe M. *oþer*] and M. *þat repen*] *so* EMS; to repe I; þat wrouȝten F. (*But we should rather read* rope, ropen, *as in* B-text, xiii. 374.)

271. *sew*] ne sewe I.

272. *In*] On MS. *whenne*] wenne P. *messe*] þe masse E.

273. [*wil* IMFSE] wit G; P *om.* *to*] forte M. *to—mercy*] mercy to beseche F.

274. *ofter*] after IES (*wrongly*).

275. *lost*] losse I. *leyue*] more leeue I; leef MF; lef S. *leyue me*] by loue (!) E. *lycames*] my licam F.

276. *þauh*] Whan M. *dude*] *so* ESM; dede IF.

277. *lenede*] lente IMF. *leyuede*] leue S; M *om.* *oþer—paied*] or hit were longe vnpaied M.

278. [*ich* ESIFG] PM *om.* *see*] þe se M. *to*] in-to F. *brugges*] bruges S; brigges MFE.

279. *in-to*] in I. *prus*] pruys-lond I; spruce FE; spruys M; spris S. *a-waite*] auaile M.

280. *To*] So to I. *with*] with my IF. *here*] þere M. *eschaunge*] eschangez I.

281. *man—me*] me comforte I.

Neiþer matyns ne masse · ne oþere manere syghtes,
And neuere penaunse performede · ne *pater-noster* seyde,
That my mynde ne was · more in my goodes
Þan in godes grace · And hus grete myghte.
Ubi thesaurus tuus, ibi [ℌ] *cor tuum.*"
"Now redeliche," quaþ repentaunce · "ich haue reuthe
of þy lyuynge.
Were ich a frere, in good faith · for al þe gold on erthe
Ich nolde cope me with þy catell · ne oure [kirke]
amende,
Ne take a meles mete of þyne · And myn herte hit wiste
þat þow were such as þow seist; · ich sholde raþere
sterue:
Melius est mori quam male uiuere.
Ich rede no faithful frere · at þy feste sytte;
3ut were me leuere, by oure lord · lyue by welle-carse[s]
Þan haue my fode and my fyndynge · of false menne
wynnynges:
Seruus es alterius · cum fercula pinguia queris,
Pane tuo potius · uescere, liber eris.
Thow art an vnkynde creature · ich can þe nat assoyle
Tyl þow haue ymad, by þy myght · to alle men resti-
tucion;
For alle þat hauen of þy good · (haue god my treuthe!)
Beeþ holden at þe hye dome · to helpe the restitue.

I kept thinking about my bargains at prayer-time."

Mat. vi. 21.

B 71 "Were I a friar," said Repentance, "I would not touch a penny of yours.

† I had rather eat only water-cresses than receive money got by cheating.

B 72 I cannot absolve you till you make restitution.

All who touch your money must

282. *ne*] noþer E. *oþere*] no I.
283. *And*] Ne IM. *pater-noster*] M *om.*
284. *in*] on MF. *goodes*] goodes, in a dowte I.
285. *in*] on F. *godes grace*] þe grace of my god I. *And*] or in M; or of F; and in I. *myghte*] trewþe F. *Ubi*] Vbi est M. [ℌ MFE] PSIG *om.* *tuum*] tuum est M.
286. *ich*] I *om.* *ich—reuthe*] I rewe F. *of*] on I.
288. *nolde*] ne wolde IM. [*kirke* IMF] churche PS; churches E.
290. *þat*] And F; I *om.*
291. *no*] þat no E. *faithful*] faitthful P.
292. *3ut*] Hit M. *lyue*] leue al I. *carses* EG] carsus S; carse P; kersus F; cresses I. *lyue — carses*] ete water-crasses M.
293. *my* (2)] F *om.* *fyndynge*] fedyng M. *menne*] mannes I; menes M.
294. *fercula*] fercucula P.
296. *art* IMFS] ert PE. *þe nat*] nou3t þe M.
299. *Beeþ*] Ben EM; Is IFS. *holden*] i-holde M; haldyng I; holdyng F. *restitue*] to restitue S; restituere E.

make restitution at the last day."

The preest þat þy tythe takeþ · trowe ich non oþer,
Shal parte with þe in purgatorie · and help paye þy dette, 301
Yf he wist þow were suche · when he reseyuyde þyn offrynge.

Ps. li. 6 (l. 8. Vulg.).

What ledе leyueþ þat ich lye · loke in þe sauter glosed
On *ecce enim ueritatem dilexisti.*
Ther he shal wite witerliche · what vsure is to mene,
And what penaunce þe prest shal haue · þat prout is of [þi tythes]. 305
For an hore of hure ers-wynnynge · may hardiloker tythe
þan an erraunt vsurer · (haue god my treuthe!)
And erest shal come to heuene · by cryst þat me made!"

A 65 B 82 † Then was there a penitent Welshman, named Evan Yield-again,

Then was þer a walishman · was wonderliche sory, 309
He highte 'ȝyuan ȝeld-aȝeyn · if ich so moche haue,
Al þat ich wickeddelich wan · sytthen ich [wit] hadde;
And þauh my liflode lacke · leten ich nelle, 312
þat ech man shal haue hus · er ich hennes wende.

† who preferred poverty to loss of heaven.

For me ys leuere in this lif · as a lorel beggen,
þan in lysse to lyue · and lese lyf and soule.'

Robert the robber thought, to make restitu-

Roberd þe ryfeler · on *reddite* lokede, 316
And for *þer* was nat wher-with · he wepte ful sore;

300. *The*] ȝe þe I. *takeþ*] took I. *trowe*] ne trowe M.

301. *paye*] to paie MFS.

302. *þow*] þat þow M. *when*] wen P. *he*] M *om.* *reseyuyde*] receyueth F.

303. *What*] And what I. *leyueþ*] leueþ MFSE. *On*] Lo I aleie F; I *om.*

304. *Ther*] And þer I. *he shal*] schal he I; ȝe mowe M.

305. *what*] I *om.* *prout*] prut E; proud MIFS. [*þi tythes*] þi tiþus F; þe tethes P; þe teþs E; his tiþes MS; *cf.* l. 300.

306. *For—wynnynge*] & for puteynes of here yuel wynnyng E. *wynnynge*] F *om.*

307. *an erraunt*] a *comune* E; an (*sic*) I.

309. *walishman*] walsch man IF; walsman M.

310. *He*] IMFS *om.* *ȝyuan*] ȝeuan IMFS. *ich*] I *om.*

311. *wan*] gat M. [*wit* G] witt E; wyt S; witte I; hit PMF. *hadde*] haue F.

312. *And*] F *om.* *leten*] lyuen S. *nelle*] ne wile M; wille (!) F.

313. *þat*] & F. *shal*] ne schal I.

314. *this*] my F.

315. *lysse*] liking F; blisse E.

316. *ryfeler*] riflere þo F.

317. *þer*] *þat þer* S. *was*] nas I. *ful*] wonder I; wel M.

And ȝut þat synful shrewe · seide to heuene,
"Crist, þat on caluarye · on þe croys deidest,
Tho Dismas my broþer · by-souhte þe of grace,
And haddest mercy on þat man · for *memento* sake,
So rewe on me, Roberd · þat *reddere* ne haue,
Ne neuere wene · to wynne · with craft þat ich knowe.
For þy muchel mercy · mytigacion ich by-seche,
Dampne me nouht at domys day · for þat ich dude so ille."

tion, and prayed to Christ, saying, "Christ, that saved Dismas on the cross, have mercy upon me!"

B 83

What by-fel of þis felon · ich can nouht faire shewe;
Wel ich wot he wepte faste · water with hus eyen,
And to crist knowlechede · hus coupe ȝut eft-sone,
þat penaunce hus pyk-staf · he wolde polische newe,
For he hadde leye by *latro* · lucifers aunte.
"By þe rode," quaþ repentaunce · "þow romest toward heuene,
By so þat hit be in þyn herte · as ich hure þy tonge.
Trist in his mochel mercy · and ȝut myght þow be saued.

What became of him I know not; yet he wept sore,

A 66 and vowed penitence.

† Repentance comforts him.

For al þe wrecchednesse of þis worlde · and wickede dedes
Fareþ as a fonk of fuyr · þat ful a-myde temese,
And deide for a drop of water; · so doþ alle synnes
Of alle manere men · þat with good wille

B 72 "Man's sin is to God's mercy like a spark of fire in the Thames."

318. *And ȝut*] Ac M; Ac ȝit I. *seide to*] saide to the I; criede vp to M. *to heuene*] with soor herte F.
320. *þe*] ȝou I.
321. *on*] vpon I. *memento*] memento his I.
322. *on—Roberd*] vpon Robert I.
323. *with*] wit P. *craft*] werk F. *knowe* EIMFS] *miswritten* kowe P.
325. *þat*] M *om.*
326. *of*] on F.
327. *with*] wit P. *eyen*] yes I; yen S.
328. *to—knowlechede*] knowleched to crist I. *hus coupe*] in care F. *ȝut*] M *om.*
329. *penaunce*] repentance I. *he*] M *om.* *polische*] pulsche FS.
330. *lucifers*] was lucifers F.
332. *By*] MF *om.* *þat—be*] þou haue it F; hit be S. *hure*] here IMFS. *þy*] in þi F.
333. *and*] an P. *myght þow*] þow myȝt MI; maistow F.
334. *wrecchednesse*] wrecchede F.
335. *a*] F *om.* *fonk*] flonke I. *fuyr*] þe fuyre F. *ful*] fil IF.
336. *And deide*] Deieþ M. *for*] wiþ I. *of*] I *om.* *so*] and so M.
337. *men*] of men I; men of moolde F. *with*] with a F; wiþ a M.

Confessen hem and crien mercy · shullen neuere come in helle.

B 73 *Omnis iniquitas quoad misericordiam dei est quasi sintilla in medio maris.*

Repente þe anon," quaþ repentaunce · ryȝt so to þe vsurer,

"Give up your trading," said Repentance.

"And haue hus mercy in þy mynde · and marchaundise, leue hit;

For þow hast no good, by good faith! · to bygge þe with a wastell.

"That which you won, you won falsely.

The good þat þow hauest ygete · by-gan al with falshede;

As longe as þow lyuest þer-with · þow ȝeldest nat, bote borwest.

If you know not whom to repay, give your money to the bishop.

And yf þow wite neuere to wham · ne where [to] restitue,

Bere hit to þe bischop · and bid hym of hus grace,

To by-setten hit hym-selue · as best be for þy soule;

He shall answer for you."

For he shal answere for þe · at þe hye dome,

For þe and for meny mo · þat man shal ȝeue rekenynge,

What he lerede ȝow to lyue with · and to lette ȝow fro þufþe."

(A 60)

VI. GLUTTONY. CONFESSIO GULE.

Glutton goes to church to confess,

Now by-gynneþ gloton · for to go to shryfte,

And kayres hym to-kirke-ward · hus coupe to shewe.

338. *crien*] crien him I. *crien mercy*] mercy crie F.

339. *ryȝt—vsurer*] & riȝt so go to schrifte F. *so*] IG *om.* *to þe*] þou S.

340. PE *place* haue *after* mynde. *leue hit*] þou leue F.

341. *hast*] ne hast M. *by*] in F. *bygge*] gete I; *this improves the alliteration, but appears rather to belong to the next line.* *þe*] S *om.*

342. *The*] For þe I. *ygete*] gete I; geten M. *falshede*] falsnesse M; false S.

343. *As*] And as I. *bote*] bote þow P; *but* IMFSE *omit* þow.

344. [*to* IMFSG] þow sholde P; þou shalt E.

345. *þe*] thy I; þi M. *bid* IMF] bide PS; bidde E.

346. *be*] is M. *þy*] þe EM.

348. *þat—ȝeue*] he schal make F. *rekenynge*] a rekenyng I.

349. *lerede*] lefte F; lernede MS. *and to*] & F; to M. *þufþe*] þefte IFS; synne M.

351. *kayres*] carieþ M; caries I; karyuþ S. *kirke* IMF] churche PES (*which loses the alliteration*). *coupe*] synnes M.

Fastyng on a fryday · forth gan he wende
By betone hous þe brewestere · þat bad hym good morwe,
And whederwarde he wolde · þe brew-wif hym asked.
"To holy churche," quaþ he · "for to hure masse,
And sitthen sitte and be yshriuen · and synwe namore."
"Ich haue good Ale, godsyb · gloton, wolt þow assaye?"
"What hauest þow," quaþ he · "eny hote spices?"
"Ich haue piper and pionys · and a pound of garlik,
A ferthyng-worth of fynkelsede · for fastinge-daies."
Thenne goþ gloton yn · and grete oþes after.
Sesse þe sywestere · sat on þe benche,
Watte þe warynere · and hus wif dronke,
Thomme þe tynkere · and tweye of hus knaues,
Hicke [þe] hakeneyman · and houwe þe neldere,
Claryce of cockeslane · the clerk of þe churche,
Syre peeres of prydie · and purnel of flaundres,
An haywarde and an heremyte · þe hangeman of tyborne,
Dauwe þe dykere · with a dosen harlotes
Of portours and of pykeporses · and pylede toþ-drawers,

but on the way Beton the brewster hails him.

B 74 She offers him ale; he asks if it is spiced; she says, yes.

Glutton goes in. There were Cis the sempstress, Wat the warrener, Tom the tinker,

A 61 Hick the horse-dealer, Hugh the needle-seller, Clarice of Cock lane, the clerk of the church, Sir Piers of Pridie, Pernel of Flanders,

353. *betone*] betone *or* betene P; betoun E; betouns I; betonus FS; betenes M.
354. *brew-wif*] goode wif E.
355. *To*] Go to (*wrongly*) S. *he*] he þo F. *for—hure*] to here my I.
356. *yshriuen*] yschreuen P. *synwe*] *so in* PS; synge MF; synny E; synne I.
357. *godsyb—þow*] quod heo þo · gode gossip F. *þow*] M *om.*
358. *What*] What herke F; I *om.*
359. *pionys*] pyonye I; pyonis quod heo F. *of*] I *om.*
360. *ferthyng*] fertheng P. *fynkel*] fenkel I; fenel MF; fynel S. *daies*] dayes y boght it I.
361. *Thenne*] & þan F. *and*] an P.
362. *Sesse*] Cesse IMS; & sesse F. *sywestere*] sowester E; sewestare M; sewestre S; soustere F; Souters I.
363. *warynere*] warner IMFSE.
364. *tweye—hus*] and his twelue M; & his two F.
365. [*þe* IMFSG] PE *om.*; *see* l. 378. *houwe*] howe I; huwe M; hue E; heruy FS. *þe*] hus S. *neldere*] nedelere MFIS; nedlere E.
366. *cockeslane*] coklane E; kuckuslone M. *the*] and þe IM.
367. *peeres—prydie*] peraunt þe prowde F.
368. *and*] IF *om.*
369. I *omits*. *dosen*] doseyn of M.
370. M *om.* *and* (1)] F *om.* *of*] I *om.* *pykeporses*] pykeporeses P; pikporses E; pyke-purses IS; pikepurs F. *and* (2)] of F; and of I.

a ribibe-player, a ratcatcher, and many others, who all welcomed Glutton.

A rybibour and a ratoner · a rakere and hus knaue,
A ropere and a redyngkynge · and rose þe disshere,
Godefray þe garlek-mongere · and griffyn þe walish;
And of vp-holders an hep · erly by þe morwe
Geuen gloton with glad chere · good ale to hansele.

Clement the cobbler offers to barter his cloak, and Hick the horsedealer his hood.

Clemment þe cobelere · cast of hus cloke,
And to þe newe fayre · nempned hit to selle.
Hicke þe hakeneyman · hitte hus hod after,
And bad bette [þe] bouchere · to be on hus syde.
Ther were chapmen y-chose · þe chaffare to preise;
B 75 þat he þat hadde þe hod · sholde nat habbe þe cloke;
þe betere þyng, by arbytours · sholde bote þe werse.

Then two of them rose together, and chaffered, and disputed.

Two rysen rapliche · and rounede to-geders,
And preysed þe penyworthes · apart by hem-selue,
And þer were oþes an hepe · for oþer sholde haue þe werse.
þei couthe nouht by here conscience · a-corde for treuthe,

Robin the roper is made A 62 umpire, who decided that Hick should have the cloak, and Clement have the hood and fill the cup.

Tyl Robyn þe ropere · aryse þei bysouhte,
And nempned hym a nompeyr · þat no debate were.
Hicke þe hakeneyman · hadde þe Cloke,
In couenaunt þat clemment · sholde þe coppe fylle,
And haue þe hakeneymannes hod · and hold hym y-serued;

371, 372. E *omits last half of* l. 371, *and first half of* l. 372.
371. *and* (1)] IMF *om.*
372. *ropere*] ropere *or* repere P; *but see* l. 387. *and* (1)] MF *om.*
373. þe (1)] F *om.* *griffyn*] griffith IS. *walish*] walsche EFIM.
374. *erly*] herly P.
375. *glad*] good M. *chere* IMFSE] chire P. *good* IME] goud PS. *good—hansele*] galonus of ale F. *hansele*] ansele P.
376. *Clemment*] þo clement F.
377. *newe* IMFES] nywe P; *hit*] forþ I.
379. [þe IMFSE] P *om.* *to*] MF *om.*
380. *Ther*] þo F. þe] þis I.
381. *he þat*] who so I.
382. þe] & þat þe I. *arbytours*] arbitrours MIFS.
383. *Two rysen*] þo rysen two F; Tweyne arisen M; To risen vp I. *rapliche*] rape I.
384. þe] þise I.
385. *And*] M *om.* *for oþer*] for on IS; for oon F; for þe oþer E; wheþer M.
388. *a*] for a I. *nompeyr*] nounpere F.
389. *hakeneyman*] hostiler I. *hadde—Cloke*] þe cloke scholde haue E.
391. þe—*hod*] hickes hood þe hostiler I.

And who repentyde raþest · shold aryse after,
And grete syre gloton · with a galon of ale.
Þer was lauhyng & lakeryng · and 'let go þe coppe!'
Bargeynes and beuereges · by-gunne to aryse,
And setyn so til euesong rang · and songe vmbwhyle,
Til gloton hadde yglobbed · a galon and a gylle.
Hus guttes gonne godely · as two gredy sowes;
He pissede a potell · in a *pater-noster* while,
And blew hus rounde rewet · atte rygbones ende,
Þat alle þat herde þat horne · hulde here nose after,
And wusched hit hadde be wexed · with a wips of breres.
He myghte noþer stappe ne stonde · tyl he a staf hadde.
Thanne gan he go · lyke a glemannes bycche,
Som tyme asyde · [and] som tyme a-rere,
As ho so laith lynes · for to lacche foules.
And whenne he drow to þe dore · þanne dymmed hus eyen;
He [thrumbled] at þe þreshefold · and þrew to þe erthe.

Then came much laughing and drinking, till Glutton had swallowed more than he could well hold.

B 76 He could scarce stand, and walked all ways, like a gleeman's bitch,

A 63 or a man setting bird-catching lines.

He stumbled at

392. *who*] he þat E; who so I; whose M. *raþest*] him raþer I.
393. *with*] whit P. *of*] MFSE *om.*
394. *lauhyng*] lauȝynge S; lawyng M; haulyng (*sic*) E. *lakeryng*] lakryng E; likeryng MS; lowring I. *& lakeryng*] alowd F.
395. *to aryse*] þo to wake I.
396. *And*] þei M. *setyn*] *so* PE; seten M; settun S; sete F. *rang*] I *om.* *vmbwhyle*] vmbwyle P; vmbiwhile MIE; vnbiwhile F; eche while S.
397. *hadde*] adde P.
398. *godely*] *so* PS; to gosely I; godele M; to goþel E. *Hus—godely*] þat his guttus godeled F. *two* FS] tuo I; to (*for* two) PM; þe E. *gredy*] grete E; hongry S.
400. *And*] He I. *hus*] þe E. *rewet* EG] rywett P; ryuet IM; ruet FS. *atte*] at þe E; at his MIFS; atte þe P.
401. *þat* G] þan P; þe IMFE; his S. *nose*] nosus F; neses M.
402. *hit*] þat hit P; IMFSE *omit* þat. *wexed*] i-wexed M; ywaxed E; wasche I. *wips*] weps E; bosk M.
403. *myghte*] ne myȝt E. *noþer*] nat þo nowþur F. *ne*] *so in* IMSE; ne *or* no P; no F. *stonde*] stonnde P. *a*] his I.
404. *Thanne*] And þanne IF. *he*] hue P (*wrongly*).
405. *asyde*] asyde a sail (!) F. [*and* IMFS] PE *om.* *a-rere*] *so in the rest;* a-ryre P.
406. *As*] Has P. *laith*] leid S. *lynes*] lymes F. *lacche*] cacche M; take F.
407. *whenne*] wenne P.
408. *He*] And I. [*thrumbled* I] thromlide G; trobled F; trobelode S; stomblede PE; stomlede M. *But see* A-text. *þreshefold*] þrescwolde M; treshfold E. *þrew* SIF] þreu P; þrew him M; drow E.

the threshold, when Clement caught him and carried him,

Tho Clement þe cobelere · cauhte hym by þe mydel,
For to lyfte hym on loft · he [leyde] hym on hus knees;
Ac gloton was a gret cherl · and gronyd [in] þe liftynge,

for which service he was ill repaid.

And couhed vp a caudel · in clementes lappe; 412
Ys non so hongry hounde · in hertforde-shire,
þat þorst lape of [þat] leuynge · so vnloueliche hit smauhte.

His wife put him to bed, and he slept all Saturday and Sunday.

With al þe wo of þe worlde · hus wif and hus wenche
Bere hym to hus bedde · and brouhte hym þer-ynne;
And after al þis excesse · he hadde an accidie, 417
He slep saterday and sonday · tyl sonne ȝede to reste.

Then he woke up, and asked where the cup was.

Thenne awakyde he wel wan · and wolde haue ydronke;
The ferst word þat he spak · was "ho halt þe bolle?"

B 77

Hus wif and hys inwit · edwited hym of hus synne;

His wife and Conscience rebuke him.

He wax a-shamed, þat shrewe · and shrof hym al-so swithe 422
To repentaunce ryȝt þus; · "haue reuthe on me," he seyde,
"þow lord þat on loft art · and alle lyues shope!

"I confess that I have often used oaths,

To þe, god, ich gloton · gulty me ȝelde
Of my trespas with tunge · ich can nauht telle how ofte, 426

409. *Tho*] And I.

410. *For*] And for I. *he*] I *om.* [*leyde* I] leide MFG; ledde PES. *hus*] E *om.*

411. *cherl*] clerk (!) S. *groned*] agreued I. [*in* IMSG] on PE. *þe*] his E. *in—liftynge*] as he lifte F.

412. *And*] He M. *couhed*] couȝhed FS; cowed I. *clementes*] clement S.

413. *Ys*] þat þer is F. *hertforde*] herfordes E; herforde M.

414. þat] IFS *om.* *þorst*] dorst E; Dorste S; durste IM; Durst F. *lape*] *so* PIMFS; lappe E. [*þat* IMFSEG] þe P. *vnloueliche*] vnsemelich S.

415. *þe* (2)] þis I. *hus* (1)] þe E.

416. *to*] in-to M. *þer-ynne*] with-ynne F.

417. *þis*] his M. *excesse* IMFSE] excessus P. *accidie*] accesse after I. *he—accidie*] an accidie he hadde F.

418. *sonne*] þe sonne I.

419. *awakyde he*] he awakede M; gan he wake I. *wel*] ful F. *wan*] E *om.*

420. *þat he*] þe freek F. *halt*] haþ M. *ho halt*] fil fil F.

421. *hys*] ys P. *hus*] F *om.*

422. S *omits.* *þat shrewe*] þerwith F. *and*] an P; he I. *al-so*] as IM.

423. *haue*] ha F. *on*] of F.

424. *lyues*] þyng M.

425. *me*] ich me PE; i me M; *but* ISF *omit* ich, *which seems superfluous.*

426. *my trespas*] þat I haue trespast I. *with*] of my F; wiþ my S.

Sworen 'þy saule and [þy] sydes' · and 'so help me,
God almyghty!'
When þat no ned was · meny tyme falsliche.
And ouer-sopede at my soper · and som tyme at nones
More þan my kynde · myghte wel defye;
And as an hounde þat et gras · so gan ich to brake,
And spilde þat ich [spele] myghte · ich can nouht speke for shame
The vylenye of my foule mouþe · and of my foule mawe.
On fastingdais by-fore none · ich fedde me with ale,
Out of reson, a-mong rybaudes · here rybaudrye to huyre.
Her-of, good god · graunte me forȝeuenesse,
Of al my luþer lyuyng · in al my lyf-tyme.
For ich a-vowe to verrey god · for honger oþer for þurste,
Shal neuere fish on fryday · defye in my wombe,
Tyl abstinence myn aunte · haue ȝeue me leue,
And ȝut haue ich hated hure · al my lyf-tyme."

and have been gluttonous. B 231

B 77

I drank before noon on fasting-days.

A 64 B 78 I vow henceforth to observe abstinence."

Hic explicit passus septimus.

427. *Sworen*] Swore by S. [*þy* EG] þi M; PS *om.* *þy—sydes*] goddes soule and his sides I; soule & sidus F. *sydes*] side E. *and* (2)] F *om.* *so*] also M. *me*] M *om.*

428. *When þat*] þer I; Wen þat P. *ned* MS] nede IFE; nud P. *was*] ne was I. *tyme*] sithes I. *meny—falsliche*] falsly many a tyme F.

429. *nones*] on*us* SF.

430. *More*] Muche more F. *kynde*] mawe F. *wel*] I *om.*

431. *et* M] ete (*a worse spelling*) PE; eteth IFS (et *is contracted from* eteth). *to*] M *om.**

432. *spilde*] spilte S. [*spele* IFS] spelide P; spelyd G; aspelid E. *ich—myghte*] i myȝte haue i-spared M. *speke*] telle M.

434. *On*] And I. *by-fore*] afore S. *ich*] I *om.* *with*] whit P.

435. *rybaudrye*] ribaudye IF. *huyre*] here MFI.

436. *Her-of*] Now here-of F. *good*] E *om.* *graunte*] gif F.

437. *al* (1)] S *om.* *lyuyng*] lif I.

438. *a-vowe*] vowe I; afowe E. *for* (1)] for eny I. *oþer*] ne M. *for* (2)] I *om.*

439. *on*] on þe I. *wombe*] mawe M.

440. *ȝeue*] i-ȝeue M.

441. *haue ich*] ych haue S.

COLOPHON. ISM *omit.* *Hic*] EF *om.*

PASSUS VIII.

Incipit passus octauus.

(B 78)
VII. ACCIDIA. CONFESSIO ACCIDIE.

Sloth comes asking for a seat,

Tho cam sleuthe al by-slobered · with two slymed eyen.
"Ich most sitte to be shryuen," quath he · "or elles shal ich nappe.

being unable to stand or stoop.

Ich may nouht stonde ne stoupe · ne with-oute stoule knele.
Were ich brouhte in my bed · bote my taylende hit made,
Sholde no ryngynge do me ryse · tyl ich were rype to dyne."

He goes to sleep over his prayers.

Benedicite he by-gan with a bolke · and hus brest knokede,
Rascled and remed · and routte at þe laste.
"What a-wake, renk," quaþ repentaunce · "rape the to shryfte!"

TITLE. *So also in* F; Hic incipit passus octauus de uisione M; Passus septimus de visione I.

OBS. *From this point onward, only* occasional *readings are given from* F.

1. *with*] wit P. *two* FES] tuo I; to PM. *slymed*] slymy M.

2. *shryuen* E] shryue PSI; i-schriuen M; *cf.* l. 28. *quath he*] I *om.* *shal ich*] i schal M; schold i I.

3. *nouht*] nat wel I. *stonde*] stonnde P. *with*] whit P. *stoule*] stoole I; stool S; stole EF; stol M.

4. *bote*] but if I. *taylende*] *so* I; tailende M; talende ES; tayl-eende F.

5. *ryngynge*] þinge I; oþer þyng E. *ryse*] to rise I.

6. *with*] wit P. *a*] M *om.*

7. *Rascled*] Raxled I; He raxlede M; Rasled E. *routte*] rutte M; route IE; routede SF. *þe*] S *om.*

8. *What*] Wat P. *renk*] þenke E; þenk M. *rape*] and rape I; rake E.

"Sholde ich deye," quath he, "by þis daye · ich drede me sore,

Ich can nouht *parfytliche* my *pater-noster* · as þe prest hit seggeþ.

Ich can rymes of robyn hode · and of Randolf, erl of chestre,

Ac of oure lord ne of oure lady · þe lest þat euere was maked.

Ich haue a-vowed vowes fourty · and for-ȝut hem a morwe;

Ich parfourned neuere penaunce · þat þe preest me hihte,

Ne ryȝt sory for my synnes · ich sey neuere þe tyme.

And ich bidde eny bedis · bote hit be in wratthe,

That ich telle *with* my tunge · ys ten myle fro my herte.

Ich am ocupied eche day · haly day and oþer,

With ydel tales atte nale · and oþer-whyle in churches;

Godes pyne and hus passion · is pure selde in my thouhte.

Ich visited neuere feble man · ne feterid man in prisone;

Ich hadde leuere huyre of harlotrye · oþer of a lesyng to lauhen of,

Oþer lacke men, and lykne hem · in vnlykynge manere,

B 79 Awaked, he says he forgets his *pater-noster*, but he knows rimes about Robin Hood.

"I never perform my penances rightly.

I am always occupied with idle tales.

I had sooner hear such things than all that ever Mark wrote.

9. *Sholde ich*] If i schulde I. *quath he*] I ne may E; I *om.* *me*] me so P; me ful M; *but* IESF *omit* so *or* ful.

10. *seggeþ*] seyþ E; syngeþ IMSF.

11. *and*] MSF *om.* *erl*] þe erl SF.

12. *ne*] or SF. *þe*] nat þe S (*which improves the grammar*).

13. *a-vowed vowes*] a-fowed fouwes E. *a*] on M.

14—18. M *omits*.

14. *parfourned*] parformed ES. *penaunce*] penaunces I.

15. *synnes*] synne E.

16. *bote*] but if I.

18. *eche*] ich a I; eche a F.

19. *atte nale*] at þe nale EF; at þe ale M. *whyle*] wyle P. *in*] at EM. *churches*] chirche M.

20. *pyne*] peyne IM. *is*] his P. *selde* IMSE] seilde P. *thouhte*] herte MF.

21. *visited* MFI] viseted P; visided E. *feble*] seek M. *man in prisone*] fraik *with* gyues F.

22. *huyre*] hure E; here ISF; to here M. *of* (1)] an I. *harlotrye*] harletrye P; *see* l. 76. *of* (2)] IMS *om.*

23. *Oþer*] And M; Or to I. *men*] E *om.* *and*] or to I. *lykne*] likene IM; liken E.

Þan al þat euere marc made · matheu, Iohan, other lucas.
Vigilies and fastyngdayes · ich can for-ȝete hem Alle.

In Lent, I lie in bed till mass is over.

Ich ligge a bedde in lente · my lemman in myn armes,
Tyl matyns and messe be don · þen haue ich a memorie atte Freres.

B 80

I am shriven about twice in ten years.

Ich am nouht shryuen som tyme · bote syknesse hit make,
Nouht twyes in ten ȝer · ȝut tel ich nauht þe haluendele.

Though I am a priest, I cannot *sol-fa*;

Ich haue be prest and *person* · passyng þerty wintere,
ȝut can ich no*þer* solfye ne synge · ne a seyntes lyf rede.

but I can find a hare in a field.

Ac ich can fynde in a felde · and in a forlang an hare,
And holden a knyȝtes court · and a-counte *with* þe reyue;
Ac ich can nouht constrye [catoun] · ne clergialliche reden.

I forget what I borrow.

Yf ich bygge and borwe ouht · bote hit be y-tayled,
Ich for-ȝete [hit] as ȝerne · and yf eny man hit askeþ,
Sixe sithe o*þer* seuene · ich for-sake hit *with* o*þes*;
Thus haue ich tened trewe men · ten hondred tymes.

I keep back my servants' wages.

And som tyme my *ser*uauns · here salarye is byhynde;

24. *Iohan—lucas*] Luc or Ion M.
25. *for-ȝete* MSF] for-ȝeten I; for-ȝyte E; for-ȝute P.
26. *Ich*] And IMSEF. *my*] and my IS. *lemman* MIEF] lemman*us* S; *miswritten* lemen P.
27. *and*] or I. *don*] al don S. *ich*] I *om.* *atte*] at M.
28. I *omits, and transposes* ll. 26 *and* 27. *shryuen*] yschryue*n* at E. *make*] made ES.
29. ȝut] and þan I. *þe*] M *om.*
30. *passyng þerty*] almost twenti M.
31. *no*þ*er*] nout M. *solfye*] solfy E; solfe IMS.
32. *forlang*] *so* FIE; forlong MS.
33. *a*] E *om.* *þe*] a E. *reyue*] reoue M; reue IESF.
34. *constrye*] construe IS. [*catoun* MI] canon PES; F *om.* *reden*] hit rede M.
35. *and*] or M. *ouht*] it I. *bote*] but ȝif S; but if I. *y-tayled*] entaylid SF.
36. *for-ȝete* IF] fur-ȝete M; for-ȝyte ES; for-ȝute P. [*hit* MIFSG] PE *om.* *askeþ*] aske ISF.
38. *Thus*] And þus I. *tened* MI ES] tuned P. *haue—tened*] I tene F.
39. *som—seruauns*] my *ser*uauntz som tyme I. *salarye* SEIF] salerye P; salariȝe M. *is*] his P.

Reuthe ys to huyre þe rekenyng · whenne we shulleþ rede a-countes, 40
Þat with so wicked wil · my werkmen ich paye.
If eny man doþ me a byn-fet · oþer helpeþ me at nede,
Ich am vnkynde aȝeyns courtesye · ich can nat vnderstonde hit. 43
For ich haue and haue had · somdel haukes maneres,
Ich am nat lured with loue · bote ouht lygge vnder þombe.
Þe kyndenesse þat myn emcristene · kydde me fern ȝere, 46
Syxty sithe ich sleuthe · haue for-ȝute hit sitthe.
In speche and in sparyng of speche · yspilt [many] tymes;
Boþe flesh and eke Fish · and vitaile ich kepte so longe,
Til eche lyf hit loþede · to lokye þer-on, oþer smylle hit, 50
Boþe bred and ale · botere, melke, and chese
For-sleuthe[d] in my seruice · [and] sette hous a fuyre,
And ȝede a-bowte in my ȝouthe · and ȝaf me to no þedom, 53
And sitthe a beggere haue y-be · for my foule sleuthe;
Heu michi, quod sterilem · duxi uitam iuuenilem!"

I requite benefits with unkindness.

B 81

I forget the kindnesses men do to me.

I waste much meat and drink."

40. *ys*] hit is E. *huyre*] here IM. *þe*] I *om.* *whenne*] wenne P.
41. *Þat—so*] So wiþ I. *werkmen*] *miswritten* workman P.
42. *bynfet*] bienfet I; benfeet M; benefet S; benfet E. *nede* IMFSE] nude P.
43. *aȝeyns*] aȝein his I. *ich*] and I. *vnderstonde*] vnderstonnde P.
44. *had*] yhade E; i-had M. *maneres*] ferus F.
45. *ouht lygge*] *þer* ligge oght I. *þombe*] þe þombe IS.
46. *emcristene*] euencristen I. *fern ȝere*] fer to ȝere M.
47. *haue*] E *om.*
48. [*many* FS] many a MG; myn P; my E. *tymes*] time MG.
49. *flesh*] in flesch E. *Fish*] in fische E. *vitaile*] vitayles IMS. *ich*] ISF *om.*
50. *eche*] eche a P; *but* IMFSE *omit* a. *hit*] S *om.* *smylle*] *so* PE; smelle IMS; smel F. *oþer—hit*] or at his nese smelle M.
51. *and*] an P. *melke*] & melke E.
52. *For-sleuthed* IF] For-slewþed M; For-slewþyd G; For-sleuthe PE S; *see* B-text. [*and* MIFSG] PE *om.* *hous*] þe hous S; an hous I; houses M.
53. *þedom* MIFSE] þedam P.

Sloth falls down swooning, but *Vigilate* wakes him,

A 64 "Repente þe," quaþ repentaunce · [and] ryȝt *with* þat he swouned,

Til *vigilate* þe veille · vette wat*er* at hus eyen,
And flatte on hus face · and fast on hym criede,

and bids him repent.

And seide, "war fro wanhope · þat wol þe by-traye.
'Ich am sory for my synnes' · seye to þy-selue,
And bet þy-selue on þe brest · and bidde god of grace;

B 82 For *þer* [is no gilte so gret] · þat hus goodnesse ne ys more."

Then Sloth sat up and blessed himself,

þanne sat sleuthe vp · and seynede hym ofte,
And made a-vowe by-for god · for hus foule sleuthe,

and vowed he would always go to church early and regularly,

"Shal no soneday þis seuene ȝer be · bote sycknesse hit make,
þat ich ne shal do me or daye · to þe dere churche,
And huyre matyns and masse · as ich a monke were.
Shal no Ale after mete · holde me þennes,

and attend evensong.

Til ich haue hurd euesong · ich by-hote to þe rode!"

B 232 The branches of sloth.

Ac whiche be þe braunches · þat bryngeþ [men] to sleuthe?

Ys, whanne a man mourneþ nat · for hus mysdedes;
þe penaunce þat þe prest enioyneþ · parfourneþ vuele,
Doþ non almys-dedes · and drat nat of synne,

56. *Repente þe*] Repentedest þe noght I. [*and* MIF] PSE *om.* *swouned*] swounede SI; swowenede E; souned P. *he swouned*] i-sowenede M.

57. *vette*] fette IMSE; *but* F *also has* vette. *at*] for M. *hus*] þe E.

58. *flatte*] flatte it I.

59. *war fro*] ware þe for I; be war of M. *wol*] wolde I.

61. *on*] vpon I; in M. *þe*] þi M. *god*] him I. *of*] of his S.

62. *þer*] I *om.* [*is—gret* I] is gult noon so gret SG; is gilt noon so gret F; nys no synne so gret M; nys non so gret synne PE. *ne ys*] nys E; is IMSF.

63. *vp*] him vp I. *seynede*] sygned E; seyned (*with the gloss* i. signauit) I; signed F.

64. *a-vowe*] a-fowe E. *by-for*] tofore IF. *god*] *miswritten* good P.

65. *þis—be*] be þis seue ȝer I. *bote*] but if I.

66. *or*] ar IS.

67. *huyre*] here IMF.

69. *hurd euesong*] euesong y-herde I. *to—rode*] þe to rede I.

70. [*men* ISMFG] me PE.

71. *whanne*] wanne P.

72. *penaunce*] pènaunces I. *enioyneþ*] putteth F; Inneþ (!) E. *parfourneþ*] parformeþ hit M; performed I. *vuele*] euel I; euele M. *parfourneþ vuele*] performy he nelle E.

73. *non*] now (!) E. *almys-dedes*] almes-dede IM. *and drat*] ne dret M; drat him I; trete (!) E. *of*] to E.

Lyueþ aȝens þe by-leyue · and no lawe kepeþ,
And haþ no lykynge to lerne · ne of oure lord hure, † The slothful man has no wish to learn.
Bote harlotrie oþer horedom · oþer elles of som wynnyng. 76
Whan men carpen of cryst · oþer of clennesse of soule,
He wext wroþ, and wol nat huyre · bote wordes of murthe.
Penaunce and poure men · [and] þe passion of seyntes,
He hateþ to huyre þer-of · and alle þat þer-of carpen. He hates to hear the legends of saints.
Thuse beþ þe braunches, be war · þat bryngeþ man to wanhope. 81
Ȝe lordes and ladyes · and legates of holy churche,
þat feden fool sages · flaterers and lyers,
And han lykynge to lyþen hem · in hope to do ȝow lawghe: 84
Ve uobis qui ridetis, [quia lugebitis,] et cetera: Luke vi. 25.
And ȝeueþ suche mede and mete · and poure men refusen,
In ȝoure deþ-deynge · ich drede me sore
Lest þo manere men · to moche sorwe ȝow brynge; 87 B 233
As god wole; *Consencientes & agentes pari pena punientur.*
Patriarkes and prophetes · prechours of godes wordes Preachers save men's souls,
Sauen þorgh here sermons · mannes soule fro helle; 89 but flatterers are the fiend's pandars.
Ryȝt so flaterers and foles · aren þe fendes procuratores,

74. *Lyueþ*] And (*sic*) M. *by-leyue*] bileue EMS; bileeue I.
75. *haþ*] hadde S. *oure*] houre P. *hure*] here M; to here IF.
76. *Bote*] Bot to I. *oþer* (1)] and MI. *oþer* (2)] & I.
77. *Whan*] Wan P. *of* (2)] MF *om.*
78. *wext*] wexiþ SF; wexeþ M; wex F. *huyre*] here MI.
79. [*and* I] PMSEF *omit; but see* B-text, xiii. 419.
80. *huyre*] here MIF.
81. *þe*] E *om. war*] i-war M; y-war I. *man*] a man I; men MES.
84. *lyþen*] liken I; leuen E. *lawghe* I] lauȝe E; lauwhe M; *spelt* lawe P. [*quia lugebitis* E] PISM *om.*
86. *sore*] ful sore MF.
87. *As—wole*] *in* P *only.*
89. *mannes soule*] many soules M.
90. *aren*] bon ME; beþ S. *fendes*] deueles M. *procuratoures*] hynus F.

Entysen men þorgh here tales · to synne and to harlotrie.
Clerkus þat knowen þis · sholde kenne lordes, 92
What dauid seide of suche men · as þe sauter telleþ,
Ps. c. 7 (Vulg.). *Non habitabit in medio domus mee qui facit superbiam, qui loquitur iniqua.*
Sholde non harlot haue Audience · in halle ne in chaumbre, 94
þer þat wise men were; · (witnesse of godes wordes),
Noþer a mys-proud man · among lordes [be] a-lowed.
Clerks welcome the king's minstrels. Clerkus and knyȝtes · welcomeþ kynges mynstrales,
[And] for loue of here lordes · lithen hem at festes;
So also the rich should welcome beggars. Muche more, me þenkeþ · riche men auhte
Haue beggers by-fore hem · whiche beþ godes mynstrales, 100
As he seith hym-self · seynt Iohan bereth witnesse,
Luke x. 16. *Qui uos spernit, me eciam spernit.*
Ye rich, entertain God's minstrels, the poor, Ther-for ich rede ȝow riche · reueles when ȝe maken
For to solace ȝoure soules · suche mynstrales to haue;
þe poure for a fol sage · syttynge at þy table, 104
have a learned man to teach you, With a lered man, to lere þe · what oure lord suffrede,
For to sauy þy saule · fram satan þyn enemye,

91. *Entysen*] To entise I; Entysyng S; & tisen E. *tales*] false tales I. *to* (2)] EI *om.* *harlotrie*] harletrie P; *but see* l. 76.

92. *kenne*] kenne hit MS.

93. *seide*] saith IF. *qui* (2)] neque qui M.

95. *wise men* IMSEF] *written* wysmen P. *witnesse* E] whitnesse P; withnesse M. *of*] on MSF. *witnesse of*] witnesseþ I (*as in* B-text).

96. *Noþer a*] Ne a M; Ne no I. *mys-proud* IMSF] mys-prout P; mysproute E. [*be* MIF] PESG *om.* *a-lowed* SM] a-louwed P; loued IF; & lewed (!) E.

97. *welcomeþ* IMSEF] wolcomeþ (?) P.

98. [*And* IMSFG] PE *om.* *here lordes*] heore lord M; oure lord (!) IS. *festes*] heore festes M; feste S.

100. *whiche*] þe which I; þat M. *beþ*] ben MS.

101. *Iohan*] Ion EMSF. *witnesse*] whittnesse P. *me eciam*] eciam me E. *eciam*] IMSF *om.*

102. *Ther-for*] For-þy I.

104. *fol* IM] foole E; foul P; fal SF. *þy*] þe M.

105. *With*] Whith P. *lere*] lerne M.

106. *sauy*] saue ESIF; haue M.

And. fiþele the, with-oute flateryng · of goode fryday þe [geste], **B 234**

And a blynde man for a bordiour · oþer a bedreden womman, 108

also a blind man for a jester, or a bedridden woman to cry *largesse*.

To crye a largesse by-fore oure lorde · ȝoure goode loos to shewe.

Thuse þre manere mynstrales · maken a man to lauhe;

In hus deþ-deynge · thei don hym gret comfort,

þat by hus lyue [litheþ] hem · and loueþ hem to huyre.

Thuse solaceþ þe soule · til hym-self be-falle 113

These solace the soul.

In a wel good hope, for he wroghte so · a-mong worthy seyntes;

Ther flaterers and foles · with here foule wordes

Leden tho þat lithen hem · to luciferes feste, 116

With *turpiloquio*, a lay of sorwe · and lucifers fiþele,

To perpetuel peyne · oþer purgatorye as wykke;

For he litheþ and loueþ · þat godes lawe despiceþ;

Qui histrionibus dat, demonibus sacrificat. Peter Cantor; cap. 47.

Tho was repentaunce redy · and radde hem alle to knele, **B 83**

"Ich shal by-seche for alle synfulle · oure sauyour of grace, 121

Repentance prays for all the penitents.

To a-menden ous of oure mysdedes · do mercy to ous alle.

God, of þy goodnesse · þow gonne þe worlde make,

And of nouht madest ouht · and man lyke þi-selue,

107. *fiþele* EF] fyþele S; fitayle P; vitaile M. *with-oute*] wiþ a I. *flateryng*] failyng M. [*geste* F] feste PEM; beste S; *cf.* storye *in* B-text.

109. *oure lorde*] ȝoure dere M.

110. *Thuse*] þese SM; þise I; þis E. *mynstrales*] men M.

111. *In*] And in IMSF.

112. [*litheþ*] loueþ PEMS; leued I; leeueth F (*all wrong; for cf.* l. 119, *and see* B-text). *loueþ*] likeþ M. *huyre*] here MIF.

113. *Thuse*] þese SI; þei M; þis E. *befalle*] bi-falle M; be y-falle I.

114. *wel* IMSE] wele P. *good*] IMSF *om.*

115. *with*] whith P; and M.

116. *lithen*] leuen E; liken S; lightede I. *feste*] halle M.

117. *turpiloquio*] I. *om.* *fiþele* MISF] fitele P; viþele E.

118. *wykke*] wicked MS.

119. *litheþ*] liþe E; lithed I. *loueþ*] loued I. *Qui—sacrificat*] Dare histrionibus MS; Dare histrionib*us* est dare demonib*us* F; *cf.* B. xv. 336.

120. *redy*] aredy I; al redy S. *hem*] hym E.

122. *do*] and do M. *to*] on M.

123. *of*] þat of I. *þow gonne*] gunne MF; þow gannust S. *þe*] þy I.

124. *of—madest*] madest of noght I. *þi*] þe P; *but see* l. 60.

"O God, who didst suffer man to commit sin, for the ultimate benefit of mankind,

Sitthe soffredest hym do synne · a syknesse to ous alle,
And for oure best, as ich by-leyue · what-euere þe book telle;
O felix culpa, o necessàrium peccatum ade!
For þorw [þat] synne þy sone · sent was tyl erthe, 127

and wast made man;

And by-cam man of [a] mayde · mankynde to a-mende,
And madest þi-selue with þy sone · oure soule and body lyche;

† (John xiv. 9, 10);

Ego [in] patre, & pater in me est; & qui uidet me, patrem meum uidet.

B 84 and didst die upon Good Friday; (Eph. iv. 8);

And sitthe in oure secte · as hit semed, þow deydest,
On a fryday, in forme of man · feledest oure sorwe;
Captiuam duxit captiuitatem.

when the sun was darkened at noon-day;

The sonne for sorwe *þer*-of · lees lyght for a tyme, 132
A-bowte midday whanne [most] lyght ys · and meel-tyme of seyntes;
Feddest þo with thi fresshe blod · oure for-fadres in helle,

(Isaiah ix. 2);

Populus qui ambulabat in tenebris, lucem magnam uidit.

The lyght þat lemed out of þe · lucifer hit blente,
And broughte þyne blessede fro þennes · in-to þe blysse of heuene. 136

and on the third day didst rise again;

The þridde day *þer*-after · thow ȝedest in oure secte;
A synful marye þe seyh · er seynt marie þy moder,

125. *Sitthe*] And seþþe I; Siþþe þou S. *do*] to IM.

126. *oure*] þe IMS. *by-leyue*] bileue M; be-leue S. *euere*] so I.

127. [*þat* IMSFG] PE *om. tyl*] to IM.

128. [*a* IMF] PSE *om.*

129. *madest*] medlet (!) E. *þi-selue*] *written* þe-selue P. *body*] oure body I. *oure—lyche*] boþe bodi and soule i-liche M. [*in* IMSEFG] P *om. uidet*] uidit (*twice*) S; (*second time*) I. *patrem—uidet*] videt & patrem meum EMF.

130. *oure*] ȝoure I. *secte* · ISF] siȝte M; siȝt E; *miswritten* secke P; *but see* l. 137. *þow*] IMSF *om.*

131. *in*] in þe M. *feledest*] & feldust S.

133. *whanne*] wanne P. [*most* IMSFEG] P *om.* *meel-tyme*] a multitude (!) M.

134. *þo*] E *om. fresshe*] flessch and IE; flesschly S. *for-fadres*] forme-faderes MS. *Populus*] Populus gencium S. IMSF *place* uidit *before* lucem.

135. *lemed*] leepe I.

136. *fro*] S *om.*

137. *þer-after*] after M. *secte*] siȝt M.

138. *seyh*] si M. *er*] or EMS; ar I. *moder*] dame I.

And al to solace synful · þow soffredest hit so were ;

Non ueni uocare iustos, sed peccatores ad peni- Mat. ix. 13.
tenciam.

And al þat marc hath ymad · matheu, Iohan, and
lucas,

Of þyne douhtieste dedes · was don [in] oure secte ; 141

Uerbum caro factum est. Jo. i. 14.

And by so moche hit semeþ · þe sykerloker we mowe B 85
Bydde and by-seche þe · yf hit be þy wil,
þat art ferst oure fader · and of flessh oure broþer, 144
And sitthen oure saueour · and seidest with þy tonge,
That what tyme we synful men · wolden be sory † Thou who didst promise to forgive penitents,
For dedes þat we han don ille · dampned sholde we be
neuere, 147
Yff we knewelechid and cryde · crist þer-of mercy ;

Quandocumque ingemuerit peccator, omnes ini- † Jer. xxxi. 34.
quitates eius non recordabor amplius.

And for þat mochel mercy · and marie loue þy moder,
Haue reuthe of alle þuse rybaudes · þat repenten hem we pray Thee, have mercy on all these penitents."
sore,
· þat euere þei gulte aȝens þe, god · in gost oþer in dede."
Thenne heute hope an horn · of *deus, tu conuersus* Then Hope seized a horn, and blew it; (Ps. lxx. 20, and xxxi. 1; Vulgate.)
uiuificabis nos, 152
And blew hit with *beati quorum* · *remisse sunt iniquita-*
tes, & cetera,
þat alle seyntes with synful men · songen with dauid,

139. *to*] so to I; forte M. *solace*] comforte þe S. *ad penitenciam*] IS *om.*
140. *Iohan*] Ion ESM. *and*] or S.
141. *douhtieste*] douȝti MG; douȝtyokest (*for* douȝtylokest) I. *was*] þat was S. [*in* IMSFG] on PE; *see* l. 137. *secte*] siȝte M. *Uerbum, &c.*] M *om.*
144. *art* IMSF] ert PE. *ferst*] formest E.
145. *seidest*] seidest it I.
147. *sholde*] schulle S.
148. *knewelechid*] knowelechen M. *cryde*] crien M. *þer-of*] þer-of þi M; *þer*-fore I. *recordabor amplius*] recordabuntur MS; recordaberis F.
149. *þat*] I *om.* *mochel*] mochel *or* mechel P; mochul S; mychel EG; muchel I; mykel M.
150. *of*] on IM. *þat repenten*] and repenteden I. *hem*] M *om.*
151. *gulte*] agulte MS. *þe*] S *om.*
153. *& cetera*] et quorum tecta sunt peccata IG; et quorum tecta M.
154. *with*] wit P; for ISF. *men*] man E; I *om.* *songen* IES] sungen F; songe MG; syngen P.

Ps. xxxv. 7; (Vulgate.) *Homines & iumenta saluabis, domine, quemadmodum multiplicasti misericordiam tuam, deus!*

Then a thousand men thronged together, hoping to find Truth.

A þousend of men þo · þrongen to-gederes,
Cryyng vpward to crist · and to hus clene moder,
To haue grace to go to treuthe · god leyue þat þei mote!

A 67 But no one knows the way.

Ac *þer* was weye non so wys · þat þe way þider couthe,
Bote blostrede forth as bestes · ouer baches and hulles,

At last they met a Palmer in pilgrim's weeds,

Til late was and longe · þat þei a lede mette,
A-paraild as a paynym · in pylgrymes wise.

a staff in his hand, a bag and a bowl by his side,

He bar a bordon ybounde · with a brod lyste,
In a weythwynde wyse · ywryþe al aboute;
A bolle and a bagge · he bar by hus syde,

ampullæ in his hat, and marked with crosses and

And an hondred hanypeles · on hus hatte seten,
Signes of syse · and shilles of galys,

B 86 keys on his cloak.

And meny crouche on hus cloke · and keyes of rome,
And þe fernycle by-fore · for men sholde knowe,

A 68

[And se] by hus sygnes · wham he souht hadde.

They asked him whence he came; and he said, "From Sinai, the Sepulchre, Bethlehem, and Babylon."

Thys folke frayned hym furst · fro whennes he come?
"Fro sinay," he sayde · "and fro þe sepulcre.
In bethleem, in babilonie · ich haue ybe bothe,
In ermanie, in alisaundre · and in damascle.
Ȝe may see by my sygnes · þat sitten on my cappe,

domine] I *om.*

156. *Cryyng*] Cried I. *vpward*] out-ward E.

157. *leyue*] leue IMSEG; *g*raunte F.

158. *was*] ne was I. *weye*] wye G; *wit* E; wiȝt F. *þider*] M *om.*

159. *baches*] balkes M; bank*us* S.

161. *in*] & in S.

163. *weythwynde*] weþ-wynde ES; weþe-wynde MI. *ywryþe*] i-wriþen MF; wryþe S.

165. *And*] I *om.* *hondred*] hondret of M; hundred of I. *hanypeles*] *so also* F; hanyples S; hanpers E; annpolles (*sic*) I; halfpenes (!) M.

166. *syse*] sysis S; sisile F. *shilles*] schelles IMS.

167. *And*] M *om.* *meny*] many a MSF. *and*] I *om.*

168. *fernycle*] vernycle EIS; vernacle M. *knowe*] yknowe EI.

169. [*And se* IFS] & seo G; And sen M; As PE; *see* l. 174. *hus*] þe I. *wham*] what MF. *hadde*] S *om.*

170. *frayned—furst*] furst frayneden him M. *whennes*] wennes P; whanne þat M.

171. *sepulcre*] sepulcre of oure lord I.

172. *bethleem*] bedlem SI. *in*] and I. *ybe bothe*] be in boþe IMF; be in bode (*sic*) S.

173. *ermanie*] armonye I. *damascle*] *so also in* ES; damaske FG; damasch alse M. *and—damascle*] I haue be in boþe (*repeated from last line*) I.

174. *my*] þe I; S *om.* *on*] in S.

Ich haue ysouht goode seyntes · for my soules helthe,
And walked ful wide · in wete and in drye." 176

"Knowst þow [ouȝt] a cor-seynt," quaþ ich · "þat men clepeþ treuthe?
"Knowest thou a saint named Truth; where dwells he?"

Couthest þow wissen ous þe way · whoder out treuthe wonyeþ?"

"Nay, so god me helpe" · seyde þe gome þenne,
He answers that he cannot tell.

Ich seyh neuere palmere · with pyk ne with scrippe
Asken after hym, er now · in þys ilke place." 181

HIC PRIMO COMPARET PETRUS PLOUHMAN.
Enter PIERS THE PLOWMAN.

"Peter!" quaþ a plouhman · and putte forth hus hefd,
"Peter!" quoth he, "I know him well.

"Ich knowe hym as kyndeliche · as clerkus don hure bokes.

Conscience and kyndewit · kende me to hus place, 184
Conscience and Common Sense told me where he lives.

And maked me sykeren hym sitthen · to seruen hym for euere,

Boþe to sowe and to setten · þe whyle ich swynke myghte,

With-ynne and with-oute · to wayten hus profyt.
A 69 B 87 I have everywhere watched his profit; and I please him well.

Ich haue yben his folwer · al þes fourty wynter, 188
And serued treuthe sothlyche · somdel to paye;
In alle kynne craftes · þat he couthe deuyse
Profitable to þe plouh · he putte me to lerne; 191

175. *soules helthe*] soule hele S.
177. *Knowst*] Knowest IMF; Knowist S. [*ouȝt* GS] auȝt F; ought I; out M; PE *om.* *cor-seynt* MISE FG] core-seynt P. *ich*] þey I. *men*] man E. *clepeþ*] calleþ IM.
178. *Couthest þow*] Coudestow I; Kanstou M; Knowist þow S. *wissen*] teche M. *þe way*] to-day I. *whoder* E] woder P; whoþur S; wheder I. *whoder out*] þider þat M; whedur F. *wonyeþ*] woneþ I; woned E.
179. *so*] sone so M. *god me*] me god ISF.
180. *with* (1)] whith P. *scrippe* EIMSFG] shrippe P; *see* ix. 60.
181. *er*] or EFG; but I. *ilke*] I *om.* *Hic—Plouhman*] *in* PE *only.*
182. *a*] S *om.* *hefd*] heued IF; heed M; hed E; hese (*sic*) S.
183. *Ich*] Iich P.
185. *maked*] made EMF; maden SI. *hym*] I *om.* *seruen* ISF] serue MEG; *miswritten* seren P.
186. *whyle*] wyle P. *Here follows* —& to (Forte M) sowen his seed · & sewen his bestus FGIM; *which* (*though in* B. v. 550) *is scarcely wanted.*
189. *serued*] y serue I. *somdel*] & somdel E.
190. *he couthe*] i coude MF.
191. *Profitable* IMSEF] Prophitable P. *to*] as for IG.

And þauh ich seye hit my-self · ich *ser*uede hym to paye.
Ich haue myn hyre of hym wel · and oþer whyle more;
He pays me well." He ys [þe] most prest paiere · þat eny poure man knoweth.
He with-halt non hewe · hus hyre ouere euen;
He ys louh as a lombe · and leel of hus tonge,
And ho so wilneþ to wyte · wher þat treuthe wonyeþ,
Ich wol wissen 3ow wel · ryght to hus place."
The pilgrims then offer Piers money, which he refuses. "3e, leue peers," quaþ þo pylgrymes · and profrede peers mede.
"Nay, by þe peril of my soule" · peers gan swere,
"Ich nolde fonge a ferthing · for seynt Thom*as* shryne!
Were it told to treuthe · þat ich toke mede,
He wolde louye me þe lasse · a longe tyme after.

ALTA UIA AD FIDELITATEM EST OBSERUATIO .X. PRECEPTORUM, UT DICIT PETRUS PLOUHMAN.

But he tells them to go through Meekness, till they come to Conscience. Ac who so wol wende · þer as treuthe dwelleþ,
This ys þe heye weye þyderwarde · wyteþ wel þe soþe.
3e most gon þorwe meknesse · alle men and wommen,
Tyl 3e come to *con*science · knowen of god selue,
A 70 That 3e loue hym as lord · leelliche a-bouen alle;
That ys to seye sothliche · 3e sholde ra*þer* deye
Than eny dedliche synne do · for drede o*þer* for *prey*ere.
And þenne 3oure neghebores next · in none wyse a-peyre,

192. *seruede*] serue I.
193. *whyle*] wyle P; whiles I.
194. [þe IMSG] PE *om.* *most prest*] presteste I; moste beste M.
195. *hewe* I] hywe P; hyne EMS FG.
196. *louh*] as lowe I.
197. *wher*] wer P. *wonyeþ*] woneþ FIM.
199. *3e leue*] I leue S. *þo*] þise I; þe ES. *þo pylgrymes*] þat pilgrim M.
200. *peril* IG] perel EMF; pereil P. *swere*] to swere IG; to swerie M.
201. *nolde*] ne wolde M; ne wil I.
202. *to*] ISF *om.*
203. *Alta—plouhman*] *so also* E; Nota viam ad *vèritatem* F; Decem mandata G; IMS *om.*
204. *wol*] wulde S; wolde E. *wende*] wene S. *as*] þat M. *as—dwelleþ*] trouþe is I. I *adds*—þis the way þiderward, *and omits* l. 205.
205. *heye*] IM *om.* *wyteþ*] wite þe (*sic*) E. *þe* (2)] for M.
206. *most*] mote I.
207. *to*] in-to IS. *knowen—selue*] I-knowe of god hi*m*-silue S.
208. *as*] as a S; as 3oure F; I *om.*
211. *And*] M *om.* *neghebores*] neghebo*u*r is I; neihebore M.

Oþer-wyse þan ȝe wolde · thei wroughte ȝou alle tymes. B 88
And so goþ forth by þe [brok] · a brygge as hit were,
Tyl ȝe fynde a forde · 'ȝoure-fadres-honoureþ;'
Wadeþ wel in [þat] water · and wascheþ ȝow wel þere,
And ȝe shulle lepe þe lyghtloker · al ȝoure lyf-tyme;

"Next (says he) cross the brook by the ford called Honour-your-fathers.

Honora patrem & matrem, & eris longeuus super terram. Exod. xx. 12.

Þanne shalt þow [see] 'swery-nat- · bot-yt-be-for-nede-
Nameliche-an-ydel- · þe-name-of-god-al-myghty.'
Þanne shalt þow come by a croft · ac com [þou] nat þer-ynne,
Þe croft hatte 'coueyte-nat- · mennes-catel-ne-here-wyues-
Ne-non-of-here-seruans- · þat-nuyen-hem-myghte.'
Loke þou bere nat þere aweye · bote [ȝif] yt be þyn owne.

Pass by Swear-not-in-vain and the croft called Covet-not;

Two stockes þer stonden · ac stynt þow nouht þere;
Thei hatte 'stel-net' and 'slee-nat' · stryk forth by hem bothe,
And leue hem in þy lift hand · and loke nouht þer-after,
And hold wel þyn halyday · heye tyl euen.

also by the stocks named Steal-not and Slay-not.

212. *Oþer*] And oþer PE; *but* IMFS *omit* And. *wroughte*] dude M.
213. *þe*] a MF. [*brok* M] brook SF; bok P; book IG; boke, *altered to* broke E; *cf.* B-text.
214. *Tyl*] For to I. *fadres*] fader I. *honoureþ* IMFE] honouruþ S; honourieþ P.
215. *wel in*] in at I. [*þat* IMFSE] þe P. *wascheþ*] wasche PE; wassh M; *but* wasshuþ S; wasscheþ IF.
216. *shulle*] shuld S. *Honora, &c.*] M *om.* *& eris, &c.*] IS *om.*
217. *þanne*] And þanne I. [*see* I] go by F; PEMS *om.* *Cf.* B-text. *yt*] ȝif hit ES. *nede* EMFS] nude P.
218. *Nameliche*] And nameliche I. *Here* M *inserts*—
þanne schalt þow come bi an hi hul · be war þer of þe weiȝe,
þat me calleþ 'halt þyn holidai · fro alle liþer dedes.'
But this is interpolated; for see l. 226.
219. *þanne*] ȝut M. *ac*] bute M. [*þou* EIF] þow M; PS *om.*
220. *hatte*] hatteþ M.
221. *seruans*] seruauns M; seruauntes ESF; seruauntz I. *nuyen hem*] hem noyȝe M.
222. [*ȝif* MS] if IG; PEF *om.* *owne* MSF] owe PE.
223. *stynt* ESF] stynte MI; stinte G; stunt P.
224. *hatte*] hatten M; hat SF. *and*] ne M. *hem*] I *am.*
225. *in*] on MFG. *þy*] þe I. *loke*] loke þou E. *nouht*] I *om.*
226. M *omits.* *See footnote to* l. 218.

Turn aside from the hill Bear-no-false-witness,

Thenne shalt þou blenche at a bergh · 'ber-no-fals-
wytnesse,' 227

A 71

He ys friþed yn with floreynes · and oþer fees menye,
Loke þow plocke *þer* no plaunte · for peryl of þy soule.

B 89

and then shall ye see Say-sooth.

Þanne shalt þow [see] 'seye-soþe- · so-hit-be-to-done-
In-no-man*ere*-elles-nat- · for-no-mannes-preyere.'

So shall ye come to a court, with walls of Wit, and battlements of Christendom,

So shalt þow come to a court · as cleer so þe sonne, 232
The mot ys of mercy · in myddes þe man*ere*,
Al þe wallynge ys of wit · for wil ne sholde hit wynne.
The kernels beþ of crystendome · þat kynde to saue,
And boteraced with 'by-leyue-so- · oþer-þow-[best]-
nat-saued.' 236

with houses that are roofed with Love.

Alle þe houses beþ heled · halles and chambres,
With no lede, bote with loue · and with leel-speche.
The barres aren of buxumnesse · as breþeren of on
wombe.

The bridge is Pray-well.

The brigge hatte 'bid-wel- · the-bet-myght-þow-spede;'
Eche pyler ys of penaunce · and preyers to seyntes,
The hokes aren almys-dede[s] · þat þe ȝates hongen on.

Grace is the gate-keeper, and his man is called Amend-you, to whom give a token.

Grace hatte þe gate-warde · a good man for soþe, 243
Hus man hatte amende-ȝow · meny man hym knoweþ.
Tel hym þys ilke tokne · 'treuthe wot þe sothe,

227. *bergh*] berwe I; borw M; borȝ S; borgh G; burgh F. *ber*] ber þow M. *wytnesse*] wyttnesse P.

228. *He*] *þis* E; IMSF *om.* *friþed* MIG] fryþud S; freþed P; yfreþed E. *with*] wit P.

229. *þer—plaunte*] no plante *þere* I.

230. [*see* I] go by F; PEMS *om.* *Cf.* B-text; *and see* l. 217.

232. *So*] And so I. *court*] cot I. *as*] so MG. *so*] as MIS.

233. *in—manere*] in þe middes is þe maner M; þe man*er* is (*sic*) þe myddes I; þe man*er* in þe middes G.

234. *Al*] And al I. *ys*] hys P. *wit*] witt P.

235. *kernels*] corneles E; carneles MIS; carnell*us* F.

236. *And*] I *om.* *boteraced*] boterasyd S; I-betr*a*sed (*for* I-botrased) I. *by-leyue*] bi-leue MIE; by-lef S. [*best* IM] beest G; worsthest (*sic*) P; worst ES. *Cf.* B-text.

237. *Alle*] And alle I. *houses*] hous I. *heled*] y-heled I; i-heled M.

239. *aren*] ben M; beþ E. *of*] S *om.* *breþeren* IEF] breþeryn S; breþerne M; breþres P.

240. *brigge* EIMF] brygge S; bregge P. *hatte*] hatteþ M. *bet*] betere S. *þow*] þe I.

241. *Eche*] Vche a I; On M. *penaunce*] penances I.

242. *aren*] beþ E; arn MF. *dedes* IMEF] dede PS.

243. *hatte*] hatteþ M; hat SF.

244. *hatte*] hatteþ M; hat SF. *ȝow*] how (!) S.

Ich am sory for my synnes · and so shal ich euere,
And parfourne þe penaunce · þat þe preest me highte.'
Rydeþ to a-mende-ȝow · [mekeþ] ȝow to hus mayster grace,
To openen and vndo · þe hye ȝate of heuene,
That adam and eue · aȝens ous alle shutte:
Per euam ianua celi cunctis clausa est, et per mariam uirginem iterum patefacta est.
A ful [leel] lady · [vn-leek] hure of grace;
Hue haþ a keye and a clyket · thauh þe kynge slepe,
And may lede yn wham hue loueþ · as here luf lykeþ.
And yf grace graunte þe · to go yn in þys wise,
þow shalt se treuthe sytte · in þy selue herte,
And solace þy soule · and saue þe fro pyne.
Al-so charge charyte · a churche to make
In þyn hole herte · to herberghwen alle treuthe,
And fynde alle manere folke · fode to hure saules,
Yf loue and leaute · and owre lawe be trewe:
Quodcumque petieritis in nomine meo, dabitur enim uobis.
Be war þenne of wratthe · þat wickede shrewe,
For he haþ enuye to hym · þat in þyn herte sytteþ,
And pokeþ forth pruyde · to preysy thi-selue.

A 72 Go to Amend-you and pray his master to open the gates of Paradise.'

B 90 Mary hath the key.

† Charity shall make a church within thy heart.

† John xvi. 23.

Take heed of Wrath,

247. *parfourne*] parforme EMS; *parformed* IFG.
248. *Rydeþ*] Redeþ M. [*mekeþ* M] meek PS; meke G; & meke EF; to meke I. *mayster*] maistres I.
249. *and*] & to S. *ȝate*] ȝates PEMS; *but* IF *haue* gate; *see* l. 251.
250. *ianua celi*] IMSF *om.*
251. [*leel* EMSFG] lęle I; bel P. [*vn-leek* IS] vnlek G; vn-lyke P; vnlike E; vnlocket M; vnlowked F; (vn-leek = unlocked; *of which* vnlike *is a corruption*). *hure*] hire E; hit MSG; it F; is I; (*hure* = her, i. e. the gate).
252. *Hue*] Sche M; ȝo E; And he I. *a* (1)] þe EISFG; M *om.* *a* (2)] þe IG; MSF *om.* *clyket*] clykett F.
253. *wham*] þat I. *hue*] sche M; he I; ȝo E. *here luf*] hure leef M; hire leef I; ȝo hire-silf E.
254. *yn*] MIFG *om.*
255. *se—sytte*] treuþe sette E. *þy selue*] þyn owne M.
256. *pyne*] peyne MI.
257. *Al-so*] And I.
258. *herberghwen*] herberwe I; herberowe S; herborwen E; herborewe M. *treuthe*] trewe I.
259. *fode* EMS] foode I; foude P.
260. *owre*] ȝoure M. *trewe*] trywe P. *dabitur enim*] a patre, dabit S.
261. *Be*] Ac be I.
263. *pokeþ forth*] poked out E. *forth*] for S. *preysy*] preyse EIMFS.

The boldnesse of þy bynfet · makeþ þe blynde·þenne,
lest ye be driven out, So worst þow dryuen out as deuh · and þe dore closed,
Y-keyed and yclyketed · to close þe with-oute,
and the door be closed and locked against you. Hapliche an hondred wynter · ar þow eft entrie.
þus myght þou lese hus loue · to lete wel by þi-selue,
And geten [hit] a-geyn þorw grace · ac þorgh no [gifte] elles.
But there are also seven sisters there at the gates, Ther ben seuene sustres · that seruen treuthe euere,
And aren porters at posternes · þat to þe place longen;
called Abstinence, Humility, Charity, Chastity, Patience, Peace, A 73 B 91 and Bounty. þat on hatte abstinence · and humilite anoþer,
Charite and chastite · ben hus chef maydenes,
Pacience and pees · muche puple helpen,
Largenesse þat lady · lat yn ful menye;
Non of hem alle · helpe may yn betere,
For hue paieþ for prisons · in places and in peynes.
And ho is sybbe to þuse seuene · [so me god helpe!
He is wondirlich welcome · & fayre vndirfonge.
Without their aid it is hard to gain entrance at that gate." Ho is not sib to þese seuene] · sothly to telle,
Hit is ful hard, by myn heued · eny of ȝou alle
To geten ingang at eny gate · bote grace be þe more."
The cut-purse, the ape-ward, and "By cryst," quath a kitte-pors · "ich haue no kyn þere."

264. *þy*] þe S. *bynfet*] benfet M; benefet ES; benfetes I.
Here MS. F *has lost* eight *leaves.*
265. *worst* MS] worth PEIG; *cf.* l. 236, *foot-note. deuh*] *so* PS; dew M; dewe I; deþ (!) E.
266. *yclyketed*] *miswritten* yclykeded P. *with*] wit P; þer M.
267. *an*] & E. *ar*] er IMS; or E. *entrie*] *so* PE; entre IMSG.
268. *myght*] myth M; myghtust S. *lese*] leue S. *to*] and M. *þi* EM] þy I; þe PS; *cf.* l. 263.
269. [*hit* MSG] it I; PE *om.* *þorw —þorgh*] wiþ grace · and wiþ M. [*gifte* EI] gift M; gefte S; gyse P.
270. *Ther*] Ac þer I. *sustres*] sustren M.
271. *aren*] *so* PSI; arn M; ben E. *at*] ouer þe I; and (!) M. *to—longen*] to þat place bilongen I; longen to þe place M.
272. *hatte*] hatteþ M. *humilite*] humblete I.
273. *maydenes* IMS] maydones PE.
274. *helpen*] þey helpe I.
275. *lat*] *so* PIMS; lateþ E.
277. *hue*] sche M; ȝo E; he I. *prisons*] prisoneres I.
278. *ho*] who EI; ho so S; whose M. P *omits latter half of* l. 278, l. 279, *and former half of* l. 280, *which are supplied from* S; *found also in* IMEG.
279. *He*] IMEG *om.*
280. *Ho*] Who IG; Who so E; Whose M. *þese* M] þis SIE.
281. *heued*] hed MES.
282. *geten*] gete eny S. *ingang* ESG] ingange I; in-gate M; engang P.

"Ne ich," quath an apewarde · "by ouht þat ich knowe!" wafer-maker declare they have
"Wyte god," quaþ a wafrestre · "wist ich þe soþe, 285 no kindred *there*;
Ich wolde no forþer a fot · for no freres prechinge."
"3us," quaþ peers plouhman · and pokede hem alle to goode; but Piers tells them Mercy dwells there also, who is of kin to all sinful men.
"Mercy is [a] mayde þere · hath myght ouer hem alle;
And hue is sybbe to alle synful · and hure sone boþe.
And þorwe þe help of hem two · hope þow non oþer,
Thow myght gete grace ther · so þow go by tyme." 291
"3e, *villam emi*," quaþ on · "and now most ich þudere, † One sinner says he has bought a
To loke how me lykeþ hit" · and tok hus leue at peers. farm; (Luke xiv. 18);
Anoþer a-non ryght · nede seyde he hadde † another, that he has bought five
To folwen fif 3okes · "for-thy me by-houeþ 295 yoke of oxen; (Luke xiv. 19);
To gon with a good wil · and [greiþliche] hem dryue;
For-þy ich praye 3ow, peers · paraunter, yf 3e meteþ
Treuthe, telleþ to hym · þat ich be excused."
Thenne was þer on heihte actif · an hosebounde he semed; † another, named Active, that he has just wedded a wife.
"Ich haue ywedded a wyf," quaþ he · "wel wantowen of maners; 300
Were ich seuenyght fro hure syghte · [synnen] hue wolde,

284. *by*] for S. *ouht*] nout M.
285. *Wyte*] By E. *wafrestre*] wafrustere S; waferer M. *þe soþe*] for soþe SG; þis forsoþe I.
286. *Ich—no*] I wilde nout M; Wolde I neuer I. *a*] no I.
287. *3us*] 3is I. *peers*] peres þe I. *pokede* EMSG] pukede P; plokede I; *cf.* l. 263.
288. [*a* EMIG] PS *om.*
289. *hue—sybbe*] sibbe is 3o E.
290. *two* E] tuo I; to PMS.
291. *tyme*] tymes I.
292. *þudere*] *so* PE; þidere M; þider I; þeþer S.
293. *me—hit*] hit likeþ me M. *at*] of E.
294. *nede* EMSG] ne (*sic*) I; nude P. *seyde*] he seide MIS.
295. *folwen*] falwe with I. *for-thy*] for-whi M.
296. *with*] wit P. [*greiþliche* M] graithliche I; grettliche PESG.
297. *For-þy*] For-whi M.
298. *to hym*] him þis I.
299. *Thenne*] Þo M. *heihte*] hi3te MI; hi3t E; hyet S; heet G. *an*] & E.
300. *quaþ he*] I *om.* *wel*] ful I. *wantowen*] wantoun I; wanton S.
301. *Were*] Where P. *seuenyght*] seue nyght IE; seuene ny3t MS. *syghte*] sith M; *miswritten* syghit P; I *om.* [*synnen* M] syngun S; sinege G; siggen E; seggen P; chiden I. *hue*] he PS; sche MI; 3o E; *but see* l. 304.

And loure on me and lyghtliche chide · and seye ich
loue anoþere.
For-þy, peers ploulman · ich praye þe telle hit treuthe,
Ich may nat come for a kytte · so hue cleueþ on me;
† Luke xiv. 20. *Vxorem duxi, et ideo non possum uenire.*"
Quaþ contemplacion, "by crist · thauh ich care suffre,
Famyn and defaute · folwen ich wolle peers;
A 74 B 93 Contemplation says, "the pilgrims need a guide." Ac þe wey ys so wyckede ·bote ho [so] hadde a gyde
þat myght folwen ous ech fot · for drede of mys-tornynge."

Hic explicit passus octauus.

302. *And*] M *om.* *chide*] saie I. *seye*] saide I. *loue*] loued EG.
303. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *peers*] peres þe I. *þe—hit*] ȝow telleþ M.
304. *for*] fro E. *a*] EI *om.* *hue*] ȝo E; sche MIS. *cleueþ* MISE] clyueþ P; cliueþ G. *cleueþ—me*] on me cleueþ M.
306. *folwen—wolle*] i wole folewe M.
307. *so*] ful S; wel G. [*so* EISG] se M; P *om.*
308. *ech*] ich a I.
COLOPHON. *So* PG; *so also in* ES, *omitting* Hic.

PASSUS IX.

Incipit passus Nonus.

THo seyde perken· plouhman · "by seynt peter of rome, (A 74 B 93)
Ich haue an half acre to eren · by þe hye weye.
Hadde ich ered þat half acre · and sowen hit after,
Ich wolde wende with 3ow · and þe wey teche."
"That were a long lettynge" · quaþ a lady in a skleire,
"What sholde we wommen · worche þe whiles?"
"Ich praye 3ow, for 3oure profit" · quaþ peers to þe ladyes,
"þat somme sewe þe sak · for shedynge of þe whete;
And 3e worþly wommen · with 3oure longe fyngres,
þat 3e on selke and sendel · sewen, whenne tyme ys,
Chesybles for chapelayns · churches to honoure.
Wyues and widowes · wolle and flax spynneþ;
Conscience consaileþ 3ow · cloþ for to make
For profit of þe poure · and plesaunce of 3ow-selue.

Piers says he will guide them, when he has ploughed his half-acre.

"That were long to wait," said a lady; "and what shall we women do meanwhile?"

Piers tells them to sew chasubles,

TITLE. *So* PEG; Incipit nonus S; Hic incipit passus nonus de uisione M; Passus Octauus, vt prius I.
1. *Tho—perken*] Quod perkyn þe I. *perken*] peres M.
2. *to—weye*] an eryng · & mote sowe hit after E. *Cf.* l. 3.
3. *sowen* S] i-sowen M; y-sowe IG. *and—after*] by þe hey wey E; *cf.* l. 2.
4. *with*] wit P.
5. *skleire*] chare I.
6. *þe*] þer M.
8. *whete*] wete P.
9. *worþly*] worthely I; worþi MS. *with*] wit P.
10. *selke*] silke EI. *sewen*] to sewen PE; to sewe I; *but* MSG *omit* to. *whenne*] wenne P. *tyme ys*] hit is tyme M.
11. *Chesybles*] For chesyblus S. *honoure* IMESG] honure P.
14. *poure*] poeple I.

A 75 B 94 For ich shal lene hem lyflode · bote yf þe lond faile,
As longe as ich lyue · for oure lordes loue in heuene.
and to help the poor labourers. And alle manere men · þat by þis molde buþ susteyned,
Helpeþ hem to worche wyghtly · þat wynneþ 3oure fode."

A knight declares he will help Piers to labour. "By cryst," quaþ a kny3t þo · "he kenneþ oûs þe beste;
Ac on þe teeme trewely · tauht was ich neuere;
Ich wolde ich couthe," quaþ þe kny3t · "by cryst and hus moder;
Ich wolde a-saye som tyme · for solas, as hit were."

Piers says he will work for both, if the knight will guard the church from wasters, "Sykerliche, syre kny3t" · seide peers þenne,
"Ich shal swynke and swete · and sowe for us boþe,
And laboure for þe while þou lyuest · al þy lyf-tyme,
In couenaunt þat þou kepe · holy [kirke] and my-selue
[Fro] wastours and wyckede men · þat þis worlde struen.

and hunt hares and foxes, **A 76** And go honte hardiliche · to hares and to foxes,
To bores and to bockes · þat brekeþ a-doune menne hegges;

B 95 and kill the wild birds with falcons. And faite þy faucones · to culle wylde foules;
For þei comen to my croft · my corn to defoule."

The knight gladly consents. Corteysliche þe kny3t þen · comsede þese wordes;
"By my power, peers · ich plyghte þe my treuthe,
To defende þe in faith · fyghte þauh ich sholde."

15. *hem*] 3ow M. *yf*] I *om.*
16. *lyue* IMSEG] leue P; *but see* l. 57. *oure*] I *om.* *in*] of IMSG.
17. *þis*] þe I. *molde*] land M. *buþ*] beþ S; ben E; is MI.
18. *hem*] him MIG. *to*] IS *om.* *wyghtly*] whyghtly P; wy3tly S; withly M; wittiliche I.
20. *on—teeme*] one tyme I. *trewely*] trywely P.
23. *kny3t*] kyni3t P; *cf.* l. 21.
24. *us*] hus P.
25. *for þe*] S *om.* *þe—lyuest*] þo þou louest I. *lyuest* EMS] liuist G; leuest P; *cf.* l. 57. *þy*] my ISG.
26. [*kirke* I] churche PEMS. *my* EIG] me PMS.
27. [*Fro* IMSG] For PE. *and*] and fro I. *þis* IMSE] þys G; þus P. *struen*] struyen E; stryen SG; stroyen I; distryen M.
28. *hardiłłche*] hardileche P. *foxes*] uoxes M.
29. *bockes*] buckus S; bukkes IG. *a-doune*] doun MSE. *menne*] men E; myn MG; my S.
30. *And faite*] And affaite I; Afaite MSG. *þy*] þe S. *culle*] kille þe I.
32. *kny3t*] knyti3 (*sic*) P; kinge I. *þen*] þo M. *comsede*] conseyuede M. *þese* MS] þise I; þes P; *þis* E.

"And ȝut on poynt," quaþ peers · "ich praye ȝow ouer- Piers further bids
more; him to harm no
tenant, to take no
Loke ȝe tene no tenaunt · bote yf treuth wolle assente. gifts from the poor,
Whenne ȝe amercyn eny man · let mercy be taxour,
And meknesse þy maister · maugre mede chekes.
Þauh poure men profre ȝou · presentes and ȝiftes,
Nym hit nat, an aunter · thow mowe hit nat deserue;
For þow shalt ȝulde, so may be · and somdel a-bygge.
Mys-beede nouht þy bondemen · þe bet may [þou] to injure no
spede; labourer,
Þauh he be here þyn vnderling · in heuene, paraunter,
He worth raþer receyued · and reuerentloker sette; remembering
the text, Luke
Amice, ascende superius. xiv. 10;
At churche in þe charnel · cheorles aren vuel to knowe,
Oþer a knyght fro a knaue · oþer a queyne fro a
queene.
Hit by-comeþ to a knyght · to be curteys and hende,
Trewe of hys tonge · tales loth to huyre, **B 96**
Bote þei be of bounte · of batailes and of treuthe. to be true of
tongue,
Hald nat of harlotes · huyre nat here tales,
Nameliche atte mete · suche men eschewe; and to avoid
ribalds.
Hit ben þe deueles disours · to drawe men to synne.

35. *ȝut*] M *om.* *on*] o ES; a I. *ouer* SG] ouere P; of I; euer E; M *om.*

36. *tene* IMSEG] tuene P. *yf*] IS *om.* *wolle*] M *om.*

37. *Whenne*] Wenne P; And whan I. *amercyn*] *so* PS; amercen M; amercieþ E; mercien I.

38. *mede*] medes M.

39. *Þauh*] And þogh I. *presentes*] presantes P. *ȝiftes* IMESG] ȝeftes P.

40. *Nym*] Nymeþ M. *thow mowe*] ȝe mai M; þou myȝt EG.

41. *shalt*] may S. *ȝulde*] ȝelde MSEG; ȝelden it I. *and*] or I. *a-bygge*] abuggen it I.

42. *þy*] þe M. *bondemen* ISE] boundemen P; bondeman MG. *bet*] bettere M. *may*] myght S. [*þou* EMSG] þe PI. *may þou*] þow myȝt M.

43. *here*] þer-in E.

44. *sette*] sitte MISG. *Amice, &c.*] M *om.*

45. *in þe*] or in M. *cheorles*] cherles IMS; chorles E. *aren*] beþ S. *vuel*] yuel E; euyl S; euel IM.

46. *knyght*] kyng M. *fro* (1)] or I. *oþer*] MS *om.* *queyne*] queene EG; quene IMS. *queene*] quene EG.

47. *to* (1)] for M. *a*] þe ISG.

48. *hys*] þy IG. *huyre*] hure E; here M; heere I.

49. *and*] or I.

50. *of*] wiþ none I. *huyre*] hure E; her M; ne heere I.

51. *Nameliche*] Ac nameliche I. *atte*] at þe IM; at S. *eschewe* IMSG] eschywe P; eschiwe E.

52. *Hit—þe*] For it ben I.

Contreplede nat conscience · ne holy [kirke] ryghtes."
The knight again assents. "Ich assente, by seynt Gyle" · seyde þe knyght þenne,
"For to worche by þy witt · and my wyf boþe."
A 77 "Ich shal aparaile me," quaþ perkyn · "in pylgrymes wyse, 56
And wende with alle þo · þat wolle lyue in treuthe."
Piers says he will get ready to go, and take with him corn to sow, He caste on hym hus cloþes · of alle kynne craftes,
Hus cokeres and hus cuffes · as kynde witt hym tauhte,
And heng hus hoper on hus hals · in stede of a scrippe;
A boussel of bred-corn · brouht was þer-ynne. 61
"For ich wolle sowe hit my-self · and sitthe wol y-wende
To pylgrimages, as [palmers] don · pardon to wynne.
My plouh-fot shal be my pyk-staf · and picche a two þe rotes, 64
And help my culter to kerue · and clanse þe forwes.
promising that all who help him shall have leave to glean in harvest, And alle þat helpen me to erye · oþer elles to weden,
Shal haue leue, by oure lorde · to go and glene after,
And make hym murye þer-myd · maugre ho by-grucche.
B 97 and that he will find all their food, And alle kynne crafty men · þat conne lyue in treuthe,
Ich shal fynde hem fode · þat feythfullech lybben;
except Jack the juggler, and Janet of the stews, and Robin the tale- Saf Iack [þe] Iogelour · and Ionette of þe styues,
And danyel þe dees-pleyere · and denote þe baude, 72
And al-so frere faytour · and folke of [þat] ordre,

53. *Contreplede*] Ne counterplede I. [*kirke* I] churche PES; chyrche M; chirchis G.
56. *Ich shal*] And I schal I. *aparaile*] paraile I. *in*] in a M.
57. *with*] wit P. *wolle*] wolden I.
58. *He*] And I. *hym*] M *om.*
60. *heug*] hyng M. *in*] in þe M.
61. *boussel*] buschel ESG; busschel M.
62. *ywende*] *so* PE; I wende IMS.
63. *pylgrimages*] pilgrimage M. [*palmers* EIS] palmeres MG; pilgrymes P (*by mistake*).
64. *plouh-fot*] plowbat S. *picche —two*] putte a-wai M.
65. *forwes*] forewes MS.
66. *weden*] wende (*wrongly*) E.
67. *leue by*] loue of M; leue of G. *to—and*] forte M. *glene*] clene S. *after*] after me I.
68. *myd*] wiþ MS. *maugre ho*] malgre who I; whose euere M. *by-grucche*] by-grucche hit S; bygroch it I.
71. [þe IMG] PES *om.* *Iogelour*] gogeler M. *of þe*] of MG; at S. *styues*] stywes I.
72. þe (1)] E *om.* *denote* IMSG] denete P; denyce E.
73. *al-so*] also þe M; I *om.* [*þat* IMSEG] þe P.

þat lollers and loseles · for leel men halden,
And Robyn þe rybaudour · for hus rusty wordes.
For treuthe tolde me ones · and bade [me] telle [hit] forthere,
Deleantur de libro uiuencium · Ich sholde nat dele with hem,
For holy churche hoteþ · of hem to aske no tythe,
Quia cum iustis non scribantur.
Thei ben ascaped good aunter · now god hem amende!"
Dame worche-when-tyme-is · peers wyf hyhte;
Hus douhter hihte do-ryght-so- · oþer-þy-damme-shal-þe-bete;
Hus sone hihte suffre- · þy-souereynes-haue-here-wil-,
Deme-hem-nouht-for-yf-þow-do- · thow-shalt-dere-abigge.
"Consaile nat þe comune · þe kyng to displese,
Ne hem þat han lawes to loke · lacke hem nat, ich hote,
Let god worthe with al · as holy writ techeþ;
Super cathedram moysi sedent, et cetera;
Maistres, as þe meyres ben · and grete men senatours,
What þei comaunde as by þe kyng · contrepleide hit neuere,
Al þat þey hoten, ich hote · heyliche, thow suffre hem;
By here warnyng and worchyng · worch þow þer-after;

teller, a worthless set.

Psalm lxviii. 29 (Vulgate).

A 78

Piers' wife is named Work-when-time-is, his daughter is Do-as-you-are-bid, and his son is Obey-your-king.

Mat. xxiii. 2.

74. *þat*] þat ben M. *lollers*] loreles M. *for*] þat M; I *om.*
76. [*me* EIMSG] P *om.* [*hit* MS] it I; PEG *om.*
77, 78. *Misarranged in all the copies, which put* Deleantur—uiuencium *in one line,* Ich—hoteþ *in a second, and* of hem—scribantur *in a third; but see* B-text.
77. *After* uiuencium E *inserts* & cum iustis non scribantur (*unnecessarily*). *Ich*] I ne M. *hem*] him E.
78. *to aske*] þat askeþ M. *hoteþ—tythe*] is hote of hem no tiþe aske I.
80. *when*] wen P. *is*] his P. *hyhte*] hatte S.
81. *hihte*] heithe P (*but see* l. 82); hi3te MI; hi3t E; hatte S. *damme*] *so* PM; dame IESG.
82. *hihte*] hatte S.
83. *for*] I *om.* *do*] dost I. *dere abigge*] it dere abegge I; hit dere a-bigge G.
84. *nat*] nat so I.
85. *loke*] kepe S. *lacke*] lawe (!) S. *hote*] hote þe I.
86. *worthe*] I-worþe I; worche S. *techeþ*] techeþ þe I; telleþ M. *sedent*] sedebant E; S *om.*
87. *ben*] I *om.* *men*] M *om.*
89. *þey* IES] þei M; *miswritten* þe P; *cf.* l. 88. *hote*] hote þe E.
90. *By*] And after I. *and*] and heore M.

Mat. xxiii. 3. *Omnia que dicunt, facite & seruate;*

Ac after here doynge do þow nat · my dere sone," quaþ peers.

Piers says he is old, and must make his will.

"For now ich am old and hor · and haue of myn owene,
To penaunces and to pilgrimages · ich wol passe with oþere;
For-thi ich wolle, er ich wende · do wryten my by-quyste.

THE TESTAMENT. TESTAMENTUM PETRI PLOUHMAN.

"I bequeath my soul to Him that best deserves it,

In dei nomine, amen · Ich make hit my-self.
He shal haue my soule · þat alle soules made,
And defende hit fro þe feende · and so is my by-leyue,
[Til ich come to hus acountes · as my crede telleþ,

B 98 and my body to the church, that takes tithe of my corn.

To haue remissioun and relees · on þat rental ich leue.]
The [kirke] shal haue my caroyne · and kepe my bones,
For of my corn and catel · he crauede my tythe.
Ich payed hit prestliche · for peril of my soule,

A 79

He is holdinge, ich hope · to haue me in hus masse,
And menge me in hus memorie · among alle cristine.

My wife shall have my lawful winnings, for my debts are all paid.

My wyf shal haue of þat ich wan · with treuthe, and no more,
And dele hit among my douhtres · and my dere children.
For þauh ich deyde þys day · my dettes ben quyted;
Ich bar hom þat ich borwede · er ich to bedde ȝeode.

91. *do*] ne do I.
92. *old—hor*] bore & old S.
93. *with*] wiþ þis I.
94. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *er*] or MS. *do*] to M. *Testamentum, &c.*] *in* PE *only.*
97. *fro*] as fro I. *by-leyue*] bileue EM; bileeue I; beleue S.
98, 99. *From* IG; PEMS *om.; cf.* B. vi. 91, 92.
98. *ich*] i I; y G (*so also in* l. 99); *cf.* l. 95. *hus*] his IG; *cf.* l. 103. *as* G] ac I (*wrongly*). *my* I] þe G.
99. *and* G] a I. *relees* G] reles I.
100. [*kirke* IM] churche PESG.
101. *and*] and of my I; and my M. *my tythe*] me tiþe I; me teþe S.
103. *is*] his P. *holdinge*] *so* PI; holdyng EMS; holden G.
104. *menge*] mynge I.
106. *hit*] M *om.* *dere*] leue M. *children*] childres I.
107. *deyde*] deied E; deye ISG; deiȝe M. *þys*] to IG. *dettes ben*] dette is IG. *quyted*] y-quyted IS; a-quited G; quite M.
108. *ich* (1)] E *om.* *er*] or EMS. *ȝeode*] ȝede EIMSG.

With þe resydue and remenaunt · by þe rode of lukes,
Ich wolle worshupe þer-with · treuthe al my lyf,
And be a pilgrym atte plouh · for *pr*ofyt of poure and ryche."

With the residue will I worship Truth, and be His pilgrim."

Now p*er*kyn with þe pilgrimes · to þe plouh is faren;
To eryen hus half aker · holpen hym menye.
Dykers and deluers · diggeden vp þe balkes;
Ther-with was p*er*kyn apayed · and paied wel here hyre.
O*þer* werkmen *þer* were · þat wrouhten ful ȝurne;
Eche man in hus manere · made hym-self to done;
And somme to plese p*er*kyn · pykede aweye þe wedes.

Piers and the pilgrims set about ploughing, and many workmen help him.

B 99

Atte hye pryme peers · let þe plouh stonde,
And ouer-seyh hem hym-self · ho so best wrouhte,
He sholde be hyred þer-after · when heruest-tyme come.

At high prime Piers looked at what the workmen had done.

A 80

Þenne seten some · and songen atten ale,
And holpen to erie þis half acre · with 'hoy! troly! lolly!'
Quath peers [þe] plouhman · al in pure tene,

But some helped him only by drinking and singing,

"Bote ȝe [a]ryse þe raþere · and rape ȝow to worche,
Shal no greyn þat here groweþ · gladen ȝow at neede;
And þauh ȝe deye for deul · þe deuel haue [þat] recche!"

till Piers threatened them with famine.

Tho were faitours aferede · and feynede hem blynde,
And leyden here legges a-lyry · as suche lorelles conneþ,
And maden here mone to peers · how þei mowe nat worche:

Then the shirkers feigned to be blind, or lame,

109. *With*] And *with* I. *and*] and þe IMG. *lukes*] grace M.
110. *wolle*] wuld S. *lyf*] lyf-tyme S.
111. *pilgrym* EIMSG] pulgrym P. *atte*] at þe IMG; at S. *of*] to IG. *profyt—and*] pore and for M.
112. Now is *p*erkyn and þise pilgrimes · to þe plogh faren I.
113. *hus*] þis I. *holpen*] helpen IMS.
114. *diggeden*] dikked I; dikud S. *vp*] M *om.*
115. *wel*] wel hem I.
116. *ful*] wel M.
118. *pykede—þe*] a-felde pikede I. *wedes*] rotus S.
119*t*. *Atte*] At EMS; At þe G.
121. *when*] wen P.
122. *atten ale*] atte nale G; atte ale I; at þe ale M; at þe nale E; ate ale S.
123. *to*] ISG *om.* *hoy*] hay EG; hei M.
124. [*þe* IMSG] PE *om.*; *cf.* l. 154. *al in*] in a M. *tene* EMSG] teene I; teune P.
125. *aryse* SIM] ryse PEG.
126. *here*] þer M.
127. *deul*] doile E; del G; dol M; defaute S. *haue*] hange M. [*þat* EIMSG] þe P.
129. *a-lyry*] a-liri M; a-lery I.
130. *mowe*] may IS; myȝten MG.

and said all they could do was to pray for him,

"Ac we prayeþ for 3ow, peers · and for 3oure plouh boþe,
þat god for hus grace · 3oure grayn multiplie, 132
And 3elde 3ow of 3oure almesse · þat 3e 3euen us here.

since they could not work.

We may nayþer swynke ne swete · suche syknesse ous ayleþ;
We haue none lymes to laborie with · lord god we þonkeþ." 135

† "Your prayers might help, if ye were true men," said Piers.

"3oure praiers," quath peers · "and 3e parfit were,
Myght help, as ich hope; · ac hye treuthe wolde
þat no faiterye were founde · in folk þat gon a-begged.

B 100 "But I fear ye are wasters.

3e ben wastours, ich wot wel · þat wasten and deuouren
þat leel land-tylynge men · leelliche byswynken. 140

A 81 Truth shall teach you to drive his team;

Ac treuthe shal teche 3ow · hus teeme for to dryue,
Oþer 3e shulle ete barliche brede · and of þe brok drynke,
Bote 3e be blynde oþer brokelegged · oþer bolted with yren.

but those who are really blind I will help.

Suche poure," quaþ peers · "shullen partye with my goodes, 144
Boþe of my corn and of my cloþ · to kepe hem fro defaute;

Anchorites and hermits I will feed.

Ancres and heremites · þat eten bote at nones,
And freres þat flateren nat · and poure folke syke,
What! ich and myne · wolleþ fynde hem þat hem needeþ." 148

Then one of the **B 101**

Thenne gan wastour to wratth · and wolde haue fouhten,

131. *Ac*] And I. *for* (2)] fore P. *3oure*] þi M.
132. *for*] of M. *multiplie* ESI] multeplie P; multeplize M.
133. *3elde* EISMG] 3ulde P. *3euen us*] *miswritten* 3euene hus P.
134. *nayþer*] neyþer I; noþer EMS.
135. *We haue*] Ne I.
136. *praiers*] preiere M. *3e*] hy E.
137. *hope*] trowe S.
138. *faiterye*] faytrie IE; faitour MS. *gon*] goþ IG. *a-begged*] *so* PG; abegged E; a-beggyd S; abeggeþ I; and beggen M.
139. *þat*] and I.
140. *tylynge*] tylyyng S; telyngge M. *leelliche*] leellich E; lelli MS; lely I; leelleche P.
141. *for*] I *om.*
143. *3e*] if he I. *with*] wit P.
144. *partye*] parte EIMG. *with*] wit P.
146. *Ancres*] And ankeres I.
147. *folke*] men and M.
148. *wolleþ*] wul S. *þat*] what IG. *hem þat*] al þat M.
149. *wastour*] wastours M. *wratth*] wreþþe hem M; wraþþe him I.

And to peers plouhman · proferede to fighte,
And bad hym 'go pisse with hus plouh · peyuesshe shrewe!' 151
wasters began to resist, and threatened Piers,

A brytonere com braggynge · a-bosted peers al-so;
"Wolle þow, ne wolle þow · we wolleþ habbe oure wil, **A 82**
Boþe þy flour and þy flessh · fecchen when ous lykeþ,
And make ous myrye *þer*-myd · maugre ho by-gruccheþ!" 155

Peers þe plouhman þo · pleynede to þe knyght,
To kepe hym and hus catel · as couenaunt was by-twyne hem:
who prayed the knight to keep his promise,

"Awreke me of þese wastours · þat maken þys worlde dere;
Thei counte nat of cursyng · ne holy [kirke] dreden;
Ther worth no plente," quaþ peers · "and þe plouh ligge." 160
† since such men dreaded no curses.

Curtesliche þe-knyght þen · as hus kynde wolde,
Warned wastour · and wissede hym betere,
"Oþer ich shal bete þe by þe lawe · and brynge þe in stockes."
The knight sternly warns them.

"Ich was nat woned [to] wirche," quaþ wastour · "and ich wolle nat now bygynne," 164 **B 102**
And let lyght of þe lawe · and lasse of þe knyght,
And sette peers at a pese · pleyne hym wher he wolde.
But one of them cared nothing for Piers or the knight, and threatened them.

150. I *omits.*
151. *peyuesshe*] peuysche EMSG.
152. *com*] cam IMSG; came E. *a-bosted*] & bosted EG; and abostede MS; he bostede I.
153. *Wolle*] Wilt M; Wult S. *ne wolle*] ne wolt S; nylt M; nelle EI. *þow*] þou, quoþ he I. *wil*] willus S.
154. *Boþe*] And I. *when*] wen P.
155. *ho*] whose M. *bygruccheþ*] by-grucche SG; gruccheþ M.
156. *þo*] M *om.* *to*] him to I.
157. *bytwyne hem*] bi-fore M.
158. *of*] on M. *þese* S] þis ME; þise I; þes P. *worlde* EI] world MS; wordle G; worde P.
159. *counte*] a-counten M. *cursyng*] cursynges I. [*kirke* I] churche PES; chirche M.
160. *Ther*] For þer I. *plente*] *miswritten* pleynte P.
162. *wastour*] wastours M. *hym*] hem M.
163. *þe*] ȝow M (*twice*). *in*] in-to M.
164. *woned* EIMG] wonyd S; wont (*altered to* wond) P. [*to* IMSG] PE *om.* *quaþ*] quod a M. *and*] MSG *om.* *ich—now*] now wil I not I.
165. *And—lyght*] He tolde litel M.
166. *a pese*] an ase I. *pleyne*] to pleyne I. *hym*] MG *om.* *wher*] wer P.

Piers swears he will punish them yet, and calls in Hunger.

"Now, by crist," quaþ peers · "y shal apeyre ȝow alle!"
And hopede after hunger · þat herde [him] at þe ferste.
"Ich praye þe," quath peers þo · "pur charite, sire honger,
Awreke me of þese wastours · for þe knyght wol nat."

Hunger caught Waster, and **A 83** wrung and buffeted him so,

Honger hente in haste · wastour by þe mawe.
And wrang hym by þe wombe · þat al wateredé hus eyen.
He buffated þe brutener · a-boute þe chekes,
þat he loked lyk a lanterne · al hus lyf after.
He bet hem so boþe · he barst neih hure guttes,

that Piers had to interfere, and pray Hunger to cease.

Ne hadde peers with a peese-lof · prayede hym by-leue.
"Honger, haue mercy of hem," quath peers · "and let me ȝeue hem benes;
And þat was bake for bayarde · may be here bote."

Then the shirkers flew to the barns to thrash;

Tho were faitours a-fered · and flowen to peersses bernes,
And flapten on with flailes · fro morwe til euene,
B 103 þat honger was nat hardy · on hem for to loke,
For a potful of potage · þat peersses wyf made.

Hermits seized spades and dug.

An hep of eremites · henten hem spades,
Spitten and spradde donge · in despit of hunger.
Thei coruen here copes · and courtepies hem made,
And wenten as workmen · to weden and mowen;

167. *peers*] peres þe ploweman I.
168. *hopede*] houped IESG; howpede M. *þat*] and I. [*him* IMSG] PE *om.* *at þe*] atte I; ate S.
169. *pur*] por S; for M; *cf.* l. 267.
170. *me*] I *om.* *of*] on M. *þese*] þeese P.
171. *hente—haste*] in haste þo · hente I. *wastour*] a waster M.
172. *wrang*] wrong IMSG. *by*] so by I.
173. *buffated*] *so* PIM; buffeted E; bofeted S. *brutener*] bretoner IS; bretener M; britonere E.
175. *hem*] S *om.* *so boþe*] boþ so E. *neih*] ner I.
176. *with*] wit P.
177. *of*] on IMSG. *hem*] him IS (*twice*).
178. *bayarde*] bayerde P; *but see* l. 192. *may*] it may I; mayre (!) S.
179. *to*] in-to I. *peersses*] peres IMG; pers E; perus S; *so also in* l. 182.
180. *flapten*] flatten E. *with*] whit P.
181. *on—for*] ones on hem M.
183. *An*] And an S. *henten*] bouten M.
185. *coruen*] curuen IM. *copes* EIMS] coppes (*wrongly*) P.
186. *weden—mowen*] weden & to mowen E; wedyng and to mowyng IMS.

Al for drede of here deþ · suche dyntes ȝaf [hunger.]
Blynde and brokeleggede · he botnede a þousande, 188 The blind, bedridden, and lame received assistance.
And lame men he lechede · with longen of bestes.
Preestes and oþer peple · to peers þei drowen,
And freres [of] alle fyue ordres · al for fere of hunger.
For þat þat was bake for bayarde · was bote for menye hungry, 192
Drosenes and dregges · drynke for menye beggeres.
Þer was [no] lad þat lyuede · þat ne lowede hym to peers, (A 84) Many beggars set to work willingly,
To be hus hole hewe · þauh he hadde no more 195
Bute lyf-lode for hus labour · and hus loue at nones.
Tho was peers ful proude · and putte hem alle to werke,
In daubyng and in deluyng · in donge a-feld berynge,
In þresshynge, in þecchynge · in thwytynge of pynnes, † threshing, thatching, and cutting pins,
And alle kynne trewe craft · þat man couthe deuyse.
Was no beggere so bolde · bote yf he blynde were, 201
þat dorst with-sitte þat peeres seyde · for fere of syre hunger.
And peers was proud þer-of · and putte hem alle to swynke, for which Piers gave them meat.
And ȝaf hem mete and monye · as þey myght deseruen.
Tho hadde peers pite · of alle poure puple, 205 Then had Piers pity,
And bad hunger [in] haste · hyhe out of contre

187. *Al*] And I. [*hunger* IEMGS] P *om.*
189. *lame*] alle lame M. *lechede*] lechnede M. *with*] wit P. *longen*] loungen E; longes IMSG.
190. *to*] toward I.
191. *And*] M *om.* [*of alle* ESG] alle þe IM; and alle P. *fyue*] foure M. *al*] and al M.
192. *þat þat*] þat IMG.
193. *Drosenes*] Drowsen M; Drousin G. *drynke* MISG] was drynke E; drenke P.
194. [*was no* ISG] ne was no M; nas E; was P; *see* l. 201. *lad*] lede I. *ne*] he ne M.
195. *hole*] hool S; holde IEG; hold M. *hewe* I] hywe P; hyne EMSG.
196. *loue*] mete M; lof G; PEIS *seem to have* loue, *not* lone; *cf.* l. 287.
197. G *omits.* *peers*] perkyn M. *ful*] I *om.* *to werke*] a-werke IS.
198. *and in*] and M. *a-feld*] afelde EI; on feld M.
199. *of*] S *om.*
200. *And*] In IM. *couthe*] can S.
202. *with-sitte*] wit-sitte P.
203. *swynke* IEMSG] swynge P.
205. *of*] vp-on I; on M. *alle*] alle þe M.
206. [*in* IEMSG] on P. *hyhe*] hye E; hiȝe M; hie him IS; hien G.

yet fears the wasters will do ill when Hunger departs,

Home in-to his owen erthe · and halde hym þer euere—
"For ich am wel awreke · of wastours þorw þy myghte.
Ac ich praye þe," quaþ peers · "hunger, er þow wende,
Of beggers and of bydders · what best be to done? 210

B 104 though they are meek enough now.

For ich wot wel, be þou went · worche þei wolle ful ylle;
Meschief hit makeþ · thei ben so meke nouthe, 212
And for defaute þis folke · folwen my hestes.
Hit is no þyng for loue · thei labour þus faste,
Bote for fere of famyn · in faith," seide peers;

† They love me not, though they speak fair.

"Ys no final loue with þis folke · for al here faire speche; 216
And hit [ben] my blody broþren · for god bouhte vs alle.
Treuthe tauhte me ones · to louye hem echone,
And helpen hem of alle þyng · ay as hem neded þ.

So he asks Hunger to give him advice.

Now wolde ich wite, or þow wentest · what were þe beste, 220
How ich myghte a-maistren hem · to louye and laboure
For here lyflode; · lere me, syre hunger."

A 85 Hunger tells him to feed the able-bodied beggars with horses' bread and beans,

"Now herkne," quaþ hunger · "and hold hit for a wysdome;
Bolde beggeres and bygge · þat mowe here bred by-swynke, 224
With houndes bred and hors-bred · hele hem when þei hungren,
And a-bane hem with benes · for bollynge of here wombe.

207. *erthe*] erd S; ȝerde I. *þer euere*] þerinne I.
208. *For*] I *om.* *awreke*] awroke I. *of*] on M.
210. *and of*] and IM. *best be*] be best S; is best M.
211. *þou*] hungur I.
214. *no—loue*] noght for loue, leue it I. *thei*] þat þey S.
216. *Ys*] Þer is IM. *final*] *so* PG; fynel E; feyþful S; filial I; lel M. *with*] wit P.
217. *hit*] þei M. [*ben* EM] beþ S; aren PG; are I; *see* l. 52.
219. *helpen*] to helpe I. *ay*] euere M.
220. *wolde ich*] y wulde S. *wite*] white P. *wentest*] wendist I. *what*] wat P.
221. *and*] and to IM.
222. *lyflode*] owne liflode S. *lere*] lern M. *me*] me now I.
224. *Bolde*] And bolde P; *but* IMSEG *omit* And. *and bygge*] þat begge I.
226. *And*] ISG *om.* *bollynge*] bolnyng M. *wombe*] wombes M.

And yf þe gromes grucche · bid hem go swynke, — and to make them work.
And he shal soupe þe swettere · when he hath deserued.
And yf þow fynde eny folke · wham false men han apaired, — Men who have been unfortunate should be comforted.
Comforte hem with þy catel · for so comaundeþ treuthe ;
Loue hem and lene hem · so lawe of kynde wolde ;
Alter alterius onera portate. — Gal. vi. 2.
And alle manere men · þat þow myght aspye — The wretched and diseased should be helped with money.
In meschief oþer in mal-ese · and þow mowe hem helpe,
Loke by þy lyf · let hem nouht for-fare.
Yf þow hast wonne ouht wickeliche · wisliche dispende hit ;
Facite uobis amicos de mammona iniquitatis." — **B 105** Luke xvi. 9.
"Ich wolde nat greuye god," quaþ peers · "for al þe good on erthe ;
Myghte ich synneles do as þou seist?" seide peers plouhman. — **A 86** Piers wants to know if it is right to make men work.
"3e, ich by-hote þe," quaþ hunger · "oþer elles þe byble lyeþ ; — Hunger refers him to the Bible;
Go to oure by-gynnynge · þo god þe worlde made,
As wise men han ywryte · and as wittnesseþ *genesis*,
That seith, with swynke and with swot · and swetynge face
By-tulye and by-trauaile · treuly oure lyf-lode ;
In labore & sudore uultus tui uesceris pane tuo. — Gen. iii. 19.
And salamon þe sage · with þe same acordeþ,

227. *þe*] þo S. *go*] go and IM.
228. *þe*] IMG *om.* *when*] wen P. *hath*] it haþ I ; haþ hit MG.
229. *And*] Ac MIG. *wham*] wam P ; þat I. *men*] folc M. *han*] haþ M ; haue SG.
231. *so*] and so I.
232. *men*] of men IMG.
234. *Loke*] Loke þow M.
235. *hast*] haue M. *ouht*] auȝt S ; I *om.* *wickeliche*] wickedlich EIG ; wickedly S ; wrongfulli M. *dispende hit*] þow hit spende M.
236. *wolde—greuye*] wul not greue S. *on*] in IG.
237. *synneles do*] do synneles S. *peers*] pieres þe I.
240. *ywryte*] ywritte E ; writen M ; wrytun S ; y-writen I. *as*] I *om.*
241. *seith*] seiþ þat M. *face*] faces M.
242. *By-tulye*] By-tilye S ; Bi-telede M ; By tillyng E ; By-tuyl G. *by-trauaile*] bi-traueilede M. *oure*] his M. *& sudore*] I *om.*
243—246. S *omits.*

The slowe caytyf for colde · wolde no corn tulye;
In somere for hus slewthe · he shal haue defaute,
And gon abrybeþ and beggen · and no man bete hus hunger.

Prov. xx. 4. *Piger propter frigus noluit arare; mendicabit in hyeme & non dabitur ei.*

The slothful servant, Mat. xxv. 28; Lu. xix. 22, 24. Matheu makeþ mencion · of a man þat lente
Hus seluer to þre manere men · and menynge þat þei sholde
Chaffare and cheeue þer-with · in chele and in hete;
And he þat best laborede · best was alowed,
And leders for here laborynge · ouere al þe lordes goodes.
Ac he þat was a wrecche · and wolde nat trauayle,
The lord, for hus lacchesse · and hus luþer sleuthe,
B 106 By-nom hym al þat he hadde · and 3af hit to hus felawe
That leely hadde labored; · and þenne þe lord seide,
Mat. xxv. 29; Lu. xix. 26. 'He þat hath shal haue · and helpe þer hym lykeþ;
And he þat nauht haueþ · he shal nauht haue,
A 87 And no man 3ut helpe hym; · and þat he weneþ haue,
Ich wolle hit hym by-reue · for hus rechelesnesse.'
Lo! what þe sauter seiþ · to swynkers with handes,
'Yblessed be alle þo · þat [here] by-lyue [by]swynken
þorw eny leel labour · as þorgh lymes and handes;'

244. *wolde*] he wolde I. *tulye*] tily E; telize M; tilye I; tylie G.
246. *abrybeþ*] abribeth I; abribed E; a-bribid G; a-boute M. *beggen*] abeggeth I; a-begged G. *Piger*] I *om.* *hyeme*] estate (!) E.
248. *þre*] þe þre I. *and*] *so* PEIG; in M; S *om.* *þat*] I *om.*
249. *chele*] chelde E.
250. *laborede*] laboureþ E. *alowed*] alowede P.
251. *ouere*] of M.
253. *and*] and for M.
254. *to*] M *om.*
257—269. I *has*—
And he þat noght haþ schal noght haue · & no man 3it helpith hym,
And þat he weneþ wel to haue · I wil it him byreue.
So M, *which reads* nout schal haue · and no man him helpe, *and omits* wel.
257. *haueþ*] *so* PESG; haþ IM.
258. G *omits.* *haue*] to haue S.
260. *Lo*] And lo I.
261. [*here* IG] heore M; hure S; he (*by mistake*) P; E *om.* *by-lyue*] bileue IS. [*byswynken* E] byswynkuþ S; bi-swynken M; by-swinkin G; byswynkeþ I; swynken P. *here—byswynken*] lyueþ byswynken (*sic*) E.
262. *leel*] M *om.* *þorgh*] wiþ M.

Labores manuum tuarum quia manducabis; [beatus es, et bene tibi erit:] & cetera. Ps. cxxvii. 2 (Vulg.).

These aren euydences," quath hunger · "for hem þat wolle nat swynken,
That here lyflode be lene · and lytel worth here cloþes."
"By cryst," quaþ peers plouhman þo · "þese *pro-* † Piers says he will tell idlers of these proverbs.
uerbes wolle ich shewe
To beggers, and to boyes · þat loth ben to worche.
Ac 3ut ich praye 3ow," quath peers · "pur charite, syre hunger,
3yf 3e can oþer knowe · eny kynne þynge of fysyk?
For some of my *seruauns* · and my-selue boþe, Piers complains that some of his men are always ill.
Of alle a woke worchen nat · so oure wombe groneþ."
"Ich wot wel," quath hunger · "what syknesse 3ow aileþ; Hunger says it comes from their over-eating.
3e haue manged ouere muche · þat makeþ 3ow be syke.
Ac eet nat, ich hote · or hunger þe take, They should not eat till they are hungry.
And sende [þe] of hus sauce · to sauerie with thi lippes.
And kep som til soper tyme · and sitte nauht to longe **A 88**
[At noon, ne at no time; · and nameliche at *soper*] **B 107**
Let nat syre sorfait · sitten at þy borde, They should not let Sir Surfeit sit beside them.
And loke þow drynke no day · er þou dyne som-what.
Þenk þat *diues* for hus delicat lyf · to þe deuel wente, † Remember the parable of Dives and Lazarus.
And lazar, þe lene beggere · þat longed after cromes—
And 3ut had he hem nat · for ich hunger culde hym—
And sitthe ich sauh hym sitte · as he a syre were,

[*beatus—erit*] *in* S *only.*
263. *These*] Theese P (*and in* l. 265). *aren*] ben EMS. *wolle nat*] nylleþ nout M.
264. *be lene*] bileue E; bi-leuen M.
265. *peers*] peres þe I. *þo*] M *om.* *þese—ich*] þis *prouerbe* I wol I. *wolle ich*] M *om.*
266. *To*] For M (*twice*).
267. *Ac*] And M. *3ow*] þe M. *pur*] for M.
268. *Here* S *has lost* 8 *leaves, down to* xi. 94. *This portion is collated with* G *throughout.*
268. *kynne*] MG *om.* *þynge*] þinges I.
272. *be*] to be M.
273. *or*] er IG; or ich E.
274. [*þe* IMG] PE *om.* *hus*] my E.
276. *From* M; *also in* IG; PE *omit.*
277. *nat*] no I.
278. *dyne*] ete M.
279. *Þenk*] And þenke I. *hus*] M *om.*
281. *hem*] his (*sic*) I. *ich*] þulke E. *culde*] lette G.
282. *sitthe*] suþ E. *a syre*] a-fuyre (!!) E.

At alle manere ese · in abraham*m*es lappe.
† Give alms to the truly needy, And yf þow be of power · peers, ich þe rede,
Alle þat greden at þy gate · for godes loue, after fode,
Parte with hem of þy payn · of potage o*þer* of souel,
Lene hem som of þy loof · þauh þ*o*u þe lasse chewe.
† but let liars and lollers wait. And þauh lyers and lacchedrawers · and lolleres knocke,
Let hem abyde tyl þe bord be drawe · ac bere hem none cromes,
Til alle þyn nedy neihebores · haue none ymaked.
Were men thus moderate, Physic would sell his cloak, and turn farm-labourer. And yf þow dyght þe þus · ich dar legge myn eres,
þat fysyk shal hus forrede hodes · for hus fode sulle,
And hus cloke of calabre · for hus comunes legge,
And be fayn, by my faith · his fysyk to lete,
And lerne [to] labore with londe · leste lyflode hym faile.
Ther aren meny lu*þ*ere leches · and leele leches fewe,
Thei don men deye þorgh here drynkes · er destyne hit wolde."
Piers thanks Hunger for such advice. "By seynt paul," quath peers þo · "thou poyntest neih þe treuthe,
And leelly seist, as ich leue · lord þe for-ȝelde!
Wend now whe*n*ne þ*o*u wolt · and wel be þow euere,
For þow hast wel ywroke me · and also wel ytauht me."
Hunger says he must dine ere he goes away. "Ich by-hote þe," quaþ hunger · "þat hennes nel ich wende
Er ich haue y-dyned by þys day · and y-dronke boþe!"
Piers says he has "Ich haue no peny," quath peers · "polettes for to bigge,

283. *At*] In I. *in*] and in I.
284. *be—power*] þe poȝe (*sic*) I. *þe*] M *om.*
285. *greden at*] grat in I.
286. *with*] wit P. *o þer*] and M.
287. *loof*] lof EM; loue I.
288. *lolleres*] loreles M.
290. *none*] noon M; noen I.
291. *dyght*] diote M; diete G.
292. *hodes*] hood M.
295. [*to* IM] PEG *om. londe*] hond G. *hym*] hem I.
296. *aren*] ben EM. *and*] ac IMG.
298. *þo*] IMG *om. treuthe*] soþe IM.
299. *þe*] it þe I; hit þe G.
300. *whenne*] wenne P; wher I. *be þow*] þou be I.
301. *ywroke*] awroke M; I-wreke I; awreke EG. *ytauht me*] me taut M.
302. *nel*] ne wil I.
303. *y-dyned*] dyned EMG.
304. *polettes*] boteles M.

Noþer goos noþer grys · bote two grene cheses,
A fewe croddes and creyme · and a cake of otes,
And bred for my barnes · of benes and of peses.
And ȝut ich sey, by my saule · ich haue no salt bacon;
Nouht a cokeney, by cryst · colhoppes to make,
Ac ich haue porett-plontes · perselye and scalones,
Chiboles and chiruylles · and chiries sam-rede,
And a cow with a calf · and a cart mare,
To drawe a feld my donge · þe whyle drouth lasteþ.
By þis lyflode we mote lyue · tyl lammasse tyme;
And by þat, ich hope to haue · heruest in my crofte;
Thenne may I dyghte þy dyner · as me dere lykeþ."
Alle þe poure puple þo · peescoddes fetten;
Benes and baken apples · thei brouhte in here lappes,
And profrede peers this present · to plese þer-with hunger.
Hunger eet al in haste · and askede after more;
Poure folke for fere þo · fedde hunger ȝerne
With creym and with croddes · with carses and oþer herbes.
By that yt neihed heruest · and newe corn com to chepyng,
Thenne was þis folke feyn · and fedde hunger deynteuosliche,

no geese or pigs, only cheese, curds, cream, an oat cake, and loaves of beans and pease,

also parsley, onions, and half-ripe cherries,

which must last out till harvest.

The poor people brought peasoods, beans, and apples to feed Hunger.

Hunger wanted more, and they brought † cream and curds.

A 90 But in harvest-time they fed

305. *Noþer*] Ne noþer G. *noþer*] ne IM.
306. *A*] And a I.
308. *sey*] saide I.
309. *Nouht a*] Ne no IG. *colhoppes*] *so* PEMS; coloppes IG.
310. *porett-plontes*] porettysplontys G. *perselye*] percile M.
311. *chiruylles* M] cheryuylles E; chiruulles I; chirueylles P; chiriuelles G. *sam-rede*] sam-ripe M.
312. *with*] & G.
313. *þe*] G *om.* *whyle*] wyle P. *drouth*] þe droghte I; deþþe M.
314. *By*] And by IG.
315. *crofte*] croftes I.
316. *þy*] my I.
317. *þe*] G *om.* *þo*] I *om.*
318. *baken apples*] bacon, appeles G. *thei brouhte*] M *om.* *lappes*] lappe IG.
319. *this*] þat M. *þer-with*] wiþ MI; wiþ syre G.
321. *þo*] þey I.
322. *carses*] crasses M; cresses I.
323. *neihed*] neȝhed neyh I. *chepyng* GEIMS] chipynge P.
324. *Thenne*] And þanne IG. *was þis*] I *om.* *hunger*] hem M. *deynteuosliche*] denteuousliche ME; deyntifliche I; deyntfulliche G.

Hunger plentifully,

And gloton þo with good ale · gerte hunger to slepe.

B 109

Tho wolde wastour nat worche · bote wandrede aboute,

and beggars would eat only the finest bread.

Noþer beggere eete bred · þat benes were ynne,

Bote clerematyn and Coket · and of clene whete;

Thei wolde non halpeny ale · in none wyse drynke,

Bote of þe best and Brounest · þat brewesters sellen.

Labourers were dainty,

Laboreres þat han no londe · to lyuen on bote here handes

Deyned [noght] to dyne a day · nyght-olde wortes.

May no peny ale hem paye · ne a pece of bacon,

and wanted fresh flesh and fried fish,

Bote hit be freesch fleesch oþer fysch · fried oþer ybake,

And þat *chaud* and *pluschaud* · for chillyng of here mawe.

and grumbled about wages,

Bote he be heyliche yhyred · elles wol he chide,

That he was a werkman ywroght · waryen þe tyme;

Corteis Catones consail · comseth he by-grucche,

(Cato. Distich. i. 21.)

Paupertatis onus · pacienter ferre memento.

And þenne he corseþ þe kyng · and alle þe kynges Iustices,

Suche lawes to lere · laborers to greue.

B 110

except when hungry.

Ac while hunger was here mayster · wolde non chide,

Ne stryue a-ȝens þe statute · he lokede so sturne.

A 91

A warning to workmen,

Ac ich warne ȝow werkmen · wynne whyle ȝe mowe,

For hunger hyderwardes · hyeþ hym faste;

He shal awake þorw water · wasters to chaste.

325. *gloton þo*] þan glotoun IG. *to*] IM *om.*

326. *Tho*] And þo I. *wandrede*] wandren I.

327. *Noþer*] Ne no IG. *were ynne*] Inne were I.

328. *Bote*] But of I. *and*] and þat M.

329. *Thei wolde*] Ne IG.

330. *and*] and þe M; & of þe I. *brewesters*] ale-wiuys G.

332. [*noght* I] PEMG *om.* *Cf.* B-text. *nyght*] of nyȝt G.

333. *paye*] serue E. *a*] no IG.

334. *freesch*] I *om.*

336. *Bote*] And but I.

337. *That*] And þat I. *a*] IMG *om.* *waryen*] warieþ I.

338. *Corteis*] Aȝens I; G *om.* *comseth he*] bi-comseþ he to M. *by-grucche*] to grucche IG.

340. *And*] M *om.*

341. *lere*] lerne I.

342. *while*] wile P; whiles I. *wolde*] þer wolde I; þer ne wolde M.

343. *þe*] his IG. *statute*] stat G. *he lokede*] ne loke (*wrongly*) M.

344. *whyle*] whiles I; wyle P.

345. *hyeþ*] hasteþ I. *hyeþ—faste*] fast hym hyeþ E.

Ar fewe ȝeres be fulfilled · famyne shal aryse, and a prophecy of famine.
And so seith *saturnus* · and sent ȝow to warne.
þorwe flodes and foule wederes · frutes shullen faile,
Pruyde and pestilences · shal muche puple fecche.
Prophecies. A mysterious prophecy.
Thre shupes and a shaft · with an vm. folwyng,
Shal brynge bane and bataile · on bothe half þe mone.
And þanne shal deþ with-drawe · and derthe be Iustice,
And dawe þe deluere · deye for defaute,
Bote god of hus goodnesse · graunte ous a trewe.

Hic explicit passus nonus.

347. *Ar*] Or E; Er M; And ar I.
348. *And*] An P. *saturnus*] saturnes M; saturne I. *ȝow*] vs I; ous G. *warne*] warnyng M,
349. *and*] and þorgh I.
350. *Pruyde*] Prude E; Pride IM. *pestilences*] pestelences P.
351, 352. G *omits*.
351. *shupes*] schypes I; schippes M. *shaft*] schaeff I. *an vm*] a vin M. *vm*] *so* PE; I *seems to have* .viij. Crowley *quotes this line thus*—Three shyppes and a shefe, wyth an eight folowynge; *see* Pref. B. xxxiv.
355. *Bote*] Bot ȝif IG. *hus*] E *om.* *trewe*] truwe E; treuþe M.
Colophon. *So* PG; *so also* E, *omitting* Hic.

PASSUS X.

Incipit passus decimus.

A 92
B 111

Truth bids Piers labour before the famine comes,

TReuthe herde telle here-of · and to peers sente
To take hus teeme · and tulye þe erthe;
And purchased hym a pardon · *á pena et á culpa*,
For hym and for hus heyres · for euere to be asoiled; 4
And bad [hym] halde hym at home · and erye hus leyes,

and promises pardon to all who help him to work.

And alle þat hulpe hym to erye · to setten o*þer* to sawe,
O*þer* eny man*er*e myster · þat myght peers a-vayle,
Pardon with peers plouhman · p*er*petual he graunteþ. 8

Just kings and knights pass lightly through purgatory.

Kynges and knyghtes · þat holy [kirke] defenden,
And ryghtfulliche in reames · ruelen þe comune,
Han pardon þorw purgatorie · to passy ful lyghtliche,
With pat*r*iarkes and pr*o*phetes · in pa*r*adyse to sitte.

Bishops who observe the commandments,

Bisshopes yblessed · if þei ben as þei sholde, 13
Leel and ful of loue · and no lord dreden,
Merciable to meek · and mylde to þe goode,

TITLE. *So* PEG; Hic incipit passus decimus de uisione M; Passus Nonus, vt prius I.
1. *here-of*] þer-of M.
2. *tulye*] tilie E; tylien IG; telije M.
4. *for* (3)] G *om.*
5. [*hym* IG] PEM *om. at home*] a-tom G.
6. *alle*] þo M. *hulpe*] holpe I; holpen M; helpiþ G. *hym*] E *om. sawe*] sowe IMEG.
7. *myster* MEG] meester P.
8. *perpetual*] perpetuelly GI. *he*] I *om.*
9. [*kirke* I] churche PEG; chirche M.
10. *ryghtfulliche*] ryghtfulleche P.
11. *to passy*] passen M.
14. G *omits. no lord*] none lordes M.
15. *meek*] þe meke G; meke men E.

And bytynge on badde men · bote yf þei wolde amende, † and boldly reprove all bad men,
And dredeþ nat for no deþ · to distruye, by here powere,
Lecherie a-mong lordes · and hure luþer customes,
And sitthen lyue as þei lereþ men · oure lord treuthe hem grauntеþ
To be peeres to a-posteles · alle puple to ruele,
And deme with hem at domes day · boþe quike and ded.
Marchans in þe margine · hadden menye ȝeres,'
Ac *á pena & á culpa* · treuthe nolde hem graunte;
For thei holden nat here halydaies · as holychurche techeþ,
And for þei swere by here saule · and 'so god me mote helpe!'
A ȝens clene conscience · for couetyse of wynnynge.
Ac vnder his secre seel · treuthe sente [hem] a lettere,
And bad [hem] bygge baldly · what [hem] best lykede,
And sitthen sellen hit a-ȝeyn · and saue þe wynnynges,
Amenden *meson-dieux* þer-with · and myseyse men fynde,
And wikkede weyes · with here good amende,
And brygges to-broke · by þe heye weyes
Amende in som manere wise · and maydenes helpen;
Poure puple bedredene · and prisones in stockes,
Fynde hem for Godes loue · and fauntekynes to scole;
Releue religion · and renten hem bettere;

A 93
B 112
sit with the Apostles at doomsday.
Merchants have not plenary pardon, because they keep not holidays, and swear.

Truth bade them trade fairly

and mend hospitals,

repair broken bridges, and dower maidens,

A 94
and assist poor scholars.

16. *bytynge*] biter G. *on*] to G; in I. *wolde*] wole GI; wollen M.
17. *And*] I *om.* *nat*] MG *om.* *here*] þi M.
18. *customes* MI] custymes PE; custumes G.
20. *to*] of þe G; M *om.* *a-posteles*] þapostles I. *alle*] al þe MG.
23. *Ac a*] Ac no I. *treuthe nolde*] no treuþe wolde I.
24. *daies*] day IG. *techeþ*] hem hoteþ I.
25. *so*] I *om.* *god—mote*] mot god hem G; god mote hem I. *god—helpe*] helpe hem god al-myȝti M.
27. *secre*] secrete IE. [*hem* MIEG] hym P.
28. [*hem* MEIG] hym P (*twice*).
29. *sellen*] to sellen M. *saue*] haue E.
30. G *omits.* *Amenden—dieux*] And to amende þi mysdedes M.
31. *here*] ȝore G.
32. E *omits.* *to-broke*] to-brokene I. *weyes*] weiȝe M. *weyes*] weyes amende P (*by mistake*); *but* IMG *omit* amende; *see next line.*
33. *maydenes* IMG] maydones PE.
34. *bedredene*] bedrede M.

'And ich shal sende 3ow my-selue · seynt Michel myn Angel,
That no deuel shal 3ow dere · ne despeir in 3oure deyinge,
B 113 And sende 3oure soules · þer ich my-self dwelle,
Then they would reach heaven. And þere a-byde body and soule · in blisse for euere.' 40
Then the merchants wept for joy. Tho were merchauns murye · so*mm*e wepte for ioye,
And preyde for peers plouhman · þat purchasede hem þis bulle.
Alle þe puple hadde p*ar*don ynow · þat p*ar*fytliche lyueden;
Lawyers had least pardon; for they take bribes. Men of lawe hadde lest · that loth were to plede, 44
Bote þei *pre manibus* were payed · for pledyng atte barre.
A 95 Ac he þat speneþ hus speche · and spekeþ for þe poure
But he that pleads the cause of the poor That innocent and nedy is · and no man harme wolde,
And conforteþ suche in eny cas · and coueyteþ nat here 3iftes, 48
And for þe loue of oure lorde · lawe for hem declareþ,
† shall gain the grace of God hereafter. Shal haue grace of God ynow · and a gret ioye after.
Beþ ywar, 3e wise men · and witty of þe lawe;
B 114 For whenne 3e draweþ to þe deþ · and indulgence wolde haue, 52
Hus p*ar*don is ful petit · at hus partynge hennes,
That mede of mene men · for here motynge takeþ.

37. *Angel*] archangel I.
38. *despeir in*] despeire 3ow in M; dispise G. *deyinge*] deyenge P; doyng G.
39. *sende*] sitthe sende I. *dwelle*] sitte M.
40. *þere* M] *þer* EI; *miswritten* þe (*for* þere) P; G *om. body*] in bodi EM. *þere—blisse*] abide þer in my blisse · body and soule I.
41. *somme wepte*] meny wepen I.
42. *peers*] peres þe I. *hem þis*] þe G.
44. *lest*] leest G; left (!) E.
45. *atte*] at þe MEG.
46. *speneþ*] spendeþ M.
47. *nedy* IMEG] nudy P.
48. G *omits*. *And*] þat MI. *3iftes* IME] 3eftes P.
49. G *omits*. *hem*] hym E.
50. *God*] good M. *God ynow*] good ende G; a good ende I. *a*] MIG *om*.
51. *wise men* IMEG] wismen P. *þe*] G *om*.
52. *For*] M *om*. *whenne*] wenne P. *indulgence*] indulgences MI.
53. *hus*] þe M.
54. *mene*] þe mene E; meny G.

For hit is symonye, to sulle · þat send is of grace;
That is, witt and water · wynd, and fuyr þe furthe, 56
These foure sholden be fre · to alle folk þat hit [nedeþ.]
Alle lybbynge laborours · þat lyuen with here handes
Leelyche and lawefulliche · oure lord treuthe hem grauntеþ
Pardon perpetuel · ryght as peers plouhman. 60
Beggers and bydders · beþ nat in [þat] bulle
Bote þe suggestion be soth · þat shapeþ hem to begge.
For he þat beggeth oþer byddeþ · bote yf [he] haue nede, A 96
He ys fals and faitour · and defraudeþ þe [nedy,] 64
And also gyleþ hym þat gyueþ · and takeþ ageyns hus wyl.
For he þat gyueþ for Godes loue · wolde nat gyue, hus þankus,
Bote þer he wyste hit were · wel gret neede to gyuen, B 115
And most meritorie to men · þat he ȝeueþ for. 68
Caton a-cordeþ þer-with · *cui des uideto;*
Wot no man, as ich wene · who is worthy to haue.
The most needy aren oure neighebores · and we nyme good hede,
As prisones in puttes · and poure folke in Cotes, 72
Charged with children · and chef lordes rente,
That þei [wiþ] spynnynge may spare · spenen hit in hous-hyre,

Water, air, fire, and wit ought never to be bought. Labourers that live lawfully have the same pardon as Piers.

Beggars are not pardoned if they feign.

Men should give to the neediest.

Dion. Cato. Brev. Sent. 23.

† The most needy are prisoners and poor cotters,

55. *send*] sent I. *send—of*] is i-sent bi M.
56. *That*] And þat I. *wynd*] and wynde I.
57. [*nedeþ* IME] nediþ G; neededе P.
58. *lybbynge*] libbynde G; truwe M. *laborours*] laberours P.
59. *lawefulliche*] lawefulleche P. *hem*] G *om.*
60. *peers*] peres þe I; to peres G.
61. [*þat* IMEG] þe P. *bulle*] bille I.
62. *suggestion*] sũgestion P. *shapeþ*] shappeþ P. *hem*] him I.
63. *he*] hy G. [*he* MI] hi G; þei P; þey E.
64. [*nedy* IMEG] neede P.
65. *And*] MG *om. gyleþ*] bi-gileþ M.
66. *þankus*] þonkes E; þankes IMG.
67. *hit*] I *om. wel*] G *om. to gyuen*] to geue hit M; I *om.*
68. *most*] mest PE; *but see* l. 71. *for* EG] fore PI; hit fore M.
71. *aren*] arn M; ar G; beþ E.
72. *folke*] men G.
74. [*wiþ* MIG] PE *om. spenen* E] spene IG; spende M; *miswritten* spynen P; *but see* l. 46. *in*] on IG.

† who make pap to satisfy their children,

Boþe in mylk and in mele · to make with papelotes,
To a-glotye with here gurles · þat greden after fode. 76.
Al-so hem-selue · suffren muche hunger,
And wo in winter-tyme · with wakynge a nyghtes

† and rise at night to rock the cradle.

To ryse to þe ruel · to rocke þe cradel,
Boþe to karde and to kembe · to clouten and to wasche,
To rubbe and to rely · russhes to pilie, 81

† It is piteous to tell what poor wômen suffer,

þat reuthe is to rede · oþere in ryme shewe
The wo [of] þese women · þat wonyeþ in Cotes;
And of meny oþer men · þat muche wo suffren, 84
Boþe a-fyngrede and a-furst · to turne þe fayre outwarde,

† whilst they hide their wants from their neighbours.

And beth abasshed for to begge · and wolle nat be aknowe
What hem needeþ at here neihebores · at noñ and at euen.
This ich wot witerly · as þe worlde techeþ, 88
What oþer by-houeþ · þat hath meny children,

† Some earn but little, yet must feed many.

And hath no catel bote hus crafte · to cloþy hem and to fede,
And fele to fonge þer-to · and fewe pans takeþ.
Ther is payn and peny-ale · as for a pytaunce y-take,

75—281. *This passage occurs a* second time *in* MS. I, Foll. 2—4. *Peculiar readings from this copy are marked I* (*italic*). *But see also the* Critical Note.

75. *in*] wiþ G (*twice*). *papelotes*] her papelotes *I.*

76. *To*] Forte M. *a-glotye*] glotye I.

77. *Al-so*] & al-so GM. *Al-so hem-selue*] And hem-seluen also I.

78. *in*] on G. *tyme*] tymes I. *with*] and I; on G. *wakynge*] walkynge G. *a*] in I; on MG*I*.

79. *ryse*] arisen M. *ruel*] *so* PM; rewel I; rule EG. *to*] and to M. *cradel*] childes cradel *I.*

80. *kembe*] combe wolle *I.*

81. *rubbe*] ribbe IMG. *and*] G *om.* *rely*] *so* PE; rele IG*I*; reole M. *russhes*] & rissches G; and resshes *I.* *pilie*] pilize M; pyl *I.*

83. [*of* IG] þat PEM; *but see next line.* *þese*] þeese P; *and in* ll. 96, 164, 183. *women*] women han E; woman haþ M. *wonyeþ—Cotes*] in Cote wonen *I.*

84. *men*] mo *I.*

85. *a-fyngrede*] a-fyngred E; a-fingred G; of-hungret M; an-hungred I. *a-furst*] *so* PG; aþurst EI; of-þerst M; in harde thurst *I.* *fayre*] fairest M*I.*

86. *and*] þey *I.* *aknowe* EMG] aknowen I; byknowen *I;* yknowe P.

87. *at* (1)] att P; of M.

90. *fede*] foode G.

91. *pans*] pens IM.

92. *ale*] ale also E. *as*] M *om.*

Colde flessh and cold fyssh · for veneson ybake;
Frydayes and fastyng-dayes · [a] ferthyng-worth of muscles
Were a feste for suche folke · oþer so fele Cockes.
These were alnes, to helpe · þat han suche charges,
And to comfortie suche cotyers · and crokede men and blynde.
Ac beggers with bagges · þe whiche brewhouses ben here churches,
Bote þei be blynde oþer broke · oþer elles be syke,
Þauh he falle for defaute · þat faiteþ for hus lyf-lode,
Recche þ neuere, ȝe ryche · þauh suche lorelles steruen.
For alle þat han here hele · and here eyen syghte,
And lymes to laborye with · and lolleres lyf vsen,
Lyuen a-ȝens godes lawe · and lore of holy churche.
And ȝut arn þer oþer beggers · in hele, as hit semeþ,
Ac hem wanteþ here witt · men and women boþe,
Þe whiche aren lunatik lollers · and leperes a-boute,
And mad as þe mone sitt · more oþer lasse.
Thei caren for no cold · ne counteþ of no hete,
And arn meuynge after þe mone · moneyles þei walke,
With a good wil, witlees · meny wyde contreys,
Ryght as Peter dude and Paul · saue þat þei preche nat,

† To them, a farthing's worth of muscles is a feast.

† But beggars, whose churches are brewhouses,

† may be left to starve.

† Some, however, are idiotic or lunatic,

† and wander far and wide,

93. M *omits*. *Colde*] And colde I. *cold*] I *om*. *for*] as I. *ybake*] were y-bake I.
94. [*a* IMEG] P *om*.
95. *for*] wiþ I. *folke*] a folke P; *but* IMEG *omit* a. *so fele*] as fele of M. *Cockes*] *so* PEM; cokkys G; cokeles I.
96. *were*] are I. *helpe—charges*] ese · and also many oþer *I*.
97. *to*] M *om*. *cotyers*] coterels IG. *and—and*] þe croked and þe *I*.
98. *with*] wiþ here G. *þe whiche*] þe wiche P; swiche M.
99. *broke*] to-broke IEG.
100. *faiteþ—lyf-lode*] for here foode fayten *I*.
101. *Recche þ*] Recche ȝe IG.
103. *lolleres*] lorelles M.
105. *And*] Ac I. *arn*] ben E.
106. *Ac*] But M. *here*] I *om*.
107. *whiche*] wiche P. *aren*] ben E. *lollers*] loreles M.
108. *mad*] madden IM; E *om*. *sitt*] sitteþ G; sittes *I*.
109. *Thei caren*] Careth þey I. *for*] of G. *counteþ*] a-counten M. *counteþ — hete*] knowe but perils fewe *I*.
110. *arn*] ben E. *meuynge* IE] meuyng M; meouing G; meuenge P.
111. *a*] I *om*. *wyde contreys*] a wilde cuntreiȝe M.
112. *saue—nat*] if þat þey preche couþe *I*. *þat*] G *om*.

Ne myracles maken; · ac meny tymes hem happeþ
† uttering prophecies, To prophecien of þe puple · pleyinge, as hit were,
And to oure sight, as hit semeþ · suthþe God hath þe myghte
To ȝeuen eche a [wyght] wit · welthe, and his hele,
And suffreþ suche so gon · hit semeþ, to myn Inwitt,
† even like God's apostles. Hit arn as hus aposteles, suche puple · oþer as his priuye disciples.
For he sente hem forth seluerles · in a somer garnement,
With-oute bred and bagge · as þe bok telleþ,
† Luke xxii. 35. *Quando misi uos sine pane et pera;*
Barfot and bredles · beggeþ þei of no man.
And þauh he mete with þe meyre · [amyddes] þe strete,
He reuerenceþ hym ryght nouht · no raþer þan anoþer;
† Luke x. 4. *Neminem salutauer[it]is per uiam.*
† Cf. Mat. x. 42; xxv. 35. Suche manere of men · matheu ous techeþ,
We sholde haue hem to house · and help hem when thei come;
† Isaiah lviii. 7. *Et egenos uagosque induc in domum tuam.*
For hit aren murye-mouthede men · mynstrales of heuene,
And godes boyes, bordiours · as þe bok telleþ,
† 1 Cor. iii. 18. *Si quis uidetur sapiens, fiet stultus ut sit sapiens.*

113. *Ne*] Ne none I. *tymes*] time M; G *om.*
114. *þe*] þat G. *pleyinge*] pleigne I; pleynge E.
115. *hath*] ȝaf M. *þe*] I *om.*
116. *eche*] ows (*wrongly*) G. [*wyght* G] whit P; whiȝt E; wythg M; body myght (*sic*) I.
117. *And*] He I. *so gon*] go so IG. *to*] in M.
118. *arn*] ben E. *as* (1)] M *om.*
120. *bred—bagge*] bagge and brede I· bagge oþer bred *I.* *and*] or M.
121. *beggeþ*] ȝit begge *I.*
122. *he*] þay I; þey *I.* *mete*] mette G. *meyre*] meyere P; *cf.* iv. 77. [*amyddes* I] in-myddesse E; in-mydest P; in-midde G; in þe middes M. *þe*] of þe IM; *but* PEG *omit* of, *and it is not required; cf.* Poem on Richard, l. 3.
123. *He*] And I. *no*] GM *om.* *raþer*] more M. *salutaueritis* EMG] salutaueris PI.
124. *of*] I *om.*
125. *haue hem*] hem haue G. *haue—to*] hem do I; hale to oure *I.* *hem* (2)] I*I om.* *que*] MG *om.*
126. *hit*] þei M. *aren*] ben EM.
127. *boyes*] owne M. *bordiours*] bordours I. *fiet*] fiat M.

And alle manere mynstrales · men wot wel þe soþe,
To vnder-fonge hem faire · by-falle[þ] for þe ryche,
For þe lordes loue and ladies · þat þei with lengen.
Men suffren al þat suche seyn · and in solas taken,
And ȝut more to suche men · doth er þei passe,
Gyuen hem gyftes and gold · for grete lordes sake.
Ryght so, ȝe riche · raþer ȝe sholde, for sothe,
Welcomen and worsshepen · and with ȝoure goode helpen
Godes mynstrales and hus messagers · and hus murye bordiours;
The whiche arn lunatik lollares · and leperes a-boute,
For vnder godes secre seel · here synnes ben ykeuered.
For þei bereþ no bagges · ne none botels vnder clokes,
The whiche is lollaren lyf · and lewede eremytes,
That loken ful louheliche · to lacchen mennes almesse,
In hope to sitten at euen · by þe hote coles,
Vnlouke hus legges abrod · oþer lygge at hus ese,
Reste hym, and roste hym · and his ryg turne,
Drynke drue and deepe · and drawe hym þanne to bedde;
And when hym lykeþ and lust · hus leue ys to aryse;

† Men give gifts and gold to minstrels.

† So also should the rich help God's minstrels, viz. lunatics,

† who are not like lollers or hermits,

† who roast their backs at the fire,

128. *And*] *I om.* *men*] me I. *wot*] witeþ; wyte G.
129. *by-falleþ* G] bifalleþ E; it falleþ I; falleþ M; falles *I;* by-falle P.
130. *and*] or þe I; or M. *lengen*] longen IMG; leuen *or* lenen E.
132. *doth*] me doþ I.
133. *Gyuen*] Me gifþ I; Men ȝiueþ G. *and*] of G.
134. *raþer*] ȝit raþer I. *for sothe*] IG *om.*
135. *Welcomen*] Wolcomen P. *goode*] gold M.
136. *hus* (1)] M *om.* *bordiours* EI] *here written* burdiers P; *but see* l. 127.
137. *whiche*] wiche PM. *arn*] ben EM. *lunatik*] lunatikes I. *lollares*] loreles MI.
138. *secre*] secrete EI. *ykeuered* EG] couered MI; ykeuerede P.
139. *none*] MIG *om.* *botels*] botel M. *clokes*] cloþes E.
140. *whiche*] wiche PM. *lollaren*] *so* PG; lollers I; lollerne E; loreles M.
141. *That*] I *om.* *ful*] wel G; I *om.* *louheliche*] lowliche MIG; lowȝlich E. *mennes almesse*] meny men almisses G.
144. *and—turne*] by þe rede gledes *I.*
145. *drue*] drow E; dryue I; driue (*altered to* ofte riue) G; ȝurne M. *drawe—þanne*] þanne drawe him M; þenne drawe G.
146. *and*] or M. *aryse*] rise I.

When he ys rysen, romeþ out · and ryght wel aspieþ
† and expect to receive a breakfast. Whar he may raþest haue a repast · oþer a rounde of bacon, 148
Suluer oþer sode mete · and som tyme boþe,
A loof oþer half a loof · oþer a lompe of chese;
And carieþ it hom to hus Cote · and cast hym to lyue
In ydelnesse and in ese · and by oþers trauayle. 152
† The beggars who go about with bags instead of working And what frek of þys folde · fiskeþ þus a-boute,
With a bagge at hus bak · a begeneldes wyse,
And can som manere craft · in cas he wolde hit vse,
Þorgh whiche craft he couthe · come to bred and to ale,
And ouer-more to an hater · to helye with hus bones,
† are condemned by God's law. And lyueþ lyk a lollere · godes lawe hym dampneþ. 158
"Lolleres lyuyng in sleuthe · and ouer-londe strykers
Beeþ nat in þys bulle," quaþ peers · "til þei ben amendid,
Noþer beggers þat beggen · bote yf þei haue neede. 161
B 116 The bok blameþ alle beggerye · and banneþ in this manere,
Ps. xxxvi. 25 (Vulg.). *Iunior fui, etenim senui, non uidi iustum derelictum, nec semen eius querens panem; et*
† Ps. xxx. 11 (Vulg.). *alibi: Infirmata est uirtus mea in paupertate.*
Hit needeþ nauht nouthe · a-non for to preche, 163

147. *When*] And whan I. *romeþ out*] rome forþ *I*. *aspieþ*] aspien *I*.
148. *Whar*] War P. *raþest*] raþerest M. *a repast*] harpast (*sic*) E. *rounde*] ronde IMG; pounde E.
149. *sode*] swete I.
150. *A*] IG *om*. (*twice*). *half*] alf P. *oþer* (2)] or elles *I*. *of*] of a G.
152. *in*] on I; MEG *om*.
153. *what*] wat P. *of*] on I. *þys*] þy G. *fiskeþ*] *so* PE; fiscuþ G; fisschith I; fleccheþ M. *þus*] so *I*; I *om*.
154. *a* (2)] on M*I*. *begeneldes*] begenildys G; begenelles M; begenelde I; beggers E*I*.
155. *som manere*] eny IG.
156. *whiche*] wiche PM. *craft*] E *om*. *to* (2)] I *om*.
157. *an hater*] haue hater E; haue hatren M.
158. *lollere*] lorel M.
159. *Lolleres*] Loreles M; For-þy lollers I. *lyuyng*] þat lyueþ I. *ouerlonde*] ouerlond MG; ouere-londe P.
160. *bulle*] bille I.
161. *Noþer*] Ne no I.
162. *blameþ*] banneþ I. *banneþ*] blameþ MEG (*wrongly repeated*); blameþ it I. *this*] his I. *non—panem*] IMG *om*. *et—paupertate*] E *om*. *in paupertate*] paupertate IM.
163. *nouthe*] now M; moche G; E *om*.

And lere þese lewede men · what þys latyn meneþ,
For hit blameþ alle beggeiie · be ȝe ful certeyn.
For þei lyue in no loue · [ne] no lawe þei holden; (A 96) They are loveless and lawless, and seducers of women.
Thei wedde non womon · that þei with delen,
Bringeþ forth bastardes · beggers of kynde. 168
Oþer þe bak oþer som bon · þei breken of here children, Some break a child's bone, and beg ever after.
And gooþ afaytyng with here fauntes · for euere-more
After.
Þer arn mo misshapen · a-mong suche beggers, They are always meeting with accidents.
Than of meny oþer men · þat on þis molde walken. 172
Tho þat lyuen þus hure lyf · leyue ȝe non oþere,
Thei han no part of pardon · of preyers, ne of penaunces.
Ac olde men and hore · þat helples beeþ and nedy, But the old and feeble, women with child, blind and maimed,
And wommen with childe · þat worche ne mowen, 176
Blynde men and bedreden · and broken in here
membres,
And alle poure pacientes · a-payed of godes sonde, † unfortunate poor, prisoners, and sufferers by robbery or fire,
As mesels and mendinauntes · men yfalle in myschef,
As prisons and pilgrimes · paraunter men yrobbed, 180
Oþer by-lowe þorwe luthere [men] · and lost here catel
after,
Oþer thorgh fure oþer þorwe flood · falle to pouerte,

164. *lere*] lerne M.
166. *loue*] lawe I (*wrongly repeated*). [*ne* IMEG] P *om.* *no*] non M; E *om.* *þei* (2)] I *om.*
167. *Thei*] Ne IG. *womon*] wymmen IEG; wemmen M.
168. *Bringeþ*] Þei bringen M.
170. *gooþ*] gon IEM. *afaytyng*] faityng MG; and fayten I. *for*] G *om.*
171. *arn*] ben E. *misshapen*] mis-chape I; myschappen E; myshapped M; mishappes G; *spelt* meshapene *in* P.
172. *on—walken*] walkyþ on þys molde G.
173. G *omits.* *Tho*] And þo I. *ȝe*] ȝe me PE; *but* MIG *omit* me; *cf.* B. v. 302.
174. *Thei han*] ȝe haue I; Ne haueþ G. *pardon*] prayeres G. *of* (2)] ne of I. *preyers*] pardone G. *penaunces*] penaunce MIG.
175. *þat*] E *om.* *helples*] heelples P. *beeþ*] beþ E; ben MIG.
177. *men*] I *om.* *bedreden*] bederede M; bedereden I.
178. *pacientes*] pacient MIG. *a-payed*] i-peyned M. *of*] wiþ G.
179. *men*] and men MG.
180. *prisons—pilgrimes*] pilgrimes & prisones E. *paraunter*] and peraunter IG.
181. *þorwe*] þroȝ E; by G. *luthere*] lither G; false M. [*men* IMEG] P *om.*
182. *Here* F *begins again.* *fure—þorwe*] G *om.* *falle*] y-falle I; biþ falle G. *to*] into IM. *pouerte* IMFEG] pourte P.

B 117 that are meek and patient,

That taken þese meschiefes meekliche · and Myldliche at herte;
For loue of here lowe hertes · oure lord hath hem graunted 184

A 97 have their purgatory on earth.

Here penaunce and here purgatorie · vp-on þys pure erthe,
And pardon with peers plouhman · *a pena & a culpa.*
[And alle holy hermites · haue schal þe same;]

† But false hermits by the high way,

Ac eremites þat en-habiten · by þe heye weyes,
And in borwes a-mong brewesters · and beggen in churches;— 189
Al þat holy eremytes · hateden and despisede,
As rychesses and reuerences · And ryche mennes Almesse,

† though really lollers, live like cotters;

These lolleres, lacchedraweres · lewede eremytes, 192
Coueyten þe contrarie · as cotiers þei lybben.
For hit beþ bote boyes · [bollers] atten ale,
[Neyþer of lynage, ne of lettrure]; · ne lyf-holy as eremites,

† not like the holy hermits who dwelt amongst bears and lions,

That wonede [whilom] in wodes · with beres and lyones. 196
Some had lyf-lode of here lynage · and of no lyf elles;
And some lyuede by here lettrure · and labour of here hondes;

183. *þese*] þeese P; *and in* ll. 192, 201, 203, 209.
184. I *omits. loue of*] G *om.*
185. *vp-on þys*] here on M. *pure* IMEFG] *miswritten* poure P.
186. *peers*] þe IFG.
187. *In* I *only; but it seems clearly required; see next line.*
188. PM *insert* hem *after* en-habiten, *which* IFEG *omit; it is not wanted. weyes*] weye IG.
190. *hateden*] hateþ G.
191. *rychesses*] richesse I. *reuerences*] reuerence IG. *mennes*] men IEG.
192. *lolleres*] lorelles M; losels *I.*
193. *as*] for as I; & as G. *cotiers*] coterels I*I.* *þei*] MG *om.*
194. *hit*] þei M. *beþ*] ben IM. [*bollers* I*I*M] lolleres PEFG; *but observe the alliteration. atten ale*] at þe ale IM; at þe nale EG; ate ale F.
195. [*Neyþer*] *in* I *only; but absolutely necessary to the sense.* [*of lynage* EMIGF] *here spelt* of lynguage P; *but see* l. 197. [*ne* IMF] neþer G; PE *om.* [*of lettrure*] *here spelt* of letture P; *but see* l. 198. P *has thus the corrupt reading*—Of lynguage of letture.
196. *wonede*] wonieþ G. [*whilom* IMF] wyle P; while E; G *om.; cf.* l. 204. *and*] & wiþ IG.
197. *here*] his I.

Some hadde foreynes to frendes · þat hem fode sente;
And bryddes brouhten to some bred · wherby þei lyueden.
Alle þese holy eremytes · were of hye kynne,
For-soke londe and lordshep · and lykynges of þe body.
Ac these eremytes þat edefyen thus · by þe hye weyes,
[Whilom] were workmen · webbes and taillours,
And carters knaues · and clerkus with-oute grace,
Helden [ful] hungry hous · and hadde muche defaute,
Long labour and lyte wynnyn*g*e · and atte laste aspiden,
That faitours in frere cloþynge · hadde fatte chekus.
For-thi lefte þei here laboure · þese lewede knaues,
And cloþed hem in copes · clerkus as hit were,
Oþer on of som ordre · oþere elles a p*r*ophete;
A-ʒens þe lawe he lyueþ · yf latyn be trewe;
Non licet uobis legem uoluntati, sed uoluntatem coniungere legi.
Now kyndeliche, by crist · beþ suche callyd 'lolleres,'
As by englisch of oure eldres · of olde menne techynge.
He þat lolleþ is lame · oþer his leg out of ioynte,
Oþer meymed in som membre · for to meschief hit souneþ.

† to some of whom birds brought food.
† These false hermits were once workmen and ill off,
† till they espied that friars had fat cheeks;
† whereupon they also began to wear copes.
† Such men are truly called *lollers* (idlers), since they *loll* about like lame people.

199. *Some*] And some I. *foreynes*] *so* PEI; forynus F; florynes MG. M *has*—Summe florynes hadden · of frendes þat sente hem fode.
200. *to*] I *om.* *wherby þei*] þat þay by IG.
201. *Alle*] And IF. *þese*] þey I; þo M. *hye*] his (*wrongly*) I. *kynne*] kynde M.
202. *lykynges*] likyng MF; alle likeynge I. *þe*] IMEGF *om.*
203. *weyes*] weye IG*I*.
204. [*Whilom* IMGF] Wylen P; Whilen E; *see* l. 196. *webbes*] & webbes E; as webb*us* F.
206. *Helden* EMG] Heelden P; Holden IF. [*ful* IMFG] PE *om.* *muche*] gret G.
207. *lyte*] lite EG; litel IM; late F. *atte*] at þe IG. *aspiden*] þey aspide I.
208. *faitours*] fayted (*badly*) I. *frere cloþynge*] freres cloþes M.
209. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *lefte þei*] þei lefte M; þei left F.
210. *cloþed*] clokid F. *clerkus*] cherlys G. *hit*] þey GF.
211. M *omits.*
212. *he lyueþ*] þei lyuen M; of leuey [i.e. Levi] I. *trewe* IEF] truwe MG; trywe P. *uobis*] uobis *or* nobis P; *but* vobis EG.
213. *Now*] I*I om.* *lolleres*] loreles M.
214. *by*] by þe I.
215. *is*] his P. *out*] is oute I*I*. *of*] of þe P; *but* IEFG *omit* þe.
216. *souneþ*] semiþ G.

And ryght so sothlyche · suche manere eremytes
Lollen aȝen þe byleyue · and lawe of holy churche.
† Holy Church expects all men to submit to law. For holy churche hoteþ · alle manere puple
Vnder obedience to bee · and buxum to þe lawe.
Furst, religious, of religion · here ruele to holde,
And vnder obedience to be · by dayes and by nyghtes;
† Lords should hunt wild beasts on week-days; Lewede men to laborie; · [and] lordes to honte
In frythes and in forestes · for fox and oþer bestes
That in wilde wodes ben · and in wast places,
As wolues þat wyryeþ men · wommen and children;
† but attend divine service on Sundays And vp-on sonedays to cesse · godes seruyce to huyre,
Boþe matyns and messe · and, after mete, in churches
To huyre here euesong · euery man ouhte.
Thus it by-longeþ for lorde · for lered, and lewede,
† and on holidays, Eche halyday to huyre · hollyche þe seruice,
Vigiles and fastyngdayes · forthere-more to knowe,
† and keep all fasts strictly. And fulfille þo fastynges · bote infirmite hit made,
Pouerte [oþer] oþere penaunces · as pilgrymages and trauayles.
Vnder þis obedience · arn we echone;
† To neglect such duties is perilous. Who-so brekyþ þis, be wel war · bot yf he repente,
Amende hym and mercy aske · and meekliche hym shryue,
Ich drede me, and he deye · hit worth for dedlich synne

217. *And*] I *om.* *manere*] maner of M.
218. *lawe*] þe lawe I.
219. *manere*] maner of M.
221. *religious of*] religiouns and (*wrongly*) I. *here*] a I.
222. *nyghtes*] nyȝhte G; nyth M.
223. [*and* MGF] PIE *om.*
224. *frythes*] frith M. *in*] oþer G. *forestes*] forest M. *fox*] vox M; foxes G.
225. *and*] or I.
226. *wyryeþ* I] wyrhyeþ P; wirieþ G; werien M; werrieþ E; wery F.
227. *vp-on*] a F, *huyre*] here IMF.
230. *by-longeþ*] bi-longed G. *for* (1)] for a MG. *lewede*] for lewed I.
231. *to*] forte M. *hollyche þe*] þe holi M*I*.
233. *þo*] þe EM. *fastynges*] fastyng M. *infirmite*] siknes F.
234. [*oþer* E] or FG; and IM; P *om.* *penaunces*] penaunce FG. *as*] G *om.*
235. *arn*] er G; ben E.
236. *Who-so*] And who-so I. *þis*] þese M. *wel*] he wel M; I *om.*
237. *Amende*] *miswritten* Amenden P.
238. *and*] if F. *for*] ful I.

A-counted by-fore crist · bote conscience excuse hym.
Loke now where þese lolleres · and lewede eremytes,
Yf thei breke þys obedience · þat ben so [fer] fro churche?
Wher see we hem on sonedays · þe seruyse to huyre,
As, matyns by þe morwe? · tyl masse by-gynne,
Oþer sonedays at euesonge · seo we wel fewe!
Oþere labory for [here] liflode · as þe lawe wolde?
Ac at mydday meel-tyme · ich mete with hem ofte,
Comynge in a cope · as he a clerke were;
A bacheler oþer a beaupere · best hym by-semeth;
And for þe cloþ þat keuereþ hym · cald is he a frere,
Wassheþ and wypeþ · and with þe furste sitteþ.
Ac while he wrought in þys worlde · and wan hus mete with treuthe,
He sat atte sydbenche · and secounde table;
Cam no wyn in hus wombe · þorw þe weke longe,
Noþer blankett in hus bed · ne white bred by-fore hym.
The cause of al þys caitifte · comeþ of meny bisshopes,
That suffren suche sottes · and oþere synnes regne;
Certes, ho so þurste hit segge · *Symon quasi dormit;*
Vigilare were fairour · for þow hast gret charge.

† But when do we see these lollers at church on Sunday?

† But at the midday meal I meet them often.

† And, because he is a friar, he sits with the first,

† though he once sat at a side-bench, and never tasted wine.

† The bishops are the cause of all this.

† Mark xiv. 37.

† Mark xiv. 38.

240. *where*] were P. *lolleres*] loreles M.
241. [*fer* I*I*FG] PEM *om.*
243. *by-gynne*] beo bi-gunne G; be bygonne *I.*
244. *Oþer*] On M. *wel* EFG] wol P; ful IM; right *I.*
245. [*here* IMFEG*I*] oure P.
246. *at*] a-boute IG. *meel*] at meele I; at mete *I.*
247. *Comynge* MEFG] Come I; *miswritten* Conynge P. *a* (1)] his IG. *he*] G *om.*
248. *by-semeth*] bisemed IG.
249. *is*] his P. *he* MEFIG*I*] *miswritten* here P. *is he*] he is I.
250. *Wassheþ*] Whassheþ P. *sitteþ*] set him F.
251. *with*] in I*I.*
252. *atte*] at þe MEFG*I.* *sydbenche*] sidbord MI*I.* *and*] atte E*I*; at þe FG; þe (*sic*) M; and at þe I.
253. *þorw*] in al M.
254. *Noþer*] Ne no I*I*G; Ne M. *in*] on IMG.
255. *al*] F*I*G *om.* *caitifte*] caiteefnes F. *comeþ*] com G. *bisshopes*] bisshepes P.
256. *sottes*] sectes EG.
257. *so*] G *om.* *þurste*] derst EG; durste M; dorste I; durst F*I.* *hit segge*] sigge it I; say *I.*
258. *Vigilare* I*I*MFEG] Vigilate P. *gret*] a gret IMG.

For meny waker wolues · ben broke in-to foldes;
Thyne berkeres ben al blynde · þat bryngeþ forth þy lambren,
† Zech. xiii. 7; Mark xiv. 27. *Dispergentur oues* · thi dogge dar nat berke;
The tarre is vntydy · þat to þyne sheep by-longeþ,
Hure salue ys of *supersedeas* · in someneres boxes;
† The sheep are scabbed, and torn by the wolf. Thyne sheep are ner al shabbyd · þe wolf shiteþ woolle:
Sub molli pastore · lupus lanam cacat, et grex
In-custoditus · dilaceratur eo.
† Ho! shepherd! where is thy hound? Hoow! hurde! wher is þyn hounde · and þyn hardy herte,
For to wyrie þe wolf · þat þy woolle fouleþ?
† Thou losest many wethers. Ich leyue, for þy lacchesse · þow leest meny wederes,
And ful meny fayre flus · falsliche wasshe!
When þy lord lokeþ to haue · a-louaunce for hus bestes,
And of þe monye þow haddist *þer*-myd · hus meoble to saue,
And þe woolle worth weye · woo ys þe þenne!
† Luke xvi. 2. *Redde rationem uillicacionis tue* · oþer [in] arerage falle!

259. *waker*] wickede M. *ben—in-to*] arn wroken vnto I. *foldes*] þy foldes EI; þi folde M; þe fold G.

260. *Thyne*] Þy IG; Þi MF. *ben*] aren I. *lambren*] lambre I; lambus F.

261. *thi*] þe I*I*. *berke* IMFEG*I*] beerke P.

262. *The*] Þi M. *þyne*] þi MF; þy E; þe IG*I*. *sheep by-longeþ*] tripe longeth F.

263. *of*] I*I*G *om*.

264. *are ner*] ben ny M; be ny F; ben almoste E. *shabbyd*] schabbed MI*I*; scabbed EFG. *shiteþ*] schent M; bischit IF; shyt G. *woolle*] þi wolle MF; þe folde I.

265, 266. *lupus—eo*] IMF *om*. *In-custoditus—eo*] *I*G *om*.

267. *Hoow*] How MFG; Howe I; O E.

268. *wyrie*] go wery I. *þy*] þe I*I*. *fouleþ*] defouleþ M.

269. *leyue*] leue MIEG*I*; leeue F. *lacchesse*] slaknesse E. *leest*] *so* PE; lest F; lesest IM; lesist G; losest *I*. *wederes*] weþeres IMEF*I*; weþerys G.

270. *ful meny*] many a I. *flus*] *so* PE; flees IFG; fleis M; wolle-flees *I*. *falsliche*] is falsliche I; ys ful falslyche G*I*. *wasshe*] ywasche EG; i-wassche M; waschen *I*.

271. *When*] Þan F. *for*] of IMFG. *hus*] þi M; þees F.

272. *myd*] wiþ GI. *meoble*] moebles I. *saue*] haue I.

273. *And*] And whan M. *weye*] ywey E; y-weie FG; i-weied M. *ys*] wurþe F. *þenne*] þat time M. *ys—þenne*] þe bitydeþ *I*.

274. *tue*] IFG *om*. [*in* IMFEG*I*] P *om*. *falle*] þow fallest M.

Thyn hyre, hurde, as ich hope · hath nouht to quyty þy dette,
Ther as mede ne mercy · may nat a myte auayle,
Bote 'haue þis for þat · þo þat þow toke
Mercy for mede · and my lawe breke,
Loke now for þi lacchesse · whether lawe wol þe graunte
Purgatorie for þy paye · oþer *per*petuel helle?'
For shal no *pardoune* praye for 3ow *þer* · no*þer* *princes* letteres."

† 'Since thou didst break my law, expect purgatory or hell.'

"Peers," quaþ a prest þo · "þy *pardoune* most ich rede, (A 97 B 117)
Ich can construen ech worde · and kenne hit þe in englishe."

A priest asks to see Piers' pardon.

And peers at hus preyere · þe pardon vnfolded,
And ich by-hynde hem boþe · by-heeld al þe bulle.
In two lynes hit lay · and no lettere more,
And was ywryte ryght þus · in witnesse of treuthe.
Qui bona egerunt ibunt in uitam eternam:
Qui uero mala, in ignem eternum.

Piers shows it; it had but two lines,

quoted from Mat. xxv. 46. (INDULGENCIA CONCESSA PETRO PLOUHMAN.)

"Peter!" quaþ þe prest þo · "ich can no pardon fynde,
Bote 'do wel and haue wel · and god shal haue þy saule,
Do vuel and haue vuel · and hope þow non oþer
Bote he þat vuel lyueþ · vuel shal ende!'"

The priest says it is no pardon at all.

The preest þus and perkyn · of þe pardon Iangled. A 99 B 119
Throgh here wordes ich awook · and waitede aboute,
And seih þe sonne in þe south · sitte þat tyme.

They disputed so that I awoke.

275. *Thyn*] *miswritten* Then P; *cf.* l. 267. *quyty*] quyte IMFEG.
276. *ne*] & F. *may*] ne mai G.
277. *Bote*] For I.
278. *breke*] brekes G; I-broke F.
279. *lacchesse*] slaknesse E. *whether*] what I; wher FG.
281. *praye*] paye G. *3ow*] 3owe P. *noþer*] ne none G; ne no F*I*.
283. *Ich can*] For I can I. *ech*] ech a F; icha I. *in*] on M.
284. *preyere*] preyers I. *vnfolded*] þo vnfolded F; vnfoldeþ I.
285. M *omits*. *ich*] G *om*. *bulle*] bille I.
286. *lynes*] lynes as I; lofes (!) E. *no*] in no F; nat a IG. *Indulgencia, &c.*] *in* PM; *see* margin.
290. *Do*] And do I. *vuel*] yuel IEG; euele MF. *and* (2)] G *om*.
293. *Throgh—ich*] And I þorg here wordes I. *waitede*] a-waited M.
294. *sitte*] sittyng M.

Wandering over Malvern hills, I mused on this dream

Meteles and moneyles · on maluerne hulles,
Musynge on þis meteles · a myle-wey ich 3eode.
And meny tymes this meteles · made me to studie
Of þat ich seih slepynge · yf hit so be myghte,

about Piers and the priest.

And of peers plouhman · [ful] pensyf in herte,
And which a pardon peers hadde · the puple to gladen;
And how þe preest inpugned hit · thorwe two propre wordes.
Ac men setten nat by songewarie · men seen hit ofte faile,

Cato (Dist. ii. 31) bids us despise dreams.

Caton counteþ hit at nouht · and canonistres at lasse.
Ac for þe bok bible · bereþ good wyttnesse,

A 100 Yet Daniel interpreted that of Nebuchadnezzar (Belshazzar).

How daniel dyuinede · and vndude þe dremeles
Of kyng nabugodonosor · þat no peer hadde,
And sitthe after to hus sones · seide hem what þei thouhte :—

Joseph too had a dream,

And Ioseph mette meruelousliche · how þe mone and þe sonne
And elleuene sterres · hailsede hym alle ;

B 120 which his father interpreted,

Thenne Iacob Iuged · Iosephes sweuene :
"Beau fitz," quaþ þe fader · "we shulleþ for defaute,
Ich my-self and my sones · seche [þe] for neede ;"

and so it came to pass.

Hit by-fel as þe fader seide · in [pharaoes] tyme,
Þat Ioseph was Iustice · egipte to saue ;

296. *on*] in M. *þis*] *miswritten* þees P; *but see* l. 297. *3eode*] 3ode I; 3ede MEFG.

297. *And*] IG *om. tymes*] time IMF. *made*] haþ maked I.

299. *peers*] peres þe I. [*ful* IFG] PEM *om.; cf.* B-text.

300. *which*] wich P. *a*] I *om.*

301. *thorwe*] *with* F.

302. *Ac*] And G. *men* (2)] for men I; *miswritten* mei P. *hit*] M *om.*

303. *counteþ*] a-counteþ M.

304. *bok*] goode G. *good*] I *om.*

305. *vndude*] *so* PM; vndede FG; vndide I; vnded E. *dremeles*] dremes IF. I *adds* of kynges, *omitting* kyng *in* l. 306.

306. *hadde*] ne hadde M.

307. *And*] G *om. to*] I *om. seide*] and saide I; told F.

308. *mette* IMFEG] mete P.

309. *elleuene*] þe enleuene I; also elleue F. *hailsede*] heilede M; heiseden (*sic*) F; hail seide to G.

310. *Thenne*] And þenne G.

311. *Beau*] Bew M. *fitz*] filtz M; fiz G. *we—defaute*] for defaute we schal I.

312. [þe IFMEG] P *om.*

313. þe] his F. [*pharaoes* MFE] pharoes G; Pharao I; pharao hus P.

314. *to*] for to EF.

Hus eleuene broþeres · hym for neede souhte,
And hus fader Iacob · and al-so hus dame:—
Al þis makeþ me · on meteles to studie,
And how þe preest preuede · no pardon to do-wel;
And demede þat dowel · Indulgences passede,
Byennals and tryennals · and bisshopes letteres.
For ho so doþ wel here · at þe daye of dome
Worth faire vnderfonge · by-for god þat tyme.
So dowel passeþ pardon · and pilgrimages to rome;
3ut hath þe pope power · pardon to graunte
To puple, with-oute penaunce · to passen in-to Ioye,
As lettred men ous lereþ · and lawe of holy churche:

Quodcunque ligaueris super terram erit ligatum & in celis; Et quodcunque solueris super terram erit solutum & in celis. Mat. xvi. 19.

And so ich by-leyue leelly · lordes forbode elles,
þat pardon and penaunce · and preieres don saue
Saule[s] þat han synged · seuene sithe[s] dedliche.
Ac to trysten vpon triennels · treweliche me thynkeþ
Ys nat so syker for þe saule · certys, as ys dowel.
For-thi ich rede 3ow renkes · þat riche ben on þys erthe,
Vp trist of 3oure tresour · tryennels to haue,
Be 3e neuere þe boldere · to breke þe ten hestes;

Wherefore I often mused upon Piers and the priest, and I concluded that Do-well surpassed Indulgences. A 101

The pope, I fully believe, can grant pardon.

But to trust to Triennials is very unsafe.

315. *broþeres*] breþeres E; breþeren IF; breþerne M; breþren G.
316. *Iacob*] Isaac (!) I.
317. *meteles*] metinge G.
318. *preuede* IG] prouede MEF; preeued P. *to*] but M.
319. *demede þat*] þe mede of (!) E. *Indulgences*] indulgence MF. *passede*] passeþ I.
321. *doþ wel* MEFG] dowel I; wel doþ P.
323. *pilgrimages*] pilgrimage IM. *to*] of G.
324. *hath—pope*] haþ þe popus F; han þe popes E (*observe this reading*). *pardon*] þe pardone G.
325. *puple*] þe peple EF. *to*] G *om.* *in-to*] to F.
326. *lereþ*] lered I. *lawe*] men MG. *Et—celis*] MIFG *om.*
327. *by-leyue*] by-leue P (*here; but* by-leyue *elsewhere*); leue EIG; leeue F. *lordes*] goddes F. *lordes forbode*] lord forbede EI; lord me for-beode M.
328. *penaunce*] penaunces I.
329. *Saules* E] Soules MIFG; Saule P. *synged*] singed G; synned IEF; i-synned M. *sithes* IFG] sithe PE; times M.
330. *vpon*] apon P; vp þis I. *treweliche*] triweliche P.
331. *Ys*] Nys M; It is I. *for*] to I. *ys*] I (*sic*) I; M *om.*
332. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *renkes*] ruleres G.

B 121 Take heed, ye mayors, and wealthy judges, who purchase pardons.

And nameliche, ȝe maistres · meyres and Iuges,
That han þe welthe of þis worlde · and wise men ben holde, 336
To purchace ȝow pardon · and þe popes bulles.

When we stand before Christ at doomsday, and our deeds are rehearsed;

At þe dredful day of dome · when dede men shullen ryse,
And comen alle by-fore crist · a-countes to ȝelde,
Howe we ladde oure lyf here · and hus lawes kepte,

A 102 though we had a sackful of provincial letters,

And how we dude day by day · þe dome wol reherce.
A poke-ful of pardon þere · ne prouincials letteres, 342
Þauh [we] be founde in fraternite · of alle fyue ordres,

I will give little for our pardon unless Do-well help us!

And haue indulgences doblefolde · bote dowel ous helpe, 344
Ich sette by pardon nat a peese · noþer a pye hele!
For-thi ich counsaile alle cristine · to crye god mercy,
And marye hus moder · be oure mene to hym,

God give us grace to work such works, that Do-well at doomsday will say we did God's will.

Þat god ȝeue ous grace here · er we go hennes, 348
Suche workes to worche · whil we ben here,
That after oure deþ-day · dowel reherce
At þe day of dome · we dude as he tauhte.—*Amen.*

Hic explicit uisio willelmi de petro ploulman.

336. *holde*] i-holde M; holden G.
337. *ȝow*] ȝoure I.
338. *day of*] I *om.* *men*] I *om.* *ryse*] a-risen MIG.
343. [*we* IG] he PMEF (*observe* ous *in* l. 344). *in*] in þe IM. *fyue*] þe fyue MF.
345. *by—nat*] noght by pardoun I. *noþer*] ne nat I; ne M. *hele* IMEG] heele F; hyle P.
346. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *crye god*] god to crize M; crye god of F.
347. *marye*] to marize M. *moder*] deere modur F. *be*] to be F. *oure—hym*] to him oure mene G.
348. *go hennes*] hennes wende I.
349. I *omits.* *whil*] while þat F.
351. *At*] þat at G. *day*] dredful day F. *tauhte*] us tauȝte M. *Amen*] M *om.*
COLOPHON. *Hic*] EMIF *om.* *willelmi*] Willelmi W. (*sic*) I; G *om.* *ploulman*] le Plowman I. *See* Preface. *The title* Incipit uisio eiusdem, &c. *immediately follows; see* Pass. xi.

Visio eiusdem Willelmi de Do-wel.

PASSUS XI. (DO-WEL I.)

Incipit visio eiusdem Willelmi de dowel.

THus robed in russett · ich romede a-boute,
Al a somer seson · for to seke dowel,
[And] frainede ful ofte · of folke þat ich mette,
Yf eny wiht wist · wher dowel was at ynne,
And what man he myghte be · of meny man ich askede.
Was neuere wiht in þis worlde · þat wisse me couthe,
Wher þat he longede · lasse ne more;
Til hit by-ful on a frydaye · two freres ich mette,
Maisteres of [þe] menours · men of grete witte.
Ich hailsede hem hendilyche · as ich hadde ylerned,
And prayede pur charite · ar þei passede forþere,
Yf þei knew eny contreie · oþer costes a-boute,
Wher þat dowel dwelleþ— · "dere frendes, telleþ me;
For ȝe aren men of þys molde · þat most wide walken,
And knowen contreies and courtes · and menye kynne places,
Boþe princes paleis · and poure menne Cotes,
And dowel and do-vuele · wher þei dwellen boþe."

A 103 B 125 Everywhere I wandered, to find Do-well.

None knew where he dwelt.

One Friday, I met two Minorites,

and asked them to tell me where Do-well dwelt.

B 126 "For ye go about everywhere."

TITLE. *So* PEG; M *prefixes* Hic. *Willelmi*] FI *om.*
3. [*And* IMGF] PE *om. frainede*] a-frainede M. *folke*] men G.
4. *wiht*] with P; *but see* l. 6. *wher*] wer P.
5. *man* (2)] men E.
6. *þis*] þe I. *wisse me*] me wisse IG.
7. *þat he*] þis I. *longede*] lengede F; logget E; wonede G. *ne*] no I.
9. [*þe* IEF] PMS *om. menours*] menour (*sic*) I; mynours E; menowrus & F.
10. *hailsede*] hailede M; askede G. *ylerned* E] ylernede P; i-lered M; lered IGF.
11. *prayede*] prayed hem I. *pur*] par E; for M. *ar*] er I; or MFEG.
12. *contreie*] contreis EG.
13. *dwelleþ*] dwellede I. *telleþ me*] me telleþ E; ȝe me telle F.
16. *menne*] men IE; menes M.

"With us, at all times," said one.

"Sothliche," seide þe frere · "he soiourneþ with ous freres,

A 104

And ay hath, as ich hope · and [euer] wol her-after."

"Nay," said I, "even the righteous man sins seven times a day, (Prov. xxiv. 16.)

"*Contra*," quaþ ich as a clerke · and comsede to dispute,

And seide sothliche · "*septies in die cadit iustus*,
Fallynge fro ioye · iesus wot þe sothe!
'Seuene sythes,' seith þe bok · 'syngeþ day by day
The alþer-ryghtfulleste renk · þat regneþ vpon erthe.'
And ho so syngeþ," ich seide · "certys, doþ nat wel;
For ho so syngeþ · sikerliche doþ vuele,
And dowel and do-vuele · may nat dwelle to-gederes.

so he cannot *always* be with you."

Ergo, he ys nat al-way · at hom among 3ow Freres;
He is som while elles-wher · to wisse þe puple."

"I'll explain that about the righteous man," said he.

"Ich shal sei þe, my sone," · seide þe frere þenne,
"How seuene sithes þe sadde man · syngeþ on þe day.
By a forbusene," quaþ þe frere · "ich shal þe faire shewe.

"Put a man in a boat in open sea,

Let brynge a man in a bot · in-myddes a brode water;
The wynde and þe water · and waggynge of þe bote·

and the wagging of the boat will make him stumble, though he is safe.

Makeþ þe man meny tyme · to stomble, yf he stande;
Stonde he neuere so styfliche · þorgh sterynge of þe bote
He bendeþ and boweþ · þe body is vnstable,

18. *freres*] boþe G.
19. [*euer* FGI] 3ut M; PE *om.*
23. *sythes* EMF] sythe PI; *see* l. 31. *syngeþ*] synegeþ G; synneþ ME; man synneth F. *by day*] and ryth M.
24. *alþer*] alder M; I *om.* *vpon*] on I; on þe G.
25. *syngeþ*] synneþ IMEF; synegiþ G. *doþ*] he doþ I.
26. *syngeþ*] synneþ IME; synegeþ PG; *but see* ll. 23, 25.
27. *dwelle*] stonde G.
28. *ys*] nys G. *at—among*] a-tom wiþ M.
29. *is*] his P. *som while*] vmwhile G; vm-whil*us* F; vmbiwhile M; o*þer*-while I.
30. *sone*] self M.
31. *syngeþ*] synneþ IMFE; singeþ G. *on*] in G.
32. *forbusene*] forbisne I; forbisme (*sic*) G; for-bisen M; forbisen F. *quaþ*] seide M. þe (2)] 3ow G.
33. *in myddes*] amyddes I; amyd- F; in G.
34. *waggynge*] þe waggyng MFG. *bote*] vessel F.
35. *tyme*] tymes I; a tyme F. *stomble*] tombly G.
36. *Stonde*] For stonde I. *styfliche*] stillich E. *sterynge*] strengþe EM. *bote*] barge F.
37. *is*] is so I; his P.

Ac ȝut he is saf and sounde; · so fareth hit by þe ryght- **B 122.**
ful.
þauh he falle, he falleþ nat · bote as ho fulle in a bote, † For, while he falls *within* the
þat ay is saf and sounde: þat sitteþ with-ynne þe borde. boat, he is safe.
So hit fareþ," quaþ þe frere · "by ryghtful mannes Even so with the righteous
fallynge; 41 man.
þawe he þorgh fondinge falle · he falleþ nat out of
charite;
So dedliche synne doþ he nat · for dowel hym helpeþ.
The water ys likned to þe worlde · þat wanyeþ and **A 105**
wexeþ; 44
The godes of [þis] grounde aren lyke · to þe grete The waves are this world's
wawes, fluctuating riches.
[þat] as wyndes and wederes · walwen a-boute;
The bot ys lykned to oure body · þat brotel ys of The boat is the frail body.
kynde,
That þorgh þe fende and oure flesch · and þis frele
worlde 48
Syngeþ seuene sithes · þe saddest man on erthe,
And lyfholiest of lyf · þat lyueth vnder þe sonne.
Ac free wil and free wit · folweþ a man euere † But free will and free wit
To repenten and ryse · and rowen out of synne, 52 enable a man to row away out of sin."
To contricion, to confession · til he come to hus ende.
Raþer haue we no reste · til we restitue

38. *saf*] sad M. *so*] and so I. *hit*] G *om.*
39. *falle*] faile MF. *as*] I *om.* *ho*] who so I; hoso F; he MG.
40—42. G *omits.*
40. *saf*] sad M. *þat*] and I. *sitteþ*] sitte I; sit M.
41. *by*] by þe I.
42. *þorgh*] þorghe P. *fondinge*] fondynges I.
43. *he*] I *om.*
44. *likned* IF] liknyd G; likened EM; liknede P. *wanyeþ—wexeþ*] wexeþ and wanyeþ M.
45. *of*] on M. [*þis* IMFEG] þe P. *aren*] ben E. *to*] I *om.* *þe*] MEFG *om.*
46. [*Þat* I] For F; PEGM *om.*; *cf.* B-text. *walwen*] wawen E; waweþ M; wawen þei F.
47. *lykned*] lycknede P; *see* l. 44. *brotel*] brokel EG; britel M.
48. *and* (1)] of I (*wrongly*).
49. *Syngeþ*] Senegeþ P; Synegeþ G; Synneþ IMFE; *cf.* l. 25. *sithes* IMFE] sithe P; *cf.* ll. 23, 31.
50. F *omits.* *lyfholiest*] þe holiest I. *þe*] MG *om.*
51. M *transposes* wil *and* wit.
52. *ryse*] to arise I; to a-risen M; arise FG. *of*] of his G.
53. *To*] Þorgh I. *he*] he beo G.
54. *Raþer*] For raþere IF. *we* (1)] G *om.* *til*] til þat F.

Our lyf to oure lord god · for oure lykames gultes."

B 128 "I can't follow that," said I: "so farewell."

"Ich haue no kynde knowyng," quaþ ich · "to conceyue al þy speche,

Ac yf ich may lyue and loke · ich shal go lerne bettere."

"Ich by-kenne þe Crist," quaþ he · "þat on þe croice deide."

And ich seide, "þe same · saue ȝow fro meschaunce,

And gyue me grace on þis grounde · with good ende to deye."

Again I wandered wide, walking alone, and came to a grove,

Ich wente forþ wyde-where · walkynge myn one,

In a wylde wyldernesse · by a wode syde.

Blisse of [þe] briddes · a-byde me made,

A 106

And vnder lynde in a launde · lenede ich a stounde,

and listened to the sweet birds' lays.

To lithen here laies · and here loueliche notes.

Murthe of here murye mouthes · made me to slepe;

Then I slept again.

And merueilousliche me mette · a-myddes al þat blisse.

One like myself came, and called me by name,

A mucho man, me þouhte · lyke to my-selue,

Cam and callede me · by my [kynde] name.

"What art þow?" quaþ ich · "þat my name knowest?"

"That wost þou, wille," quaþ he · "and no wight betere."

who said, he was Thought.

"Wot ich," quaþ ich, "ho art þow?" · "thouhte," seide he þenne;

"Ich haue þe suwed þis seue ȝer · seih þou me no rather?"

56. *knowyng*] knowleching I. *quaþ ich*] I *om.* *al*] of G. *þy*] þis IFEG.
57. *lyue*] go leue G.
59. *ȝow*] þe M.
61. *myn one*] me one M; allone E; al myn oone F.
62. *wylde*] G *om.* *by*] and by I. *wode*] woodes I; wodus F.
63. [*þe* IMFG] PE *om.* *a-byde me*] me abide G.
64. *lynde*] a lynde M (*only*). *in*] vpon I.
65. *lithen*] lustene M.
66. *murye*] I *om.* *me*] me þere I.
67. *me*] i M.
68. *muche*] mekel M. *me*] as y G. *lyke*] ylike IG. *my*] me M.
69. [*kynde* I] ryhte PEFMG; *but cf.* B-text.
70. *art* MF] ert PE. *art þow*] artow I; ertow G. *my*] þou my I.
71. *wost*] I *om.* *wille*] wel E. *wight*] man M.
72. *art* IMF] ert PEG.
73. *þe*] E *om.* *þe suwed*] sewed þe I; y-sewed þe G. *þis*] G *om.* *seue*] *so also* EG; seuen I; seuene MF. *seih*] sawe I; saw FG; siȝe M; sey E.

"Art þow þouhte?" quaþ ich þo · "þow coupest me wisse — "Thought," said I, "tell me where is Do-well."
Where þat dowel dwelleþ · and do me to knowe?" 75 **B 129**
"Dowel and dobet," quaþ he · "and dobest þe þridde
Beþ þre fayre vertues · and beeþ nauht ferr to fynde.
Who-so is trewe of hys tonge · and of hus two handes, — "Whoever is true," said he,
And þorw leel labour lyueþ · and loueþ his emcristine, — "him Do-well follows.
And þer-to trewe of hus tail · and halt wel his handes,
Nouht dronkelewe ne deynous · dowel hym folweþ. 81 **A 107**
Dobet doþ al this · ac ȝut he doþ more; — Do-bet does even more, and gives to the needy,
He is lowe as a lombe · and loueliche of speche,
And helpeth herteliche alle men · of þat he may aspare.
The bagges and þe by-gurdeles · he hath to-broke hem alle, 85
That þe eorl auerous · heeld, and hus eires;
And of mammonaes moneye · mad hym meny frendes,
And is ronne in-to religion · and rendreþ hus byble, — and renders the Bible,
And precheþ to þe puple · seynt poules wordes; 89 — and preaches from the text, 2 Cor. xi. 19.
Libenter suffertis insipientes, cum sitis ipsi sapientes;
'ȝe worldliche wyse · vnwyse þat ȝe suffre,
Lene hem and loue hem' · this latyn ys to mene.
Dobest bere sholde · þe bisshopes croce, 92 — Do-best should **B 130** bear a bishop's crosier,
And halye with [þe] hoked ende · ille men to goode,

74. *Art* IMF] Ert PEG. *quaþ*] seide M. *coupest*] coudest IMF. *þow coupest*] coudest þou F.
75. *Where*] Were P. *me*] me him F.
76. *quaþ he*] G *om.*
77. *Beþ*] Aren I; Ben M. *beeþ*] ben IM; be F.
78. *so*] I *om.* *is*] his P. *trewe*] trywe P. *hys*] ys P. *two* EF] tuo I; to PMG.
79. I *omits.* *þorw*] þorwe P. *lyueþ*] G *om.* *emcristine*] euenecristene M.
80. I *omits.* *trewe*] trywe P. *wel his*] his to M.
81. *Nouht*] And is noght I. *deynous*] dedeynous I.
82. *ac*] and MF. *more*] wel moore F.
83. *loueliche*] lowelich I.
84. *aspare*] spare IM.
85. *by-gurdeles*] bri-gerdeles I; bregurdles G. *to-broke*] i-broke M.
86. *heeld*] helde IE; held MG.
87. *mad*] haþ mad M; y-maked I; y-mad GF.
88. *is*] M *om.* *ronne*] yronne EM. *in-to*] to EFG. *religion*] religious E. *rendreþ*] haþ rendred I; rendred F; redeþ M. *and rendreþ*] to rendre G. *hus*] þe I.
89. *cum, &c.*] IMG *om.*
90. *vnwyse þat*] þe vnwise M.
91. *to mene*] trewe I.
93. *halye*] holde E. [*þe* IMFG] PE *om.* *hoked*] croked M. *ille*] alle M. *to*] & F.

† to put down despisers of the law.

And with þe pyk putte adoune · *preuaricatores legis,*
Lordes þat lyuen as hem lust · and no lawe a-counten;
For here mok and here meeble · suche men þynken
That no Bisshop sholde · here byddinge with-sitte.
Ac dobest sholde nat dreden [hem] · bote do as god hihte,

† Mat. x. 28.

Nolite timere eos qui possunt occidere corpus.

Do-well, Dobet, and Dobest have crowned a king."

Thus dowel and dobet · diuinede, and dobest,
And crounede on to be kyng · to culle with-oute synne
That wolde nat don as dobest · diuinede and tauhte.
Thus dowel and dobet · and dobest þe þridde
Crounede on to be kyng · and kepen ous alle,

A 108

And reulen alle reaumes · by here þre wittes;
Bote o*þer*-wise ne elles nat · bote as þei þree assented."

I thanked him, and asked him where these three dwelt.

Ich þonked þouht þo · þat he me so tauhte:
"3ut sauereþ me nat þi sawe," quaþ ich · "so me crist spede,
A more kynde knowyng · coueite ich to huyre
Of dowel and of dobet · and dobest of alle."

"Only Wit can tell thee," said he.

"Bote wit wolle þe wisse," quaþ þouht · "wher þo þre dwellen;
Elles know ich non þat can · in none kynriche."

So Thought and

Thouht and ich thus þre daies · to-gederes we 3eoden,

94. *pyk*] puynt (*over erasure*) G. *putte*] pulte I.

95. *Here* S *begins again; and collation with* G *is less full.*

96. *For*] *so* IMFSG; And fore P; & for E; *but* And *is superfluous. mok*] muk FS. *and*] and for PE; *but* IMFSG *omit* for. *meeble*] moebles I.

97. Schulde no bischop be · here biddynges to wiþ-sitte I.

98. [*hem* IMFSG] hym PE. *nat —hem*] drede hem noght IG.

99. *diuinede*] demed I. *and*] a IMFS; at G.

100. *kyng*] a kyng IESG. *to*] & F.

101. *don*] M *om. diuinede*] demed I.

103. *kyng*] a kyng IESG.

104. *reulen*] to reule I. *by*] after G.

105. E *omits from* bote as þei *down to* nat *in* l. 107.

106. *þonked þouht*] thoght þonkede I; þankid muche þou3t F.

107. *3ut*] Ac 3ut I. *me nat*] nat me I. *sawe*] sawes I. *quaþ ich*] I *om. spede*] helpe MF.

108. *kynde*] kyndere I.

109. *of* (2)] IMFSG *om. dobest*] ho dobest P; who do best E; who doþ best I; *but* MFS *have* dobest *only, which is the simplest reading.*

110. *Bote*] But if I. *wolle þe*] þe wolde M; cunne þe F. *wher*] wer P. *þo*] þey S.

111. *kynriche*] kynge-riche M.

112. *Thouht*] Thouth P; *but see last line. we*] M *om. togederes— 3eoden*] wenton to-gidere F.

Disputynge vp dowel · daye after oþere;
And er we were ywar · with wit gan we mete.
He was long and lene · lyke to non oþer,
Was no pruyde in hus aparail · ne pouerte noþer;
Sad of hus semblant · with a softe speche.
Ich [dorste] meue no matere · to maken hym to Iangle,
Bote as ich bad thouht þo · be mene by-twene,
And putte forth som purpos · to prouen hus wittes,
What dowel was fro dobet · and dobest fro hem boþe.
Thenne thouht in þat tyme · seide þese wordes,
"Wher dowel and dobet · and dobest ben in londe
Her is on wolde wite · yf wit couthe teche,
And what lyues thei lyuen · and what lawe þei vsen;
What þei drede and douten · dere syre, telleþ."
"Syre dowel dwelleþ," quaþ wit · "nat a daye hennes,
In a castle þat Kynde made · of foure kyne þynges;
Of erthe, of aier yt is made · medled to-gederes,
With wynd and water · wittyliche en-ioyned.
Kynde hath closed þer-ynne · craftilyche with alle
A lemman þat he loueþ wel · lyke to hym-selue;
Anima hue hatte · to hure hath enuye

I went on till we met Wit. **B 131**

A 109 I asked Thought to ask him a question for me, and he asked him where Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best dwelt.

A 110 B 132 "Do-well dwells," said Wit, "in a castle made by Kind of four things, earth, air, wind, and water. Within the castle Kind has inclosed the lady *Anima*,

113. *vp*] vpon IMFG; for S.
114. *er*] ar IFG; or E. *were ywar*] were ware S; y-war were I; waar were G. *with*] S *om.*
115. *lyke*] y-like IG; & lik F.
116. *in*] on I. *aparail*] paraile IFG. *ne*] ne no M.
117. *with*] and wiþ IG.
118. [*dorste* IS] durst FE; derste G; ne durste M; þurste P; *see* B-text. *meue*] moeue E; meeue F. *to* (1)] ne M.
119. *thouht*] thouth P; *see* l. 110. *be*] to be I.
120. *prouen* IEF] preuen MSG; prooven P. *wittes*] wit S.
121. *dowel was*] was do-wel I.
122. *thouht*] thouth P; *see* l. 110. *þat*] þan P; *but it seems a mere error, as all other MSS. have* þat. *seide* MFG] seyde S; saide I; seede P; sede E. *þese* MF] þise I; *þis* E; þeese P.
123. *Wher* IMG] War P; Whare SEF. *ben* IMEF] been P; be S.
124. *wolde*] wille I. *wite*] I-wite I; i-witen M; ywite E. *yf wit*] ho so F. *teche*] him teche MF; telle G.
125. *lyues*] lijf þat M. *lawe*] lawes SFG.
126. *What*] And what I. *and*] an P. *douten* IMEFSG] douhten P. *telleþ*] telleþ me M.
129. *of*] and IS; and of M. *medled*] and medeled M; y-medeled IG.
130. *en-ioyned*] en-ioynede P.
131. *closed*] i-closed MF.
132. *wel*] I *om.*
133. *hue*] sche IMSFG; 3o E. *hatte*] hatteþ M.

whom 'the prince of this world' hates.

A prout prikyere of fraunce · *princeps huius mundi;*
And wolde wynne hure away · with wiles, yf he myghte.
And kynde knoweth þis wel · and kepeth hure þe betere,

Do-well, Do-bet, and Do-best are her appointed keepers.

And dooþ hure with syre dowel · duk of þes marches.
Dobet ys here damesele · syre doweles douhter,
To serue þat lady leelly · boþe late and rathe.

A 111

Dobest ys a-boue boþe · a bisshopes peer,
And by hus lerynge is ladde · þat ilke lady *anima.*

B 133
The constable of the castle is Inwit [Conscience],

The constable of þat castel · þat kepeþ hem alle
Is a wys knyght with alle · syre Inwit he hatte;
And haþ fyue faire sones · by hus furste wyf,

whose sons are See-well, Say-well, Hear-well, Work-well, and Go-well."

Syre seewel, syre seiwel · syre huyrewel þe hende,
Syre worchewel with þyn hand · a wight man of strengthe,
And syre godfaith gowel · grete lordes alle.
These fyue ben ysett · for to sauye *anima,*
Til kynde come oþer sende · and kepe hure hym-self."

"Who is Kind?" said I.

"What lyues þyng is kynde?" quaþ ich · "can[st] þow me telle?"

"Kind is the great Creator, who made all things;

"Kynde is [a creator]," quaþ wit · "of alle kyne þynges,
Fader and formour · of al þat forth groweþ,
The whiche is god grettest · þat gynnynge hadde neuere,
Lord of lyf and of lyght · of lysse and of payne.

134. *prout*] proud MISF.
135. *wiles*] whiles P. *yf*] and I.
136. *þis*] hit M. *hure*] hit M.
137. *dooþ*] doþ E; hath do IFS; i-do M. *syre*] M *om.* *duk*] duchasse M.
140. I *omits.*
141. *And*] As I. *leryngè*] lernyng IMG. *þat ilke*] þis ilke I; þulke M. *þat—lady*] eche day þat E.
142. *The*] Ac þe I.
143. *Is*] He is M. *hatte*] hoteþ M; highte I.
145. *huyrewel*] herkenewel M.
149. *sende*] seynde P.
150. *lyues*] *so also* EM; lyuus S; leuys G; kynnus F; kyn I. *canst* FMS] canest E; can P. *canst þow*] canstow I.
151. [*a creator* MS] creator F; creatour G; creature PEI (*wrongly*); *cf.* B-text. *alle*] I *om.*
152. *al*] M *om.*
153. *whiche*] wiche P. *þat—hadde*] begynnyng had he I; by-gunnyng had G. *hadde*] E *om.*
154. *lyght*] liþ E.

Angeles and alle þyng · aren at hus wil;
Man is hym most lyk · of membres and of face,
And semblable in soule to god · bote yf synne hit make.
And as þow suxt þe sonne · som tyme for cloudes
May nat shyne ne shewe · on shawes on erthe,
Right so letteþ lecherie · and oþer luther synnes,
þat god suweþ nat synful men · and suffreþ hem mysfare,
As somme hongen hem-self · and oþer while a-drencheþ;
God wol nat of hem wite · bote leteþ hem yworthe,
As þe sauter-seiþ · by such synful shrewes,
Et dimisi eos secundum desideria [cordis] eorum.
Loke! suche luther men · lome ben ryche
[Of golde and of oþer good · ac godes grace hem faileþ;]
For thei loueþ and by-leyueþ · al here lyf-tyme
More in catel þan in kynde · þat alle kyne þynges wroghte,
The whiche is boþe loue and lyf · and lasteþ withouten ende.
Inwitt and alle wittes · closed ben þer-ynne; **B 134**
By loue and by leaute · þer-by lyueþ *anima;*
And lyf lyueþ by Inwitt · and lerynge of kynde.

man being most like Himself. (**A 112**)

† As clouds hide the sun, so sin hides God from man.

† Some sinners kill themselves.

† Ps. lxxx. 13 (Vulg.).

† Wicked men are often very rich.

† They believe more in wealth than in God.

155. *and*] of (!) E. *aren*] ben (*wrongly*) E.
156. *hym most*] most him I. *and of*] & F; in (*sic*) S.
157. *in*] most in M.
158. *suxt*] sixt F; seist ES; seest IM; sexst G.
159. *ne*] & S. *shawes*] shaftes M.
160. *Right*] I *om.* *letteþ*] lette I. *luther*] liþere MFSG.
161. *suweþ*] scheweþ I. *nat*] nat such I. *and*] but S.
162. *a-drencheþ*] drencheþ MG.
163. *leteþ*] lat I; let M; leet G. *yworthe*] worþe S.
164. *such*] I *om.* *desideria* IMFG] desiderium PES. [*cordis* EF] PIM SG *om.*
165. *Loke*] I *om.* *luther*] luther-lyuynge I. *lome*] i-lome M.
166. *From* I; *also in* MFSG; PE *omit.*
167. *For*] Ac for M.
168. *in*] on IMFSG (*twice*). *More—catel*] On catel more I. *kyne*] kynde I; S *om.* *þynges*] þing IG.
169. *whiche*] wiche P. *boþe*] I *om.* *and lasteþ*] þat laste I; lastynge G.
170. *wittes*] whittes P.
172. *lerynge*] lernynge MG.

In-wit is in the head, and *Anima* in the heart.

Inwitt is in þe hefd · as *Anima* [in] þe herte,
And muche wo worth hym · þat Inwitt mys-speyneþ.
For þat is godes owen good · hus grace and hus tresoure,

† Some men, like Lot, Noah, and Herod, lose their Conscience.

That meny lede leeseþ · thorw lykerouse drynke,
As lot dude and noe; · and *herodes* þe daffe
3af hus douhter for [a] daunsyng · in a dissh þe hefde
Of þe blessyde baptiste · by-fore alle hus gustes.

† Conscience and health are treasures.

Every man þat hath ynwitt · and hus hele boþe,
Hath tresour ynow in treuthe · to fynde with hym selue.

A 113 B 135 Idiots should be protected by the church.

Ac fauntekynes and fooles · þe whiche fauten Inwitt,
Frendes [schulden] fynden hem · and fro folye kepe,
And holychurche helpe to · so sholde no man begge,

B 137 Waste not speech or time.

Ne spille speche ne tyme · ne myspende neiþer
Meeble ne vnmeeble · mete noþer drynke.

† Love your enemies.

And þanne dude we alle wel · and 3ut wel bet to louye
Oure enemyes entyreliche · and help hem at here neede.
And 3ut were best to bee aboute · and brynge hit to hepe,

† We should seek to love all men.

That alle londes loueden · and in on lawe by-leouede.
Bisshopes sholde be here-aboute · and brynge þis to hepe,
For to leese þere-fore here londe · and here lyf after.

173. *in*] I *om.* *hefd*] heued IG; hoed F; hed ME; hede S. *as*] and IMFS. [*in* IMFESG] P *om.* *þe*] IG *om.*

174. *muche*] mykel M. *worth*] werches M. *mys-speyneþ*] myspeneþ ESG; mys-spendeþ MF.

176. *lede*] a leede IF. *lykerouse*] sikenesse of E. *drynke*] drynks M.

177. *lot*] loth IMF. *and* (2)] an P.

178. *3af*] He 3af I. [*a* IMFSE] P *om.* *daunsyng*] daunce F. *þe*] his S. *hefde*] heed MF; hed E; hede S.

179. *þe*] þat IG. *gustes*] *so also* E; gestes I; gistes MFS.

181. *in*] of IS. *with*] IS *om.*

182. *whiche*] wiche P; whiche *þat* I. *fauten*] lakkyþ G.

183. [*schulden* M] schold S; schal I; schul F; schulle G; suche PE.

184. *helpe*] helpeþ E; S *om.*

187. *And*] Ac I. *we*] S *om.* *3ut —bet*] wel bete 3ut I. *to*] is to E. S *omits last half of* l. 187 *and first half of* l. 188.

189. *3ut*] ry3t S. *were*] hit were M.

190. G *omits.* *loueden* IMFE] loueþ S; *miswritten* lyueden P. *and*] an P. *on*] o S; oo F.

191. G *omits.* *þis*] hit MS; it F.

The catel þat crist hadde · þre cloþes hit were,
Ther-of was [he] ryfled · and robbed er he deyede;
After þat he les hus lyf · for lawe sholde loue wexe.
Prelates and preestes · and princes of holy churche
Sholde doute no deþ · noþer dere 3eres,
To wenden as wyde · as þe worlde were,
To tulien the erthe with tonge · and teche men to louye;
For ho so loueþ, leyue hit wel · god wol nat lete hym sterue
In myschef for lacke of mete · ne for myssynge of cloþes;

† Christ had but three pieces of cloth, and of these He was robbed.

† Prelates should fear no death,

† but preach Love through all the world.

Inquirentes autem dominum non minuentur omni bono. Ps. xxxiii. 11 (Vulg.).

Ho so lyueþ in lawe · and in loue doþ wel
As these weddid men · þat þis worlde susteynen?
For of here kynde thei come · confessours and [martyres,]
Patriarkes and prophetes · popes and maidenes.
For god seith hit hym-self · 'shal neuere good appel
þorw no sotel science · on sour stock growe;'
And hit ys no more to mene · bote men þat buth bygetyn
Out of matrimonie nat moillere · mowe nat haue þe grace

(A 117) Truly wedded folk do well.

Of such come confessors, martyrs, &c.

(B 138) † Illegitimate children are out of grace.

194. S *omits*. *Ther-of*] þer-fro E. [*he* IMFEG] P *om*. *ryfled*] ryflede P. *ryfled—deyede*] robbed and rufled · or he on roode deyed I.

195. *After þat*] Afterward M. *he les*] he lefte M; lees he E. *After—lyf*] And I sy þe al his lif (*sic*) I. *loue*] longe & (*sic*) S.

197. *doute*] nat dowte I. *noþer*] ne none MSF; ne no IG.

199. *tulien*] tylye ISFG; telize M. *erthe*] eerthe P.

200. *leyue*] lef MS; leue EG; I *om*. *hit*] him I.

201. *lacke*] defaute I; no lac F.

203. *As*] And (!) S. *these*] theese P; wise M.

204. *thei*] þer E. *confessours*] þe confessours M; boþe confessours I. [*martyres* MIFSG] maistres (*wrongly*) PE.

205. *maidenes* MI] maidones PEFG.

206. *hit*] IS *om*.

207. *on*] on a M; in a S.

After l. 207, S *adds*—Noþur an a bytur brom · wex broune beryus.

208. *hit*] MSEFG *om*. *buth*] beþ ESF; ben MI.

209. *moillere*] mulerize M.

That leelle legitime · by lawe may cleyme.
And þat my sawe be soth · þe sauter bereþ witnesse,
Ps. vii. 15 Vulg.). *Concepit in dolore, & peperit iniquitatem.*
Caym þe cursed creature · conceyued was in synne,
† Cain, who was accursed, was conceived in sin. After þat adam and eue · hadden ysynged; 213
With-oute repentaunce · of here rechelesnesse,
A rybaud þei engendrede · and a gome vnryghtful.
As an hewe þat ereþ nat · auntreþ hym to sowe 216
On a leye-lond · a-ȝens hus lordes wille,
So was caym conceyued · and so been cursed wrecches,
That lycame han a-ȝen þe lawe · þat oure lord ordeynede.
(A 118) Alle þat come of caym · caytyues were euere, 220
And for þe synne of caymes sed · seyde god to noe,
Gen. vi. 7. *Penitet me fecisse hominem;*
God bade Noah build the ark, And bad shape hym a schip · of shides and of bordes,
'Thy-selue and þy sones þree · and sitthen ȝoure wyues,
Buske ȝow to þat bot · [and] a-bydeþ þer-ynne 224
for the flood should destroy Cain's seed. Tyl fourty dayes be fulfilled · and [þe] flod haue wasshe
Clene away þe cursede blod · that of cayme ys spronge.
A 119 B 139 "All the beasts must die for Cain's sin, Bestes þat now beeþ · banne shulleþ þe tyme
That euere þat cursed cayme · cam on this erthe; 228
Alle shullen deye for hus dedes · by dales and hulles,
And þe foules þat flen · forth with othere bestes,
save of each kind a couple." Except onliche · of eche kynde a peyre,
That in þy shynglede schip · with the shal be saued.'

210. *leelle*] þe leel F. *legitime*] legitimi F; legityme men M. *by*] by þe I.
211. *be*] is I. *bereþ*] bere S.
213. *ysynged*] y-synned IMFE; I-synewyd S.
214. *rechelesnesse*] rechilessnesse P.
215. *and*] M *om.* I *omits last half of the line.*
216. *hewe* IG] hywe P; hyne IMFES. *auntreþ*] & auntruþ S; & awntereth F.
217. *a*] an old S; a lewed F.
222. *shape*] shappe P; go schapen I; hym schap SG. *hym*] I *om.* *schip* IMFSG] shup PE. *of* (2)] I *om.*
224. *Buske*] Buskeþ SMF. [*and* IMF] PESG *om.*
225. [þe M] PEIFSG *om.* *wasshe*] i-wassche MFG; ywrasche (*sic*) I.
226. *ys*] I *om.*
227. *banne shulleþ*] schal banne IG.
230. *flen*] flyeth I; fleeþ F; fleon S.
231. *eche*] ech a I.
232. *þy*] M *om.* *schip* MFS] schippe I; shup P. *with—saued*] schal be *with* þe y-saued I.

Here abou3te þe barn · hus belsires gultes,
And alle for here for-fadres · ferden þe worse.
The godspel ys her-ageyn · as gomes may reden,
Filius non portabit iniquitatem patris, [*nec pater iniquitatem filij.*] Ezek. xviii. 20.
Holy writ wittnesseþ · þat for no wickede dede
That the sire hym-self doþ · by hus owene wil,
The sone for [þe] syres synne · sholde nat be þe werse.
West-mynster lawe, ich wot wel · worcheþ þe contrarie ; † Westminstor law says the contrary, for it disinherits the son whose futher is hanged.
For þauh þe fader be a frankelayne · and for a felon be hanged,
The heritage þat þe air sholde haue · ys at þe kynges wille.
Ac þe godspel ys a glose þere · hudynge þe greythe treuthe ;
For god seide ensample · of suche manere isshue,
That kynde folweþ kynde · and contrarieþ neuere ;
Nunquam colligunt de spinis vuas : & alibi, Mat. vii. 16, 17.
Bona arbor bonum fructum facit.
Ac whi þe worlde was a-drent · holy writ telleþ, The flood came because Seth's seed married Cain's.
Was for mariages of man-kynde · þat men maden þat tyme.
After þat caym þe cursede · hadde culled abel,
Seth, Adames sone · sitthen was engendred.
And god sente to seth · so sone he was of age,

B 138

233. *abou3te* G] aboughte I ; abou3t EF ; bou3te S ; boute M ; *mis-written* aboute P. *hus*] þe IMFG.
234. *for-fadres*] form-fadres MFS.
235. *portabit* IMFSEG] importabit P. [*nec—filij*] *in* M *only*.
236. *þat*] S *om*.
237, 238. I *has*—þat þe sire by him-selfe doþ · þe sone schal be þe worse. *for*] fore P. [*þe* EMFSG] P *om*. *synne*] gilt F ; gult S.
239. *West-mynster*] Ac Westmenster I.
240. *a* (1)] S *om*. *a* (2)] MSF *om*. *hanged*] anhanged I ; i-hanged M.
241. *air*] heir I ; eire E ; eir M ; sone S ; eyr G ; heir*us* F.
242. *godspel—a*] gospeles M. *hudynge*] and hideþ I. *greythe*] grete MEG ; graye (!) S.
243. *seide*] sey S. *isshue*] yschue E ; issue IF ; issu M ; vssu S.
244. *colligunt*] colligit quis M ; colliget F ; colligit EG ; colliges IS.
245. *a-drent*] dreynt E.
246. *Was*] Hit was M. *of man-kynde*] makyng I.
248. *sitthen*] seth (*repeated*) I ; seþþe M. *engendred*] engendrede P ; endangered (!) M.

God warned Seth's issue not to marry with Cain's; and was wroth with them for so doing.

That—for no kyne catel · ne no kyne byheste
Suffren hus seed seeden · with caymes seed hus broþer.
And for þat seth suffrede hit · god seide, 'me forþynkeþ 252
That ich man made · oþere matrimonye suffrede;

B 140 For good sholde wedden good · þauh þei no good hadde,

Jo. xiv. 6. For ich am *uia & ueritas* · and may auaunce hem alle.'
Ac fewe folke [now] folweþ this · for thei ȝeueþ here children 256

Now-a-days, many marry for money. For couetise of catel · and connynge chapmen;
Of kyn ne of kynredene · a-counteþ men bote lytel.

† No rich man will marry a pretty girl, if poor; þauh hue be loueliche to loken on · and lofsom a bedde,
A mayde wel ymanered · of good men [y]spronge, 260
Bote hue haue eny oþer good · haue hure wol no ryche.

† but he will marry an ugly one, if rich, Ac let hure be vnloueliche · vnlofsom a bedde,
A bastarde, a bounde on · a begeneldes douhter,
That no curtesye can · bote let hure be knowe 264
For ryche oþer wel yrented · þauh hue reuely for elde,
Ther nys squier ne knyght · in contreye a-boute,
That he nel bowe to þat bonde · to bede hure an hosebonde,

† and wish next day that she were And wedden hure for hure welthe · and wisshen on þe morwe 268

250. *That*] *superfluous, but in all MSS.* · *ne*] ne for M.
251. *Suffren—seeden*] Suffre nout þi seed scheden M. *hus* (2)] þi M.
252. *for—seth*] seth for he I.
253. *man*] man on moolde F.
254. *no*] *miswritten* ne P.
255. *and*] i M. *hem*] I *om.*
256. *Ac*] For M. [*now* EMIFS] P *om.* *now folweþ*] folwen now I.
257. *catel*] hory catel F. *and*] to F. *chapman* IMFES] chapman P.
258. *a-counteþ*] counteþ IG.
259. *hue*] sche M; ȝhe I; ȝo E; heo FG; *miswritten* he P; *but see* l. 261. *loueliche—a*] louesum to loke on · and also in M.
260. *wel*] and wel I. *ymanered*] ymanerede P; ynorisched E. *of*] and of I. *yspronge* EIMFSG] spronge P.
261. *eny*] I *om.* *hure wol*] wol hire I; wole hure MF; nel hure G.
262. *hure*] hem I. *a*] in M.
263. *bounde*] bonde MF. *on*] *so also* MS; oon F; E *om.* *a*] oþer a E (*twice*). *begeneldes*] begenyldes ES; begeneles M; begenildus F.
264. *can*] ne can I. *knowe*] i-knowen M.
265. *wel yrented*] rented wel I. *reuely*] ryuel E; ryuele MFSG; be reueled I.
267. *nel*] ne wile IM. *þat*] þe S. *to* (2)] and M. *hosebonde*] housebond IS; husbonde FG.

That hus wyf were wex · o*þer* a watel-ful of nobles. turned into wax or money.
In gelesie ioye-less · and Ianglynge a bedde
[*þ*ei lyue here lif vnlouely til deth hem departe.]
Meny peire sitthe the pestilence-tyme · han plight **A 120**
treuthe to louye, 272 Many, since the pestilence, have married ill,
Ac *þ*ei lyen [lelly] · here no*þer* loue*þ* o*þ*ere.
The frut *þ*at *þ*ei bryngen forth aren meny foule wordes;
Thei han no children bote cheste · and choppes hem by-twyne. and have no children but strife.
Thauh *þ*ei don hem to donemowe · bote *þ*e deuel hem helpe 276 Though they go to Dunmow, they never fetch the flitch.
To folwen for *þ*e flicche · feccheþ *þ*ei hit neuere;
Bote *þ*ei bothe be for-swore · that bacon thei tyne.
For-thi ich counseile alle crystine · coueite neuere be wedded Then wed not for money, but marry suitably.
For couetise of catel · in no kynne wyse; 280
Bote maydenes and maydenes · marie*þ* 3ow to-gederes;
And wydewers and wydewes · wedde*þ* ay*þer* o*þ*ere,
And loke *þ*at loue be more *þ*e cause · *þ*an lond o*þ*er **B 141**
nobles.
And eue*r*ech mane*r*e seculer man · *þ*at may nat con- It is better to marry than burn.
tynue, 284
Wisliche go wedde · and war *þ*e fro *þ*at synne

269. *watel*] *so* PE; walet IMF; watel (*alt. to* walet) G; cofre S.
270. *ioye-less*] iewelles (*wrongly*) M. *a*] in M.
271. *In* F *only*.
272. *Meny*] Many a I. *the*] *þ*is IG; MF *om.* *pestilence-tyme*] pestilences IG.
273. [*lelly* SMG] lely I; leelly F; sothliche PE. *here*] neu*er* E; MS *om.* *no*þ*er*] ney*þ*er S; non IG. *here no*þ*er*] for noon of hem F. *loue*þ] like*þ* IG.
274. *frut*] fruyt IMFGS. *forth*] E *om.* *aren*] ben ES.
275. *Thei han*] Han *þ*ey I.
278. *thei*] *þ*ei ne M (*wrongly*).
279. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *crystine*] goode G. *coueite*] coueite*þ* M; coueytede (*sic*) I. *be*] to be M.
280. G *omits.* *For*] For no I. *no kynne*] non skynnes (*sic*) E.
281. *maydenes* (2)] maydones PE. *marie*þ MFS] marye I; *miswritten* marien PG.
282. *wydewers—wydewes*] widewes and widewers I. *ay*þ*er*] 3oure ay*þ*er I.
283. *loke*] loke*þ* MS. *nobles*] noobles P.
284. *manere*] G *om.* *contynue*] conteyne MS.
285. *go*] to M. *wedde*] wedde a wif E. *war—fro*] worche for M. *þat*] G *om.*

That lecherye is, a lykynge þyng · and lym-ȝerde of helle.

Marry while young.

And whil þow art ȝong and ȝep · and þy wepne kene,
Awreke þe þerwith on wyuynge : for godes werk ich holde hit : 288

Cf. John of Bridlington, in Wright's Polit. Poems, i. 159.

Dum sis uir fortis · ne des tua robora scortis,
Scribitur in portis · meretrix est ianua mortis.

ȝe þat han wyues, beþ war · worcheþ nat out of tyme,

Observe right seasons.

As adam dude and eue · as ich whil er tolde. 292

None but the pure should live together.

For sholde no bed-borde be · bote yf þei boþe were
Clene of lyf and loue in saule · and in leel wedlok.
For þat derne dede · do no man sholde 295

A 121

Bote wedded men with here wyues · as holy writ telleþ ;

1 Cor. vii. 2.

Bonum est ut unusquisque uxorem suam habeat,
propter fornicacionem.

Bastards are commonly false, liars, ungracious, and wasters.

That o*þere*-gates been gete · for gadelynges aren holde,
And fals folke and foundlynges · faitours and lyers,
Vngraciouse to gete good · o*þ*ere good loue of puple,
A-waytynge and wastynge · al þat thei cacche mowe ;

B 142

A-ȝens dowel thei don vuele · and þe deuel seruen, 301
And after here deþ-daye · dwellen shulle in helle,
Bote God gyue [hem] *grace* · her goynge to amende.

Thus, Do-well is, *to do lawfully* ; Do-bet, *to love all men* ; Do-best, *to help all.*

And þus ys dowel, my frend · to do as lawe techeþ,
To louye and to lowe þe · and no lyf to greue. 305
Ac to louye and to lene · leyf me, þat is dobet ;
Ac to ȝeue and to ȝeme · boþe ȝonge and olde,

286. *That*] For SG. *and*] & a G.
287. *art*] ert PEG.
288. *Awreke*] Wrek S. *holde hit*] hit holde MF.
291. ȝ*e*] And ȝe I. *beþ* IMESG] be F ; ben P. *war*] i-war M. *worcheþ*] and worcheþ I.
292. *er*] ere ȝow I.
293. *borde*] bourde IMF.
294. *loue in*] in loue of I.
295. *sholde*] ne schoolde F.
297. *gates*] gate M. *for*] G *om.* *aren holde*] ben yholde E.
299. *good* (2)] gete I; M *om.* *puple*] þe peple MFS.
300. *A-waytynge—wastynge*] A-wayten and wasten IG. *cacche*] gete F.
301. *thei*] G *om.*
303. [*hem* IMFG] hym S ; PE *om.* *her*] here ... such F. *to*] here to I.
304. *do* IMFSEG] *miswritten* day P. *as*] as þe F.
305. *lowe*] loue I (*wrongly*).
306. *Ac*] S *om.* *lene*] loue *or* lone I. *leyf*] lef M ; leef SG ; leue IE ; leeue F.
307. *Ac*] And S. *to* (2)] S *om.* *olde*] holde P.

Helen and helpen · is dobest of all. 308
For þe more a man may do · by so þat he do hit,
The more is he worth and worthi · of wyse and goode
ypreised." 310

† The more a man can do, the more worthy he is, *if he do it.*

Hic explicit passus primus de dowel.

308. *Helen*] To helen hem F. *dobest*] best E.
309. *For*] Fore P. *by*] M *om.*
310. *is he*] he is IE; ys G. *worth—worthi*] worthy and worth I; wroþ & worþ (*sic*) S. *goode*] of god I.
COLOPHON. IM *omit.* *Hic*] FSE *om.* G *has*—Explicit Passus Primus de visione Wille*l*mi de dowel.

PASSUS XII. (DO-WEL II.)

Incipit passus secundus [de dowel].

A 122 B 143 Then had Wit a wife named Study,

THenne hadde wit a wif · was hote dame studie,
That ful lene lokede · and lif-holy semede;
Hue was wonderliche wroth · þat wit so me tauhte.

who sternly said to him, "Thou art wise to teach fools!

Al starynge dame studie · sterneliche seide,
"Wel art þow wys," quaþ hue to Wit · "suche wisdome [to] shewe
To eny fol other flaterere · o*þer* to frentik puple;"

Cast not pearls before swine (Mat. vii. 6).

And seide, "*nolite mittere*, ȝe men · margerie-perles
A-monge hogges þat hauen · hawes at wille;
Thei don bote dreuele þ*er*on · draf were hem leuere
Þan al þe p*re*ciouse perreye · þat eny p*r*ince weldeþ.

I speak of those that prefer riches to wisdom.

Ich segge hit by suche," quaþ studie · "þat shewen by here werkus,
[Þei] loueþ lond and lordshup · and lykyng of body more

OBS. *The readings marked* K *are from* MS. Digby 171.

TITLE. Incipit passus secundus PE; Incipit secundus F; M *adds*—de dowel; S *adds*—de eodem; I *has*—Passus primus de visione Dowel, &c.

1. *hote*] i-hote M. *was hote*] men callid here F.

3. *Hue*] Sche IM; Heo FK. *wonderliche*] wonder M. *so me*] me so I.

4. *starynge* IES] staryng MF; staryenge P. *sterneliche* IESM] sturneliche PF. *seide*] sche seide M.

5. *to Wit*] SF *om.* *wisdome*] wisdomes KFS. [*to* IMFSEGK] P *om.*

6. *other*] or to I.

7. *mittere*] mittere in viam I. ȝe *men*] ȝemmen & E (*wrongly*).

8. *hogges*] swyn M. *hawes*] hawen S. *at*] at heore M. *at wille*] I-nowe F.

9. *dreuele* I] dreuel K; dreuelen E; dryuele F; drauele M; dreuely S; dreuelyn P.

11. *hit*] M *om.* *studie*] witte I (*wrongly*). *werkus*] werk I.

12. [Þei M] That PEIFSK; *cf.* B-text. *loueþ*] louen but M. *body more*] heore bodi M.

Than holynesse oþer hendenesse · oþer al þat seintes techeþ. **B 144**

Wysdom and Wit now · is nat worth a carse **A 123**
Bote hit be carded with couetyse · as cloþers kemben wolle.
Ho þat can contreeue and caste · to deceyue þe puple,
And lette with a loueday · treuthe, and by-gyle hym,
That can coueite and caste thus · aren cleped in-to counsail.

Wisdom is worth nothing now-a-days, unless it is carded with Covetousness, like wool.

Qui sapiunt nugas · & crimina lege uocantur,
Qui recte sapiunt · lex iubet ire foras.

He is reuerenced and robed · þat can robbe þe peuple
þorw fallas and false questes · and þorw fykel speche.
Iob þe gentil and wys · in hus gestes wytnesseþ
What shal worthe of suche · whenne þei lyf leten;

† False lawyers are most reverenced.

Ducunt in bonis dies suos, & in fine descendunt ad infernum. † Job xxi. 13.

The sauter seith þe same · of alle suche ryche;

Ibunt in progenies patrum suorum, & usque in eternum non uidebunt lumen: † Ps. xlviii. 20 (Vulg.).

Et alibi: Ecce ipsi peccatores, & cet. Ps. lxxii. 12 (Vulg.).

'Lo!' holy lettrure seith · 'whiche lordes been these shrewes!
Tho þat [god] most good gyueþ · most greue ryght and treuthe:'

14. *carse*] crasse M; kerse F.
15. *kemben*] M *om.* *wolle*] here wolle I.
16. *Ho*] He M. *þat*] so S. *and*] a F. *puple*] rightful I. S *omits from* to deceyue *to* thus *in* l. 18.
17. *hym*] IK *om.* F *has*—& lette trewþe with louedaies · & begile þe leel trewe.
18. *coueite* MEKG] coueyty P; *not in* IS; F *has* coniecte, *which, however, lacks support.* *and*] an P. *aren*] ben EMS. *cleped*] i-called M; called F.
20. *recte sapiunt*] sapiunt recte S.
22. *fallas*] fallasse M; fallace F. *questes*] enquestes M. *fykel*] false S (*wrongly*).
23. *and wys*] I *om.* *hus*] a M. *gestes*] geste EMSK; geest F.
24. *whenne*] wenne P. *lyf*] þe lijf M. *fine*] puncto S. *descendunt*] descendent F. *ad*] in EMF. *infernum*] inferna S.
25. *progenies* EIF] progenie PM SK. *uidebunt*] uidebit M.
26. *holy—seith*] saiþ holy letterure I. *whiche*] wiche P; swiche M. *these* MSFK] thees P; þise I; þis E.
27. [*god* IMFSKG] PE *om.* *gyueþ*] ȝifþ I; doþ M. *most greue*] greueth most I.

Ps. x. 4 (Vulg.). *Que perfecisti, destruxerunt; [iustus autem quid fecit?]*

Ribalds are helped before the poor.

And harlotes for [hure] harlotrie · aren holpen er nedy poure;

And þat is no ryght ne reson · for raþer men sholde
Help hem þat hath nouht · þan þo þat han no neede.

Teachers of holy things are now little loved.

Ac he þat haþ holy writ · aye in hus mouthe,
And can telle of treuthe · and of þe twelue apostels,

B 145

Oþer of þe passion of crist · oþer of purgatorie peynes,
Lytel is he a-lowed þere-fore · among lordes [at] festes.

A 124

Now-a-days, men make a mock of the Trinity.

Nowe is þe manere atte mete · when mynstralles ben stylle,
The lewede a-ȝens þe lered · þe holy lore to dispute,
And tellen of þe trinite · how two slowe þe þridde,
And brynge forth ballede resones · and taken bernarde to witnesse,
And putteþ forþ presompcions · to preouen þe sothe.

B 146

Thus they talk at the dais, and are full; but the needy man is driven from their gate.

Thus thei dreuelen atte deyes · þe deyte to knowe,
And gnawen god with gorge · when here guttes fullen.
Ac þe carful mai crie · and quaken atte ȝate,
Boþe a-fyngred and a-furst · and for defaute spille,
Ys non so hende to haue hym yn · bote hote hym go *þer* god is!

† God is not in such houses.

Thenne semeþ hit to my syght · to suche as so biddeþ,
God is nat in þat hom · ne hus help neither!

[*iustus—fecit* S] iustus, &c. M; iustus autem, &c. F; iustitiam P (*wrongly*); I *om.*

28. *And*] I *om.* [*hure* S] here IKG; heore M; her F; PE *om.* *aren*] K *om.* *er*] or FSE. *nedy* IMFSEK] nudy P.

30. *hem*] him IMFEK. *þo*] hem S; him M.

31. *aye*] as it were F.

33. *peynes*] þe peynes I.

34. *alowed*] loued K; loued or leet I. *þerefore*] herfore I. [*at* IMFG] ate S; of PE; K *om.*

35. *atte* E] ate F; at þe IM; at SK; atte þe P.

37. *two*] tweyne M.

38. *ballede resones*] a balled resoun K. *and*] IK *om.* *witnesse*] wittnesse P.

40. *atte*] at þe MF; as þe (*wrongly*) I; at S. *deyes*] dee M. *deyte*] diete F; dette (!) IS.

41. *when*] while þei M; whan þei F. *here guttes*] þe wombe F.

43. *a-fyngred*] *so* PFK; a-fyngryd S; a-fyngered E; of-hongret M; anhungred I. *a-furst*] *so* PSK; a-first F; aþurste E; a-þruste I; a-þrest M.

44. *yn*] I *om.* *hote*] bidde M. *hote hym*] S *om.*

45. *to* (2)] bi M. *as*] *þat* IS.

Lytel loueþ he þat lorde · that lente hym [al] þat blisse,
That so parteþ with þe poure · a parcel, whenne hym nedeþ. 48

Ne were mercy in mene men · more þan in ryght ryche, — Were not the poor kinder than the rich, many would want a meal.
Meny time mendynans · myghte gon a-fyngred;
And so seith þe sauter · ich sauh hit in *memento*,

Ecce audiuimus eam (.i. caritatem) in effrata; inuenimus eam in campis silue. — Ps. cxxxi. 6 (Vulg.).

Clerkus and knyghtes · carpen of god ofte, 52
And haueþ hym muche in hure mouthe · ac mene men in herte. — **A 125** Clerks have Christ in the *mouth*, but poor men in the *heart*.
Freres and faitours · han founde vp suche questiones
To plese with proute men · sitthe þe pestilences,
[And preching at seint poules · in pure enuye of clerkes,]
That folk is nouht ferm in þe feith · ne free of here goodes, 57

Ne sory for here synnes; · so is pruyde en-hansed — **B 147** Pride has so increased that prayers have no power.
In religion and al þe reame · among ryche and poure,
That preyeres han no power · these pestilences to lette.
For god is def now a dayes · and deyneþ nouht ous to huyre, 61 — † God is deaf now-a-days.
And good men for oure gultes · he al to-grynt to deþe;

47. [*al* IMFSEKG] P *om.*
48. *whenne*] wenne P. *hym*] hem I. *nedeþ* IMFSE] nudeþ P; neodeþ K.
49. *ryght*] M *om.*
50. *time*] tymes I. *mendynans*] mendynantz I; mendynaunt*us* F; mendenaunt*us* S. *a-fyngred*] ofhongred M; anhungred I; *see* l. 43.
51. *sauh*] seyh I; sai MS; saw F. *i. caritatem*] FS *om.*
52. *godefte*] good hostes I (*wrongly*).
53. *hym*] IK *om.* *ac*] and M. *men in*] in here I.
54. *vp*] F *om.* *questiones*] demaund*us* F.
55. *proute*] prut E; proude MISK; þe prowde F. *þe*] þis I; MFS *om.* *pestilences*] pestelences P; pestilence time M; *cf.* l. 60.
56. *From* I; *also in* KGS; *inserted in* F *after* l. 57; PEM *omit.* *And preching*] So þei preche F. *in* FSG] *miswritten* and IK.
57. *nouht*] S *om.* *ferm*] *in*-ferme (!) E. *þe*] K *om.*
58. *for*] of SK. *pruyde*] pryuyde P; *but see* l. 64. *is pruyde*] pride is I.
59. *and*] in M. *al*] in al IK.
60. *these*] thees P; M *om.* *pestilences*] pestelences P. *lette*] bete K.
61. *nouht*] SK *om.* *huyre*] hure IKE; here MF.
62. *gultes*] gilt F. *he*] M *om.* *deþe* IMFSEK] dyþe P.

And ȝut þese wrecches of þys worldè · is non y-war by oþer,
Ne for drede of eny deþ · with-draweþ hem fro pruyde,
Men lack charity. Ne parteþ with þe poure · as pure charyte wolde,
Bote in gayenesse and in glotenye · for-glotten here goodes,
And brekeþ nat here bred to þe poure as þe book hoteþ;
Isaiah lviii. 7. [*Frange esurienti panẽm tuum; et egenos vagosque induc in domum tuam.*]
The more a man has, the less he gives. Ac þe more he hath, and wynneþ · þe world at hus wylle,
And lordeþ in leedes · the lasse good he deleþ.
Tobie tauhte nat so · takeþ hede, ȝe ryche,
How he tolde in a tyme · and tauhte hus sone dele:
Tobit iv. 9. *Si tibi sit copia, abundanter tribue: si autem exiguum, illud impertiri libenter stude.*
And þis is no more to mene · bote 'ho so muche good weldeþ,
Be large þer-of while hit last · to leedes þat been needy.
Yf þow haue lytel, leue sone · loke by þy lyue
Get þe loue þer-with · þauh þou fare þe werse.'
† But now, none follow Tobit's counsel. Ac lust no lord ne lewed man · of suche lore nou to hure,
Bote lythen how þey myghte lerne · lest good to spene.
And so lyuen lordes now · and leten hit a dowel;

63. *þese* MFK] þees P; þis ISE. *y-war* IK] i-war M; awar F; war ES; *miswritten* whar P; *cf.* B-text.
64. *hem*] him I.
66. *in* (2)] IMFSK *om.* *for-glotten*] for-glutten FS; for-glwten E.
67. *nat here*] no F. *hoteþ*] telleþ E. [*Frange—tuam*] *from* E; *not in* P. *et—tuam*] IMSKG *om.* *in—tuam*] F *om.*
68. *hath—wynneþ*] wynneþ and haþ I. *and*] or S.
69. *lordeþ*] lord is M.
71. *dele*] to dele S. *stude*] S *om.*
72. *þis*] MFSK *om.* *no—mene*] to mene no more IFSK. *bote—so*] who I.
73. *last* MFSK] laste P; lasteþ I. *leedes*] hem E; men K.
74. *leue*] *apparently miswritten* loue P.
75. *þe*] M *om.* *þer-with*] þer-wiþ here M. *fare—werse*] þe werse fare IMFSK.
76. *ne*] now ne I. *lewed*] lettred I; leered FK. *man*] men I. *nou*] I *om.* *to*] M *om.* *hure*] huyre S; here IMF.
77. *lythen*] leten M. *lest good*] best here goode E. *spene*] spende M.
78. *so lyuen*] þat loueþ loueþ (*sic*) I.

For is no wit worth now · bote hit of wynnynge soune,
[And capped wiþ clergie · to conspire wronge.]
For-thi," quaþ hue to wit, "be war · holy writ to shewe † Wherefore beware of shewing holy things to swine."
Amonges hem þat hauen · hawes atte wille,
The whiche is a lykynge and a lust · and loue of þe worlde."
And whanne wit was y-war · what studie menede, (A 126) B 150
Ich myghte gete no greyn · of wittes grete wittes, Wit, hearing Study so talk, signed to me to beseech her.
Bote al lauhwynge he loutede · and loked vp-on studie,
Semynge þat ich sholde · by-sechen hure of grace.
When ich was war of hus wille · to þat womman ich loutede, A 127 I bowed to Study, and asked her to teach me about Do-well.
And seide, "mercy, ma dame · 3oure man shal ich worthe
As longe as ich lyue · bothe late and rathe,
And for to worche 3oure wil · the while my lyf dureþ,
With þat 3e kenne me kyndeliche · to knowe what is ḋowel."
"For thi meeknesse," quaþ hue · "and for thi mylde speche, She said she would recommend me to Clergy (Learning),
Ich shal þe kenne to clergie · my cosyn, þat knoweth

79. *is*] nys M. *wit*] wynnyng M (*wrongly*). *bote*] but if I. *soune*] come I; conne K.

80. *In* I *only*.

81. *For-thi*] For-whi EM; þerefore I. *quaþ—wit*] witte, quoþ sche I.

82. *hawes*] hawen S. *atte*] at heore MF; at EK.

82, 83. *Here* I *has*—

To foles and flaterers · þat frentike aren of wittes,
And saide, *nolite mittere* · margery-perles,
þey done but dreuely *þer*-on · draffe were here leuere,
Among hegges (*sic*) þat han · hawes at wille,
þan alle þe preciouse perrye · in paradise groweth.

These lines are repeated from ll. 6—10 *above, lines* 8 *and* 9 *being transposed.*

83. *whiche*] wiche P. *and a*] in M; and SFK. *lust* MFSK] loust P.

84. *And*] An P. *whanne*] wanne P; whan þat M. *was*] is E. *y-war* IK] i-war M; a-war F; war ES; whar P; *cf.* l. 63.

85. *wittes* (2)] connynge I.

86. *lauhwynge*] laweynge I; lauhynge M; lawhyng F; lauȝynge S; lawynge E. *loutede*] lotede PE; *but see* l. 88.

88. *When*] And whan IS. *hus*] hire IF. *þat womman*] his wif S. *ich loutede*] gan I lowten I; gan y knele S.

90. S *omits*.

91. *And*] FS *om.* *the*] SMF *om.* *dureþ*] duyreþ P; endureth F.

93. *for*] M *om.*

94. *þe kenne*] kenne þe IEK.

Alle kyne konnynges · and comsynges of dowel,
Of dobet and dobest · for doctor he is yknowe,
And of scripture þe skylful · and scryuaynes were trewe.
For hue is sybbe to þe seuen ars · and also my soster,
whose wife was Scripture (Writing).
And cleregies wedded wif · as wys as hym-selue
Of lore and of letterure · of lawe and of rescn.
So with þat þat cleregie can · and counsail of scripture
Thow shalt conne and knowe · kyndeliche dowel."
Thenne was ich al so fayn · as foul of fair morwenynge,
Gladder þan gleo-man : þat gold haþ to gyfte,
And asked of hure þe heye way · wher þat cleregie dwelte—
B 151 "And tel me som tokne," quaþ ich · "for tyme is þat ich wende."
"The way thither is through Suffer-weal-and-woe,
"Aske þe heye wey," quaþ hue · "hennes to suffre-Bothe-wele-and-moche-wo · yf þow wolt lerne.
And ryd forth by richesse · and rest nouht þer-ynne;
passing by Riches and the Deadly Sins.
Yf þow coueite to be riche · to cleregie comst þow neuere.
Bothe wommen and wyn · wratthe, yre, and slewthe,
Yf þow [hem] vse oþer haunte · haue god my treuthe!
To clergie shult þow neuere come · ne knowe what ys dowel.
A 128 Coming to Clergy,
Ac yf þou happe," quaþ hue · "þat þow hitte on clergie,
And hast vnderstondyng · what he wolde mene,

95. *comsynges*] comsyng M.
96. *and*] and of MEFS; of I.
97. *of*] ouer IK. *skylful*] scilfulest M; skyful P. *trewe*] trywe P.
98. *þe*] al þe S; M *om.*
99. *cleregies*] clergises F.
101. *þat þat*] þat þe F; þat IK.
102. *kyndeliche*] kendeliche P.
103. *al so*] as IK. *morwenynge*] morwe I; morwen K; morewe S.
104. *gleo-man*] a gleman MS; þe gleman F.
105. *of*] at EFSK. *dwelte*] dwelleþ M; duelled I.
107. *quaþ hue*] I *om.*
108. *moche*] michel M; muchel F; I *om.* *yf*] ȝif þat MF. *wolt*] wol I; wil F.
109. *And*] Ac M. *and*] ac FSK; but M; I *om.*
110. S *omits.* *Yf*] For if IK. *coueite* MFEK] coueitest I; coueity P.
111. *Bothe*] But I; *With* E. *wommen*] *miswritten* wommon P.
112. M *omits.* [*hem* FS] hit PEIKG. *oþer*] or elles F.
113. *shult þow*] schal y K.
114. *hitte*] hutte M.

Sey to hym þy-self · ouer-see my bokes,
And seye ich grette wel hus wif · ich wrot hure a byble,
And sette hure to sapience · and to þe sauter glosed.
Logyk ich leredo hure · and al þe lawe after,
Alle þe musons in musyk · ich made hure to knowe.
Plato þe poete · ich putte hym ferst to booke,
Aristotle and oþere · to arguen ich tauhte.
Grammere for gurles · ich gart furst wryte,
And bet hem with a baleyse · bote yf þei wolde lerne.
Of alle kyne craftes · ich contreeuede here tooles,
Of carpentrie, of kerueres · and contreeuede þe compas,
And cast out by squire · boþe lyne and Ieuell.
Thus þorw my lore beþ men ylered · þauh ich loke dymme.
Ac theologie haþ teened me · ten score tymes,
The more ich muse þer-on · the mystiloker hit semeþ,
And þe deppere ich deuyne · the derker me þynkeþ hit.
Hit is no science sothliche · bote a sothfast by-leyue;
Ac for hit lereþ men to louye · ich by-leyue þer-on þe bettere.
For loue is a lykynge thyng · and loth for to greue;
Lerne for to louye · yf þe lyke dowel,
For of dobet and of dobest · here doctor is dere loue."
Tho wente ich my way · with-oute more lettynge,
And to clergie ich kam · as clerkes me seide,

tell him it was I who taught his wife the Psalter and Wisdom, logic and music.

I taught Plato and Aristotle.

B 152 I also taught men the use of level and line.

But Theology has vexed me often; musing on it only makes it mistier.

Yet, for the love that is in it, [† I believe in it.]

A 129 Love truly, if Do-well pleases you."

A 130 B 154 So I went on till I met Clergy.

116. *to*] I *om.* *þy-self*] þi-self þanne F. *ouer*] oueer P. *my*] manye IK.
117. *grette*] grete FSK. *ich*] for i I.
118. *þe*] E *om.* *glosed*] glosede P; y-glosed IM.
119. *leredo*] lernede MI.
120. *Alle*] And alle I. *to*] for to I.
123. *wryte*] to write MFS.
126. *of kerueres*] & keruerus S; and of coruyng M. *and*] i M.
127. *out*] mette I. *by*] by þe F.
128. *ylered*] i-lerned MF. *beþ—ylered*] men leredo K. *dymme*] holewe M.
129. *teened*] i-tened M.
130. *The*] For þe F. *muse*] musede M. *mystiloker*] maisterliker M; mystlokur F.
131. *þe*] K *om.* *ich*] in M. *derker*] deerker P. *þynkeþ hit*] it þenketh F.
132. *science*] conscience E. *sothfast*] stedefast M. *by-leyue*] by-lyue P; *but see next line.*
133. *lereþ*] lerede I; lerneþ M. *men*] me M. *by-leyue*] leue M; leeue F.
135. *þe*] þow M. *dowel*] to dowel PE; *but* IMFSK *omit* to; *cf.* l. 142.
136. *of* (2)] IFMK *om.*
137. *wente*] wende E.

And ich grette hym goodliche · and greiþliche hym told,
How þat wit and hus wif · wissed me to hym,
To [kenne] and to knowe · kyndeliche dowel.
† Clergy told me to keep the ten commandments, "By cryst," quaþ clergie · "yf þow coueyte dowel,
Kep þe ten commaundemens · and kep þe fro synne;
And by-leyf leelly · how godes sone a-lyghte
† and to believe in Christ's Incarnation. On þe mayde marie · for mankynnes sake,
And by-cam man of þat mayde · with-oute mannes kynde.
And al þat holy churche · here-of can þe lere,
By-leyf lelly þere-on · and look þow do þer-after.
B 155 Austin wrote books about the Christian faith. Her-of austin þe olde · made bokes and bokes;
Ho was hus autor · and him of god tauhte?
Patriarkes and prophetes · aposteles and angeles
And þe holy trinite · to austyn appeirede,
And he ous seide as he seih · and so ich by-leyue,
† He tells us that he beheld the Trinity. That he seih þe syre and þe sone · and seynte spirit togederes,
And alle þre bote on God · and her-of made he bokes,
3e, busiliche bokes; · ho [beþ] hus wytnesses?

John xiv. 9, 10. *Ego in patre & pater in me [est;] et qui me vidit, patrem meum uidit qui in celis est.*

139. *And*] I *om.* *ich*] M *om.* *greiþliche*] greiliche P.
140. *wissed*] had wissed F. *to hym*] him tille M.
141. [*kenne* IMFS] kowe (*sic*) P; kow KE; *cf.* l. 102.
142. E *omits.* *cryst*] crist þo FSK. *clergie*] clergiȝe þo M.
143. *fro*] out of M. *kep—synne*] care no forþere I.
145. *mankynnes*] mankynde I.
146. *man*] S *om.* *mannes kynde*] mankynde IK; makynde (*sic*) S.
147. *lere*] lerne MF.
148. *By-leyf—þere-on*] Leeue it leely I. *lelly—on*] þer-on lelly K.
149. Austyn þe olde · here-of made bokes I.
150. *Ho*] But ho F; Sche M (*wrongly*). *and*] þat FS.
152. *holy*] trewe IFSK; truwe M. *appeirede*] y-perede S; þat apperede F
153. *he*] y S. *seih*] say I; si M; sy F; seyȝ S; seiȝe E (*and in* l. 154).
154. *That*] M *om.* *þe*] F *om.* (*twice*). *syre*] fader I. *spirit*] espirit IKS.
155. *made he*] he made I. *bokes*] þe bokes E.
156. *3e*] Ac ȝe F. *3e—bokes*] I *om.* *ho*] ȝe M. [*beþ* IFKG] ben M; buþ S; *miswritten* but (*for* buth) P; bot E; *cf.* l. 150. [*est* IM] PEFSK *om.* *me uidit*] uidit me M; vid*et* me FS. *patrem—uidit*] uid*et* & pa*t*rem meu*m* S; vid*et* & pa*t*rem F; uid*it* & pa*t*rem M. *qui in—est*] qui, &c. E; FS *om.*

Alle þe clerkes vnder crist · ne couthe this asoile;
Bote thus by-longeþ to by-leyue · alle þat lykeþ dowel.
For hadde neuere frek fyn wit · þe faith to dispute, The merit of Faith is in want of proof.
Ne man myghte haue no merit þer-of · myghte hit be preoued;
Fides non habet meritum ubi humana racio [prebet experimentum.] S. Gregorii xl Homil. in Evang. lib. ii. hom. 26.
Thus by-leyue and leaute · and loue is þe þridde, † Belief, Loyalty, and Love, are Dowell, Dobet, and Dobest.
That makeþ men to dowel · dobet, and dobest."
[þanne] scripture scorned me · and many skyles shewede, **B 168**
And contynaunce made to clergie · to congie me, hit semede, [Compare this with the conclusion of the A-text; page 137* of vol. 1.]
And lakkede me in latyn · and lyght by me sette,
And seide, "*multi multa sapiunt, & seipsos nesciunt.*" S. Bernardi Cogitationes de cognitione humanæ conditionis. cap. i.
Tho wepte ich for wo · and wraþede of [here] wordes,
And in a wynkynge ich worth · and wonderliche ich mette. Again I slept, and had a marvellous dream.
For ich was raueshed ryght þer; · fortune me fette,
In-to þe londe of longynge · and loue hue me brouhte,
And in a myrour, hihte myddelerd · hue made me to loke, Fortune bade me gaze in the mirror called the World.

157. *couthe*] coude M; cowde F.
158. *thus*] þis MF; þus it I. *lykeþ*] liken to M; loueþ S.
159. *hadde*] ne hadde M.
160. *myghte* (1)] mouȝthe I. *no*] IF *om.* *haue—þer-of*] meryt haue þerof F. *myghte* (2)] mouȝt FK. *preoued*] preouede P; preued FK; y-preuyd S; i-preued M. *humana racio*] humanum M. [*prebet, &c.* EMFS] possidet dñium P; K *om.*
161. *by-leyue—leaute*] in bileue lele (*sic*) I.
162. *That*] þei F. *men*] EF *om.* *to*] S *om.* *dobet*] and dobett I; dobet boþe F.
163. [*þanne* MF] þenne ISKG; The PE; *cf.* B. xi. 1.
164. *to* (1)] on I. *congie*] conge MS; congeie IK; cunge F. *hit*] as it F.
165. *me*] I *om.* *in*] a IF. *lyght*] lite E.
166. *wraþede*] wraþþe ISK. [*here* I] hus P; his MKS; þis E; þese F; *cf.* B. xi. 3.
167. *worth* MS] wurthe F; wrathe K; warth PI. *and*] an P. *ich* (2)] me I; ESK *om.* *mette* EMIFSK] mete P.
168. *raueshed*] raueshede P; raueschyd S; rauysshed IK; i-raueisshed M. *fortune*] for fortune I; as fortune F.
169. *In-to*] And in-to I. *þe*] a M; S *om.* *and loue*] a-lone IM. *hue*] heo FK; sche I; he MS.
170. *hihte*] þat highte I; hatte S. *myddelerd*] myddulerþe SF. *hue*] heo F; sche IM; scheo K; he S.

And sutthe seide to me · "her myghte þou see wondres,
And knowe þat þow coueitest · and come *þer*-to, *par*-
aunter."

B 169 Fortune had two damsels, named Lust-of-the-Flesh and Lust-of-the-Eyes.

Thenne hadde fortune folwynge hure · two faire
maidenes,
Concupiscentia-carnis · me calde þe eldere mayde,
And couetyse-of-eyen · ycald was þat oþere.
And pruyde-of-parfit-lyuynge · pursewede [me] faste,
And bad me for my contynence · counte clergies lore
lyght.'

Lust-of-the-Flesh comforted me, and bade me rejoice in my youth.

Concupiscentia-carnis · comfortyde me in þys wyse,
And seide, "þow art ȝong and ȝep · and hast ȝeris
ynowe
For to lyue longe · and ladyes to louye.
And in þis mirour þow myȝt see · murthes ful meniye,
That lede þe wol to lykynge · al þy lyf-tyme."

The second maiden said she would do all I wished.

The secounde mayde seide · "ich shal sewe þi wil;
Til þow be a lord of londe · leten þe ich nelle,
That ich ne shal folwie þy felaushupe · yf fortune lyke."
"He shal fynde me hus frende" · quaþ fortune her-
after;
"That man þat me lykeþ helpe · myghte nat mys-
happe."

But a man named

Thenne was þer on hiht elde · þat heuy was of chere;

171. *sutthe*] sennes he I; syþþe he S. *seide*] seide þus F. *myghte þou*] þou myȝt FS.
172. *knowe*] i-knowe M.
173. *hure*] M *om.*
174. *Concupiscentia-carnis* IMFS KG] Carnis concupiscentia PE; *but see* l. 178. *me*] *so also* E; men IMFSK. *calde*] *so also* EI; called FSK; calleden M. *mayde*] F *om.*
175. *ycald*] y-called IMF; S *om.*
176. [*me* IMFSK] in PE.
177. *lyght*] at liȝte MF; litel K. *counte—lyght*] coueyte clerkes teching I.
178. *in—wyse*] of þis manere I.
179. *art*] ert PEK.
181. *myȝt* MESIK] may F; myst P.
182. *þe*] S *om.* *wol*] wolde I.
183. *mayde seide*] saide þe same ISK; maide seide þe same F. *sewe* MF] sew S; suwe K; schewe I; suwye E; sywe P.
184. *a*] E *om.* *of*] and haue I.
185. *þy*] I *om.* *lyke*] it like F.
186. *He* IMFSEK] Hue (*by mistake*) P. *her*] *þer* I.
187. *That*] þe M. *helpe*] to helpe MS. *myghte*] mai M.
188. *hiht*] þat hyȝte SK. *heuy*] *miswritten* euy P.

"Man," quaþ elde, "mete ich with þe · by marie of heuene!
Thou shalt fynde fortune · faile at þy moste neede,
And *concupiscentia-carnis* · clene the for-sake!
Byterliche shalt þow banne þenne · boþe [dayes] and nyghtes 192
Couetyse-of-eyen · that euere þow hure knewe,
And pruyde-of-p*ar*fit-lyuynge · to muche peril þe brynge."
"Ȝe, recche the neuere," quaþ rechelesness · stod forth in raggede cloþes,
"Folwe forþ þat fortune wol · thou hast ful fer to elde;
A man may stoupe tyme ynowe · when he shal tyne þe corone!" 197
Syre wanhope was sibbe to hym · as som men me tolde,
For rechelesnesse in hus rybaudrie · ryht þus he seide,
"Go ich to helle, go ich to heuene · ich shal nouht [go] myn one! 200
Were hit al soþ þat ȝe seyen · thou scripture and clergie,
Ich leyue neuere þat lorde ne ladie · þat lyueþ her on erthe
Sholde sitte in godes sete · ne see god in hus blysse;

Elde (Old Age) threatened me, and bade me beware.

"Never mind him," quoth Recklessness.

B 170

† "Whether I go to hell or heaven," said Recklessness, "I shall not go *alone*.

† The rich cannot enter heaven.

189. *mete* IMFSEK] mette P. *mete ich*] if I mete I. *of heuene*] mod*ur* mylde F.

190. *faile*] þe faile I.

192. *Byterliche*] Withterli M. *banne*] curse K. [*dayes* IM] a daye PK; day E; by day SF. *nyghtes*] nyȝte F; be nyȝt*us* S.

193. *Couetyse*] For coueytise S. *knewe*] sye F.

195. *recche* IK] reche S; rechche F; rech M; reccheþ PE (*wrongly*).

196. *fer* IMFK] feer P; ferr*e* E. *ful fer*] fele ȝere S.

197. *tyme*] tymes I. *when*] wen P. *þe*] his MF. *corone*] croune MI SF; croo*n* E; crone K.

199. *rybaudrie*] rybaudrye S; *miswritten* rybaurdrie P; ribaudie IFK; rebaudie E. *þus*] þus sum tyme F.

200. *Go—heuene*] Go y to heuene go y to helle SF. *go ich*] or I. [*go* IMFSKG] PE *om.* *myn one*] allone E; me-selue M.

201. *hit*] M *om.* *thou*] S *om.* *and*] and þou I.

202. *neuere þat*] þat no M; þat K. *ladie*] ladies E. *on*] in I. *erthe*] eerthe P.

203. *sitte*] sette S. *in*] on MFSK. *godes*] good M. *sete*] sight I. *blysse*] face S. *impossibile*] *so also* F; possibile MISK. *regnum*] regno I. *foramen acus*] IMFK *om.* S *has*—Ita possibile est camelu*m* t*r*ansir*e* p*er* foramen acus s*ic*ud diuite*m* in regnu*m* celor*um*; E *has*—Facili*us* est camelu*m* p*er* foramen ac*us* int*r*are q*uam* diuite*m* ad regnu*m* celor*um*.

† (Mat. xix. 24.) *Ita impossibile est diuiti intrare in regnum celorum, sicut cămelus foramen acus.*

For clergie seith þat he seih · in þe seynt euangelie,
A 134 B 162 þat ich man maked was · and my name y-entred 205
I am saved, if saved, by predestination. In þe legende of lif · longe er ich were.
Predestinat thei prechen · prechours þat þis shewen,
Or prechen inparfit · ypult out of grace, 208
Vnwryten for som wikkednesse · as holy writ sheweth,
John iii. 13. *Nemo ascendit in celum nisi qui de celo descendit.*
Ich leyue hit wel, by oure lorde · and no lettrure bettere.

Solomon, who wrote Wisdom, was the wisest of men. For salomon þe sage · þat sapience made,
God gaf hym grace of wit · and of good after, 212
Neuere to man so muche · that man can of telle,
To rewele alle reames · and ryche to make,
And deme wel and wislyche · wommen bereþ witnesse;
† 1 Kings iii. 26. *Non michi nec tibi, sed diuidatur.*
Aristotle and he were teachers of men. Aristotle and he · hij tauhten men boþe; 216
Maisters þat techen men · of godes muchel mercy
Witnessen þat here wordes · and here werkes boþe
Weren wonder goode · and wise in here tyme,
A 135 B 163 And holychurche, as ich huyre · haldeþ boþe in helle!
Yet are they both in hell! Were we to do as they taught, and Yf we sholden worchen after here workes · to wynnen ous heuene, 221

impossibile] *turn back to p.* 207.
204. *seih*] sey F; seyȝ S; seyhȝ K; si M; saith (*sic*) I. *seynt*] M *om.*
205. *maked*] made IK; I-maked F. *y-entred* EI] yentrede P; entred MFSK.
206. *ich*] he M.
207. *Predestinat*] Prodestinat P. *shewen*] schewede S.
208. *ypult*] pulte I; puylt K; i-put MFS. *out*] K *om.*
209. *wikkednesse*] vnkyndenesse M. *Nemo—celo*] M *om.*; *but cf. footnote to* l. 215. *de—descendit* IFS] descendit de celo PEMK; *but cf.* B-text.
210. *Ich leyue*] And I leue IK. *no*] non M; on no IK.
211. *þe*] S *om.*
212. *after*] auntur aftur S.
213. *man* (1)] erthely man F. *man can*] men coude M.
214. *rewele*] so PI; rewle FS; rule EMK.
215. *deme*] demed I. *wommen*] as women F. *Non, &c.*] *Here* M *wrongly inserts the rubric above* (l. 209)—Nemo, &c. *Non*] Nec E.
216. *hij*] hy ESK; þei MF; who I.
217. *techen men*] men prechen I.
218. *Witnessen*] Whitnessen P.
219. *wise*] wisest I.
220. *huyre*] hure EK; here MIF.
221. *Yf*] And if I. *to*] for to F.

That for hure werkes and witt · wonyeþ now in peyne, yet go to hell,
Then wroghte we vnwisliche for al ȝoure wyse tech- we were unwise indeed.
ynge.
Ac ich countresegge þe nat, cleregie · ne þy connynge,
scripture; 224
That ho so doþ by ȝoure doctrine · doþ wel, ich leyue.
Ac me were leuere, þy oure lorde · a lippe of godes † Better were a morsel of God's
grace grace than all the
Than al þe kynde witt þat ȝe can boþe · and connynge wisdom got from books.
of ȝoure bokes.
For of fele witty, in faith · litel ferly ich haue, 228
Thauh here gost be vngraciouse · god for to plese.
For meny men of þis molde · setten more here herte But many men rather seek goods
In worldliche good þan in god · for-þy grace hem failleþ. than God.
At here moste meschef · mercy were þe beste; 232
And mercy of mercy · needes mot aryse, † Mercy begets mercy.
As holy writ wittnesseþ · godes word in the godspelle;
Eadem mensura qua mensi fueritis, remecietur † Mat. vii. 2.
uobis.
Ryght wel ywittede men · and wel lettred clerkes,
Selde arn þei seien · so lyue as þei lere; 236
Witnesse on godes wordes · þat was neuere vntrewe:
Super cathedram moysi [*sederunt,*] *&c.* Mat. xxiii. 2. [Cf. A 132]
[Ac] ich wene hit worth of menye · as was in Noes
tyme,

222. *werkes*] work S. *witt*] heore wit M.
223. *we*] i I; y K. *ȝoure*] oure M.
224. *countresegge*] contresyngge E. *nat*] þat (!) E. *þy*] þe M.
225. *doþ* (2)] he doþ MF.
226. *lippe*] lappe M.
227. *can*] cunne M.
230. *of*] in I; on F. *setten more*] more sette I.
231. *worldliche*] I *om.* *for-þy*] for-whi M; & for-þi F. *grace hem*] hem grace I.
232. *moste* EMFSK] meste P; more I.
233. *And*] But S. *mot*] moste M.
234. *godes word*] god M; holi writ F. *the*] I *om.* *Eadem, &c.*] *inserted in* M *after* l. 228. *fueritis*] fueritis alijs S. *uobis*] & vobis F.
235. *Ryght*] I *om.* *lettred*] y-lettered IK; i-lettred MFS.
236. *Selde*] Seilde P; Seldom I; *see* l. 301. *arn*] as M. *seien*] *so* PE; seyn IMK; seie F; sey3 S. *so*] to IF.
237. *Witnesse on*] Witnesseþ I. *wordes*] word MIS. *vntrewe*] vntriwe P. *moysi*] S *om.* [*sederunt*] *in* F *only.*
238. [*Ac* IMFKGS] And PE.

Tho þat he shop þe schip · of shides and of bordes,
The flood destroyed all but Noah. Was neuere wright þat þer-on wrouhte · ne workman y-saued,
Bote briddes and bestes · [and] þe blessed Noe,
And hus wif with hus sones · and hus sones wyues;
[Of] wrightes þat hit wroghten · was non ysaued.
May Holy Church prove to be Noah's ark! God leyue hit fare nat so by folke · that þe faith techen
Of holychurche, þat sholde kepe · alle cristine saules;
For *archa noe*, nymeþ hede · ys no more to mene
Bote holychurche, herbergh · to alle þat ben blessede.
B 164 The *culorum* of this c[l]ause · curatores ys to mene,
That ben carpenters vnder criste · holy [kirke] to make
For lewede folke, godes foules · and hus free bestes;
Ps. xxxv. 7 (Vulg.). *Homines & iumenta saluabis, domine, &c.*
At domes day a dyluuye worth · of deþ and fuyr at ones;
Worcheþ, 3e wryghtes of holichurche · as holy writ techeþ,
Lest 3e be loste as þe laborers were · þat labored vnder Noe.
A 135 A goode fryday, ich fynde · a felon was ysaued,
But the thief on the cross was saved, because he shrove him to Christ; That vnlawefulliche hadde ylyued · al hus lyf-tyme;
And for he by-knew on þe crois · and to crist schrof hym,

239. *þat*] I *om.* *schip* IMFSE] shup P; schup K. *of* (2)] ISK *om.*
240. *wright*] *miswritten* writ P; *but see* l. 243; wri3t ES; writht M; wi3t F; I *om.*
241. [*and* IMFSKG] þat PE. M *has in the margin*—Contra prelatos.
243. [*Of* IMFSKG] And PE. *non*] þer non M; non of hem I.
244. *leyue*] leue IMSEK; leeue F. *by*] by þis I.
246. *nymeþ* MFSK] nemeþ P.
247. *herbergh*] is herbor3 E. *alle*] E *om.* *blessede*] i-blessed M.
248. *clause* FSK] cause PE; *cf.* B-text. *curatores*] *written in red in* MK (*as a Latin word*); curatours E; curatoures IS; creato*urs* (!) F.
249. *ben*] E *om.* [*kirke* I] churche PEFSK; chirche M.
250. *foules*] folys I; folus S; foolus F (*wrongly*).
251. *At*] A SK. *dyluuye*] delful time M. *fuyr*] of fuyr PE; *but* IMSKG *omit* öf.
252. *as*] to make as S. *techeþ*] 3ow techeth F.
253. *be loste*] ben i-lost M. *þe*] MF *om.* *labored—Noe*] wiþ noe wrouten M.
254. *A*] On M. *ysaued*] ysauede P.
256. *And*] M *om.* *schrof* EMIF SK] shroue P.

He was sonnere ysaued · þan seynt Iohan þe Baptist,
And er Adam oþer ysaie · oþer eny of þe prophetes,
That hadden leye with lucyfer · meny longe ȝeres.
A robber was y-raunsoned · raþer þan þei alle; 260 and so a robber escaped
With-oute penaunce oþer passion · oþer eny oþer peyne purgatory.
He passede forth pacientliche · to perpetuel blisse.
Al-so marie Magdelene · ho myghte do worsse Who did worse than Mary
As in lykynge of lecherye · no lyf denyede? 264 Magdalen,
And dauid þe douhty · þat deuynede how vrye or David, who slew Uriah,
Mighte slilokeste be slayn · and sente hym to werre
Leelliche as by hus lok · with a lettere of gyle;
Paul þe apostel, þat no pite hadde · cristene peuple to culle; 268 or Paul?
Now beeþ þese seintes, as men seyen · and souereynes in heuene, B 165 Yet they are now in heaven.
Tho þat worst wroghten · while þei weren here.
By þat þat salamon seith · hit semeþ þat no wyght
Wot ho is worthi · for wele oþer for wicke, 272
Whether he is worthi to wele · oþer to wickede pyne:

Sunt iusti atque sapientes, & opera eorum in manu Dei sunt. Eccles. ix. 1.

Thus ich, rechelesnesse, haue rad · registres and bokes,

259. *leye*] ley EF; lye S; i-leiȝe M.
261. *oute*] outhe P. *oþer* (1)] and I.
262. *He passede*] Passeþ I. *to*] in-to F.
263. *Al-so*] þan I. *ho*] ȝo E. *myghte*] myde (*sic*) M. *do*] do no E; ha do F.
264. *denyede* MSIK] denoyede P; denyed it F.
265. *And*] Or I.
266. *slilokeste*] sleylokest EISK; slylikest M. *werre*] worþe I.
267. *lok*] book M; bokes I. *Leelliche—lok*] Slylich al with slyþe S. *lettere*] lyare I.
268. *þat*] IK *om.* *pite*] picte I. *cristene*] crustene P. *culle*] kille FS; culle to deþe I.
269. *Now*] And now I. *þese* M] þise I; þis SE; þei F; þees P. *as*] by þat I. *and*] as E. *souereynes*] seynours M.
270. *Tho*] And þo F; I *om.* *while*] wile P; þe while þat I; while þat MF. *weren here*] here were I.
271. *þat þat*] þat I.
272. *wicke*] wicked I. S *omits from* for *to* worthi *in next line.*
273. *is*] be F. *wickede*] walle in F. *pyne*] *so* PI; peyne EMFSK. *iusti—sapientes*] & sapientes iusti M; *see note to l.* 277. *atque*] et IK.
274. *A leaf lost in* I, *down to* xiii. 20. *rad*] y-rad SK; I-redde F.

And fond ich neuere, in faith · for to telle treuthe,
A 130 B 166 That clergie of cristes mouth · comended was euere.
Christ never commended clergy (learning); see Mark xiii. 9, 11, which says, 'When ye are brought before kings,' &c.
For crist seide to seintes · and to suche as he louede,
Dum steteritis ante reges et presides, [nolite cogitare quomodo aut quid loquamini,] & cetera:
'Thauh ȝe come by-fore kynges · and clerkes of þe lawe,
Beeþ nat a-ferd of þat folke · for ich shal ȝeue ȝow tonge,
Connynge and clergie · to conclude hem alle.'
Cf. Ps. cxviii. 46 (Vulg.). Dauid makeþ mencion · he spak among kynges,
And myghte no kynge hym ouer-come · as in connynge speche.
Sothly," seide rechelesnesse · "ich see by menye euydences,
So that Wisdom is of no avail without Grace. That noþer wit ne wyghtnesse · wan neuere þe maistrie
With-oute þe grete gyfte of god · with hus grace and fortune.
For he þat most [seih] and seide · of þe sothfast trinite
Augustine says Was Austyn þe olde · þat euere man wiste.
He saide thus in hus sarmon · for ensample of grete clerkes,
(Confess. Lib. viii. c. 8), *Ecce ipsi idioti rapiunt celum, vbi nos sapientes in inferno mergimur.*
This is to mene no more · to men þat ben lewede,
'Wise clerks are often sunk in hell, 'Aren none raþere raueshed · fro þe ryghte by-leyue
Cominliche þan clerkes · most knowynge and connynge;
And none sonnere ysaued · ne saddere in þe by-leyue

275. *And*] Ac F. *treuthe*] of treuthe P; *but* MFSEK *omit* of.
276. *comended*] comsed M.
277. *Dum, &c.*] *Here* M *has the rubric quoted above,* l. 273. *steteritis* FSKG] steteris PE. [*nolite cogitare* EFS] PK *om.* [*quomodo, &c.*] *in* S *only.*
279. *ȝow*] S *om.*
281. *makeþ*] made M. *he*] and M.
282. *speche*] of speche F.
283. *menye*] myn S; F *om. euydences* MSKG] euedences P.
284. *noþer*] K *om.*
285. *þe*] FS *om. grete*] KG *om. and*] and his M.
286. [*seih*] si M; say.S; *miswritten* seith PEFKG; *but see l.* 154.
288. *He*] KG *om. for*] in M. *ensample*] saumple F. *idioti*] ydioti E; ydiote MFS. *rapiunt*] rapiunt nobis S. *sapientes*] FS *om.*
290. *raþere raueshed*] rauysched raþur FS. *raueshed*] i-rauesshed M.
291. *Cominliche*] Comenliche S; Comuneliche MF. *and*] of FS.
292. *And*] Ne F. *þe*] F *om.*

Than plouhmen and pastours · and poure comune peuple;' 293 whilst poor ploughmen and shepherds attain heaven,'

And lewede leele laborers · and land-tylynge peuple

Persen with a *pater-noster* · paradys oþer heuene, **B 167**

Passinge purgatorie penaunceles · for here *par*fit by-leyue, 296 by help of but one *Pater-noster!*

Breuis oratio penetrat celum.

Selde falleþ þe seruant · so deepe in arerages Not common servants, but

As doþ þe reyue oþer þe conterroller · þat rekene mot and a-counte stewards, run in arrears.

Of al þat þei hauen had · of hym þat is here maister.

Ac þese lewede laborers · of lytel vnderstondynge 300

Selde fallen so foule · and so deepe in synne

As clerkes of holy churche · þat kepen sholde and saue So fares it with learned men.

Lewede men in good by-leyue · and lene hem at here neede.

'*Homo proponit*,' quaþ [a] poete þo · and plato he hihte, 304 **B 170** Man proposes, God disposes.

'*Et deus disponit*,' quaþ he · 'let god do hus wille.'

Al þat treuthe a-tacheþ · and testifieþ for goode,

Thauh thei folwe þat fortune wole · no folie ich hit holde.

And *concupiscentia-carnis* · shal þe nat greue 308 The lust of the

293. *poure comune*] oþer pore M; oþ*ur* comen S.

294. F *omits*. *And*] MSK *om*. *tylynge*] tylyinge SK.

295. *Persen*] þei peersen F; Passen M. *oþer*] after (*sic*) E; of KG.

297. OBS. *Here in some* MSS (T, H2, *and* Digby 145) *the* A-text *and* C-text *are pieced together. See* A-text, pref. pp. xviii, xx, xxiv. *Readings from* T *are here given, to show how the* Passus *ends. arerages*] arirages E; areragis S; rerages F; a-rerage M; arerage TK; arrirages P (*but see* xiii. 66).

298. *reyue*] reue MESTKG; rceue F. *oþer*] & T. *þe* (2)] a M; FK *om*. *conterroller*] counteroller MS; counterroll*our* TF; counter*r*ollers E. *a-counte*] acompte T; counte FS.

299. *had* TSKG] hadd P; i-had MF.

300. *þese* MFS] þees P; TK *om*. *lytel*] lewde S. *vnderstondynge*] vndurfongynge F; vndirstonde (*sic*) T.

302. *of*] dooth of F.

303. *good*] rith M. *neede*] wille T.

304. *Homo*] ȝe homo F. [*a* MTF ESKG] þe P. *þo*] T *om*.

305. *Et*] Set M. *he*] he þo F. *hus*] al his M.

306. *a-tacheþ*] techiþ T.

307. *Thauh—folwe*] þan þe folke (!) E. *wole*] wolde F; T *om*.

308. *And*] Ne T. *shal—greue*] ne shal not greue þe T.

flesh will not, harm thee," said Recklessness.

Gretlich, ne by-gyly þe · bote yf þy-self wolle."
"ȝe, farewel, fyppe!" quath fauntelet · and forth gan me drawe,

So I yielded to temptation,

Til *concupiscentia-carnis* · a-corded to alle my werkes.

† and thought no more of Clergy's counsel.

Of dowel ne of dobet · no deynte me þouhte,
Clergie and hus consail · ich countede ful lytel!

Hic explicit passus secundus de dowel.

309. *Gretlich ne*] Graithly to F. *by-gyly*] bigyle FK; by-gile ne naþur (*sic*) S; begile T; greuen (*repeated from last line*) M. *þe*] FS *om. yf þy-self*] þou T. *wolle*] woldest M.

310. *ȝe*] Tho T. *fauntelet*] a fauntlet S; a fauntekyn M.

311. *to*] til TKG; with S. *werkes*] wordes M.

312. *ne*] and M. *me*] me ne T.

313. *Clergie and*] Of clergie & F; Ne clergie ne T. *ich countede*] a-countede M; I counte it T. *lytel*] lite M.

COLOPHON. MT *omit. Hic*] EFSK *om. de dowel*] FK *om.*

PASSUS XIII. (DO-WEL III.)

Incipit passus tercius [*de dowel.*]

"Alas, eye!" quath elde · and holynesse boþe, (*Page of B-text*) 170
"Þat wit shal turne to wrecchednesse · for welthe haþ al hus wil!" Old Age and Holiness mourned.
Couetise-of-eyen · confortede me after, Lust-of-the-Eyes comforted me;
And seide, "rechelesnesse · recche þe neuere!
By so þow riche were · haue þow no conscience
How þat þow come to good; · confesse þe to som frere, and bade me confess to a friar
He shal a-soile þe thus sone · how [so] þow euere wynne hit. when I pleased.
For while fortune is þy frend · freres wollen þe louye,
And fastne þe in here fraternite · and for þe by-seche 171
To here priour prouincial · hus pardon to haue,
And praye for þe, pol by pol · yf þow be [pecunyous;]
Pena pecuniaria non sufficit, et cet."
By wissynge of þis wenche ich dude · hure wordes were so swete, I did as she bade.
Til ich for-ȝat ȝouthe · and ȝorn in-to elde.

TITLE. *So in* K; Incipit passus tercius PE; Hic incipit tercius passus de dowel M; Incipit tercius de eodem S; Passus secundus de dobet (*wrongly*) T.

1. *eye*] eyȝe M.

2. *wit*] with P. *welthe*] wele SK.

4. *seide*] seide to F (*which seems not to be meant; cf.* B-text). *þe*] þow M.

5. *By*] T *om.* *þow*] þat þou F. *riche were*] were riche M. *were*] T *om.* *þow* (2)] T *om.*

6. *þat*] so F. *þat—come*] þou comist T.

7. [*so* FTS] PEMK *om.* *euere—hit*] eue*r* it wynne F; hit euere wonne M.

9. *fastne*] faste T.

10. *To here*] Bi-fore þe M.

11. [*pecunyous* EMFSKG] pecunius P; pecuniosus T. *Pena*] Sed pena F.

13. *ȝorn* TK] ȝorne P; ron M; ran S; ourne E; ȝarn fast F.

Thenne was fortune my foo · for al here fayre by-heste,
And pouerte pursuwede me · and putte me to be lowe,
In my old age the friar avoided me, And flittynge fond ich þe frere · þat me confessede, 16
And seide, 'he myghte me nat a-soile · bote ich suluer hadde
† and refused me absolution. To restitue resonabliche · for al vnryghtful wynnynge.'
"Owh! how!" quaþ ich þo · and myn hefd waggede,
I told him he was like a wooer of widows. "By my faith, frere," quaþ ich · "ȝe fare lik þe wouwere 20
That wilneþ þe wydewe · bote for to wedde here goodes.
Ryght so, by þe rode," quaþ ich · "rouhte þe neuere
Wher my body yburied were · by so ȝe hadde my goodes!"
172 Loyalty looked upon me, and asked why I looked angry. Thanne lowh leaute · for ich lourede on þe frere; 24
"Whi lourest þow?" quaþ leaute · "leue syre," ich seide,
"For this frere flaterede me · while he fond me riche;
Now ich am poure and penyles · at litel prys he set me:
Ich wolde hit were no synne," ich seide · "to seye þat were treuthe. 28
173 The sauter seith hit is no synne · for suche men as ben trewe
For to seggen as thei seen · and saue onliche prestes;

14. *Thenne*] & þan FTK.
15. *me*] me faste F.
17. *me—a-soile*] not asoyle me S. *bote*] but if F.
18. *vnryghtful*] vnskilful S; sorful E.
19. *Owh how*] Ow hou E; Ow how F; How how S; Ow ow M; Owhȝ houȝ K; How T. *ich*] S *om.* *þo*] þo to hym T. *hefd*] hed EM; heuid TFK; hand S. *waggede*] y-waggyd S.
20. M *omits from* ȝe fare *to* ich *in* l. 22.
OBS. *Here* I *begins again, but is damaged and imperfect throughout this* Passus.
21. *wilneþ*] wilneþ nat IS; wilneþ nouȝt T. *wedde*] welde T.
22. *ich*] y þo S. *rouhte*] roȝt E; rouȝte TF; roȝte S. *rouhte þe*] routest þow M.
23. *yburied were*] were y-buried K. *by*] M *om.* *ȝe*] þou T.
24. *Thanne*] And þanne IT; þo M.
25. *lourest*] louridest T. *leue* EM STK] leeue IF; luue P. *ich*] he MT.
26. *this* IMFSETK] thees P. *flaterede*] flatereþ S. *while*] þe while I; þer whiles T.
27. *Now*] And now IT. *at*] K *om.* *set me*] me setteþ M.
29. K *omits.*
30. *For*] IT *om.* *seggen*] seiȝe M. *and*] alle M.

Existimasti inique quod ero tui similis; arguam te, & statuam contra faciem tuam. Ps. xlix. 21 (Vulg.).

Thei wollen a-leggen al-so · and by þe godspel preouen hit, 172

Nolite iudicare quemquam." Mat. vii. 1.

"Wher-of seruep lawe," quaþ leaute · "and no lyf vndertoke 32

Falnesse ne faiterie? · for som-what þe apostel seide,

Non oderis fratrem tuum secrete in corde [tuo.] Levit. xix. 17.

Thyng þat al þe worlde wot · where-fore sholdest þow spare 173

To rehercen hit by retoryk · to a-rate dedliche synne?

Ac be þow neuer þe furste · the defaute to blame; 36 "Be not the first to find fault."

Thauh þow see, sey nat · som tyme, þat is treuthe.

Thyng þat wolde be pryue · publisshe þow hit neuere,

Noþer for loue labbe hit out · ne lacke hit for non enuye;

Parum lauda, uitupera parcius."

"He seith soth," quaþ scripture [þo] · and skypte an hy, and prechede, 40 Scripture approved of this,

Ac þe matere þat hue meeuede · yf lewede men hit knewe,

þe lasse, as ich leyue · louye þei wolde

The by-leyue of oure lorde · þat lettrede men techen.

Of here teme and of here tales · ich took ful good hede;

Hue seide in here sarmon · selcouthe wordes:— 45 referring to Mat. xxii. 1—14.

Nolite, &c.] M *om.*

32. *Wher-of*] And wher-of IT; Wer-of P.

33. [*tuo* FST] PEMK *om.*

34. *where-fore*] where-to S; where K.

35. *hit*] it al I. *a-rate*] rate F; rehete T.

36. *þow neuer*] neuer-more IT. *the*] F *om.* *to*] for to F.

37. *see*] hit seo M; I *om.* *sey*] me sey F. *treuthe*] trewe MFS; truwe K.

39. *Noþer for*] Ne for no M. *labbe —out*] loue it nouȝt T. *hit*] S *om.* *non*] MFSTK *om.*

40. *He*] A (*sic*) IT. [*þo* ITFSKG] PE *om.*

41. *hue*] sche IT; he PMFSEK (*wrongly*); *cf.* ll. 49, 72. *meeuede*] moeued E. *yf*] & T.

44. *of*] FIK *om.* *ful*] wel T; F *om.*

45. F *omits.* *Hue*] Sche M; Heo K; He PITES (*wrongly*). *here*] heore M; his E.

"*Multi* to a mangerie · and to þe mete were sompned,
And whan þe peuple was plener come · the porter vnpynnede þe gate,
174 And plyghte in *pauci* pryueliche · and leet þe remenant go rome." 48

I pondered upon my election to grace.

Al for teene of here tixt · tremblede myn herte,
And in a weer gan ich wexe · and with my-selue to dispute
Wheþer ich were chose oþer nat chose; · on holy-churche ich þouhte,
That vnderfong me atte fount · for on of godes chosene.

"Christ has called us all.

"For crist clepide ous alle · come yf we wolde, 53
Sarrasyns and scismatikes · and so he dude þe Iewes,
And bad hem souken of hus brest · sauete for synne,
And drynke bote for bale · brouke hit ho so myghte;

Isa. lv. 1.

O uos omnes sitientes, uenite ad aquas!

Christ saves all men," said I.

Thenne may alle cristine [come] · and cleyme þer to entre 57
By þat blod þat he boughte ous with · and baptisme, as he tauhte,

Mk. xvi. 16.

Qui crediderit et baptizatus fuerit, [*saluus erit,*] *& cetera.*

For thauh a crystine man coueytede · hus crystendome to reneye,
Ryghtfulliche to reneye · no reson hit wolde. 60

"A churl must

For may no cherl a chartre make · ne hus catel selle

46. *a*] þe S. *þe*] MF *om. sompned*] ysompned E; i-sompned M.
47. *whan*] wan P. *was*] were S. *vnpynnede*] opened EM; opeynnede S; & openide (*sic*) T; vnpynneþ I.
48. *pauci*] paucos S. *pryueliche*] S *om. go*] F *om. rome*] rombe T; pleye S.
50. *And*] M *om. to dispute*] dispute KF; disputede M.
51. *Wheþer*] Weþer P.
52. *vnderfong*] vndurfeng FSK. *atte*] at þe IMTF. *chosene*] childur F.
53. *clepide*] curteisly kept F.
54. *scismatikes*] *miswritten* scismaticyns P; *cf.* B-text.
55. *of*] at IMTFSK. *sauete for*] to saue þe fro M. *of—synne*] for synne · saue (sauf T) at his breste IT.
56. *hit*] MF *om. O uos*] F *om.*
57. [*come* IMTFSKG] PE *om. þer*] for S.
58. *as*] þat S. [*saluus erit* MFE] hic saluus erit S; PKIT *om.*
59. *coueytede*] coueite MF. *to*] K *om.*
61. *cherl*] cheerl P; clerke ES. *a*] no F; TK *om.*

With-oute leue of þe lorde · no lawe wolde hit graunte. have his lord's leave to sell his goods;
Ac he may renne in arerage · and rome fro home,
As a recheles caitif · oþer reneyed, as hit semeþ;
Ac reson shal rekene with hym · and rebuke him atte laste,
And conscience a-counte with hym · and caste him [in] arerages,
And putte hym þenne in *pur*gatorie to brenne, but he can be imprisoned for debt."
Rewardynge him *þer* for hus rechelesnesse · ryght to þe day of dome,
Bote contricion and confession · crye, by hus lyue,
Mercy for hus mysdedes · with mouthe and with herte.'
"That is sothe," seide scripture · "may no synne lette Scripture bade me trust to God's mercy.
Mercy, þat hue nel al amende · yf meeknesse here folwe;
Thei boþe, as our bookes telleþ · aren aboue godes werkes;
Misericordia eius super omnia opera eius." Ps. cxliv. 9 (Vulg.).
"Ye, baw for bookes!" quaþ on · was broken out of helle— Trajan declares how he was released from hell.
"Ich, *troianus*, a trewe knyght · ich take witness of [a] pope,
How ich was ded, and dampned · to dwellen in helle
For an vncristene creature; · seynt gregorie wot þe soþe,

62. *oute*] ouhte P. *þe*] *þat* E. *wolde*] wole K; wol I; wil F.
63. *Ac*] But T. *arerage* KMS] arrirage P (*but see* l. 66); areragis T; rerage F. *rome*] rombe T; renne S.
64. *a*] ET *om.* *recheles*] cherles (!) E.
65. *Ac*] But T. *him*] F *om.* *atte*] at þe IMFT; at S.
66. [*in* MITFSKG] PE *om.* *arerages*] rerages F.
67. *þenne*] aftir T.
68. *Rewardynge*] Rewarde EF; And rewarde K. *ryght*] M *om.* *Rewardynge—rechelesnesse*] And for his recchelesnesse rewarde hym *þere* TI.
69. *Bote*] But ȝif T. *crye by*] he cacche in T. *lyue*] leue S.
71. *sothe*] þe sothe PE; *but* MFSKT *omit* þe; *cf.* B-text.
72. *nel*] ne may KMFST. *amende*] mende E. *yf*] and IT.
73. *boþe*] *misnritten* beþe P.
74. *Ye*] ȝa T. *broken*] i-broke M.
75. *troianus*] *so* PIK; troianes M T; traianus SE. *trewe*] trywe P. *of*] at S. [*a* MTFEKG] þe S; P *om.*
76. *to*] for to F; forte M.

That al þe cristendome vnder Crist · ne myghte cracche me þennes,
Bote onliche loue and leaute · as in my lawes demynge!
"Pope Gregory prayed for my release." Gregore wiste þis wel · and wilnede to my soule
Sauacion, for þe sothness · þat he seih in myn werkes;
And for he wilnede wepynge · þat ich were saued,
God of hus goodnesse · seih hus grete wil;
176 With-oute moo bedes byddyng · hus bone was vnderfonge,
And ich ysaued, as ȝe may see · with-oute syngynge of masse.
Loue, with[oute] leel by-leyue · and my lawe ryghtful
Sauede me Sarrasyn · soule and body boþe."
"See how this pagan was saved!" said † Recklessness (see Pass. xiv. 129). "Lo, lordes! what leaute dude · and leel dom y-used!
Wel auhte ȝe lordes þat lawes kepen · þis lesson to haue in mynde,
"Ye lordes, think upon Trajan." And on *troianus* treuthe to þenke · alle tymes of ȝoure lyue,
And louye for ȝoure lordes loue · and do leaute euere more.
For lawe with-oute leaute · leye þer a bene!
177 Learning without love is profitless. Oþer eny science vnder sonne · þe seuene ars and alle,
Bote loue and leaute [hem] lede · y-lost is al þe tyme
Of [hym] þat trauelеþ þer-on · bote treuthe be hus lyuynge.

78. *ne*] M *om.* *cracche* MFSEKG] *miswritten* cacche PT; *cf.* B-text. *cracche me* E] me cracche MFSK; me cacche T; cacche me P. *þennes*] þenne M; fro þenne T.
80. *wiste*] wist PK. *wel*] M *om.*
81. *þe sothness*] my soþfastnesse S. *þat*] IT *om.* *he*] K *om.*
82. *saued*] i-saued MFTK.
84. *With-oute*] And wiþoute ITK.
85. *ich ysaued*] i saued M. *with-oute*] wiþ I. *masse*] masses EFK; mo messis T.
86. [*oute* IMFTKS] PE *om.* *and*] as I.
88. *y-used*] *so also* E; y-vsed K; y-vsid ST; i-vsed MF.
89. *auhte ȝe*] owen T. *lawes*] lawe I. *to*] FS *om.*
90. *on*] in S. *troianus*] *so* PIK; troianes M; traian*us* E. *of*] in METSK.
91. *for*] fore P. *ȝoure*] oure IT. *do*] E *om.* *And—loue*] And for ȝoure lord*us* loue to louye S; For ȝour lord*us* loue to loue F.
92. *leye*] ley me F.
93. *and*] of (!) E.
94. FS *omit.* [*hem* METK] hym P; *it answers to* þei *in* B. xi. 167.
95. [*hym* SMFITK] hem PE; *but observe* hus *following.*

Lo, loue and leaute · been oure lordes bookes,
And cristes owen cleregie · he cam fro heuene to teche hit,
And sitthe seynt Iohan · seide hit of hus techynge;
Qui non diligit, manet in morte: 1 John iii. 14 (Vulg.).
And nameliche poure peuple · here preiours may ous helpen;
For god, as þe godspel seith · goth ay as in þe poure,
And, as þe euangelist wytnesseþ · whan we maken festes,
We sholde nat. clypie knyghtes þer-to · ne no kyne ryche,
Cum facitis conuiuium, nolite uocare amicos Luke xiv. 12.
[diuites,] &c.;
'Ac calleþ þe carful þer-to · þe crokede and þe poure.
For eche frend fedeþ oþer · and fondeþ how he may quite
Meles and manshupes · eche a ryche man oþer;
Ac, for þe poure may nat paye · ich wol paye my-self; Christ repays what is given to the poor.
Þat louyeþ and leneþ hem · largeliche shal ich quite.'
At caluarie, of cristes blood · cristendome gan sprynge,
And blod-breþrene by-cam we þer · of on body wonne, We are all brethren of one blood,
As *quasi modo geniti* · gentel men echone; viz. of the blood shed at Calvary. 1 Pet. ii. 2.
No begger ne boye among ous · bote yf synne hit make,

96. *Lo*] So IT; Loo how F; So lo K.
98. *sitthe — Iohan*] sent Iohan sethen I; seint Iohan siþen T. *hit*] hit is P; *but* EMFSKT *omit* is. *of*] in M.
100. *þe*] E *om.* *in*] MFSTK *om.*; *cf.* B. xi. 180.
101. *euangelist*] euangelye SIK; Ewangelie T.
102. [*diuites*] *in* E *only.* S *omits last half of* l. 102, *and first half of* l. 103.
104. *eche*] euery T. *how—may*] forte M; how beste to I; hym best to T.
105. *manshupes*] manschipes MST; manschepes EF. *a*] ES *om.* *ryche*] T *om.* *oþer*] to oþur S.
106. *Ac*] T *om.* *my*] I *om.*
107. *louyeþ*] loueþ hem M. *shal ich*] þer T.
108. *blood cristendome*] body · cristus blood F.
109. *blod*] blodi MFT. *by-cam we*] we by-come IT. *on*] o FSIK; a T. *woune*] i-wonne MITK.
111. *No*] Ne E. *After* ous (vs) PE *add* is, *which* IMTFSK *omit*; *cf.* B-text. *yf—hit*] it synne IT.

John viii. 34. *Qui facit peccatum, seruus est peccati.*

179 In þe olde lawe, as [þe] lettre telleþ · menne sones me cald ous, 112

[Of] Adames ysshue and eue · ay til god-man deide,

And after hus resureccion · *redemptor* was hus name,

Both rich and poor are Christ's brethren. And we hus blody breþren · as wel beggers as lordes.

For-thy loue [we] as leue children · and lene hem þat nedeþ, 116

And euery man help oþer · for hennes shuileþ we alle

To haue as we han deserued · as holychurche wittnesseþ,

† Mat. xxv. 46. John v. 29. *Et qui bona egerunt, ibunt in uitam eternam; [qui vero mala, in ignem eternum].*

180 Learn the law of love. For-thi lerne we lawe of loue · as oure lord tauhte;

The poure peuple faile [we] nat · whil eny peny ous lasteþ. 120

For in here liknesse oure lorde · lome hath be knowe;

Luke xxiv. 13. Witnesse in þe paske woke · when he ȝeode to emaus,

Cleophas ne knew hym nat · þat he crist were,

For hus poure aparail · and pilgrimes cloþes, 124

Luke xxiv. 31. Til þat he blessede here bred · and brak hit by-twyne hem.

So by hus werkes thei wiste · þat he was Iesus,

Ac by hus cloþing þei knewe hym nat · so caitifliche he ȝede.

Christ set an Al was ensample sothliche · to ous synful here, 128

112. [*þe* ITS] PEMK *om.* *þe lettre*] lettere M; lered men F. *telleþ*] techeþ I; seith MFS. *menne*] men E; mennus FS; manes M; mennes IK; menis T. *me*] *so also* IMFE; men SK; T *om.* *cald*] calleþ S.

113. [*Of* MFSKT] And PE. *eue*] of eeues F.

115. *blody*] blod M.

116. *For-thy*] For-whi M. [*we* MFKTSG] PE *om.* *and*] I *om.* *hem*] we him S; hym K. *nedeþ*] nudeþ P.

117. *for*] fro I.

118. *deserued*] serued F. [*qui, &c.*] *in* S *only.*

119. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *lawe*] þe lawe T.

120. *The*] And T. [*we* MFTSKG] PE *om.* *ous lasteþ*] lastuþ vs S.

121. *For*] Fore P. *lome*] ful lome F; lombe S; whilom T.

122. *woke*] wouke FT; wike M. *when*] wen P. *ȝeode*] wente F. *emaus*] romaynes (!) T.

123. *ne*] K *om.*

125. *þat*] MF *om.* *here*] þe M. *by-twyne hem*] hem bituene IT.

126. *thei*] hy S. *Iesus*] lord Iesus F.

127. *hus cloþing*] knowing T.

128. *Al was*] And al was in T.

We sholde be lowe and loueliche · and leel, eche man to oþer, — example of humility.
And pacient as pilgrimes · for pilgrimes arn we alle.
In þe parail of a pilgrim · and in a poure liknesse 131 181
Holy seyntes hym seih · ac neuere in secte of riche.
And seynte marie hus moder · [as] matheu bereth witnesse, — The virgin Mary was poor.
Was a pure pòure mayde · and to a poure man ywedded.
Martha on marie magdalene · an huge pleynte [hue] made, 135 — Martha complained of Mary.
[And to oure saueour selue · saide þese wordes:]
Domine, non est tibi cure quod soror mea reliquit me solam ministrare? — Luke x. 40.
And here aiþeres wil · hasteliche god a-soilede, 137
And aiþeres werkes and wil · ryght wel he alowede;
Ac God putte pouerte by-fore · and preouede hit for þe bettere; — Christ praised Mary most.
Maria optimam partem elegit, que non auferetur ab ea. — Luke x. 42.
And alle þe wise þat euere were · by ouht ich can aspie, — Wise men praise poverty.
Preisede pouerte for beste · yf pacience hit folwe, 141
And boþe bettere and blessedere · by meny folde þan richesse;
Thauh hit be sour to suffre · þer comeþ a swete after. 182

129. *We*] þat we T.
130. *arn*] ben ME; be S.
131. *þe parail*] a-paraile MS; þe aparail K. *a pilgrim*] pilgrimes M; pilgrime F. *a* (2)] MFTSK *om.* *liknesse* MIKT] licknesse P.
132. *hym*] iesu F. *secte*] sith M. T *is corrupt.*
133. [*as* MFTSK] PE *om.*
135. *magdalene*] Maudeleyn MFS IT. *huge*] hugy S. [*hue*] he FS; heo KG; sche MT; PE *om.* (*For the spelling* hue, *see* l. 72.)
136. *From* IKSTGM (*for* And to T *has* Vnto); PE *omit;* F *has*—& to our sauyour him-self · hes leide þese woord*us*; *cf.* B. xi. 243. *cure*] cura IMTK.
137. *here*] hure MS; herd (!) E. *aiþeres*] aiþere P; *but see next line.* I *omits last half of* l. 137, *and first half of* l. 138.
138. *werkes*] werk S. *he*] STK *om.*
139. *Ac*] But T; And M. *God—pouerte*] pouerte god putte IT. *preouede hit*] prouiþ T.
140. *þe*] S *om.*
141. *for*] as for F. *folwe*] folwede M; folewide T.
143. *Thauh*] Al-þogh IT. *hit*] he I. *sour*] sor T. *swete*] swetere M; swetnesse F.

The walnut has a bitter husk, but a sweet kernel.

As in a walnote, with-oute · ys a byter barke,
And after þat biter barke · be þe shale aweye,
Ys a curnel of comfort · kynde to restorie;
So, after, pouerte and penaunce · pacientliche·[y]take,

Such is poverty.

Makeþ man haue mynde in god · and hus mercy craue,
The whiche is curnel of comfort · for alle cristene saules.
And wel sykerour he slepeþ · þe seg þat is poure,
And lasse drat by daye · oþer in derk to be robbed,
Than he þat ys ryht ryche · reson bereþ wittnesse;
Pauper ego ludo · dum tu diues meditaris.
Holichurche wittnesseþ · 'ho so for-sakeþ

† He that forsaketh father or friend for the gospel's sake shall receive an hundredfold.

Hus fader oþer hus frendes · [fremde] oþere sibbe,
Other eny welthe in this worlde · hus wyf oþer hus children,
For þe loue of oure lorde · loweþ hym to be poure,
He shal haue an hundredfolde · of heuene-ryche blisse,
And lif lastyng for euere · by-fore oure lorde in heuene;

† Mat. xix. 29.

Quicunque [reliquerit] patrem & matrem,' &c.

Crist a-cordeþ eft her-with · clerkes witen þe sothe,
What god hym-self saide · to a seg þat he louede;

To be perfect, we must sell all.

'Yf þe lykeþ,' quaþ god, 'to lyue · þe lif þat is parfit,
Al þat þow hast here · hasteliche go sulle hit;

144. *in*] on ITFK; S *om.*
145. *shale*] scale IT.
146. *Ys*] þer is MF. *restorie*] *so also* M; restore ITFSEK.
147. *pouerte—penaunce*] penaunce & pouerte IT. *ytake* EIKST] i-take MF; take P; *cf.* B-text.
148. *haue*] to haue IFS. *in*] of T. *craue*] to craue FKST.
149. *whiche*] wiche P. *is*] is þe IKT.
150. *he*] F *om.* *seg*] man M.
151. *lasse drat*] drede lasse E. *drat—daye*] a-drad in dai-lith M. *by*] in T; by þe F. *in*] F *om.* *derk*] deerk P. *robbed*] i-robbed M.
152. *ryht*] M *om.* *reson*] resoun us F.
155. *oþer*] and M. [*fremde* MT] frembe S; frende PEIFK; (*where it is clear that* frende *arose from misreading* fremde; fremde oþere sibbe = whether unrelated or related).
157. *For*] And for F. *loweþ hym*] logeth hem I; loueth F. *be*] þe M.
159. [*reliquerit* MFES] relinquet P; relinquit IKT. *&*] uel M; aut F.
160. *eft*] ofte ST. *her*] þer M. *witen*] whiten P.
161. *hym-self saide*] seide hym-self IKT. *seg*] man M.
162. *þe lykeþ*] he likeþ E; þow like M; þou likest KT.
163. *go—hit*] þou it selle F.

3eue poure peuple þe pans · ther-of porse þow none,
Ac 3eue hem forth to poure folke · þat for my loue hit
askeþ.
For-sake al and suwe me · and so is thi beste;
Si uis perfectus esse, uade & uende omnia [que habes.'] Mat. xix. 21.
Thus consaileþ crist · in comun ous alle :— † The counsel of Christ.
'Ho so coueyteþ to come · to my kynriche,
He mot for-sake hym-self · hus suster and hus broþer,
And al þat þe worlde wolde · and my wil folwen,
Nisi renunciaueritis [omnibus] que possidetis,' &c. † Luke xiv. 33.
Meny prouerbis ich myghte haue · of meny holy seyntes,
To testifie for treuthe · þe tale þat ich shewe,
And poetes to preouen hit · porfirie and plato; † Porphyry, Plato, Aristotle, Ovid, and others, all praise poverty.
Aristotile, ouidius · and elleuene hundred,
Tullius, tholomeus · ich can nat telle here names,
Preouen pacient pouerte · pryns of alle vertues.
And by [þe] greyn þat groweth · god ous alle techeþ
[Mischeifs on þis molde · mekeliche to suffre :]
Nisi granum frumenti cadens in terra mortuum fuerit, ipsum solum manet; † John xii. 24.
Bote yf [þe] sed þat sowen is · in þe sloh sterue,
Shal neuere spir springen vp · ne spik on strawe curne;
Sholde neuere whete wexe · bote whete fyrste deyde.

164. *3eue*] 3if MK; And 3if F; 3if þe TS. *pans*] peus M; penys T. *porse*] purse IFTS; purce M.
165. *Ac 3eue*] But 3if MT; Ac gif F; Ac 3if KS. *hem*] hym S; it T. *to*] to þe T. *askeþ*] aske IT.
166. *suwe*] haue S. *is*] it is F. *thi*] *so* PK; þy I; þe MTFSE. *que habes*] *in* S *only*.
167. *Thus*] 3et T.
168. *to* (1)] to me E. *to* (2)] in T.
169. *mot*] moste M. *suster—broþer*] broþer and his sisteor M (*wrongly*).
170. *Nisi, &c.*] Nisi quis renunciauerit omnibus que possidet, &c. F. [*omnibus* EFS] omnia PMIKT.
171. *Meny*] Mo KT.
172. *testifie*] testefie PK; testefi3e M. *for*] T *om.* *shewe*] tolde M.
173. *porfirie*] porphirie MFIS.
175. *tholomeus*] ptholomeus S.
176. *pryns*] pris M.
177. [þe MFTSK] PE *om.*
178. *From* M; *also in* IKTFSG; PE *om.* *Mischeifs*] Mischeues M; *but see* l. 201. *on*] of FS. *þis*] T *om.* *molde*] world S. *terra*] terra & P; *but* EMITFSK *omit* &. *ipsum, &c.*] MFIKTS *om.*
179. [þe MEKSFT] þat P. *in*] on S.
180. *curne*] kerne ITFS; kurne EK.
181. *whete*] *miswritten* wete P (*twice*).

† All seeds die in the ground before they produce fruit.

And oþer sedes al-so · in þe same wyse,
That ben leide on louh erthe · ylore as hit were;
And þorw þe grete grace of god · of greyn ded in erthe
Atte laste launceþ vp · wher-by [we] lyuen alle.

† Seeds that can bear severe weather are the most useful.

Ac seedes þat been sowen · and mowe suffre wyntres,
Aren tydyour and tower · to mannes by-hofthe,
Than seedes þat sowen beeþ · and mowe nouht with forste[s],
With wyndes ne with wederes · as in wynter-tyme;

† Linseed and such seeds are less worthy than wheat.

As, lynne-seed and lik-seed · and lenten-seedes alle
Aren nouht so worthy as whete · ne so wel mowen
In þe feld with þe forst · and hit freese longe.
Ryght so, for soþe · þat suffre may penaunces

† So men that can suffer most will be most exalted.

Worth alowed of oure lorde · at here laste ende;
And for here penaunce be preysed · as for [a] pure [martir,]
Oþer for a confessour ykud · that counteþ nat a ruysshe
Fere, ne famyne · ne false menne tonges;
Bote as an hosebonde hopeþ · after an hard wynter,
Yf god gyueþ hym þe lif · to haue a good heruest,
So preoueþ these prophetes · þat pacientliche suffreþ.

† Tribulations

Myscheifs and myshappes · and menye tribulacions

182. *And*] & so it is of F; S *om.*
183. *leide*] i-leid M. *on*] in MITK. *erthe*] eerthe P.
184. *of* (2)] and IT. *in*] on ITFKS.
185. *Atte* EK] At þe MIFTS; Atte þe P (*wrongly*). *wher*] wer P. [*we* MIFSKTG] PE *om.*
186. *wyntres*] wyntur F.
187. *Aren*] Ben E. *by-hofthe*] bi-hofþe M; by-hofte I; by-houe S; behof T; byhof E; by-hefthe K; be-houethe F.
188. *forstes* EKG] forstus SF; frostes MIT; forste P.
189. *With*] Ne T. *with*] IT *om.* *tyme*] tymes IT.
190. *As*] Ac K. *lik*] lek MT; leek IF.
191. *mowen*] dure mowe FS; *cf.* l. 188.
192. *forst*] *so* PSFK; frost MIT.
193. *for soþe*] soþely IT. *þat—may*] he þat mai suffre M. *penaunces*] penaunce TF.
195. *penaunce*] pacience TFKS. [*a* MTKFSG] PE *om.*; *see next line.* *pure*] puyre P. *martir* KTSG] martyr MF; *miswritten* matir PE.
196. *ykud*] i-kid MT. *counteþ*] acounteþ M; countide T. *ruysshe*] rusche KF; rysshe ST. *counteþ—ruysshe*] kunneþ noȝt in harnysche E (*corruptly*).
197. *Fere ne*] For no E. *menne*] men ES; mennes IF; menes MT.
198. *an* (2)] E *om.*
199. *gyueþ*] gyue M. *hym þe*] hem E.
200. *these* MKFS] thees P; þis IE; þise T. *pacientliche*] pacience E.
201. *menye*] E *om.*

By-tokneþ ful treweliche · in tyme comynge after 202 betoken future joy.
Murthe for hus mornynge · and þat muche plente.
'For crist seide to hus seyntes · þat for hus sake þoleden
Pouerte [and] penaunce · [and] *per*secucion of body,
[Schullen haue more worschipe to wages · . . . . .
þan] Angeles—in here angre · on this wise hem grette,
'Tristitia uestra uertetur in gaudium: † John xvi. 20.
3oure sorwe in-to solas · shal turne atte laste, 208
And out of wo in-to wele · 3oure wyrdes shul chaunge.'
Ac [who] so redeþ of [þe] riche · þe reuers he may fynde, † But with the rich it is not so.
How god, as þe godspel telleþ · gyueþ hem foul tow-name,
And þat hus gost shal go · and hus good by-leue, 212 † God warned the rich man that his death was near.
And askeþ hym after · 'ho shal hit haue,
The catel þat he kepeþ so · in coffres and in bernes?
And art so loth to leue · þat leue shalt needes:
O stulte, ista nocte anima tua egredietur; [que congregasti, cuius erunt?] Thesaurizat, & ignorat [cui, &c.]. † Luke xii. 20. † Ps. xxxviii. 7 (Vulg.).
An vnredy reue · þi residue shal spene, 216

202. *ful*] IKT *om.* *treweliche*] triweliche P.
203. *hus*] heore M.
204. *to hus*] so to FS; to IK.
205. [*and* MIFTSG (*trice*)] KPE *om.* *þenaunce* MIFTSG] penaunces PE.
206. *This imperfect line is from* I; *there is an evident omission here in the other copies; we might insert*— and worthier ben yholde
207. [*þan* I] þanne T; PEKMS *om.* *angre*] owen degre I (*but* anger *means* distress; B. xv. 254, 266).
208. *atte*] at þe MFST.
209. *wyrdes*] wirdes K; wordes IETS; worldes MF (*but* wyrd = fate).
210. *Ac*] And MT. [*who* EKMITG] ho FS; P *om.* *redeþ*] rat I; ret K. [*þe* MIKTFSG] PE *om.* *he*] IKT *om.*
211. *telleþ*] seiþ M. *hem*] hym KTSF; I *om.* *foul tow-name*] ful tow-name FE: foul to name MT: foel to name I; fool to name SG (*foul tow-name* = evil nickname; *fool to name* = fool as a name).
213. *hym after*] hym hertely T; I *om.*
214. *bernes*] *apparently* hernes P; *but* bernes *in the rest.*
215. *art*] ert PEK. *leue*] lene *or* leue *in the MSS.* I *has*—And art so loth to leue · þat lete schal þou nedes; *so* T (*with* shalt *for* schal þou). *shalt*] schal þou I; þou schalt FS. *egredietur* EG] egrediatur PITKM; rapietur F; rapietur a te S. [*que—erunt*] *in* E *only.* [*cui*] *in* S *only.*
216. *spene*] spende T; haue M.

That menye mothþe was [maister] ynne · in a mynte-
while;
Vp-holderes on þe hul · shullen haue hit to selle.'
Lo, lo, lordes, lo · and ladies, takeþ hede,
† Fruits with sweet juice will not keep long. Hit lasteþ nat longe · þat is lycour swete,
As pees-coddes and pere-Ionettes · plomes and chiries!
Þat lyghtliche launceþ vp · litel while dureþ,
And þat þat raþest rypeþ · roteþ most saunest.
† Foulest weeds grow on fat land. On fat londe and ful of donge · foulest wedes groweth;
Right so for sothe · suche þat ben bysshopes,
Erles and archedekenes · and oþer ryche clerkes,
That chaffaren as chapmen · and chiden bote þei wynne,
And hauen þe worlde at here wil · oþer-wyse to lyue.
Right as weodes wexen · in wose and in donge,
† So likewise vices arise from riches. So of rychesse vpon richesse · [arisen] al vices.
Lo, lond ouere-layde · with marle and with donge
Whete þat wexeth þer-on · worth lygge ar hit ripe;
Right so, for soþe · for to sygge treuthe,
Ouer-plente pryde norssheþ · þer pouerte destrueþ hit.
For, how hit euere be ywonne · bote hit be wel dis-
pended,
† Wealth fills its possessor with dread; Worldliche wele is wicked þynge · to hym þat hit kepeþ.

217. *mothþe*] mowþe M; mouȝte F; mouþe ES; man T; *miswritten* nothe (*for* mothe) I. [*maister* MIKTFS] PE *om.* *ynne*] inne M; in T; of F; IS *om.* *mynte*] *so also* MIKFS; mynt T; minti (*sic*) E.

218. *hul*] hil T.

219. *Lo lo*] Lo lo lo M; Lo louely T; Lo K.

221. *and* (1)] KFST *om.* *pere-Ionettes*] pyonies F.

223. *saunest*] *so* PKS; sennest (*for* sonnest) M; sonnest IT; sonest E; sone F.

224. *ful of*] foul T. *wedes*] wed M.

225. *for sothe*] soþliche T. *þat*] as FS.

227. *chapmen*] schepmen S. *bote*] but ȝif S.

229. *wose*] muk S.

230. *of*] on T; in F. *rychesse*] riche M. *vpon*] of F; vp KS. [*arisen* M] ariseþ G; arist PEIKT (*which is singular, whilst* wexen (*last line*) *is plural*); wexeth F; wexuþ S; waxiþ T.

231. *marle—donge*] donge & *with* marl S.

232. *wexeth þer-on*] þeron wexiþ T. *ar*] er T; or MEFKS. *ripe* EMIKTS] repe P.

233. *for soþe*] soþly T.

234. *norssheþ*] norescheþ K; norischeþ I; norisshiþ T; noriisseþ M; nurscheþ F. *destrueþ hit*] hit destroyeþ IT; hit distriȝeþ M.

235. *For*] And T. *hit euere*] euere hit MF. *dispended*] i-spended MS.

236. *Worldliche* EMF] Worldly KT; Worliche P; Wordly S. *hym*] hem IT. *hit*] hit so F.

For yf he be fer þer-fro · ful ofte hath he drede
That fals folke fecche away · felonliche hus godes;
And ȝut more hit makeþ men · meny tyme and ofte
To synegen, and to souchen · soteltees of gyle,
For couetyze of þat catel · to culle hem þat hit kepeþ;
And so is meny [man] ymorþred · for hus money and goodes,
And tho þat duden þe dede · ydampned þer-fore after,
And he for hus harde holdynge · in helle, par aunter.
So couetise of catel · was combraunce to hem alle;
Lo, how pans purchasede · faire places and drede,
þat rote is [of] robbers · þe richesse with-ynne!

† and incites others to robbery and murder;

† thus causing the perdition both of the murderers and the murdered.

Hic explicit passus iijus de dowel.

237—241. T *omits.*

237. *fer*] feer P. *hath he*] he haþ I.

238. *fecche*] wol fecche E; wolden fecche M.

239. *tyme*] a tyme F; tymes I.

240. *To*] F *om.* *synegen*] senegen F; synwen E; synewe S; synnen M; *cf.* Pass. xi. 25, 26. *souchen*] sowche boþe F; sewe M; sotile S; sechen K. *soteltees*] sotiltees I; sotultees F; sotiles (*sic*) M.

241. *þat* (1)] S *om.* *hem*] him MFSIK.

242. [*man* MSIKTEG] a man F; men P. *hus*] M *om.* *and*] and his MSIT; and for his K.

243. *þe*] þat I. *þe dede*] K *om.*

244. *holdynge* MITFSEKG] *apparently* heldynge P. *helle*] helle pyne T. *par aunter*] peraduenture E.

245. *of*] & K. *combraunce*] a comeraunce E.

246. *pans*] pens MI; penys T. *purchasede*] purchasseþ MIT. *faire*] grete S. *drede*] brode S.

247. [*of* MITFSKG] PE *om.* *richesse*] grete richesse S. *After* l. 247 M *adds* —For he þat gadereþ so his good · god no þyng preiseþ.

COLOPHON. ITM *omit.* *Hic*] ES *om.* KF *have*—Explicit passus tercius.

PASSUS XIV. (DO-WEL IV.)

Incipit passus quartus [*de dowel*].

† But poverty may walk in peace, unrobbed.

AC wel worth pouerte! · for he may walke vn-
robbed
Among pilours in pees · yf pacience hym folwe.
Oure prynce *ie*su pouerte chees · and hus aposteles alle,
And ay þe lenger þei lyueden · the lasse good þei
hadde; 4

† 2 Cor. vi. 10.

Tanquam nichil habentes, & omnia possidentes.

† Abraham and Job were very rich.

ȝut men [rat þat] abraam and Iob · were wonder ryche,
And out of numbre þo men · menye meobles hadden.

† Yet Abraham suffered great loss, when Abimelech took away his wife (Gen. xx.).

Abráám for aI hus good · hadde muche teene,
In gret pouerte [he] was yput; · a pryns, as hit were, 8
By-nom hym ys housewif · ánd heeld here hym-self,
And abráám nat hardy · ones to letten hym,
Ne for brightnesse of here beaute · here spouse to be
by-knowe.

TITLE. *So in* KF; M *prefixes* Hic; Incipit passus quartus PE; *to which* S *adds* de eodem; Passus tercius de Dowel I; T *om.*

1. *Ac*] As (*wrongly*) I; But T. *vnrobbed*] vnrobbede P.

3. *chees*] ches MIESKT.

4. *þei* (1)] þat þei F. *Tanquam, &c.*] M *om.* *&—possidentes*] IKT *om.*

5. *ȝut*] & ȝit F. [*rat þat* MKT] ret þat I; recdith þat FG; *miswritten* þat of PE; *see* Pass. iv. 410, 416. *men—þat*] ret me þat I; rat me þat T; S *om*

7. *Abraam*] Ac abraham F. *al—good*] his (*sic*) I; his auȝte T. *muche*] mykel M; muchel F.

8. *In*] For in IT. [*he* MIKFST] PE *om.... yput*] i-put M; put KTFS; putte I. *pryns*] prisoun M (*wrongly*).

9. *By-nom—housewif*] A king binom him his wijf M. I *omits the last half of lines* 9 *and* 10; T *omits last half of l.* 9.

10. *hardy*] so hardy F. *hardy ones*] ouus hardy S; ones so hardy T. *to—hym*] him to lette F.

11. *spouse—by-knowe*] spousehod to beknowe T.

And for he suffred and seide nouht · our Lord sente tokne,
That þe kynge cride · to abráám mercy,
And deliuerede hym hus wif · with muche welthe after.
And also Iob þe gentel · what ioye hadde he on erthe,
How bittere he hit bouhte · as þe book telleþ!
And for he songe in hus sorwe · '*si bona* [*accepimus*] *a domino*,
Dere-worthe dere God! · do we so *mala*,'
Al hus sorwe to solas · þorgh þat songe turnede,
And Iob by-cam a iolif man · and al hus ioye newe.
Lo, how pacience in here pouerte · these patriarkes releuede,
And brouhte hem al aboue · þat in bale rotede.
As greyn þat lyth in þe greot · and þorgh grace, atte laste,
Sprungeþ vp and spredeþ · so spedde þe fader abráám,
And al-so þe gentel Iob; · here ioie hath non ende.
Ac leueþ nouht, ȝe lewede men · þat ich lacke richesse,
Thauh ich preise pouerte þus · and preoue hit by ensamples
Worthiour, as by holy writ · and wise philosopheres.
Bothe two [beþ] goode · be ȝe ful certayn,

† God helped Abraham for his patience.

† Job also lost his wealth;

† Job ii. 10.

† but God restored it him, because of his patience.

† Abraham and Job were like grain that grows up at last.

† Yet I blame not riches.

† Riches and

12. *he*] E *om.*
13. *cride*] cride þo F. *to*] S *om.* *mercy*] of merci MF. I *has*—þat þe kynde (*sic*) cried him mercy þat time; T *has*—þat kynde comely kyng · criede hym mercy.
14. *welthe*] Ioye S.
15. *And*] K *om.* *And also*] IT *om.*
16. *How*] And how IT. *bouhte*] aboghte IT; abouȝht K; bouȝt also F.
17. T *has*—And for he suffride so mekly · his sorewe ouerȝede. *And*] Ac M. *in*] K *om.* [*accepimus* MK FETG] accipiam (?) P; suscepimus S.
18. *dere*] and dere I.
19. *to—songe*] þorw þat song · to solace hit M.
20. *a*] as T. *iolif*] ioli MF; gentil S. *al*] E *om.*
21. *in here*] and IT. *these*] thees P.
22. *rotede*] *so in all.*
23. *As*] As a F. *þe*] IEFS *om.* *greot*] grete E; gret M; grut KSF; grounde IT.
24. *vp*] IT *om.* *spedde*] sprad F; dude M. *þe—abraam*] abraham þe goode F.
25. *al-so*] IT *om.*
26. *ȝe*] IKT *om.*
27. *ensamples*] ensample ES.
28. *as*] M *om.*
29. [*beþ* ES] ben MIT; beon K; be F; *miswritten* but P. *goode*] ful goode FS. *ful*] wel T.

poverty are both good,

And lyues þat our lorde louéþ · and large weyes to heuene.

† but poverty often reaches heaven first.

Ac þe poure pacient · purgatorye passeþ
Raþere þan þe ryche · þauh thei renne at ones. 32

For yf a marchaunt and a messager · metten to-gederes,

† If a merchant and a messenger reach a place together,

And scholde wenden o way · where both mosten reste,
And rekene byfore reson · a resonable acounte,
What one haþ, what anoþer haþ · and what hy hadde boþe, 36

† the merchant's business will occupy him long;

The marchante mote nede be lette · lengere þen þe messagere;
For þe parcels of hus paper · and oþer pryuey dettes
Wol lette hym, as ich leyue · the lengthe of a myle.

† but the messenger can soon shew his errand.

The messager doþ na more · bote [with] hus mouth telleþ 40
Hus [erande], and hus [lettere] sheweþ · and is a-non delyuered.
And thauh þei wende by þe wey · tho two to-gederes,

† If the messenger crosses a wheat-field, no one stops him;

Thauh þe messager make hus wey · a-mydde þe whete,
Wole no wys man wroth be · ne hus wed take; 44

30. *And*] As E. *weyes*] wey T. *to*] ȝeueþ to M.

31. *þe*] E *om.* *purgatorye*] þe purgatory I.

32. *thei*] ȝe F.

33. *metten*] *so* PIMK; mette F; meten ET; mete S.

34—37. E *omits.* *In* P, *these lines are written in the margin, but by the same scribe;* Whitaker *omits them.*

34. *o way*] on wai M; awey S. *mosten reste* MIKS] moste reste FG; muste resten T; *written* most . . rest P (*the margin of the leaf being cut off*).

35. *a* MKFT] *cut off in* PI. *acounte* MIKF] acompte T; *miswritten* acountes P. *a—acounte*] acounte þat is resonable S.

36. *what*] & what S. *anoþer*] oþer MTKF; þat oþur S. *haþ*] T *om.* *hy*] þei MIKTFS.

37. *be*] by S. *lette*] I-lette I; let MKFST. *þe messagere*] þat oþur F.

38. *þe*] S *om.* *paper*] paupere E.

39. *leyue*] leue MKSET; leeue F.

40. *The*] Þere þe KT. *doþ*] he dooth F. [*with* EIMKFST] P *om.*

41. [*erande*] erende IK; arnede (*sic*) T; lettere PE; lesture S; lettre F; letteres M. [*lettere*] lettre KT; erande E; eraunde S; ernde PM; arende F.

42. *wende*] *so* PEKFT; wend S; wenten M; wente I. *tho*] þei MF; þe E.

43. *amydde*] amyde P; amonge T. *whete*] fayre whete IT.

44. *wroth be*] be wroth ITKFS.

Ys non haiwarde yhote · hus wed for to take;
Necessitas non habet legem.
Ac yf þe marchaunt make hus way · ouere menne corne, † but the hayward would stop the merchant, and take a pledge of him.
And þe haywarde happe · with hym for to mete,
Oþer hus hatt oþer hus [hode] · oþere elles hus gloues
The marchaunt mot for-go · oþer moneye of hus porse,
And ȝut be lett, as ich leyue · for þe lawe askeþ
Marchauns for here merchaundise · in meny place to tollen.
ȝut þauh þei wenden on way · as to wynchestre fayre, † If both go to Winchester fair, the merchant goes the slowest;
The marchaunt with hus marchaundise · may nat go so swithe
As þe messager may · ne with so mochel ese.
For þat on bereþ bote a boxe · a breuet þer-ynne,
Ther þe marchaunt ledeþ a male · with meny kynne þynges, † for he has a heavy box, and is in dread of robbers,
And dredeþ to be ded þere-fore · and he in derke mete
With robbours and reuers · þat riche men dispoilen;
Ther þe messager is ay murye · hus mouthe ful of songes, † whilst the messenger is light of heart.
And leyueþ for hus letteres · þat no wight wol hym greue.

45. *Ys*] Ne T. *yhote*] hote I; is hoten T. *to*] K *om.* *take*] nyme M. *Most MSS. agree in making lines* 44 *and* 45 *end nearly alike; but* ITKFG *insert* Necessitas — legem *between them;* M *omits this quotation altogether.*

46. *yf*] & S. *menne*] *so* PIK; mennes F; menes M; menis T; men ES. *corne*] cornne P.

48. [*hode* EK] hod MG; hood ITFS; hed (!) P. *hus* (3)] K *om.*

49. *mot*] he moot F.

50. *ȝut*] K *om.* *lett*] i-letted M. *leyue*] leue ITMKSE; leeue F.

51. *in*] E *om.* *place*] places MEFS. *to*] KFS *om.* *tollen* TESG] tolle IMF; tullen P; tellen K.

52. *ȝut*] & ȝit IFT. *þauh*] þer I; E *om.* *on*] o IK; a FT; þe M.

53. *may*] he may F.

54. *mochel*] mychel ES; muchel FT; mykel M; moche I.

55. *þat on*] þe one K.

56. *ledeþ*] let IT; lat KF. *meny kynne*] many skenis T.

58. *reuers*] with reuers P; *but* MKFSET *omit* with. *þat*] & F.

59. *ay*] euer S. *hus*] & his FT.

60. *So* PEMIK. *The alliteration is imperfect, unless we put* lede *for* wight, *as in* T; F *has*—
& leeueth for his lettres · ay to be welcome,
& þat no wiȝt wole him greue · walkyng on weies.
S *has the same, but with* euer *for* ay, *and omitting* & *before* þat.

† Yet the merchant's wealth may secure for him a safe passage.

Ac ȝut, myghte þe merchaunt · þorgh monye and oþer ȝiftes,
Haue hors and hardy men; · þauh he mette þeoues,
Wolde non suche a-sailen hym · for hem þat hym folweþ,
As safliche passe as the messager · and as sone at hus hostil.

ȝe wyten wel, ȝe wyse men · what this is to mene,

† The merchant means the rich who keep the ten commandments,

The marchaunt is no more to mene · bote men þat ben ryche
Aren a-countable to crist · and to þe kyng of heuene,
That holden mote þe heye weye · euene [þe] ten hestes,
Boþe louye and lene · þe leelle and þe vnleelle,
And haue reuthe, and releue · with hus grete richesse,

† and assist the wretched, giving tithes of their goods,

By hus power, alle manere men · in meschief yfalle;
Fynde beggars bred · backes for þe colde,
Tythen here goodes treweliche · a tol, as hit semeþ,
That oure lord lokeþ after · of eche a lyf þat wynneþ
With-oute wyles oþer wrong · oþer wommen atte stuwes;

† and paying men's debts.

And ȝut more, to make pees · and quyte menne dettes,
Boþe spele and spare · to spene vpon þe needful,

61. *Ac*] & EF. *monye*] his money IT. *monye and*] many S. *oþer*] F *om.* *ȝiftes* EIMFKS] ȝeftes P; ȝeftis T.

63. *hem þat*] suche as KT. *folweþ*] folwede M.

64. *As*] And as IT. *safliche*] saf S. *passe*] IK *om.* *the*] F *om.* *at*] in S. *hostil*] hostel MK; ostel EFT.

66. *is—mene*] meeneth na more F.

67. *Aren*] Þei beþ E; Aren alle IKT. *and—þe*] þat is M.

68. *þe*] þan (*sic*) E. *euene*] euene to MS. [*þe* IMKFTG] PES *om.*; *cf. rubric to* Pass. viii. 204.

69. *lene*] eke leene F. *þe* (1)] IT *om.* *þe* (2)] ITKS *om.*

70. *grete*] IT *om.*

71. *By—power*] I *om.* *in*] *þat* beth in F; in a S; *þat* in T. *yfalle*] falliþ T.

72. *Fynde*] & fynde F. *bred*] here breed F. *backes*] & cloþus S; & bakkis T. *þe*] T *om.*

73. *Tythen*] & tiþen FT; Teþen M. *goodes*] good IT. *treweliche*] tryweliche P. *semeþ*] were FS.

74. *a*] MF *om.*

75. *wrong*] wronges IT. *atte*] at þe IMST. *stuwes*] stiwes K; stuyues E; styues MS; stewus F; stewis T.

76. *ȝut*] K *om.* *quyte*] to quyten I. *menne*] *so* PK; mennus F; menes M; menis T; men ES.

77. *Boþe*] And IT. *spare*] eke spare F. *spene*] spenden M; spende ITF. *needful*] needy F.

As crist [him]self comaundeþ · to alle cristene peuple,
Alter alterius onera portate, [& sic adimplebitis legem christi]. † Gal. vi. 2.
The messagers aren þe mendinans · þat lyueþ by menne almesse, † The messenger means the poor, who are less bound to do penance.
Beþ nat ybounde as beþ þe riche · to bothe þe two lawes,
To lene ne to lere · ne lentenes to faste,
And oþere pryuey penaunces · þe whiche þe preest wot wel
That þe lawe ȝeueþ leue · suche lowe folke to be excused; † They are excused from tithes and various duties.
As, none tythes to tythen · ne cloþe þe nakede,
Ne in enquestes to come · ne *contumax*, þauh he worche
Haly day oþer holy eue · hus mete to deserue.
For yf he loueþ and by-leyueþ · as the lawe techeþ,
Qui crediderit & baptizatus fuerit, [saluus erit,] & cetera, † Mark xvi. 16.
Telleþ þe lord a tale · as a trewe messager,
And sheweþ by seel and sitthe by lettere · with what lord he dwelleþ, † The poor man who confesses the true faith
[Knowelecheþ] hym cristene · and of holy [kirke] byleyue,
Ther is no lawe, as ich leyue · wol lette hym þe gate, † will not be shut out of heaven.
Ther god is gatwarde hym-self · and eche a gome knoweth;

78. [*him* MITKFSE] P *om. to*] IT *om.* [*& — christi*] *in* F *only.*

79. *messagers*] messangers IT; messager K; massager M. *aren*] ben ES. *menne*] *see* l. 76.

80. *beþ* F] by I; ben T; be MK; beeþ P; S *om.* þe (1)] ȝe M. þe (2)] KS *om. two*] I *om.* þe *two*] to þe MFT.

81. *lere*] lerne ITK. *lentenes*] to lentenes E; in lentenys T; in lenten M; lentoun F; lente S. *to*] for to F.

82. þe (1)] KF *ou.*

83. *to*] KT *om.*

84. *As*] Ne M. *to tythen*] tethegen K. *cloþe*] to cloþe I; for to cloþe F. þe] none M; F *om.*

85. *enquestes*] none enquestes I; none questes M; no queste T. *to*] for to F.

87. K *omits. yf*] T *om. and*] or F. [*saluus erit* MF] hic saluus erit S; PEITK *om.*

88. *trewe*] triwe P.

90. [*Knowelecheþ* KF] Knowelechiþ T; Knewlechuþ S; Knowlecheþ M; Kneweleche PE. *of*] on MF. [*kirke* I] churche PEFS; chirche MKT. *byleyue*] by-leueþ SF.

91. *Ther is*] þat S; þer nys M.

The porter of pure reuthe · may parforme þe lawe,
In þat he wilneþ and wolde · ech wight as him-self.
† A beggar's good will is equal to a rich man's gift. For þe wil is as muche worth · of a wrecche beggere,
As al þat þe ryche may reyme · and ryghtfulliche dele;
And as muche mede · for a myte þat he offreþ 97
(221) As þe riche man for al his moneye · and more, as by þe godspel;
Mark xii. 43. Luke xxi. 3. *Amen dico uobis, quia hec uidua paupercula [misit plus omnibus qui miserunt in gasophilacium;]*
So þat poure pacient · is parfitest lif of alle,
183. And alle parfite preestes · to pouerte sholde drawe;
Ps. xxxvi. 3 (Vulg.). For *spera-in-deo* speke þ of prestes · þat han no spendyng seluer, 101
Poor priests shall not starve. That yf þay trauaile treweliche · and tristen in god almyghty,
Hem sholde neuere lackye lyflode · no*þer* lynnen ne wollene.
The title þat ȝe take þ ȝoure ordres by · telle þ ȝe be þ [auaunced,] 104
Priests should not take money for masses. And neede þ nat to nyme seluer · for masses þat ȝe syngen;
For he þat tok ȝow title · sholde take ȝow wages,

93. *reuthe*] trewþe E; truþe K.
94. *Here* eight leaves *are wanting in* F, *down to* xvi. 178. *ech*] ech a IS; eche a K. *wight*] wy T. *him*] *miswritten* hem P.
95. S *places* is *after* worth. *a*] I *om.*
96. *þat*] S *om.* *may*] K *om.* *reyme*] reome M; rayne I; rayme T.
97. *as*] also M. *mede*] me E. *þat*] þer IT. *he offreþ*] offred S; ich offre E.
98. *his*] is P. *as*] ITS *om.* *Amen—quia*] S *om.* [*misit—omnibus* E] plus *omnibus* misit S; PMIKT *om.* [*qui—gasophilacium*] *in* S *only.*
99. *þat*] þat þe S; T *om.* *parfitest*] parfiith M.
100. *And*] S *om.* *And alle*] Eche a T. *preestes*] preste IT. *sholde*] shulle S.
101. *spera*] sperauí M. *seluer*] siluer IET.
102. *in*] til E; to M; on T. *god almyghty*] almyghty god I.
103. *lackye*] lacky E; lakke IK ST; lacke M. *lynnen*] lynne P; *but see* ii. 18. *wollene*] wulle S.
104. *title* IMTES] titel K; titile P. *þat*] IKT *om.* *telleþ*] til S; tille K. [*auaunced* MT] auaunsed IKEG; auaunsid S; amanced P; *cf.* B-text.
106. *title* ME] titel K; titile P; a title IT; þat title S.

Oþer þe bisshop þat blessed 3ow · and enbaumede 3oure fyngeres. — The bishop should pay them.
For made neuere kyng knyght · bote he hadde catel to spene, 108
As by-fel for a knyght · oþer fond hym for hus strengþe; 184
For hit is a carful knyght · and of a caitif kynges makynge, — A wretched knight is he who has no wealth.
That hath no londe ne lynage riche · ne good loos of hus hondes. 111
The same ich seye for soþe · by suche þat ben preestes,
þat han noþer konnynge ne kyn · bote a corone one, — Priests trust their title and tonsure for their support.
And a title, a tale of nouht · to hus liflode, as hit were.
Vuele ben þei suffred · suche þat schenden masses
Throgh hure luþer lyuynge · and lewede vnder stondyng! 116
A charter is chalangable · by-fore a chief Iustice, — A charter can be challenged if it be in false Latin, or be miswritten.
Yf fals latyn be in [þat lettere] · þe lawe hit enpugneþ,
Oþer peynted par-entrelignarie · parcels ouer-skipped;
The gome þat so gloseþ chartres · a goky he is yholden.
So is he a goky, by god · þat in the godspel failleþ, 121
In masse oþer in matynes · maketh eny defaute;
Qui offendit in uno, in omnibus est reus. — James ii. 10.

107. *blessed*] blesseþ M; blesse (*sic*) E. *and*] or K. *enbaumede*] enbaumeþ M.
108. *knyght*] no knyȝt IT; ne knyȝht K. *spene*] dispende M.
109. *by-fel* KS] bi-fulle M; befelle I; befel T; hit byfelle E; by-feel P. *fond*] *so* PIMS; fonde EK.
110. *hit is*] ȝif (*sic*) M. *is*] S *om.* *and*] þat (*sic*) E; M *om.* *caitif*] carful MS.
111. *no*] noyþer I; noþer T. *loos*] los MT.
112. *þat ben*] as beþ S.
113. *han*] I *om.* *kyn*] kiþ T. *corone*] croune ITE; crone K; crowne M.
114. *title*] titile P.
115. K *omits.* *Vuele*] Euele MT; Iuel E. *þat*] as S. *schenden* EMS] shenden T; shynden P. *masses*] þe masse T.
118. [*þat lettere* MIKSEG] þe *lettre* T; þe letteres P. *enpugneþ*] inpugneþ S; empugned I.
119. *par-entrelignarie*] or enterlyned M.
120. *so gloseþ*] gloseþ so IT. *goky*] gouky E; gokow S. *a—he*] for a goky is T. *he is*] is he K.
121. *he*] it IT; hit K. *goky*] gouky E; gokow S.
122. *In*] Oþer in T. *In—in*] Or in a messe or in a I. S *omits the rubric and* l. 123.

And ouer-skippers al-so · in þe sauter seith dauid,

Ps. xlvi. 7, 8 (Vulg.). *Psallite Deo nostro psallite, quia rex terre deus; psallite sapienter.*

The bishop shal be blamed · by-fore god, as ich leyue,
þat coroneþ suche clerkes · as for godes knyghtes,
185 Of unfit priests. þat conneþ nat *sapienter* · noþer synge ne rede.
Ac neyþer is al blameles · þe bisshop ne þe chapeleyn;
For *ignorantia non excusat* · as ich haue herd in bookes."—

† Thus did Recklessness argue with Clergy. Thus rechelessnesse in a rage · a-resonede clergie,
And scornede scripture · þat meny skyles shewede,

Nature bad him behold the wonders of the world. Til þat kynde cam · clergie to helpen,
And in þe myrour of myddel-erde · made hym eft to loke,
To knowe by ech creature · kynde to louye.
And ich bowede my body · by-holdynge al a-boute,

I saw the sun, the sea, and the sand, And seih þe sonne and þe see · and þe sand after,
Wher þat briddes and bestes · by here makes ȝeden,

beasts, worms, and fowls, Wilde wormes in wodes · and wonderful foules
With fleckede fetheres · and of fele colours;

man and his mate, Man and hus make · ich myghte see boþe,

186 poverty and plenty, bliss and bale. Þouerte and plente · bothe pees and werre,
Blisse and biter bale · bothe ich seih at ones;
And how þat men mede token · and mercy refuseden.

123. S *omits. And*] For IT. *quia*] qui est ME; quoniam I. *quia—sapienter*] S *om. psallite sapienter* M] psallite IT; E *om. (represented in* PK *by the abbreviation* s.s., *where* s = sallite, *for* psallite).

124. *blamed*] i-blamed M. T *omits* l. 124, *and runs* ll. 125 *and* 126 *into one.*

125. *coroneþ*] crouneþ IE; croneþ K; crownen M. *clerkes as*] IT *om.*

126. *sapienter*] o sapiencia M; T *om.*

127. *neyþer*] noþer E; neuer neyþer I; nere neiþer T. *is*] buþ M. *al*] IT *om.* þe (2)] his S.

128. *herd*] i-herd ME.

129. *a-resonede*] a-ratede S.

130. *scornede scripture*] scripture scornede I; scripture scornide it T.

132. *myddel*] mydel P. *erde*] erþe IST. *eft*] ofte T; S *om. to*] KT *om.*

133. *ech*] eche a I; iche a T.

134. *by-holdynge*] by-holde K; bihelde I; & beheld T. *al*] T *om.*

135. *seih*] si M; say S; sithe I. *sand*] londe E.

136. *Wher*] And where IKT. *ȝeden* EMS] ȝeeden P; ȝeoden K; þey ȝede IT.

138. *fetheres* EIMKS] fetthers P.

139. *see*] i-seo M.

141. *biter*] IT *om. seih*] si M; seye I.

142. *men*] I *om. mede*] me (!) S.

Reson ich seih sothliche · suwen alle bestes — I saw that Reason ruled all beasts;
In etynge, [in] drynkyng · in gendrynge of kynde; 144
After cours of concepcion · non tok kepe of oþer
As when þei hadde ruteyed; · a-non þei resten after.
Maules drowen hem to maules · on morwenynge by hem-self, — males withdrew from females after breeding time.
And femeles to femeles · herdeyed and drow. 148
Ther ne was kow ne kow-kynde · þat conceyued hadde,
That [wolde bere] after bole · ne bor after sowe.
Ther was no [kynne] kynde · þat conceyued hadde,
That ne lees þe lykynge of lust · of flesch, as hit were,
Saue man and hus make; · and *þer*-of me wondrede. — † Men alone know no moderation.
For out of reson þei ryde · and rechelesliche taken on,
As in durne dedes · bothe drynkynge and elles.
Briddes ich by-helde · in bosshes maden nestes, 156 — I saw birds making their nests, and wondered.
Hadde neuere weye wit · to worche þe leste.
Ich hadde wonder at wham · and wher þat þe pye

143. *Reson*] And resoun I. *seih*] *here written* sauh P (*but see* ll. 135, 141); si M. *sothliche*] sotthliche P. I *omits last half of* l. 143, *and first half of* l. 144.

144. [*in* KES] and PTM. *gendrynge*] engendryng MKS; engendurer I; engendrure T.

145. *cours*] þe cours M. *kepe*] hede M.

146. *As*] And T. *ruteyed*] roteyed I; roteide K; yrotied ET; i-roteied M. *after*] ayþer I.

147. *Maules*] *so* PEKSG; Males MIT (*twice*). *on*] in M; a T; and (!) I. *morwenynge*] mornyng I; morewnynges M; morwnynges E; morows S. *hem*] hym S.

148. *herdeyed*] herdyede S; herdeiede M; herdyyng E; herdede K; ferdide T; ferdededе (*sic*) I; herknede G. *and*] an P. *drow*] rowe E.

149, 150. K *omits* (*but the lines are added in a much later hand*). *ne was*] nas E.

150. [*wolde bere* T] wuld bere S; wolte beere (*in a much later hand*) K; belwede, M; beere P; beþer (!) E; *not in* I; *cf.* B-text. *bole—sowe*] bore · ne sow aftur bore (*wrongly*) S.

151. *was*] ne was KT. [*kynne* MES] kyne K; kyn T; kynde P.

152. *ne* MEKST] *apparently* no P. *lees*] *so* PEK; les MST. *þe*] S *om.* *lust* MIKST] loust PE.

154. *ryde*] redde E. *rechelesliche*] richelich E. *taken*] token IMEST; toke K.

155. *durne*] derne MKST. *bothe*] *apparently* bethe P; boþe in T; K *om.*

156. *by-helde*] by-heelde P. *bosshes*] bussches I; busches EKS; buskes M; buskis T. *nestes*] neestes P.

157. *weye*] we E; wie K; wiȝ T; withg M. *neuere weye*] we neuer E.

158. *at—wher*] wher · and at wham P (*but the rest have the arrangement given; cf.* B-text). *and—þat*] whan and where I.

Lernede legge styckes · þat leyen in here neste;
Ther is no wryght, as ich wene · sholde worche here nest to paye.
Yf eny mason þer-to · makede a molde
With alle here wyse castes · wonder me þynkeþ!

Some birds hid their eggs.

And ȝut ich meruaillede more · menye of þo bryddes
Hudden and heleden · durneliche here egges,
For no foul sholde hem fynde · bote hus fere and hym-self.

Some bred upon trees.

And some treden, ich tok kepe · and on trees bredden,
And brouhten forth here bryddes · al aboue þe grounde.

167

In mareis and in mores · in myres and in wateres
Dompynges dyueden; · "deere god," ich sayde,
"Wher hadden þese wilde suche witt · and at what scole?"

I observed the peacocks.

And whan þe pocok caukede · þer-of ich took kepe,
How vn-corteisliche þe cok · hus kynde forth strenede,
And ferliche hadde of hus fairnesse · and of hus foule ledene.

159. *Lernede*] Lernede to MST; *apparently* Lornede P. *in*] on IMK. *here*] heore M; his K. *neste* EIKSG] nest MT; neestes P (*but see next line*).

160. *is*] nys MT. *wryght*] wyȝt S; wiȝt ET; withg M.

161, 162. I *has*— ... masou*n* made a molde *þer*-to · moche wond*er* me þenkeþ; *as in* B-text. T *has the same, beginning* ȝif any masou*n*.

161. *þer-to makede*] þer-to maken E; make þer-to M.

162. *here*] *so* PK; hur*e* S; *his* E; hise M; (here castes = her contrivances).

163. *ȝut*] S *om.* *ich meruaillede*] ich merueile þe E; me m*e*ruaileth I; me m*e*rueilide T. *þo*] þe IMKT.

164. *Hudden*] Hidden KT. *heledn*] hileden I. *durneliche—egges*] derworþliche hure egges M; derneliche hur*e* nest*us* & eggus S; her*e* egges dernely IT.

165. *hem*] it IT; K *om.* *hus*] hire T. *hym*] hire T.

167. *al*] & alle S.

168. *mareis*] maries E; mariis M. *and* (1)] M *om.* *mores*] moores I; meores K. *myres*] medes E. *in wateres*] watres M.

169. *Dompynges*] Dumpynges M; Doppynges E; Dompu*s* S. *dyueden*] dyuyden P; dyuede IT; diuyde K; dyuede in M.

170. *þese* MKS] þees P; þis IE; þise T.

171. *whan*] how IT. *ich took*] tok y SIT; toke y K.

172. *þe*] þat I. *hus*] his IMKSET; *miswritten* hud P. *strenede* MIK] *better than* strenide T; strende P; streynde E; strewede (*put for* streuede, *a mistake for* strenede) S.

173. *ferliche hadde*] ferkoyed (!) I; ferliede T. *ledene* MKG] lidun S; leedene P; leodene E; lenede (*miswritten for* ledene) I; lenide T.

And siþþe ich loked on þe see · and so forþ on þe sterres, — Then I looked at the sea and stars,
Meny selcouth ich seih · aren nouht to seggen nouthe;
Ne what on floures in feldes · and [of] hure faire coloures, — the flowers, and the grass.
How out of greot and of gras · grewe so meny huwes,
Somme soure and somme swete · selcouþ me þouhte;
Of here kynde and of here colours · to carpen hit were to longe.
Ac þat þat [moste] meuede me · and my mod chaungede, — Reason ruled all beasts except man.
Was þat ich seih reson · suwen alle bestes
Saue man and mankynde; · meny tymes me þouhte,
Reson rewelede hem nat · noþer riche ne poure.
Then ich aresonede reson · and right til hym ich seide, — I asked Reason why this was so.
"Ich haue wonder in my witt · so wis as þow art holde,
Wher-for and why · so wide as þow regnest,
þat þow ne ruelest raþer · renkes þan oþer beestes.
For ich see noone so ofte sorfeten · soþliche so mankynde; — † "For I observe none so immoderate as mankind,
In mete out of mesure · and meny tymes in drynke,
In wommen, in wedes · and in wordes boþe

174. þe (2)] I *om.*
175. *selcouth*] selcouþes MKT. *ich*] ic P; *but see* l. 174. *seih*] si M; say S. *aren*] ben E; beþ S. *nouht*] none T. *seggen*] sayn E; seie M; sey T.
176. *what on*] *so* PEIKST; what of M. *feldes*] felde MIT. [*of* ITMKEG] on S; P *om.*
177. *How*] And how IT. *greot*] *so* PK; greet E; gret M; greut T; grut S; grith I. *of* (2)] M *om.* *grewe*] groweþ ME; growe IT.
178. *Somme*] And some IKT. *selcouþ*] selcouhþ P; *see* l. 175.
179. *of*] K *om.* *colours*] colour IT. *to*] IT *om.*
180. *þat þat*] þat at K; þe (*sic*) I; þis T. [*moste* I] most SKT; moost G; man (*sic*) E; PM *om.*
181. *Was*] Whanne T. *seih*] si M.
182. *tymes*] time ME.
183. *rewelede*] reuled E; reulede S; rewlide T; rulede K; reule (*sic*) M; reued reuelede (*sic*) I.
184. *aresonede*] resoned I. *til*] to ST. *ich*] MT *om.*
185. *art* TMS] ert EK; *miswritten* herte P. *holde*] i-holde M; holden T.
186. *so*] as IKT.
187. *ne*] I *om.* *ruelest*] rulest MK; reulest S; reweledest I; rewelist T.
188. *For*] IKTS *om.* *sorfeten*] sorfete K; surfaiten T; surfete MS; sorfeteþ G; *apparently* forfeten PEI (*but alliteration decides it*). · *so* (2)] as S.
189. *tymes*] time M.
190. *wordes*] werkes M.

Thei ouerdon hit day and nyght · and so doþ noon oþere. 191

† although mankind resembles thee more than all other animals."

Bestes ruwelen hem al by reson · and renkes ful fewe.
And þer-fore meruaileþ me · for man, as in [makynge,]
Is most yliche þe · in wit and in werkes,
Whi he ne loueþ þy lore · and lyueþ as þow techest?"

188 Reason would not tell me.

And reson aresonede me · and seide, "recche þe neuere
Whi ich suffre oþer nat suffre:"— · "certes," ich seide,
"Ech a seg for hym-self · salamon ous techeþ; 198

Eccles. xi. 9.

De re que te non molestat, noli certare."

"Who is more long-suffering than God?"

"Ho suffreþ more þan God?" quaþ he · "no gome, as ich leyue!
He myght a-mende in a mynt-while · al þat amys stondes; 200
Ac he suffreþ, in ensaumple · þat we sholde alle suffren.
Ys no vertue so feyr · of value ne of profit,
As ys suffrance souereynliche · so hit be for godes loue.
And so witnesseþ þe wyse · and wysseþ þe frenshe, 204

Patience is a fair virtue.

Bele uertue est suffraunce · mal dire est petite ueniaunce;
Bien dire e bien suffrir · fait ly suffrable a bien uenir.

191. *noon*] nat I; not T. *oþere*] oþer bestis T.

192. *Bestes*] þey IT. *ruwelen*] ruelen EKS; rulen M; rewele I; rewle T. *and*] ac I; but T.

193—195. I *has*—

And þerfore merueileth me · for man is most yliche þe
Of wille and of werkes · why he ne loueth þy lore;

T *has the same, except* lyk *for* yliche þe, *and* wyt *for* wille.

193. [*makynge* KS] makyng ME; mankynde PG.

194. *Is* EITKMS] His P. *yliche*] i-lik M; lyk T. *þe*] þo K; T *om.* *in* (1)] of IMKT; S *om.* *wit*] witt P; wordes E. *in* (2)] of IMKST. *werkes*] werkus boþe S.

195. *ne*] S *om.* *lyueþ—techest*] leueþ þi techyng M.

197. *ich* (2)] he MIKT; *but* ich *seems quite right.*

198. *seg*] man M. *noli*] nolite KT; noli te I.

199. *suffreþ*] suffred S.

200. *a*] K *om.* *mynt*] *so* PET; mynte IS; myn K; myte M.

201. *alle suffren*] soffren alle I; suffre alle T.

202. *of* (1)] ne of IT. *of—profit*] ne of profit neuer þe mo S. *of* (2)] I *om.*

203. *As*] So IKT.

204. *witnesseþ*] wittnesseþ P. *þe* (1)] wel T; IK *om.* *wysseþ*] wisse S.

205. *petite*] petit MT; pety K.

206. *suffrir*] suffrier I; soffreire K; suffrer PTMEG; *but* suffrir *seems the best form.* *ly*] luy IKT; le M. *uenir* IT] venier M; veneir K; uener PEG.

For-þi," quaþ reson, "ich rede the · rewele þi tonge euere;
And er þow lakke eny lyf · loke ho is to preise. 208
For is no creature vnder cryst · þat can hym-selue make; No creature can make himself.
And yf cristene creatures · couthen make hem-selue,
Eche lede wolde be lacles · leyf þow non oþere!
Man was mad of suche matere · he may nat wel a-sterte 189
That som tymes hym tit · to folwen hus kynde; 213
Caton a-cordeþ her-with · *nemo sine crimine uiuit.*" Cato; Distich. i. 5.
Tho cauhte ich colour a-non · and comsed to be ashamed, Then I awoke,
And awaked þer-wiþ; · wo was me þenne, 216 and was very sorry to dream no more.
That ich ne hadde ymet more · so murye as ich slepte,
And sayde a-non to my-self · "slepynge, ich hadde grace
To wite what dowel ys · ac wakynge neuere!"
And þenne was þer a wiȝt · what he was ich nuste:— Then saw I one,
"What ys dowel?" quaþ þat wiȝt · "y-wys, syre," ich seyde, 221
"To see muche and suffren al · certes, syre, ys dowel."
"Haddest þow suffred," he seide · "slepyng þo þow were, who rebuked me for my impatience.
þow sholdest haue knowe þat cleregye can · and more *con*ceyued þorwe reson. 224

207. *For-þi*] For-whi M. *the rewele*] þow reule I.
208. *ho*] who-so K.
209. *is no*] y not S. *creature*] curato*ur* T (*wrongly*).
210. *And yf*] For and M; And K. *cristene creatures*] creatures cristene IT.
211. *Eche*] Eche a MK; Ech a I; Iche a T. *wolde*] wolle S. *lede—lacles*] wolde lede lackes (*sic*) E.
212. *suche*] suche a KT.
213. *tymes*] time MT. *tit*] betyt I; ne betit T; tid E.
214. *her-with*] þer-wiþ MK; kyndely þerwiþ T.
215. *ich*] y a S.
216. *wo*] and wo I.
217. *ymet*] met KT; mete S.
218. *ich hadde*] hadde y ST; had i I.
220. *wiȝt* EI] wiȝht K; withg M; wiȝ T; whiȝt P; *so in* l. 221. *nuste*] nyste IT; ne wiste M.
221. *What*] þat M. *ich*] he MK (*wrongly*).
222. *syre*] þat S; IT *om.*
223. *suffred*] suffrede P; i-suffred M. *þo*] þaw M.
224. *knowe*] i-knowe M. *and—þorwe*] þat conseyued more þan I; & conceyued more þouȝ KT.

For reson wolde haue reherced to þe · ryght as cleregie seide;
Ac for þyn entermetyng · her art þow for-sake:
Cf. Prov. x. 19. *Philosophus fuisses, si tacuisses; et alibi: Locutum me aliquando penituit, tacuisse nunquam.*
"Adam, while he held his peace, was in Paradise. Adam, whiles he spak nat · hadde paradys at wylle;
Ac whanne he mamelede a-boute mete · and musede for to knowe
The wisdome and þe wit of God · he was putte out of blisse.
Ryght so ferde reson by þe · for þi rude speche,
And for þow woldest wyte why · of resones pryuete.
For thy pride and presumption Reason refused thee. For pruyde and *pre*sompcion · of þy parfit lyuynge
Reson refusede þe · and wolde nat reste with the,
Ne cleregie of hus connynge · kepeþ þe nat shewe.
Shame brings amendment. For shal neuere, er shame come · a shrewe wel be chasted;
If a drunken man fall into a ditch, let him lie there. For let a dronken daffe · in a diche falle,
Let hym lygge, lok nat [on] hym · til hym luste aryse;
And þauh reson rebuke hym þenne · recche þ he neuere,
Of clergie ne of kynde witt · counteþ he nat a russhe;

225. M *omits.* *to*] IKT *omit.*
226. *Ac*] T *om.* *her*] *þer* E. *art* MKST] ert PE. *art þow*] artow I. S *has* — Si tacuisses, philosophus fuisses; Me aliquando locutum fuisse penituit, siluisse nunquam. *me*] est (*wrongly; for* esse) M.
Obs. One leaf *lost in* G, *down to* xv. 40.
227. *whiles*] þe whiles IT; while M. *nat*] nout M. *at*] att P.
228. *whanne*] wanne P. *mamelede*] momelede S. *and*] he T. *for*] T *om.*
229. *wit*] witt P.
230. *ferde*] fariþ T. *rude*] proude M.
231. *woldest wyte*] wost ywite (*sic*) E. *of—pryuete*] resones preuede (*sic*) I; resoun is *pr*euyte T.
232. *For*] IT *om.* *and*] or IT.
233. *wolde*] wul S.
234. *hus*] E *om.* *þe*] I *om.* *nat*] not to T.
235. *wel*] K *om.* *chasted*] ychasted EK. *be chasted*] chaste IT.
236. *diche*] dike I.
237. *Let* MKST] Late I; Leet P. [*on* IMKST] in PE. *luste*] liste ET; luste to M; lust to IS. *aryse*] rise I.
238. *And*] For IMKST. *rebuke* IMKST] rebuky P. *he*] ȝe S.
239. *Of*] Ne of IT. *ne*] & E. *counteþ*] acounteþ MS. *he*] I *om.* *russhe*] rische EKS; ruyssche M; ressche I; risshe T.

To blame hym oþer to bete hym þenne · ich halde hit bote synne. 240 **101**

Ac when neede nymeþ hym vp · a-non he ys a-shamed, When he recovers, shame tells him his fault."
And þenne wot he wher-fore · and whi he is to blame."

"ȝe seggeþ soþ, by my soule," quaþ ich · "ich haue seyen hit ofte, "You blame me," I said, "for rebuking Reason."

[þer] smyt no þynge so smerte · ne smelleþ so foule 244
As shame; þer he sheweþ hym · ech man shoneþ hus companye.
Whi ȝe worden to me þus · was for ich aresonede reson."

"ȝe, certes," quaþ he, "þat is soþ"— · and shop hym to walke, "Yes," he replied.
And ich a-roos vp ryght with þat · and reuerencede hym fayre, 248 Then I prayed him to tell me his name.
And yf hus wil were · he wolde hus name telle?

Hic explicit passus quartus de dowel.

240. *oþer*] K *om.* *hym* (2)] M *om.* *halde*] ne holde T. *bote*] but a MS.

241. *Ac*] And M; But T. *a-shamed*] a-shamede P.

243. *seggeþ*] seien M. *soule*] selfe I. *seyen*] Isey E; iseiȝe MT; y-seie K; sey S.

244. [*þer* IMKST] Her PE; *cf.* B-text. *ne*] & T.

248. *ich*] S *om.* *a-roos*] a-ros MKS; arros (*sic*) I. *vp ryght*] ryght vp PT; *but the rest transpose the words; cf.* B-text.

249. *name*] tale K. *he—name*] his name he wolde M.

COLOPHON. IMT *om.* *Hic*] EKS *om.* *de dowel*] KS *om.*

PASSUS XV. (DO-WEL V.)

Incipit passus quintus [de dowel.]

102
"I am Imaginative," he said.

"Ich am ymaginatif," quaþ he · "ydel was ich neuere,
þauh [ich sitte] by my-self · suche is my grace;
"I have followed thee for more than forty years,
Ich haue yfolwed þe in faiþ · more þan fourty wynter,
And wissede þe ful ofte · what dowel was to mene,
And counsailede þe for cristes sake · no creature to by-gyle,
† and have instructed thee never to waste speech or time.
Noþer to lye noþer to lacke · ne lere þat is defendid,
Ne to spille speche · as to speke an ydel,
And no tyme to [tyne] · ne trewe þyng to teenen;
Lowe þe to lyue forth · in þe lawe of holychurche;
þenne dost þow wel, with-oute drede · ho can do bet, no forse!
† Clerks that know everything can do better.
Clerkes þat connen al · ich hope þei conne do bettere;
Ac hit suffiseþ to be saued · and to be suche as ich tauhte.

TITLE. Incipit passus quintus PE; M *prefixes* Hic; MSK *add* de dowel; Passus quartus de Dowel IT.
2. [*ich sitte*] i sitte MT; ich sitt E; I sete I; y sete KS; ysete P.
3. *yfolwed* EM] yfolwede P; folwed IK; folwyd S; folewid T.
5. *counsailede*] i-conseiled M; counsalede P. *for*] ofte for S.
6. *noþer*] ne EIKT. *ne*] to I.
7. *Ne to*] Noþur S. *speche*] speches E; no speche IT. *as*] as for ITK. *an*] on MS.
8. *And*] Ne IT. *to* (1)] T *om.* [*tyne* EMIKTS] tene P. *trewe*] trywe P. *to* (2)] IT *om.* *teenen*] tenen E; teone K; tene MITS.
9. *to*] and to M; and ITK; for to S. *lyue*] þe lynde (!) E.
10. *þenne*] And þanne IT. *bet*] bett PI.
12. *saued*] i-saued M. *and*] S *om.* *to* (2)] MITK *om.*

Ac for to louye and lene · and lyue wel and by-leyue,
Ys ycallid *caritas* · kynde loue in english;
And þat is dobet, yf eny suche be · a blessed man, þat helpeþ
[þat] pees be and pacience · and poure with-oute defaute;
Beatius est dare quam petere.
Ac catel and kynde witt · encombreþ ful menye;
Woo is hym þat hem weldeþ · bote he [hem] wel dispeyne;
Scientes & non facientes uariis flagellis uapulabunt.
Ac comunliche connynge · and vnkynde rychesse,
As, loreles to be lordes · and lewede men techeres,
And holy churche horen help · auerous and coueytous,
Droweþ vp dowel · and distruyeþ dobest.
Ac grace is a gras þer-fore · to don hem eft growe;
Ac grace groweþ nat · til [goode wil] gynne reyne,
And wokie þorwe good werkes · wikkede hertes.
Ac er suche a wil wexe · god hym-self worcheþ,
And sent forþ seint espirit · to don loue sprynge;
Spiritus ubi uult spirat, et cetera.

† Charity or Love is Do-bet, who bestows peace and patience.

† Acts xx. 35.

195

Cf. Luke xii. 47, 48.

† But cunning and riches often dry up Do-wel, and destroy Do-best.

† But Grace causes them to grow again.

John iii. 8.

196

13. *and* (1)] and to MSK; and for to I. *and* (2)] an P. *lyue*] liþe M. *and by-leyue*] I beleue I.

14. *ycallid*] y-callyd S; ycalid P; ycald EMITK. *in*] an I; on MKT.

15. *suche*] man schulde T.

16. [*Þat* IMKST] And PE. *with-oute*] out of T. *petere*] recipere M; accip*e*re S.

17. *encombreþ*] accombreþ I; acombreþ KS; accumbriþ T.

18. [*hem* IMKST] *miswritten* hym PE. *dispeyne*] dispene E; despene K; dispende MT; despende I. *flagellis*] penis M. *Scientes, &c.*] Scienti & non facienti variis flagellis vapulabitur IT.

21. *auerous*] & auerous S.

22. *Droweþ*] *so* PKS; Draweþ E; Drieþ M; Dryueþ T. *distruyeþ*] destroyeþ IT; distrieþ vp M. *dobest*] do-bet T.

23. T *omits*. *eft*] ofte K; oft to S.

24. [*goode wil* K] goode wille E; goud wille S; *better than* god wol PI; god wole M; god wile T. *The true reading is decided by* l. 26. *gynne*] gunne E; ȝiue T; þat hit M; S *om.*

25. *wokie*] wakye E; waky KS; *but see* B. xv. 332. *good*] godus S. *wikkede*] þise wykkide T.

26. *wil* MKST] *better than* will wol P; wille wol E. *god—worcheþ*] worcheþ good silue I; werchiþ good ȝo*ur* seluen T.

27. *sent* EKST] send PM. *seint*] þe seynt MKT. *espirit*] espiryȝt S. *loue*] þe lef T.

So grace, with-oute grace · of god and of good werkes,
May nat bee, bee þow siker · þauh we bidde euere.
† Learning is due to the influence of stars. Cleregie comeþ bote of siht · and kynde witt of sterres,
As to be bore oþer bygete · in suche constellacion,
That wit wexeþ þer-of · and oþere [wyrdes] boþe;
Uultus huius seculi sunt subiecti uultibus celestibus.
Grace is a gift of God. So grace is a gyfte of god · and kynde witt a chaunce,
And cleregye and connyng · of kynde wittes techynge.
Learning is to be commended. And ȝut is cleregie to comende · for cristes loue, more
þan eny connynge of kynde witt · bote cleregie hit ruwele.
† Moses witnesses that God wrote a law of love on stone. For moyses wittnesseþ þat god wrot · in stoon with hus fynger,
Lawe of loue oure lorde wrot · longe er crist were.
And crist cam and confermede · and holy [kirke] made,
(197) And in sond a sygne wrot · and seide to þe Iewes,
† Christ wrote it on the ground. 'That seeþ hym-self synneles · cesse nat, ich hote,
To stryke with stoon oþer with staf · this strompet to deþe';
† John viii. 7. *Qui uestrum sine peccato est [mittat in eam lapidem,] & cetera.*
For-thi ich consaile alle cristene · cleregie to honoure;
198 For as a man may nat seo · þat mysseþ hus eyen,
Clerks learn from books. No more can no clerkes · bote [if] hit be of bookes.

28. *with-oute*] with S. *of* (2)] also I; MKS *om.* *werkes*] werk M.
29—33. M *omits.*
29. *bee* (1)] buryone S. *bee þow*] so T.
30. *comeþ*] come not S. *witt of*] with-out E.
31. *oþer*] & T. *bygete*] bizite E; gete S. *suche*] such a IKST.
32. [*wyrdes*] wirdes K; wyrdus S; wordes PEIT (*wyrdes* = destinies).
33—42. K *omits.*
34. *and*] a IST. *techynge*] techinges I.
35. *for*] fore PM.
36. *ruwele*] reule EIS; rule M.
37. *in stoon*] and crist IT; in a ston S.
38. *loue*] I *om.*
39. [*kirke* I] churche PEIS; chirche MT.
40. *a*] I *om.*
41. G *begins again...cesse*] sese IST.
42. *strompet*] strompett P. [*mittat—lapidem*] *in* E *only.*
43. *For-thi*] For-whi M; For T. *consaile*] consaily P; *but see* l. 63. *alle cristene*] eche creature KG; ich a creature IT.
45. *clerkes*] clerc IT. [*if* IKG] ȝif EMT; PS *om.* *be*] come IT (*which suits the alliteration better*).

And thauh men maden bokes · god was here maister,
And seynte spirit þe saumplarie · and seide what men sholde wryte.
And ryght as syht seruеþ a man · to see þe hye strete,
Ryght so lereþ lettrure · lewede men to reson. 49
And as a blynde man in batayle · bereþ wepne to fyghte, Like a blind man in battle,
And haþ non hap wiþ hus axe · hus enemy to hitte;
No more can a kynde-witted man · bote clerkes hym teche, so is one with common sense
Come for alle hus kynde wyttes · þorwe cristendom to be saued; but untaught.
The whiche is cofre of cristes tresour · and clerkes kepen þe keyes, 54
To vnlouke hit at here lykynge · þe lewede and lerede to helpe,
To ȝeue mercy for mysdedes · yf men wolde hit aske
Buxumliche and benygneliche · and bydden hit of grace.
Archa dei in þe olde lawe · leuites hit kepten; Levites kept the ark,
Hadde neuere lewede man leue · to legge honde [on] þat cheste,
Bote hit were preeste oþer preestes sone · patriarck **199**
oþer prophete. 60 and no others.
Saul, for he sacrifisede · sorwe hym by-tydde, Saul did wrong in sacrificing (1 Sam. xiii. 12).
And hus sones for hus synnes · sorwe þey hadden;
[And alle lewede þat leyde hond þeron · loren lyf after.]

46. *And thauh*] Þaw M; Al-þouȝ SKTG. *And—bokes*] I *om.*
47. *And*] And þe MSI. *spirit*] espirit MG; esprit I. *þe saumplarie*] heore ensamplarie M. *what*] þat M. *men*] me E.
48. G *omits*. *And*] But M. *syht*] a siȝht K. *strete*] weiȝe M.
49. G *omits*. *lereþ*] lerneþ M.
50. *And*] For G; I *om.*
51. *haþ*] S *om.* *enemy*] enmy M.
52. *clerkes*] werkes I (*wrongly*).
53. *for*] þoruȝ S. *wyttes*] witte I; wyt T. *saued*] sauede P; *see* l. 76.
54. *The*] T *om.* *The whiche*] For hit G. *is*] IK *om.* *cofre*] þe cofre I; þe coffre T.
55. *vnlouke*] vnloke ES; vnlokken I; louken T.
56. G *omits* ll. 56—63. *for*] for his M. *wolde*] wolle I; wol K; wul S; wile T.
59. *to*] T *om.* *legge*] leyen M; leyn T. [*on* IMKT] in PES; *cf.* B-text.
60. *preeste*] prest MK; preestes PEIST.
62. *þey hadden*] hem bitidde IK (*repeated from* l. 61); hem betauȝte T.
63. *From* I (*which has* hane *for* hond); *also in* KT. *This seems but a fragment of the three lines in* B. xii. 120—123, *which are correctly preserved in MS.* R *only; see* B-text.

Never despise learning or clerks.

For-þy ich consaille alle creatures · no clerk to dispise,
Ne sette short by here science · what so þei don hem-selue.
Take we here wordes a worth · for here wittnesses ben trewe,
Meddle not with such.
And medle we nat moche with hem · to meeuen eny wratthe,
Leste cheste chaufe ous so · and choppe ech man opere;
And do we as dauid techeþ · for doute of godes veniaunce;

Ps. civ. 15 (Vulg.).

Nolite tangere cristos meos, &c.

For cleregie is cristes vikery · to conforte and to curen;
Boþe lered and lewed were lost · yf cleregie ne were.
† Men naturally clever have found out a learning of their own.
Kynde-wittede men han · a cleregie by hem-selue;
Of cloudes and of custumes · þei contreuede meny þynges,
And markede hit in here manere · and mused *þer*-on to knowe.
They thought much of science,
And of þe selcouþe[s] þat þei seyen · here sones *þer*-of þei tauhte,
þei helden hit for an hey science · here soteltes to knowe.
Ac þorw here science soþliche · was neuere soule ysaued,
200 but their books brought none to bliss.
Ne brouht þorwe here bokes · to blisse ne to ioye.
For al here kynde knowyng · cam bote of diuerse sightes

64. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *clerk*] clerkes I.

66. *a*] at IT. *wittnesses*] witnesse TKG. *trewe*] trywe P.

68. *chaufe—so*] chaste vs so ES; cause vs to chide I; achaufe us so MG; chauufen vs in wo T. *and—man*] þat eche man choppe M.

69. *Here* M *repeats* ll. 30—32, 64, 68, *and then* 69 *again.*

70. *vikery*] vicarie EG; vicary I; uicori M; vicorie KS; viccorie T. *to* (2)] KG *om.*

71. *were* (1)] we S. *lost*] i-lost M.

73. *of*] G *om.* *contreuede*] contreuen M; contreueþ S.

74. *markede*] makede M; markeþ S. *þer-on*] on E.

75. *þe*] M *om.* *selcouþes* MEKSTG] silkouthes I; selcouþe P. *seyen*] sien M. *tauhte*] to teche E.

76. *þei*] For þey IT; And G. S *omits last half of* l. 75, *and first half of* l. 76.

78. *þorwe*] be T.

79. *al*] MS *om.* *cam*] ne cam PE; *but* IMKSTG *omit* ne.

Of briddes and [of] bestes · of blisse and of sorwe. 80.
Patriarkes and prophetes · reprouede here science,
And seide here wordes and here wysdomes · ne was bote al folye;
As to þe cleregie of cryst · þei countede hit bote a trufle;
Sapientia huius mundi stultitia est apud deum. 1 Cor. iii. 19.
For þe hye holygost · shall heuene to-cleue, 84
And loue shal leepe out after · in-to þis lowe erthe,
And clannesse shal cacchen hit · and clerkes shullen hit fynde;
Pastores loquebantur ad inuicem, et cet. Luke ii. 15.
Hit spekeþ of riche men ryght nouht · ne of riche lordes,
Bote of clennesse and of clerkes · and kepers of bestes;
Ibant magi ab oriente, et cetera. 88 Mat. ii. 1.
Yf eny frere were founde þere · ich 3eue [þe] fyue shyllinges!
Noþer in cote noþer in caytyf hous · was crist y-bore, Cf. Luke ii. 7.
Bote in a burgeises hous · þe beste of alle þe toune.
To pastours and to poetes · aperede þe angel, 92 The angel appeared to the shepherds,
And bad hem go to bedlehem · godes burþe to honoure,
And [songen] a song of solas · *Gloria in excelsis deo!* 201
Riche men routten þo · and in here reste were, Luke ii. 14.

80. *and* (1)] or I. [*of* IMKSTG] PE *om.*
82. *seide*] E *om.* *and*] ne I; for T; G *om.* *wysdomes*] wisdom MG. *ne was*] nas K; was IST. *bote al*] al but M. *al*] a IKSTG.
83. *As*] And MG. *countede hit*] a-counten M. *a*] T *om.* *trufle*] trefele M; trifle STG. *est*] KT *om.*
84. *shall heuene*] heuen schal IKTG; þe heuene schal S.
85. *out after*] aftur out S. *after*] T *om.* *þis*] þe S.
86. *and*] as E.
87. *Hit*] He S. *of*] þer of IT. *riche*] grete S; þe T.
88. *and* (1)] I *om.* *of* (2)] ST *om.* *After* oriente I *adds*—De natiuitate domini.
89. *founde*] i-fondé M. [*þe* IMS KTG] PE *om.*
90. *Noþer*] Ne IT. *cote*] no cote T. *noþer in*] ne *in* K; ne IT. *caytyf*] caytifes IT. *was crist*] crist was KTG.
91. *burgeises*] burgeys S; borgeis M; burgeis T. *of*] in M. *alle*] IKTG *om.*
92. *to*] K *om.* *þe*] an G.
93. *bedlehem*] bethleem MEK; bedleem I; bedlem STG.
94. [*songen* M] songe IT; song S; syngen PEK; singe G.
95. *routten*] routte K; rutten M; rotto I; routen E; routed S; routide T; rutte G. *in*] K *om.*

þo hit shon to þe shepehurdes · a shewere of blisse.

The Magi. Clerkes knewen the comete · and comen with here presentes,

And dude here homage honorably · to hym þat was almyghty.

I say this because you slandered learned men (see pp. 212, 213). Whi ich haue ytold þe al þis · ich took ful good hede,

How þow contrariedest cleregie · with crabbede wordes,

þat is, how lewede men and luþere · lyghtloker were saued

þan connynge clerkes · of kynde vnderstondyng;

And þow seidest soþ of somme · ac ich seye in what manere.

Throw two men into the Thames, Take two stronge men · and in temese cast hem,

And boþe naked as a nelde · here noþer heuyour þan oþer;

one who can swim and one who cannot; That on haþ connynge · and can swimmen and dyuen,

That oþer is lewede of þat labour · and lernede neuere swymme;

which is in danger?" Which is, trowest þow, of þo two · in temese most in drede?"

202 "He who cannot swim," I said. "He þat can nat swymme," ich seyde · "hit semeþ to alle wittes."

"Ryght so," quaþ þat renke · "reson hit sheweþ,

"So," said he, That he þat knoweþ cleregie · can sonnere a-ryse

98. *here*] hem K; G *om.* *honorably*] S *om.* *to*] & to K. *was*] is M.

99. *þe*] ȝow T; M *om.* *ful*] wel M.

101. *þat is*] E *om.* *luþere*] leþere M; liþere T. *lyghtloker*] *miswritten* lyghlokere P. *lyghtloker were*] were lithliker M. *saued*] sauede P; i-saued MEG; y-sauede I.

103. *þow*] S *om.* *ac*] & E; but T. *seye*] *so* PS; seie K; say E; se IT; si M; wot G.

104. *two* STG] tuo I; to PEMK. *temese*] temse EM; themese IG; tempse T.

105. *nelde*] nedele IE; nedle M.

here noþer] here none IKT; and non M; non of hem S. *heuyour*] heuegour K; heuegur S; heuegere T.

107. *of*] as of I. *neuere swymme*] hit neuere M.

108. *þow*] IEKS *om.* *þo*] þe S. *two* STK] tuo I; to PEM. *most—drede*] is in moste drede I; is most in dred T (*which omit* is *after* Which).

109. *semeþ*] semede I.

110. *so*] S *om.* *þat*] þe S; G *om.*

111. *sonnere*] sennere M; sannur S.

Out of synne, and be saf · þow he synegy ofte, 112 "can a learned man sooner leave sin.
If hym lykeþ and lust · þan eny lewede sothliche.
For yf þe clerk be connynge · and knoweþ what is synne,
And hou contricion with-oute confession · conforteþ þe soule,
As we seen in þe sauter · in psalmes on oþer tweye,
How contricion is comended · for hit caccheþ a-wey synne, 117

Beati quorum remisse sunt iniquitates, [et quorum tecta sunt peccata,] &c.: Ps. xxxi. 1 (Vulg.).

And þat comforteþ ech [a] clerk · and keuereþ fro wanhope, Clerks do not despair.
In whiche flood þe feend · fondeþ man hardest,
þer þe lewede lyeth stille · and lokeþ after lente, 120
And haþ no contricion · ar he come to shryfte;
And þan can he lytel telle · of on oþer of oþer, Unlettered men have to learn as they are taught.
Bote as his loresman lereþ hym · he by-leyueþ and troweþ;
And þat is after person oþer pareshe-preest · and par-aunter boþe beþ lewede 124
For to lere lewede men · as luc bereþ wittnesse;

Si cecus ducit cecum, ambo in foueam cadent: 203 Mat. xv. 14.

For muche woo was hym marked · þat wade shal with þe lewede.

112. *synegy*] synege KG; synwe S; synny E; synne IMT.
113. *lewede*] lewed man M.
116. *As*] And S.
117. *caccheþ* MIKSG] cacchiþ T; chacheþ P; casteþ E; *see* B-text. [*et—peccata*] *from* E.
118. [*a* IKST] PEMG *om.* *keuereþ* EISTG] koeuereþ P; keouereþ K; couereþ him M.
119. *hardest*] fastest M.
120. *lyeth*] liif M; liþ T.
121. G *omits* ll. 121—123. *ar*] er ST; or E; til M. *he*] þei T (*wrongly*).
122. *And*] M *om.* IT *omit last half of the line.*
123. *lereþ hym*] hym lereþ I. *he*] I *om.* T *omits last half of the line.*
124. *person oþer*] his persoun oþer his I. *beþ*] ben M; IT *om.*
125. *For*] IKTG *om.* *lere*] lerne M. *luc*] booke I. *Si*] Dum IMKTG; Cum S. *ducit cecum*] ceco ducatum prestet E. *ambo—cadent*] IKSTG *om.* *cadent*] cadunt EM.
126. *For muche*] Ful mochel I. *woo*] S *om.*

Well for him who can read!

Wel may þe barn blesse · þat hym to book sette;
That lyuynge after lettrure · sauede hym lyf and soule!

Ps. xv. 5 (Vulg.).

Dominus pars hereditatis mee · ys a murye verset, 129
Hit haþ ytake fro tyborne · twenty stronge þeeues;

Reading has saved thieves from Tyburn.

þer letwede þeeues ben lollid vp · loke how þei been sauede!

The penitent thief was saved,

þe þeef þat hadde grace of god · a goode fryday, as þow toldest, 132
Was, for he ȝelde hym creaunt to crist · and hus grace askede.
And god is ay gracious · to alle þat gredeþ to hym,
He wol no wickede man be lost · bote yf he wol hym-self;
Nolo mortem peccatoris, sed ut magis conuertatur & uiuat.

but had a low place in heaven;

And þauh þe þeef hadde heuene · he hadde non hye blisse 136
As seynt Iohan and oþer seyntes · þat han a-serued bettere.

as if I were to sit on the floor of the hall to eat.

Ryght as som man ȝyueþ me mete · and set me a-mydde þe floor,
Ich haue mete more þan ynowe · ac nat with so muche worshup
As þo þat sytten at þe syd-table · oþer with þe souereynes in halle, 140

128. *That*] þe S. *lyuynge*] lyuyng haþ M. *sauede*] saueþ M.

129. *mee*] IM *om.* *verset*] versett P; uers M; vers T.

130. *Hit*] For it T.

131. *lollid*] i-lolled M. *sauede*] i-saued M.

132. *a*] on MT; & (!) E. *as—toldest*] to be i-saued M.

133. *ȝelde* EIKG] ȝeld S; ȝuld P; ȝald T; held M; *see* l. 153. *hym* EIMKSTG] *miswritten* hem P. *and*] as M.

134. *ay*] euer S; G *om.* *alle—hym*] hem þat to him gredeþ M.

135. *He*] And IT. *wol*] wile þat M. *yf*] KSG *om.* *sed—uiuat*] IKSTG *om.*

136. *And*] Ac MKSG; But T. *non hye*] not so hy S.

137. *Iohan*] Ion EM. *a-serued* EMK] a-seruede P; serued ITG; deseruyd S.

138. *man*] KG *om.* *set* MST] sett P; sette IKG; setteþ E. *a-mydde*] inmyddes M.

139. *nat with*] with noȝt E. *so*] IT *om.*

140. *at þe*] ate S; at K. *table*] bord M. *þe*] M *om.* *souereynes*] souereyntees I; souerayn T. *in halle*] S *om.*

Bote, as a beggere, bordles · by my-self vpon þe grounde. 204
So hit ferde by þe felon · þat a goode fryday was saued; So he is not with the apostles,
He [sit] noþer with seynt Iohan · with symon ne with Iude,
Ne with maydenes ne with Martris · ne with mylde wydewes, 144
Bote as a soleyn by hym-self · and serued vp-on þe grounde. but by himself.
For he þat ys ones a þeef · is euere more in daunger,
And as þe lawe lykeþ · to lyue oþer to deye,
De peccato propiciato noli esse sine metu; Ecclus. v. 5.
And for to seruen a seynt · and suche a þeef to-gederes,
Hit were no reson ne ryght · to rewarde boþe [y]liche.
Ryȝt as *traianus*, þe trewe knyght · tulde nat deep in helle, 150 Trajan dwelt not deep in hell;
That oure lord ne hadde hym lyghtliche out · so leyueþ of þe þeef in heuene.
For he ys in the lowest heuene · yf þure byleyue beo trewe, and the thief is lowest in heaven.
And wel loseliche lolleþ þere · as by þe lawe of holy-churche; 153
Et [reddet] unicuique secundum opera sua. Ps. lxi. 13 (Vulg.).
Ac whi þat [one] þeef vp-on þe croys · creaunt hym ȝelde
Raþer þan þat oþer · þauh þou woldest apose,

141. G *omits*. *a*] T *om*. *vpon*] on MITS.
142. *a*] on MT. *saued*] sauede P; i-saued M.
143. *He*] Hit E; A I. [*sit* IMK STG] sitte E; sat P. *seynt*] K *om*. *Iohan*] Ion M, *with symon*] ne with Symond I; ne wiþ symon T. *ne with*] ne wiþ seynt M; ne IT.
144. *Ne*] M *om*.
145. *a*] S *om*. *hym-self*] silf S. *and*] I *om*. *serued*] seruede P; i-serued MI; yseruid T. *vp-on*] on T.
148. *for*] so M. *a* (1)] swich a S.
149. *yliche* IKSEG] ylich T; i-like M; liche P.
150. *Ryȝt*] And right IT. *traianus*] troianus SKTG; troianes IM; þe troianes (!) E. *trewe*] trywe P. *tulde*] *so* PEKSG; tillede M; telde IT.
151. *leyueþ*] leueþ E; leue i MIKS. *of þe*] þat þe K; þat IT; of þat ES; of M. *leyueþ—þeef*] lyueþ þat þef T.
152. *heuene*] of heuene IT. *trewe*] trywe P.
153. *loseliche* K] losliche P; louslich E; loslich S; lifliche I; loueliche MT. *þe*] M *om*. [*reddet* EIKMST] reddit PG. *secundum*] iuxta IMT.
154. *þat*] þe S. [*one* I] o T; PEMSKG *om*. *vp-on*] on MT.

Alle þe clerkes vnder Crist · ne couþe þys asoile; 156
Quare placuit, quia uoluit, etc.

Cf. Ps. cxxxiv. 6 (Vulg.).

205

And so ich seye by þe · þat sekest after weyes,
Inquire not into reasons.
How creatures [han] kynde witt · and clerkes comen to bokes,
And how þe floures in þe fritth · comeþ to feyre hewes;
Was neuere creature vnder cryst · þat knew wel þe bygynnynge 160
Bote kynde, þat contreeuede hit furst · of corteise wil.
Nature taught the turtle and the peacock.
He tauhte þe tortle to trede · þe pokok to cauke,
And *Adam* and eue · and oþer bestes alle
A cantel of kynde witt · here kynde to saue. 164
Of good and of wikke · kynde was þe ferste,
He seih hit and suffrede hit · and seide hit bee sholde;

† Ps. cxlviii. 5 (Vulg.).

Quia ipse dixit, & facta sunt; ipse mandauit, & creata sunt.

Ac whi he wolde þat wikkede were · ich wene and ich leyue,
Was neuere man vpon molde · þat myghte hit aspye.

206

Ac longe-lybbynge men · lyknede mennes lyuynge 169
To bryddes and to bestes · as here bokes telleþ,
þat the fayrest fowel · foulest engendreþ,
The fairest fowl is the feeblest of flight.
And feblest fowel of flicht is · þat [fleeþ] oþere swymmeþ. 172
That is, þe pokok and þe popeiay · with here proude federes

156. *couþe*] shulde M. *þys*] it I.
157. *þe*] þi-self T. *weyes*] þe weyes I; þe wiȝes T.
158. [*han* IKG] hadde T; and PEMS. *and*] and how ITKG.
159. T *omits*. *þe*] þat M (*twice*). *floures*] foules KG.
160. *bygynnynge*] gynnyng T.
161. *hit*] M *om*. *furst*] I *om*. *of*] of his IMT; or S. *corteise* ES] cortese K; curteis MI; korteis G; *miswritten* cortesie P; kynde T.
162. *pokok*] pecok KTG.
163. *oþer—alle*] alle oþere bestes IT.
166. *He*] IKTG *om*. *seih*] si M.
RUBRIC. Dixit et facta sunt IKSTG; M *om*.
167. *were*] S *om*. *and*] as M. *leuye*] leue EIMTG; leoue K; beleue S.
169. *lybbynge*] lyuynge MST. *mennes*] menne K; men IS; manes M; menis T.
171. *fowel*] foule EIMKS; foul TG.
172. *feblest*] þe febleste T. *flicht*] flight I; fliȝt T; fliȝht K; flith M; flyȝt G. [*fleeþ* IM] fleþ ET; fleuþ S; flucht P; fluȝht K; flyyt G.
173. *pokok*] pecok KTG; pookoo P. *with*] withe P.

By-tokneþ ryght riche men · þat regnen here on erþe.
For porsewe a pocok · oþer a pohen to cacche,
And haue hem in haste · at þyn owene wil;
For þei may nat fleo fer · ne ful hye noþer,
For here feþeres þat faire ben · to fle fer hem̄ letteþ.
Hus leedene is vnloueliche · and lothliche hus caroigne;
Ac for hus peyntede [pennes] · þe pocok is honoured
More þan for hus faire flesch · oþer for hus murye note.
Ryght so men reuerenceþ more þe ryche · for hus muche meeble
þan for þe kyn þat he cam of · oþer for hus kynde wittes.
Thus þe poete preiseþ · þe pocok for hus federes,
And þe riche for hus rentes · oþere rychesse in hus [schoppe].
þe larke, þat is a lasse fowel · is loueloker of lydene,
And swettur of sauour · and swyfter of wynge.
To lowe-lyuynge men · þe larke is resembled,
And to leelle and to lyf-holy · þat louen alle treuþe.
þus porfirie and plato · and poetes menye
Lykneþ in here logyk · þe leeste fowel oute.
And wheþer hij be saf oþer nat saf · þe soþe wot nat clergie,

The peacock's tail is in his way.

His voice is harsh.

Rich men are reverenced for their riches, as a peacock is for his tail.

The lark has a sweeter voice than the peacock.

Whether Porphyry and Plato are saved, none knows.

174. *regnen—on*] dwelleþ vpon S.
175. *For*] To E.
176. *hem*] hym S. *in*] in an I. *owene*] I *om.*
177. *þei*] he ne M. *fer* IMSTG] ferre E; feer K; fur P. *ful*] wel MG.
178. *fer* IMSTG] ferre E; feor K; feer P.
179. *leedene*] leqdene KE; ledene M; lethene I; ludene S; leden T. *vnloueliche*] vncomelich S. *lothliche*] lodli M. *hus*] is to S; ys his G.
180. [*pennes* IT] feþeres PEMSKG; *but observe the alliteration; and cf.* B. xii. 247. *is honoured*] *miswritten* his honourede P.
181. *murye*] faire T. *note*] notus S.
182. *hus*] here I; hure S. *muche meeble*] moebles I; meble T.
183. *þe*] eny I; any T. *kyn*] kynde M. *þat*] IT *om.* *for* (2)] fore P.
184. *pocok*] pecok ETG.
185. *þe*] S *om.* *riche*] riche man IT. *for*] fore P. *rentes*] rente MT. *oþere*] or for IST. [*schoppe* EMKSG] shoppe T; schoppes I; sheepe P.
186. *loueloker*] loueliker M; louelokest I. *lydene*] ledene IEMSG; leodene K; ledon T.
187. *wynge*] wynges I.
188. *resembled*] y-semblid S.
189. *And*] Al S. *leelle*] lowe M; leue T. *to* (2)] IMTG *om.*
190. *porfirie*] porphirie IS; purphirie M; porphorie T.
191. *Lykneþ*] Liknede M.
192. *wheþer*] weþer P; wher IKG. *hij*] hy E; þei M; he IKSTG. *saf*] sad M; saufe I; sauf T (*twice*). *nat* (2)] no S.

Ne of sortes, ne of salamon · no scripture can telle
Wheþer þei be in helle oþer in heuene; · oþere aristotle þe wise.

God, who gave the heathen wit to teach us, will perhaps save them."

Ac god is so good, ich hope · sitthe he gaf hem wittes
To wissen ous weyes þer-with · þat wenen to be saued,
And þe bettere for here bookes— · to bidden we been holde 197
þat God for hus grace · gyue here saules reste;
For lettred men were but lewede men ȝut · ne were þe lore of þo clerkes."

208 "Clerks deny salvation to Saracens and Jews," said I.

"Alle þese clerkes," quaþ ich þo · "þat on crist by-leyuen, 200
Seggen in here sarmons · þat noþer sarrasyns ne Iewes
With-oute baptisme, as by here bokes · beeþ nat ysaued."
"*Contra*," quaþ ymaginatif þo · and comsed to loure,

1 Pet. iv. 18.

And seide, "*uix saluabitur iustus in die iudicii; Ergo saluabitur*," quaþ he · and seide no more latyn.

"Trajan was saved, though never baptized," said he.

"Traianus was a trewe knyght · and took neuere crystendome, 205
And he is saf, seith þe bok · and his soule in heuene.

194. *Wheþer*] Weþer P. *þei*] hy S; þat þey I. *helle—heuene*] heucne or in helle SG.

After l. 194 S *alone inserts these five lines*—

Iob was a paynym · & plesede god a prys,
And aristele (*sic*) al-so · sewede þe same secte,
And lad ful holy lyf · aftur lawe of kynde,
Where-fore hit semeþ soþly · by sondry skylus to schewe
þat he is saf as was Iob · I can not seye þe soþe.

195. *sitthe*] þat seþþe I; þat siþþe T. *hem*] him I.

196. *ous*] vs IST; us M. *weyes*] wyes KT. *þer-with*] G *om.* *saued*] sauede P; i-saued MG.

197. *holde*] y-holde IG; i-holde M.

198. *þat*] To G. *for*] of M. *gyue* MS] ȝyue K; ȝeue I; ȝiue T; gyf P (*which is bad grammar*). M *adds*—nota argumentum pro infidelibus.

199. *were* (1)] ne were M; nere E. *but*] as IKTG. *men* (2)] T *om.* ȝut] ȝet T; ȝit I; E *om.* þe] STG *om.* þo] þe IE. *þo clerkes*] bokes KG; here bokis T. *ne—clerkes*] ȝif þat þei ne were M.

200. *þese*] þeese P; þe T. *by-leyuen*] leuen ITG; lyuen S; leoyen K.

201. *in*] witoute (!) I.

202. *beeþ*] ne beþ T.

204. *seide*] spac M.

205. *Traianus*] Troianus MEKSTG; Troianes I. *trewe*] triwe P; *but see* l. 211.

206. *his*] is P.

Ther is follyng of font · and follyng [in] blod-shedynge, "There is also a baptism by *blood*,
And þorw fuyr is follyng · and al is ferm by-leyue; and one by *fire*.

Aduenit ignis diuinus, non comburens sed illuminans.

Ac treuthe, þat trespassede neuere · ne trãnsuersede True men, that never trespass,
aȝens þe lawe, must be approved of by a true God.

Bote lyuede as [his] lawe tauhte · and leyue[þ] þer be no bettere,

And yf þer were, he wolde · and in suche a wil deyeþ—

Wolde neuere trewe god · bote trewe treuthe were a-lowed.

And where hit worth oþer nat worth · þe by-leyue is gret of treuthe,

And hope hongeþ ay þer-on · to haue þat treuthe deserueþ; There is much hope of such.

Quia super pauca fidelis fuisti, supra multa te constituam: † Mat. xxv. 23.

And þat is loue and large huyre · yf the lord be trewe, † God rewards men beyond what
And cortesie more þan couenant was · what so clerkes He promises."
carpen;

For al worth as god wole"— · and þer-with he vanshede. Then he vanished.

Hic explicit passus quintus de dowel.

207. *Ther*] And þer I; Ac þer KG; But þere T. *follyng*] fullyng M (*twice*). *of*] in S. [*in* IMKSETG] of P; *see* B-text.

208. *fuyr*] fire I; fure E; feor M. *follyng*] fullyng EMI; folewyng T. *is*] T *om.* *ferm*] heren (!) E.

209. *transuersede*] trauerssede M; trauersed I. *þe*] his I.

210. *lyuede* IT] leuede MG; leued E; leouede K; lyueþ S; *miswritten* leyuede P; (*but* lyuede = lived *here; cf.* B-text.) [*his* IMKSG] þe ET; P *om.* *leyueþ*] leueþ MIS; leuiþ T; leoueþ K; leuede G. *miswritten* leyue P; leue E.

211, 212. G *omits.*

211. *he*] a I. *wolde*] *so in all but* T; *not as in* B-text; T *has*—wolde leue.

212. *Wolde*] Ne wolde ITK. *a-lowed*] a-lowede P.

213. *oþer*] were it T. *nat worth*] worþe nat I; worth noȝht K. *by-leyue*] bileue EMISG; beleue T.

214. *hongeþ ay*] ay honguþ S; chaungeþ ay K. *deserueþ*] desireþ M. *fidelis fuisti*] fuisti fidelis IMSTG. *supra, &c.*] I *om.*

215. *huyre*] hure I. *yf—trewe*] of þe lord of truþe M.

216. *cortesie*] a cortesie KS; a curtasie M; a curteisie T.

217. *vanshede*] vansched E; vanysshed I; vanesschede MS; vanisshide T; vanyschede K.

COLOPHON. *So* PG; IM *omit.* *Hic*] EKS *om.* *de dowel*] KS *om.*

PASSUS XVI. (DO-WEL VI.)

Incipit passus sextus [*de dowel*].

210 **Then I awoke, and thought much about my dream—**

AND ich awakede þer-with · wittlees ner hande;
As a frek þat feye were · forth gan ich walke
In manere of a mendinaunt · meny ȝeres after.
And meny tyme of þis meteles · muche þouhte ich hadde;

how Fortune failed me,

Furst, how fortune me failede · at my moste neede,
And how elde manacede me · so myghte happe,
Þat, yf ich lyuede longe · leue me by-hynde,
And vanshie alle myne vertues · and myne faire lockes.

and friars would bury no poor,

And how þat freres folweden · folk þat was ryche,
And peuple þat was poure · at lytel prys setten;
Ne corses of poure comune · in here [kirke]-ȝerd moste ligge,

TITLE. *So in* KG; S *omits* passus; M *prefixes* Hic; PE *omit* de dowel; IT *have*—Passus quintus de visione, vt supra.

2. *As*] And as ITG. *feye*] feiȝe M; vey E. *walke*] fare S.

3. *In*] In þe M. *ȝeres*] ȝer ITG; ȝere K. *after*] þeraftir T.

4. *And*] In I. *tyme*] tymes IMT.

5. *moste*] ferste T.

6. *so—happe*] so longe myghte ich happe PE; *but* IMKSG *omit* longe *and* ich, *which seem to have been accidentally caught from* l. 7; T *has*—so miȝty hap he hadde.

7. *lyuede* IMKSTG] lyued E; leuede (*badly*) P. *leue, &c.*] *so in all but* G; to leue G.

8. G *omits*. *vanshie*] *so* PE; vanyssche IKS; vanisshe T; vanessche M. *faire*] fale E. *lockes*] lotus (*perhaps for* locus) I; lotes T.

9. *þat*] M *om*. *folweden*] folewide faste T.

10. *was*] wern T. *setten*] þei setten T.

11. *Ne*] Ne no IT; No M. *corses*] corps IK; coors S; cors TG; bodies M. *of*] of þe M. [*kirke* IT] churche PES; chirche MK. *moste*] mai M.

Bote yf he quike by-quethe hem auht · oþer wolde
helpe aquite here dettes.
And how þis couetise ouer-cam · alle kynne sectes,
As wel lerede as lewede · and lord as þe bonde.
And how þat lewede men ben ladde · bote oure lord
hem helpe,
Thorow vnconnynge curatours · to incurable peynes.
And how [þat] ymaginatif · in dremeles me tolde
Of kynde and of hus connynge · and what connynge
he ȝaf to bestes,
How louynge he [is] to eche lyf · a londe and a
watere;
For alle he wisseþ and ȝeueþ wit · þat walkeþ oþer
crepeþ.
And ich meruailede in herte · how ymagynatif saide,
þat *iustus* by-fore iesu · *in die iudicii*
Non saluabitur · bote *dix* helpe;
And, whanne he hadde seide so · how sodeynlich he
vanshede;
And so ich mused vpon þis matere · þat me luste to
slepe.
Thenne cam conscience · and cleregie after,

and evil priests betrayed men to final doom;

211 and how Imaginative taught me how loving Nature is;

and how he spoke of the difficulty of salvation, and then vanished.

Again I dreamt, and beheld

12. *yf*] IMKSTG *om.* *he quike*] quikke he I; quyk he KTG. *by-quethe*] biquaþ IKG; bequaþ T. *oþer wolde*] to T. *aquite*] quyte ISKTG; to quite ME.

13. *how*] *miswritten* ow P; *see* l. 9. *þis*] þus K; MTG *om.* *sectes*] frekes M.

14. *lerede—lewede*] lewed as lered E. *and*] M *om.*

15. *ben*] S *om.* *ladde*] i-lad M; lad KSTG.

16. G *omits.* *curatours*] creatours K; creatures IS. *incurable*] vncurable EK.

17. [*þat* IKTG] PES *om.* *dremeles*] derkenesse M.

18. *Of*] O S. *of*] o S. *hus*] ST *om.* *connynge* (2)] kynde M. *to*] IKSTG *om.* *bestes*] *miswritten* bestestes P.

19. *How*] And how IT. [*is* IMK STG] was PE; *see next line; and cf.* B-text. *eche*] eche a KS; vch a I; iche a T. *lyf*] man M. *a*] on M (*twice*). *and*] as E.

21. *meruailede*] merueyle I. *in*] in myn M; muche in T.

22, 23. *Written as one line in* M.

22. *in*] be sauf in T.

23. *bote*] but ȝif I; *quod* he þo · but ȝif þat T.

24. *whanne*] wanne P. *seide*] i-seid M; yseid T. *vanshede*] vansched E; vanysschede IK; uanesschede MS; vanisshide T.

25. *vpon*] on M. *me*] i M. *to*] KG *om.*

26. *Thenne*] And þanne IKTG. *after*] þeraftir T.

Conscience and Clergy, who said I should dine with Reason.

And beden me ryse and rome · for with reson sholde ich dyne.
And ich a-ros and romed forth · with reson [we] mette.
We reuerencede reson · and romed forth softeliche,

Then saw I a master, who went with Conscience to dinner.

And mette with a mayster · a man ylike a frere.
Conscience knew hym wel · and welcomede hym fayre;
þei wisshen and wypeden · and wenten to þe dyner.
Pacience as a poure þyng cam · and preide mete for charite,

Patience stood without.

Ylike to peers plouhman · as [he] a palmere were,
Crauede and criede · for cristes loue of heuene,
A meles mete for a poure man · oþer moneye, yf þei hadden.

Conscience called him in.

Conscience knew hym wel · and welcomede hem alle;
212 þei wisshen and wipeden · and wenten and setten.

The master sat in the best place.

þe maister was made to sitte furst · as for þe most worþy;
Reson stod and stihlede · as for stywarde of halle.

Patience and I sat at a side-table.

Pacience and ich weren · yput to be mettes,
And seten by ous selue · at a syd-table.
Cleregie calde after mete · and þenne cam scripture,
And seruede hem þus sone · of sondrie metes menie,

27. *beden*] *so* PEKT; bede M; bed G; bode I. *ryse*] arise KG; risen vp I. *for*] and I. *sholde ich*] we schulde T.

28. *And*] E *om.* *with*] and wiþ IT. [*re* EIMKSTG] ich P.

30. *ylike*] ylyche E; like IK; lik MTG; liche S.

31. *wel*] IKG *om.* *welcomede*] wolcomede P; *but see* l. 37.

32. *wisshen* T] wischen K; weschen IE; wesshen MSG; wosshen P (*but see* l. 38). *wypeden*] wypten M. *þe*] MT *om.*

33. *Pacience—cam*] And þer com pacience as a pore þinge I; And *þere* come pacience & pore þinges T. *for*] *pur* ITG; *par* K.

34. *Ylike*] Iliche E. *plouhman*] þe ploweman I. [*he* IMSTG] PEK *om.* *as—were*] a palmere as he were S.

37, 38. *Compare* ll. 31, 32. *The lines seem* intentionally *repeated; cf.* B-text. *hym*] hem I.

38. *þei*] IG *om.* *wisshen*] *so* PTG; wisschen K; weschen IMES. *wipeden*] wipten M. *and setten*] to sitte G.

39. *to*] ISTG *om.* *as*] & E.

40. *stihlede*] stithlede M; stihlede K; stiȝtlide T; stiehelede S; stiȝlede G. *stywarde*] steward MKT. *halle*] alle K.

41. *weren*] was I; prestly was T. *yput* KG] i-put M; yputt P; putte I; put ST. *mettes*] menes E.

42. *ous*] vs KS; us M; oure IT.

43. *mete*] me (!) I.

44. *hem*] hym S; G *om.*

Of austyn, [of] ambrosie · of alle þe foure euangelies,
Edentes et bibentes que apud illos sunt. Luke x. 7.
Aç of þese metes þis maister · myghte nat wel chewe; The master ate costly dishes,
For-þy he eet mete of more cost · mortrewes and potages.
Of þat þat men myswonne · þei maden hem wel at ese,
Ac here sauce was ouere-soure · and vnsauerliche grounde, but their sauce was over-sour.
In a morter, *post-mortem* · of meny bitere peynes,
Bote yf þei synge for þo soules · and wepe salte teeres;
Uos qui peccata hominum comeditis, nisi pro eis lacrimas effuderitis, ea que in delicijs comeditis, in tormentis [*euometis*].
Thenne reson radde · ryght a-non after,
þat conscience comaunde sholde · to do come scripture, Conscience bade Scripture bring bread for Patience and me.
And brynge bred for pacience · bytynde apartie,
And to me þat was hus mette þo · and oþer mete boþe.
He sette a soure loof · and seide, "*agite penitentiam*," Mat. iii. 2.
And sitthe [he] drow ous drynke · *diu-perseuerans*, 213
"As longe," quaþ he, "as þe lyf · and þe licame may dure." Cf. Mat. x. 22.
"This is a semeliche seruice!" · seide pacience.

45. *Of*] And T. [*of* EIKSG] and of M; and PT. *ambrosie*] Ambrosi K; Ambrose IMTG. *of*] and of M. *þe*] K *om.* *euangelies*] euangelistes ME. *illos*] eos TG.

46. *þese*] þees P. *þese metes*] þis mete IKT. *þis*] þe MS; þat IT.

47. *For-þy*] For-whi M. *eet*] ete IK; eyt S. *he eet*] ete he I; et he T. *mete*] metes M.

48. *þat þat*] þat IKTG. *wel—ese*] at ese wel S.

49. *vnsauerliche*] *so* PM; vnsauerly KG; vnsauerilich E; vnsauorely I; vnsauo*ur*ly T; ouersau*er*ly S. *grounde*] y-grounde IS; i-grounde M; ygrounden T.

50. *morter*] mortel E. *post-mortem*] þat mortem hi3t T.

51. *þe*] þe IMKSTG. [*euometis* ST] euom*etis* M; euo*metis* IK; *miswritten* en emergitis P; emergitis E.

52. *reson*] was resoun I; as resoun T. *ryght anon*] a-non ry3te SIT.

53. *come*] K *om.*

54. *bytynde*] *so* PK; bitynde M; bitande T; bytynge IES. *apartie*] *so* PIMKT; aparty E; a party SG.

55. *And*] Þat E (*wrongly*). *mette*] *so in all but* T; mete T.

56. *sette*] sette forþ M.

57. [*he* IMKSTG] PE *om.*; *cf.* B-text. *ous*] M *om.* *diu*] dia I; dya T.

58. *þe* (1)] þi M; þy E; IKG *om.* *þe lyf*] I may lyue T. *þe* (2)] þi M; þy E; IKSTG *om.*

59. *pacience*] pacience þanne M.

Contrition brought forward a pittance of Ps. xxxi. 6.

Thenne cam contrition · þat hadde coked for hem alle,
And brouhte forþ a pitaunce · was *pro-hac-orabit-omnis-sanctus-in-tempore-oportuno.* 61
Conscience confortede ous · boþe cleregie and scripture,

Ps. l. 19.

And seide, "*cor contritum & humiliatum, deus, non despicies.*"
Pacience was wel apaied · of þis propre seruyse,

I mourned to see the doctor drink so much wine.

And mad murye with þis mete; · ac ich mournede euere,
For a doctor at þe heye deys · drank wyn faste—. 65

Isa. v. 22.

Ue uobis qui potentes estis ad bibendum uinum—

He ate all sorts of good dishes.

And ete meny sondry metes · mortrews and poddynges,
Braun and blod of þe goos · bacon and colhoppes.

214

Then seide ich to my-self · þat pacience hit hurde, 68

"Only 3 days ago he preached about St Paul's sufferings," said I.

"3ut is nat þre daies don · þat þis doctor prechede
At seint paules by-for þe peuple · what penaunce þei suffreden,
Alle þat coueitede to come · to heuene hye ioye;
And how þat paul þe apostle · what penaunce he þolede
For oure lordes loue · as holy lettrure telleþ; 73

2 Cor. xi. 27.

In fame et frigore, &c.

"They never preach from St Paul's words in 2 Cor. xi. 26.

Ac me wondreþ in my witt · whi þat thei ne preche,
As paul the apostel prechede · to þe peuple ofte,
Periculum in falsis fratribus!

60. *þat*] M *om.* *coked*] i-coked M.
61. *orabit*] orabit ad te M. *in—oportuno*] M *om.*
62. *Conscience*] Thanne conscience IKTG. *confortede*] confortuþ S. *boþe*] & boþe S. *seide* MIKSTG] *mis-written* seiden PE. *despicies*] despiciet M.
64. *mad*] made him M; made hym E. *murye*] murþe K. *þis*] his M.
65. *at—deys*] þat at þe heiȝe deis sat T. *dranḱ*] þat dronk M.
OBS. *Here* K *ends.*
66. *ete*] eet MG; sette T.
67. *þe goos*] gees IT. *bacon and*] baken in M. *colhoppes*] *so* PEM; coloppes I; colloppus S; colopis T.
68. *my*] me M. *þat pacience*] so pacient I; so pacience T.
69. *3ut*] Hit MG; It IT. *is*] nys M. *don*] gon M. *þis* IMESTG] *mis-written* þees P. *þat—doctor*] þis doctour þat he ISG; þis doctour þat he ne T.
70. *seint*] IT *om.* *by-for*] to M. *what*] þat M.
71. *coueitede*] coueiten MS; coueyte IT. *heuene hye*] heuene heie E; heuene-riche M; heuene kynne SG; eny kyn IT.
72. *þat*] M *om.*
73. *holy*] ES *om.* *lettrure*] lettre M; wryt I; scripture E.
75. *in*] est in ITG. *falsis fratribus*] *fratribus* filiis S.

Holy writ bit men be war · and wisliche hem kepe,
That no fals frere · þorw flatrynge hem by-gyle;
Ac me is loþ, þow ich latyn knowe · to lacky eny secte,
For alle we ben brethren · þauh we be diuersliche cloþede.
Ac ich wiste neuere freek · þat frere is ycalled
Of þe fyue mendynauns · and made eny sarmon,
That took þis for [his] teme · and told hit with-oute glose.
Thei prechen þat penaunce · is profitable for þe soule,
And what meschief & what mal ese · crist for man þolede.
Ac this doctor and diuinour · and decretistre of canon,
And al-so a gnedy gloton · with to grete chekes,
Hath no pite on vs poure · he perfourneþ vuele;
þat he precheþ he proueþ nat" · to pacience ich tolde,
And wisshede witerliche · with a wil ful egre,
þat in the mawe of that maister · alle þo metes were,
Disches and dobeleres · with alle þe deyntes after!
"Ich shal Iangly to þys Iordan · with hus Iuste wombe,

† But, though I know Latin, I will not blame a brother.

I never heard a friar preach from *that* text!

This glutton pities not us poor."

215 I wished all the good dishes had been in his maw together!

76. *bit*] bid S. *hem*] T *om.*

78. *is*] þenkeþ IT. *latyn*] M *om.* *knowe*] knewe M. *latyn knowe*] know latyn E. *to lacky*] to lacken IG; to lacke M; to lakkyn T; S *om.* *secte*] man M.

79. *brethren*] breythrene P; breþeren IET; breþerne M. *ben brethren*] breþeren ben E. *diuersliche*] diuerse ITG; dyuerse M. *be diuersliche*] dyuerslich be E. *cloþede*] ycloþed M.

OBS. *A leaf lost in* S; *from* l. 80 *to* l. 156.

80. *frere*] a frere M. *ycalled*] ycallede P; called IM; cald T. *In margin of* M—contra *fratres*.

81. *fyue*] foure M. *mendynauns*] meyndenauns M; mendenauntis I. *and*] and he M; þat G. *and—sarmon*] IT *om.*

82. *for*] fore P. [*his* IM] here PETG. *glose*] a glose IT.

83. *for*] to ITKG.

84. *what* (1)] þat M. *what* (2)] IMTG *om.*

85. *Ac*] & E. *this*] *miswritten* thes P. *diuinour*] diuinour *quod* i IT. *decretistre* IMG] decretestre P; discrefistere (*sic*) E; decristre (*sic*) T.

86. *gnedy*] gredy ITG. *to*] tuo I; two T.

87. *vuele*] euele IMT.

88. G *omits.* *he*] and I. *nat*] it nouȝt T. *to pacience*] compacience (!) I. *ich*] he M.

89. *wisshede*] whisshede P; wysched E; wijsschede M. *a*] IT *om.*

90. *the*] þat I. *that*] þe TG. *þo*] þe MG.

91. *Disches*] Boþe · disches ITG. *dobeleres*] dobelers EIM. *with*] wit P; & G. *deyntes*] denteþes M.

92. *Iangly*] iangle IMTG. *þys*] þat M. *Iordan*] yurdan I; iurdan T. *with*] wit P. *Iuste*] iusty T.

And a-pose hym [what] penaunce is · and purgatorie on erthe,

'And whi he lyueþ nat as he lereþ!" · "let be," quaþ pacience,

Patience said the doctor would do penance soon,

And seide, "þow shalt seo þus sone · whan he may na more,

He shal haue a penaunce in hus paunche · and puffe at eche worde;

Thenne shulleþ his gottes godelen · and [he] by-gynne to galpe.

Now he hath dronke so depe · he wol deuiny sone,

and prove that such dishes are a penitent's food.

And preouen it by here apocalips · and by þe passion of seint aueray,

þat noþer bacon ne braun · blammanger ne mortreuus

Ys noþer fissh ne flessh · bote fode for penauntes;

And take witnesse of þe trinite · and take his felawe to wittnesse,

What he fond in a forel · of a freres lyuynge;

216 "He will begin and talk lies. Then ask him about Do-well."

And bote þe ferste leef be lesynge · leyf me neuere after!

And þenne is tyme to talke · and to apose this doctour

Of dowel and of dobet · and yf dobet do eny penaunce."

Ich sat stille as pacience wolde · and thus sone þis doctour,

93. *hym*] G *om.* [*what* IMETG] wich P.

95. *seo*] i-seo M; se IETG. *þus*] now T.

96. G *omits.* *Thenne*] And þan I. *paunche*] foule panche I. *eche*] ech a I; iche a T.

97. *shulleþ*] schulle M; schul E; schal IG; shal T. *his*] is P. *gottes*] guttes MT. *godelen*] goþelen EI. *his—godelen*] gothelen his gottes I; guldelen (*sic*) his guttes T. [*he* EM] PIT *om.* *by-gynne*] gynne IT; gonne E.

98. *Now*] For now T; & whenne G. *dronke*] ydronke E; i-dronke M. *so*] þus M; G *om.* *he*] a I; & T. *deuiny*] dyuyne IMEG; deuyne T.

99. *preouen*] prouep E. *it*] M *om.* *here*] þe M. *apocalips*] pocalips I; pokalipsis T. *by* (2)] IT *om.* *aueray*] *so* PEG; auerey MI; aueroy T.

100. *blammanger*] ne blammanger I; blanmanger M; blamyngere E. *mortreuus*] mortreus MT; mortrewes EG; mortrelx I.

101. *Ys*] Nys M. *penauntes*] penaunce EG.

102. *take* (1)] takeþ E. *of*] at IET. *þe*] a I. *his*] is P. *take—wittnesse*] of his felawe boþe M.

103. *he*] a I. *lyuynge*] leuyng MT.

104. *bote*] but ȝif T. *lesynge*] lesynges IT. *leef*] word G. *leyf*] lef M; leue IETG.

105. *talke*] *so* PMTG; take IE (*as in* B-text).

106. *of*] MG *om.* *do*] be M. *eny*] my I.

As rody as a rose · roddede hus chekes,
Kowede and carpede · and conscience hym herde,
And tolde of a trinite · and to-warde me he lokede—
"What is dowel, sire doctour?" quaþ ich · "is dobet eny penaunce?"
"Dowel?" quaþ þis doctour · and he drank after,
"Do þy neyhebore non harme · ne [þy]-selue noþer,
þanne dost þow wel and wisliche · ich, dar hit wel a-vouwe."
"Certes, sire," þanne seide ich · "hit semeþ nat here,
In þat ȝe parteþ nat with ous poure · þat ȝe passeþ dowel,
Noþer louyeþ as ȝe lereþ · as oure lorde wolde,
Et uisitavit & fecit redemptionem plebis sue israel.
And ȝe fare þus with ȝoure sike freres · ferly me þynkeþ,
Bote dowel endite ȝow · *in die iudicii.*"
Thenne conscience ful curteisliche · a contenaunce he made,
And preynte vpon pacience · to preye me be stille,
And seide hym-self, "syre doctour · by so hit be ȝoure wil,
What is dowel and dobet? · ȝe diuynours knoweþ."
"Ich haue seide," seide þe seg · "y can seye no better,

Soon the doctor coughed and talked.
"Is Do-bet penance?" said I.
"Do-well," said he, and drank, "is to do no harm."
"Then you do not well," I said, "for you have given us nothing."
† Luke i. 68.
217
Then Conscience asked him the same question.

108. *roddede*] ruddede M; roded were E; ruddite T.
109. *Kowede*] Kowhede E; Cowhede I; Coughide T; He cowhede M.
110. *tolde*] tolde him ITG. *a*] þe T. *he*] ET *om.*
111. *dobet* EM] dobest PITG; *but see* l. 106.
112. *drank*] dronk anon M.
113. *þy*] þyn IE. [*þy* IEG] þi MT; þe P.
114. G *omits.* *þanne*] And þanne IT. *dost þow*] dostow I.
115. *nat*] nouþe I (*wrongly*).
116. *ous*] þe T.
117. *Noþer*] Ne IT. *louyeþ*] louyeth nat I; lyueþ nouȝt T; luyeþ M; lyuyeþ G. *plebis, &c.*] IMTG *om.*
118. *And*] And ȝit T. *ferly*] wonder MG.
119. *Bote dowel*] þat dowel wol I. *endite* IMT] endit E; endyty P (*but it is not the infinitive here*).
120. G *omits* ll. 120—128. *he*] MT *om.*
121. *preynte*] prengte M. *vpon*] vp I. *pacience*] pacient E. *be*] to be MT.
122. *by*] be IT; M *om.* *by so*] ȝif E.
124. *Ich haue*] þat haue i T. *seide* (1)] i-seid M; y-seide I. *seide* (2)] quoþ I; E *om.* *þe seg*] þat segge IT; þe doctor M. *seye*] se T.

"Do-well," said he, "obeys; Do-bet teaches; Do-best both teaches and obeys."

Bote do as doctours telleþ · for dowel ich hit holde;
Þat traueileþ to teche oþere · for dobet ich it holde;
And he þat doþ as he techeþ · ich halde hit for a dobest;

Mat. v. 19. *Qui facit et docuerit, magnus uocabitur.*"

"Now þow, cleregie," quaþ conscience · "carpe what is dowel." 128

† Clergy declines to express his opinion.

"Haue [me] excused," quaþ cleregie · "by crist, bote in scole,
Shal no such motif be meued · for me, bote þere,

"Piers the Ploughman says all is worthless except love."

For peers loue þe plouhman · þat enpugnede ones
Alle kyne konnynges · and alle kyne craftes, 132
Saue loue and leaute · and louhnesse of herte,
And no tixt takeþ · to preoue þis for trewe

Mat. xxii. 37, 39. Ps. xiv. 1 (Vulg.).

Bote *dilige deum & proximum* · and *Domine, quis habitabit in tabernaculo, &c.;*
And preoueþ by pure skyle · in*par*fit alle þynges, 136

† Mark x. 18. *Nemo bonus,*
Bote leel loue and treuthe · þat loþ is to be yfounde."

218 Cf. Mat. x. 22.

Quaþ peers þe plouhman · "*pacientes uincunt.*
By-for p*er*petual pees · ich shal preoue þat ich seide,

Piers the Plowman said, "Learn, teach, and love.

And a-vowe by-for God · and for-sake hit neuere, 140
That *disce, doce, dilige* · *deum* and thyn enemye;

125. *Bote*] Forte M. *telleþ*] techeþ IT.

126. *for—holde*] I holde it for a dobette IT. *it holde*] holde hit M.

127. *for*] E *om.* *a dobest*] *so* PE; þe beste IMT. *magnus*] hic magn*us* E.

129. [*me* EIMTG] P *om.*

130. *motif*] motyng M. *meued* ITG] meuet M; meeuede P. *bote*] T *om.* *þere*] oþere (*wrongly*) I.

131. *For*] But for T. *plouhman*] palmare I; palm*er*e T. *þat*] ȝent þat (*sic*) I; ȝet þat pers T. *enpugnede*] enpyngned E; enpungnede M; inpugned ITG. (N.B. IT *are corrupt here.*)

133. *louhnesse*] lownesse EIMTG.

134. *takeþ*] ne takeþ IT; to take M.

135. *proximum*] patrem I; proximum tuum T. *and*] et I. *in tabernaculo*] in tabernaculo tuo M; I *om.*

136. *inparfit*] vnpar*fit* EG.

137. *yfounde*] founde EITG; founden M.

138. *uincunt*] omnia vincunt T.

139. *preoue*] preue ITG; p*r*oue E; p*r*ouen M; *badly spelt* preeouye P; *see* l. 136.

140. *a-vowe*] afowe E.

141, 142. *Made into* one *line in* IT (*badly*); *for* l. 142, I *has*—helpe emfothe (*sic*) þy myght; T *has*—helpe hi*m* for þi miȝt. *emforth*] euenforþ E; euene-forþ M. *myȝt* E] myȝte G; miȝt T; myght I; myth M; myȝth P.

Hertely þou hym helpe · emforth þy myȝt,
Cast [hote] coles on hus hefde · of alle kynde speche,
Fonde þorgh wit and with worde · hus loue for to wynne,
And ȝif hym eft and eft · euere at hus neede;
Conforte hym with þy catel · and with þy kynde speche,
And leye on hym þus with loue · tyl he lauhe on þe;
And bote [he] bowe for þis betynge · blynd mote [he] worthe!"

Cast [hot] coals upon thine enemy's head."

And whanne he hadde worded þus · wiste no man after,
Where peers plouhman by-cam · so priueliche he wente.
And reson ran after · [and] ryght with him ȝeode;
Saue conscience and cleregie · ich couþe no mo aspye.
And pacience propreliche spak · tho peers was thus passed,

† When Piers the Plowman had thus said, he suddenly vanished.

"That loueþ lelly," quaþ he · "bote lytel þyng coueyteþ.
Ich wolde, and ich wil hadde · wynnen al Fraunce
With-oute bruting of burnes · oþer eny blod-sheding;
Ich take wittnesse," quaþ he · "at holy writ a partie;
Pacientes uincunt.

219

† "I could conquer all France if I wished," said Patience.

For, by hym þat me made! · myȝte neuere pouerte,
Miseise, ne myschief · ne man with hus tonge
Tene þe eny tyme · and þow take pacience,

"No evil can harm him who has Patience,

142. *See note on last page.*
143. [*hote* EIMTG] out P. *hefde*] heued I; hed MT. *kynde*] kyne E; kyn I.
144. *þorgh*] wiþ þi M. *with*] wiþ þi M; IG *om.* *for to*] forte M; to I.
145. G *omits.* *And*] I *om.* *ȝif*] ȝef M. *eft—eft*] oft & eft E.
146. *Conforte* EG] Comforte IMT; Conforty P (*but it is the imperative mood*).
147. *leye*] lauhe M. *lauhe*] lawhe I; lawȝen (*sic*) E; leiȝe (*wrongly*) T.
148. [*he* IMTG] ȝe PM. *bowe*] knowe þe I; lauȝe on þe T. *betynge*] lechyng T. *mote*] bot (!) E. [*he* IT] ich PE; y G; i M. *See* B-text.
149. *whanne*] wanne P. *worded*] y-worded IM; sede E. *wiste* IEMTG] *miswritten* weste P.
150. *plouhman*] þe plouhman MIT.
151. *after*] þen after E. [*and* IMTG] PE *om.*
153. *And*] Saue IT. *propreliche*] preueili M. *tho*] whanne T. *passed*] y-passed IT.
154. G *omits.*
155. *hadde*] adde P. *wynnen*] to wynnen I.
156. *bruting*] brutynge E; brutteynge I; britnyng T; brennyng MG. *burnes*] bernes MG; buyren I; burn T.
157. OBS. *Here* S *begins again.* *at*] of I; on T.
159. *Miseise*] Misseiȝe M; Myseyse me (!) I. *myschief*] mischeue M.
160. *pacience*] penaunce M.

† and continually bears it about with him.

And bere hit in þy bosom · abowte wher þou wendest,
[In þe corner of a cart-whel · wiþ a crowe croune.]
Shal neuere burne be abaisshed · þat hath þis a-boute,
Neiþer hete ne hail · ne helle pouke hym greue,
Neiþer fuyr, noþer flod · ne be a-fered of enemye;

1 John iv. 18.

Caritas expellit omnem timorem;

Ther nis wyght in þis worlde · þat wolde þe lette
To haue alle londes at þy lykyng · & þe here lord make,

Charity will make thee master of all men."

And Maister of alle here meeble · and of here moneye after,
The kynge and alle þe comune · and cleregie to þe aloute
As for here lorde and ledere · and lyuen as þou techest."

220 "Nonsense," said the doctor;

"This is a [*dido,*]" quaþ þis doctour · "a disours tale!
Al þe witt of þis worlde · ne wyghte mennes strengthe

"no one can make peace between the pope and his enemies."

Can nat performen a pees · of þe pope and of hus enemys
Profitable for boþe parties"— · and put þe bord fram hym,
And tok conscience and cleregie · to counsel, as hit were.

221 Conscience bids farewell to all,

Ac ich took kepe how conscience · [congede] sone þis doctour,

161. G *omits.* *wher*] wer P.

162. *From* I; *also in* METS; PG *omit.* *a*] o T. *croune*] *miswritten* crouns E. *In the margin of* M—experimentum.

163. *burne*] buyren I; barn MG. *hath þis*] bereþ hit M. *a-boute*] abouten hym I; aboute hym STG.

164. *Neiþer*] Ne neuere IT; Noþer M. *hail*] haþel T; chele G.

165. *noþer*] ne I. *afered*] a-ferd STG; afere E.

166. *Ther nis*] Ne þer is I; Ne þere nis T. *wyght*] wiȝ T; wit G.

168. *alle*] SG *om.* *meeble*] moebles I. *moneye*] maynye I.

169. *comune*] comunes E. *aloute*] loute EIST.

170. *ledere*] here ledere IT; heore ledere M. *lyuen*] þow lyue M.

171. G *omits.* *a*] T *om.* [*dido* MT] dydo S; dico P; dede (*sic*) I; *see* B-text. *a dido*] abido (*sic*) E.

172. *þe*] þis I. *þis*] al þis T; þe S. *worlde*] *written* wordle P. *ne*] and IT. *wyghte*] wyȝty E.

173. *and of*] ne for E; and IMST; ne of G.

174. *fram*] fro EIMG; from T.

175. *conscience—cleregie*] clergye & conscience ISTG.

176. *ich—conscience*] conscience I toke kepe ISTG. [*congede* SG] conged T; conueide P; coueyted EIM (*all evidently corruptions of* congeide *or* congede).

And sitthe he seide to cleregie · so þat ich hit herde,
"By cryst," quaþ conscience · "cleregie, ich wol nat lye,
Me were leuere, by oure lorde · and ich lyuye sholde,
'Haue pacience *par*fitliche · þan half þy pack of bokes!
Lettrure and longe studie · letteþ ful menye,
That thei knoweþ nat," quaþ Conscience · "what is kynde pacience.
For-thi," quaþ conscience · "christ ich þe by-teche,
With pacience wol ich passe · *par*fitnesse to fynde."
Thus þei wente forþ here way · with gret wil ich folewede.
Thenne hadde pacience, as pilgrimes hauen · in here poke vitailes,
Sobrete and symple-speche · and soþfast-by-leyue,
To comforty hym and conscience · yf þei come in place
Ther vnkyndnesse and couetyse ys · hongry contreis boþe.
And as þei wente by þe wey · of dowel gan þei carpe;
Thei mette with a mynstral · as me þo þouhte.
Pacience a-posed hym · and preide he sholde telle
What craft þat he couþe · and cortesly he seide,
"Ich am a Mynstral," quaþ þis man · "my name is *activa uita*,
Peers prentys þe plouhman · alle peuple to comfortye."

and says he prefers Patience to half Clergy's books.

Conscience and Patience depart.

222 Conscience and Patience set out as pilgrims.

Soon they meet with a minstrel.

Patience asks him who he is.

"I am *Activa-vita*," he says.

179. *Here* F *begins again.* *lyuye*] lyue EMFSTG; leue I.
180. *bokes* EIMG] bokis T; bok*us* S; book*us* F; boukes P.
181. *Lettrure*] For lettrure F. *studie*] studyng E.
182. *thei*] hi S. *knoweþ*] ken F.
183. *For-thi*] For-whi M; And forþi F. *þe*] ȝou E.
184. *With*] Whit P; For *with* F.
185. *Thus—forþ*] And wenten forþ in I; And wenten forþ on T. *wil*] witt E; wil þan F.
186. *hauen*] han IMFTG. *here*] *so in* PEIFSTG; his M.
187. *Sobrete*] Sobernesse G; Sobrius (*sic*) E.
188. *comforty*] comforte IMFS; confort E; counforte T.
189. *Ther*] Where S. *ys*] ben E; I *om.* *hongry contreis*] & hongri contre S.
190. *wente*] wende E. *gan*] gunne M; gonne T. *þei* (2)] y G.
191. *Thei*] & F.
192. *a-posed*] opposed I (*wrongly*). *telle*] him telle G.
194. *þis*] *miswritten* þees P. *is*] S *om.* *activa uita*] vita actiua F.
195. *þe*] M *om.* *alle*] þe F. *comfortye*] comforte IMFS; confort E; counforte T.

† "What sort of minstrelsy do you use?"

"What manere mynstralcie · my dere frend," quaþ conscience,
"Hast þow vsed oþer haunted · al þy lyf-tyme?"
"Mynstralcie can ich nat muche · bote make men murye,
As a waffrer with waffres · and welcome godes gistes.
Of my labour þei lauhe · þe lasse and þe more.
The poure and þe riche · y plese and payn fynde,
And fewe robis ich fonge · oþer forrede gounes.
Wolde ich lye and do men lauhe · þenne lacchen ich sholde
Mantels oþer moneye · a-mong lordes Minstrales.

"I am a wafer-seller, and know but little of minstrelsy.

Because I can play neither on tabour, trump, nor pipe,

Ich can nat tabre ne trompe · ne telle faire gestes,
Farten, ne fiþelen · at festes, ne harpen,
Iapen ne Iogelen · ne gentelliche pipe,
Noþer sailen ne sautrien · ne singe with þe giterne.

I get no gifts, save that the parish prays for me on Sunday.

Ich haue none gode gyftes · of these grete lordes
For no bred þat ich by-trauaile · to bryng by-fore lordes.
Ne were hit þat þe parishe · prayeþ for me on sone-dayes,

196. *manere*] maner of F.

197. *Hast þow*] Hastow F; Hast M. *vsed—haunted*] i-vsed and i-haunted M.

198. *can ich*] i can M. *men*] men be F.

199. *waffrer*] wafrer IF; wawfrere E; wafer (*sic*) S. *waffres*] wafres I; wafers S; her wafres F. *and*] ay I. *welcome*] wolcome P. *godes*] G *om.* *gistes* EMFS] gustes P; gestes I; gestis T.

200. *lauhe*] lauȝed E. *lasse—more*] more & þe lasse S.

201. *plese*] plesed E.

202. *oþer*] & S.

203. *lacchen*] cacchen M.

204. *Mantels*] Mantel E; Or mantel I; Oþer mantel T; Mantellus menyuer F. *lordes*] oþer T.

205. *nat*] noþer M. *faire*] tidy F.

206. G *omits.* *Farten*] Faiten I. *fiþelen* IST] fiþele MF; fiþelyn P. *ne* (2)] noþur F.

207. *Iogelen* T] Iogelyn P; Iogolen E; iogelé IF; Iogole S; ianglen MG.

208. *Noþer*] Ne neyþer I; Ne noþer T. *sautrien*] sauteryen I; sauterien T; sautren M.

209. *gode*] goude P; goud S. *gyftes*] gestes EMG.

210. SG *omit.* *by-trauaile*] by-trauaily P; bi-trauaile M; bytraueyle E; bitrauailed F; trauaile I; betrauaille ferst T. *to bryng*] ferst I. *to—lordes*] ne bringe hem bifore F.

211. G *omits.* *Ne were*] Nere I. *parishe*] I] parissh T; paresche E; parshe P; parsche M; parisch-preest FS. *on*] on þe E; a F; M *om.* *sone-dayes*] sone-days P; sonday F.

Ich am sory þat ich sew oþer sette · bote for my-self one.
Ac þe prest and oþer peuple · prayeþ for peers plouh-
mán, 213
And for me, actyf, hus man · þat ydelnesse hate. I hate idleness.
For lordes and lorelles · luthere and goode,
Fro myhel-masse to myhel-masse · ich fynde mete and
drynke. 216
Ich fynde payn for þe pope · and praye hym ich wolde I find bread for the pope himself.
þat pestilences to pees · and to *parfit* loue turne.
For founde ich þat hus blessing · and hus bulle myghte If he would but send me a cure
Letten þis luþer eir · and lechen þe syke— 220 for the pestilence,
As þe booke bereþ wittnesse · þat he bere myghte
In hus mouth mercy · and amende vs alle,
Super egros munus imponent, & bene se habe- Mark xvi. 18.
bunt—
Thenne wolde ich bee busy · and buxum to helpe then would I be busy indeed.
Eche kynne creature · þat on cryst by-leyueþ. 224
For sutthe he haþ the power · þat seynt peter hadde, 224
He haþ pureliche þe pot · with þe same salue; Surely the pope has the pot with the salve!
Argentum & aurum non est michi; quod autem Acts iii. 6.
habeo, hoc tibi do, &c.

212. G *omits.* *sew* MS] sewe P; sowe IT; se E. *þat—sew*] to sowe F. *sette*] sitte E (*wrongly*). *one*] alone S; I *om.*

213. *oþer*] þe oþer E. *prayeþ*] preche I. *peers*] peres þe I; piers þe T.

214. *for*] eke for F. *hate*] hatuþ S.

215. *For*] IT *om.* *lorelles*] for lorelles E; lorels als F. *luthere*] þe liþur F; þe luþere I; & luþere T; lyþere M. *goode* EMTG] þe goode IF; goude PS.

216. *myhel*] *so* PM; mychel E; mykel F; mighel T; myȝhel SG; muchel I (*twice*). *to—masse*] F *om.*

218. *pestilences*] pestilens S. *to* (2)] IT *om.* *parfit*] S *om.*

219. *founde ich*] i fond M (*wrongly*).

220. *luþer*] lyþere IFSG. *eir*] ȝer M; folc I (*wrongly*); T *om.* *lechen* EMG] lechin P; leche IFS; liþe T.

221. *þe*] F *om.* *booke*] bookes PEG; bokes M; bookus F; *but* I *has* booke; T *has* book; S *has* boke; *the phrase is a common one.* *bereþ*] bere S.

222. *imponent*] ponebant IT. *se*] MISFGT *om.*

223. *Thenne*] And þanne IT. *bee busy*] be-sych (!) S. *to*] for to F.

224. *Eche*] Ech a IFS. *by-leyueþ*] leueth IST.

225. *sutthe*] seþþe MI; sith F; suþ E; siþþe TG. *the*] E *om.* *seynt*] IT *om.* *hadde*] hadde þanne I.

226. *pureliche—salue*] þe potte with þe salue · boþe tuo togedre I; þe pot with þe salue T (*which runs* ll. 225, 226 *into one*). *quod—do*] S *om.*

Perhaps men are not worthy!

Ac yf myghte of miracle hym faile · hit is for men beep nat worthi
For to haue þe grace of god · and no gult in þe pope.

No blessing can come while pride remains.

For may no blessynge do vs bote · bote yf we wol amende,
Ne mannes preier make pees · among cristine peuple,
Til prude be pureliche for-do · and þat þorw payn defaute;

(239) Cf. Ezek. xvi. 49.

Ex habundantia panis et uini turpissimum peccatum aduenit.

The sin of Sodom was due to excess of food."

Pure plente of payn · þe peuple of Sodomye,
"And reste and riche metes · rybaudes hem made."
"Pees!" quaþ pacience · "ich praye þe, syre actyf!
For þauh neuere payn ne plouh · ne potage were,
Prude wolde putte hym-self forþ · þauh no plouh erye.

"I will provide for all people," said Patience.

Hit am ich þat fynde alle folke · and fram hunger saue,
Thorgh þe heye helpe of hym · þat me hyder sente,
And seide, 'lo, here lyf-lode ynowe' · yf oure by-leyue be trewe.

"All living things have food given them.

For lent was þer neuere lyf · bote lyflode were yshape,
Wher-of opere wherfore · and wher-with to lyuen;
The worme þat woneþ vnder erthe · and in water fisshes,
The crykett by kynde of fur · and corlew by the wynde,

227. *Ac*] F *om.* *yf*] M *om.* *myghte*] I mi3te T. *faile*] faileþ M. *hit*] M *om.* *for*] for þat F. *beeþ*] beþ IT; ben M; buþ S; be F; þat beþ E. *worthi*] worþ T.

228. *For*] IT *om.* *god*] *miswritten* good P. *gult*] gold T. *in*] of IT.

229. *yf*] M *om.* *we*] S *om.*

230. *preier* F] preiere ME; preyer I; prayer S; *preyour* T; *badly spelt* preir P. *cristine*] þe cristine F.

231. *prude*] *so* PE; pride MIFT. *Ex*] IT *om.*

232. *Pure*] For pure F; For þe I; T *om.*

233. *And*] Þurw F. *hem*] hym S; were F.

234. *Pees*] Pees now F. *þe*] 3ow IFT.

235. *neuere*] noþer F. *ne* (2)] pese ne F.

236. *Prude*] *so* PE; Pruyde T; Pride MIF. *self*] E *om.* *þauh*] & þow F. *no plouh*] þe plow were S (*absurdly*). *plouh*] plowman E.

238. *heye*] IT *om.* *sente*] sende M.

240, 241. S *transposes these two lines.*

240. *was—neuere*] neuer was here I. *was þer*] waster F. *bote*] but 3if M. *yshape*] hym shape S; shame (!) T.

241. *opere*] and MFS. *and*] or M.

243. *The*] A F. *by* (1)] by þe FS. *of*] E *om.* *fur*] þe fyre I; þe fuyr T; feor M. *and*] E *om.* *corlew*] þe curlu M; þe corlu S · þe curlew T.

Bestes by gras & by greyn · and by grene rotes.
In menynge þat alle men · myghte þe same
Lyuen þorgh leell by-leyue · as oure lord wittnesseþ,
· *Quodcunque petieritis patrem in nomine meo,* John xiv, 13.
· *dabitur enim uobis; & alibi:*
· *Non in solo pane uiuit homo, sed de omni uerbo,* Mat. iv. 4.
· *quod procedit de ore dei.*"
"Hast þow ay," quaþ actyf · "suche mete with þe?"
"3e," quaþ Pacience, and hente · out of hus poke
A pece of þe pater-noster · and profrede to vs alle.
And ich lustnede, and lokede · what lyflode hit were;
þanne was hit *fiat-uoluntas-tua* · þat sholde fynde vs alle. Mat. vi. 10.
"Haue, actyf," quaþ pacience · "and eet this when þe hungreþ,
Oþer whenne þow clomsest for colde · oþer clyngest for drouthe;
And shal neuere gyues þe greue · ne grete lordes wratthe,
Pryson ne oþer payne · for—*pacientes uincunt;*
By so þow be sobre · of syght, and of tounge boþe,
In ondyng, in handlyng · in alle þy fyue wittes,
That þow care for no corn · for cloþ ne for drynke,
Ne deþ drede, ne deuel · deye as god lykeþ,

So also man lives by true belief."

Then Patience drew forth a piece of the Pater-noster.

"Take and eat this when hungry.

Only be always sober,

244. *Bestes*] Beste I. *greyn*] *mis-written* greyen P.
246. *lord*] S *om.* *enim*] MFS *om.* *dabitur—uobis*] I *om.* *sed—dei*] IS *om.* *de* (1)] in EM; T *om.*
247. *Hast þow*] Hastow I; What hastow F. *ay*] *follows* actyf *in* IT. *mete*] maner mete F.
248. *3e*] 3e parde S; 3e hardiliche F. *hente*] *follows* poke *in* IT. *of—poke*] his hoke (*sic*) E.
249. *pece* ITMFSE] pice P. *to*] it to IT; S *om.*
250. *lustnede*] lestenede I; lestnide T; lustede (!) S; lustened þo F.
251. *þanne*] And þanne IT.
252. *þe hungreþ*] þou hongrest E.
253. *whenne*] wenne P. *drouthe*] eny droghte I; any drouþe T; þe drouȝte F.
255. *payne*] penaunces M.
256. *By—be*] Be þou E. *so*] so þat IT. *boþe*] I *om.*
257. S *omits.* *ondyng*] heryng M; etyng IT. *þy*] þe MT.
258. *That þow*] Dar þe nat I; Dar þe S; þar þe no T. *no*] þe I. *for* (2)] ne for I. *cloþ*] mete S. *for* (3)] ne for IT.
259. *deþ drede*] drede deþ M. *deþ—deuel*] deuel drede nȝ deeth F. *deuel*] dowel (!) I. *deye*] & deye S; but dye F.

and let all else be at God's will.

Wheþer þorw hunger oþer þorw hete · at hus wil be hit!

For yf þow lyuest after hus lore · þe shorter lyf þe betere;

Si quis amat christum · mundum non diligit istum,

[*Sed quasi fetorem · spernes illius amorem.*]

Þorgh hus breþ bestes woxen · and a-brode ȝeden;

Ps. cxlviii. 5 (Vulg.).

Dixit & facta sunt.

Ergo þorw hus [breþ] bestes lyuen · boþe men and fisshes,

230

As wytnesseþ holy wryte · when we seyn oure graces,

Ps. cxliv. 16.

Aperis tu manum tuam, & imples omne animal benedictione.

The Israelites lived 40 years in the wilderness.

Hit is founde þat fourty wynter · folke leueden and nouht tylede,

And out of flent sprange [þe] flod · þat folke and bestes dronken.

Heaven was closed in the time of Elias.

And in elyes time · heuene was yclosed,

That no reyne reynede · þus redeþ men in bookes,

That menye wynter men lyueden · and of no mete telden.

Seven men (at Ephesus) slept more than 60 years."

Seuene slepen, [as] seith þe book · more þan syxty wynter,

Lyueden with-outen lyflode · and at þe laste a-wakeden.

260. *þorw* (1)] by F; fore T. *þorw* (2)] EIF *om.* *at*] as S.

261. *yf*] F *om.* *lyuest*] lyue M.

263. *In* E *only.*

264. *Þorgh*] For þow (*sic*) F. *Dixit*] Ipse dixit F. *sunt*] fuerunt IT. *Dixit—sunt*] M *om.*

265. *Ergo*] I *om.* [*breþ* SIT] PEM *om.; but see last line.* *hus breþ*] him F. *men*] man M.

267. *founde*] S *om.* *folke*] þat folke P (*but* EIMFS *omit* þat); men MS. *nouht tylede*] tylied noght I; tilde nouȝt T.

268. *And*] But M. *out*] E *om.* *flent*] þe flent S; þe flynte IT. [*þe* IMFEST] P *om.*

269. *And*] Also F. *elyes*] helyus S; Elye is T.

270. *reynede*] ne ron T; ne roen (*sic*) I; reynede þanne F. *þus—men*] thus rat men IT; as clerkus rede F. *in*] on I.

271. *That*] & F. *wynter*] wyntres E. *of*] I *om.* *telden*] *so* PES; tolden M; toolden F; ne tiled I; ne tilide T.

272. *slepen* IMF] slupen PE; sleptun S; slepte T. [*as* EIMFS] a P; T *om.* *syxty*] þre hundred E.

273. *Lyueden*] Leueden P (*but see next line*); & lyuede F; And lyueden T. *þe*] S *om.*

And yf men lyueden as mesure wolde · sholde neuere be defaute
Among crysten creatures · yf crystes worde be trewe;
Dabo tibi secundum peticionem tuam." † Cf. Ps. xxxvi. 4.
"What is parfit pacience?" · quaþ *Actiua uita.* 276 **241**
† "What is perfect Patience?" said *Actiua-vita.*
"Meeknesse and Mylde speche · and men of on wil,
þe whiche wil loue ledeþ · to oure lordes place;
And þat is charite, chaumpion · chief of alle vertues,
And þat is poure pacient · alle perilis to suffre." 280
"Where pouerte and pacience · plese more god almyghty "Is patient poverty better than well-spent wealth?"
Than do ryghtful richesse · and resonably to spende?"
"Ȝe, *quis est ille?*" quaþ pacience · "quyk *laudabimus eum!*
Thauh men rede of riche · ryght to þe worldes ende, "What rich man is out of dread when his death-hour draws near?
[I wist neuere renke þat riche was · þat whan he rekne sholde,] 285
And whan he drouh hym to þe deþ · þat he ne dradde hym sarrer
Than eny poure pacient · and þat preoue ich by reyson.
Hit are bote fewe folke of these riche · þat ne falleþ in arerage, 288

274. *yf*] M *om.* *defaute*] þe faute I.
275. *worde*] wordes IST. *trewe*] trywe P. *tuam*] cordis tui E.
276. *What is*] Wiþ his T.
277. *on*] oo F; o IST.
278. *whiche*] wiche P. *wil*] þat S. *ledeþ*] lat IT; lede M.
279. *chief*] & cheef F.
280. *þat*] þus S. *is*] his F. *poure*] pure S (*but* poure = poor; *see next line*). *pacient*] pacience MS; *see* l. 287.
281. *Where*] Wheþer MFT. *and*] or S.
282. *do*] dooth F; IT *om.* *spende*] dispende T.
283. *ille*] hic F. *pacience*] concience M. *laudabimus*] laudemus I.
284. *Thauh*] For þogh F. *riche*] richesse IMT. *worldes* EIMFT] wordles P; worlus S.
285. *Supplied from* B-text. *Without this line, the sense is quite incomplete; but I can find it in no* C-text MS.
286. *And whan*] Whan F; þan whan I; þat whanne T. *drouh*] drow ES; drogh I; drou M; drew F. *hym* (1)] I *om.* *dradde*] drat M. *sarrer*] sarre M; sorere EI; sorrer F; sorrere T.
287. *þat*] E *om.* *preoue ich*] i preue M.
288. *Here* one leaf *is lost in* G; *down to* xvii. 41. *Hit are*] þer ar F; þer ben E. *of*] in T. *these*] thees P; þe M; þis IT. *ne*] hy ne S; þei ne T. *arerage* IMS] arirage PE; rerage F; arrerage T.

242 The poor claim joy hereafter.

Thar þe poure dar plede · and preoue by pure reysoune
To haue a-lowaunce of hus lorde; · by lawe he cleymeþ ioye,
That neuere ioye hadde · of [rightful] Iuge he askeþ;
And seith, 'lo, briddes and bestes · þat no blisse knoweþ,

Beasts and birds are grieved by the winter,

And wilde wormes in wodes · þorw wynter þow hem greuest,
And makest hem wel ney meek · and mylde for defaute;

but have summer afterwards.

After þan þow sendest hem somere · þat is [here] soucreyn ioye,
And blisse to alle [þat] been · boþe wilde and tame.
Then may beggers, [as] bestes · after blysse asken,
þat al here lif hauen lyued · in langour and defaute.'

Beggars will have bliss some time.

Bote god sende hem [som] tyme · of som maner ioye,
Oþer heer oþer elles-wher · elles were it reuthe;
For to wroþer-hele was he wrouȝt · þat neuere was ioye yshape.
Angeles þat in helle now been · hadden som tyme ioye,

Dives had joy once.

And *Dives* in his deyntes [lyuede] · and in *douce uye;*

289. *Thar*] þere IT; þer EMFS. *dar* IMFSET] der P. *preoue*] *apparently* prooue P; *but see* l. 287.

290. *hus—he*] þes þe lawe (*sic*) S. *lawe—ioye*] pure lawe he claymeth IT.

291. *That*] Ioye þat IT (*cf. last line*); He þat F. *hadde*] he hadde M. [*rightful* IFST] rithful M; ryght PE; *see* B-text. *he*] T *om.*

292. *lo*] to F. *blisse*] blisse ne I; ioie M.

293. *wodes*] þe woodus F. *þorw*] in M. *wynter*] wynteres IST.

294. *wel*] ful T. *ney* E] neye I; nyȝe S; ny F; neiȝ T; *apparently* ner *in* P (*but possibly meant for* nei); M *om.*

295. *þan*] þen E; þat F; þis S; M *om.* *After þan*] þer-after IT. *sendest*] seyndest P; *but see* l. 299.

296. *Here* eight leaves *are lost in* I; *down to* xviii. 58. *to*] also to F. [*þat* MFSET] P *om.* *wilde*] to wilde T.

297. [*as* ME] as þo F; and PST. *blysse*] a blisse T.

298. *lif*] lyf-tyme S. *hauen*] han METS; haue F. *lyued*] lyuede P; i-lyued M; I-ledde F.

299. *Bote*] & but F. [*som*] sum T; PEMFS *om.* *tyme*] a tyme F.

300. *were*] where P.

301. *wrouȝt* FT] wrouȝth P; wroȝt ES; wrout M. *yshape*] shapen M. *ioye yshape*] in ioye T.

302. *in—now*] now in helle MS.

303. *And*] For T. *his*] M *om.* *deyntes*] *so* PET; deyntees F; denty-uous M; denteþus S. [*lyuede* TS] lyuynge PEMF.

And now he buyeþ hit ful bitere · he is a beggere of helle. 304

Many man hath hus ioye here · for alle here wel dedes, **243**

And lordes and ladyes ben callid · for leodes þat þay haue, God gives some rich men their reward here.

And slepiþ, as hit semeþ · and somere euere hem foleweþ;

Whan deþ a-wakeþ hem of here wele · þat were here so ryche, † But, after death, they are in purgatory or hell."

þan aren hit pure poure þynges · in purgatorie oþer in helle!

Dauid in þe sauter · of suche makeþ mynde,

And seith, *dormierunt [sompnum suum;] & nichil inuenerunt omnes uiri diuiciarum [in manibus suis;]* Ps. lxxv. 6 (Vulg.).

Et alibi: Velut sompnum surgencium, & cet. Ps. lxxii. 20 (Vulg.).

Hic explicit passus sextus de Dowel.

304. *ful*] FTS *om.* *bitere*] bitturly F. *is*] his P. *he—beggere*] a begger he is F. *of*] in MT.

305. *man hath*] men han M. *hus* PS] his FET; heore M.

306. *and*] an P. *callid*] i-called F; cald EMT. *leodes*] ledes M. *þay*] S *om.*

307. *euere—foleweþ*] hem folweth euere F.

308. *Whan*] Wan P; But whanne T. *were*] where P. *here*] ere E.

309. *aren*] arn M; ar F; beþ S; ben E; haren P. *hit*] it T; hy E; þei MFS.

310. *Dauid*] & dauid F. *suche*] shuche P. *And seith*] *With* F; S *om.* [*sompnum suum*] *supplied from* F. *omnes—diuiciarum*] MFST *om.* [*in—suis*] *supplied from* E. *alibi*] *iterum* M. *Et alibi, &c.*] E *om.*

COLOPHON. MT *omit.* *Hic*] EFS *om.* *de dowel*] S *om.*

PASSUS XVII. (DO-WEL VII.)

Incipit passus septimus.

(243) Alas! that riches should rob man's soul of God's love!

Alas! þat [richesse] shal reue · and robbe mannes soule
[Fro] þe loue of oure lorde · at hus laste ende!
Thei þat haue hure hyre by-fore · aren eueremore poure,
And shulle nat deye out of dette · to dyne er they deseruen hit.
When here deuer is don · and his daies iourne,
Workmen are not paid beforehand. þen may men wite what he is worþ · and what he haþ deserued;
And noulit to fonge by-fore · for drede of disalouwynge.
So ich say by 3ow riche · hit semeþ nat 3e shulle
Haue two heuenes · for 3oure her-beynge.
(244) Even wild beasts enjoy the summer, Muche myrthe is in may · a-monge wilde bestes,
And so forth whil somer lasteþ · heore solace dureþ;

TITLE. Hic incipit passus septimus de dowel M; Incipit passus septimus PE; Incipit septim*us* F; Passus sextus de dowel T.

OBS. S *omits* Passus xvii. *to* xxi.

1. [*richesse* EMF] ricchesse T; riche P. *and*] or M.

2. [*Fro* ETF] For PM. *hus*] þe T.

3. *Thei*] Hewen T. *haue—aren*] nout han bi-forn · and arn M.

OBS. *Here* M *has lost* two leaves, *including* ll. 4—159.

4. *shulle nat*] selde T. *to dyne*] þat dyneþ T. *er*] or EF. *they deseruen*] he deserue T.

5. *here*] his TF. *deuer*] dyner ET; diner F (*wrongly*).

6. *may men*] men may T. *wite* EFT] white P. *deserued*] deseruede P.

7. *And*] But T. *by-fore*] to-fore T. *drede*] feere F; *but see* B-text.

8. *3e*] þat 3e FT.

10. *wilde*] þe wilde T.

11. *forth* ET] furth F; *miswritten* fort P. *whil* F] while ET; *miswritten* wil P. *heore*] & here E.

And muche myrthe a-monge riche men is · þat han meoble ynow and heele.

[Ac] beggers a-boute myd-somere · bredlees þei soupe,
And ȝut is wynter for hem wors · for wet-shood þei gangen,
A-furst and a-fyngred · and foule rebuked
Of þese worlde-riche men · þat reuthe hit is to huyre.

but beggars suffer in winter.

Now, lord, send hem somer som-tyme · to solace and to ioye,
That al here lyf leden · in lowenesse and in pouerte!
For alle myghtest þow haue maked · men of grete welþe,
And liche witty and wys · and lyue with-oute neode;
Ac for þe beste, [as] ich hope · aren somme poure and some riche.
Ryght so haue reuthe of ous alle · þat on þe rode deydest,
And amende ous of thy mercy · and make ous alle meeke,
Louh and leel and louynge · and of herte poure;
And send ous contricion · to clanse with oure soules,
And confession, to culle · alle kynne synnes,
And satisfaccion, the whiche fulfulleþ · þe fadres will of heuene.

245
The Lord send them summer hereafter!

† But God makes some men rich and some poor.

† God give us all grace to amend!

(240)
† Contrition, Confession, and Satisfaction are Dowel, Dobet, and Dobest.

12. *And*] F *om.* *meoble*] meble ET; meeblus F. *ynow*] F *om.*
13. [*Ac* F] But T; And PE.
14. *wet-shood*] wetshod T; watschood F; wete shul E; whet-shood P. *þei*] þan þei F. *gangen*] gon ET.
15. *A-furst*] *so* PT; Afirst F; Aþurst E. *rebuked*] rebukede P.
16. *þese* F] þes P; þis E. *worlde-riche*] *written* wordle-riche P; worldelich ETF. *Cf.* B-text; *and observe the alliteration of* riche *with* reuthe. *hit*] FT *om.* *huyre*] hure E; here T; heere F.
17. *to* (2)] T *om.*
18. *leden*] ledden T.
19. *myghtest*] myȝtest ETF; *miswritten* myghtes P. *haue*] ha F. *maked* E] makede P; mad T; maad F. *grete*] muche T.
20. *liche*] ylich T. *and* EFT] an P. *with-oute*] whit-oute P.
21. *Ac*] T *om.* [*as* ETF] P *om.* *some*] TF *om.*
22. *haue*] ha F. *of ous*] on vs F; on þi renkis T. *þat—deydest*] T *om.* *rode* E] roode F; roude P.
23. *of*] of al PE; *but* FT *omit* al, *which is not wanted.* *alle meeke*] meke ichone T.
24. *Louh*] Louȝh F; Louȝ T; Lowe E.
25. *with*] whit P.
26. *culle*] kille T.
27. *the whiche*] þat ET. *fulfulleth*] fulfilleth F. *fadres*] fadur F; fadir T.

And these been dowel and dobet · and dobest of alle;
Cordis contricio · comeþ of sorwe in herte,
And *oris confessio* · þat comeþ of shrifte of mouthe,
And *operis satisfactio* · þat for synnes payeth,
And for alle synnes · soueraynliche quiteþ.
Cordis contricio, oris confessio, operis satisfactio;

† These three instruct all men.

These thre with-outen doute · tholen alle pouerte,
And lereþ lewed and lered · heh and louh to knowe,
Ho þat doþ wel oþer bet · oþer best a-bouen alle;
And holichurche and charite · here-of a Chartere maden.

† Unless these three defend us,

Bote þese þre þat ich spak of · on domes day [vs] defenden,

246

Elles is in ydel · al oure lyuynge here,
Oure preyers and oure penaunce · and pilgrymages to rome.
Bote oure spences and spending · sprynge of a trewe wille,

all else is in vain.

Elles is al oure labour lost; · lo, how men wryten
In fenestres at þe freres · yf fals be þe foundement!

Christians should have wealth in common.

For-thi cristene men scholde been in comun riche · no couetise to hym-selue.
For seuene synnes þat þer been · þat assailen ous euere,
The fende folweth hem alle · and fondeþ hem to helpe,

29. *Cordis contricio*] For contricio cordis F. *comeþ*] it cometh F. *in*] of FT.

30. *And*] And also F.

31, 32. *One line in* T—Satisfaccion for soulis paieþ & alle synnes quyteþ.

31. *operis satisfactio*] satisfactio soþly F. *synnes*] synne F.

32. *Cordis—satisfactio*] F *om.*

33. *These*] Thees P; Tho T. *with-outen*] whit-outen P.

34. *lereþ*] leered F. *lered*] eke lewed (*sic*) F. *heh—louh*] heye & lowe E; heiȝ & louȝ T; hy & low F.

36. *a*] T *om.*

37. *Bote*] And but TF. *þese*] þes P. *on*] at TF; vs a (*sic*) E. [*vs* TF] P *om.; observe that* E *has* vs a *for* on.

38. *in*] al an T. *ydel*] ydel I-wys F. *oure*] of oure E. *lyuynge* ET] leuynge PF.

39. *penaunce*] penaunces TF. *and*] & oure T. *pilgrymages*] pilgrimage F.

40. *spences*] spens F. *and*] & oure T. *spending*] spendynges E. *a*] E *om.* *trewe*] trywe P. *wille*] welle TF.

41. *how men*] what eer me F.

42. *þe*] fals F.

43. *men*] TF *om.* · *cristene—been*] schuld cristene be F. *no*] non T; ne E. *no couetise*] nat couetous F; ne coueytise E; ne coueit G. *to*] for T. *hym*] hem EFG.

44. *þer*] here G. *þat* (2)] þe whiche F.

45. *hem*] fast hem F.

And with richesse tho ribaudes · rathest men by-gylen;
For þer þat rychesse regneþ · reuerences foleweth, 47
And þat is plesaunt to pruyde · in poure and in riche.
The ryche [is] yreuerenced · by reson of his richesse,
There þe poure is yput by-hynde · and can *pa*rauntre more 50
Of wit and of wysedome · þat fer wey is bettere
Than richesse oþer reaulte · and raþer yhurde in heuene.
For þe ryche haþ muche to rekene · and ryȝt softe walkiþ 53
The heye wey to-heuene-warde; · he halt hit nat ful euene;
There þe poure presseþ by-fore · with a pak at hus rygge,
Opera enim illorum seq[u]untur illos.
Batauntlyche, as beggers don · and boldeliche he craueþ, 56
For hus pouerte and pacience · *per*petuel ioye.
Also pruyde in richesse regneþ · raþer þan in pouerte;
Oþer in þe maister oþer in þe man · som mancion he shewith. 59
Ac in pouerte þer pacience is · pruyde hath no myȝte,
Ne non of the seuene synnes · sitte [ne may] þer longe,
Ne haue power in pouerte · yf pacience hit folewe.

247 Where wealth reigns, reverence follows.

Riches hinder men on their way to heaven.

Rev. xiv. 13.

Pride reigns in riches,

but Patience in poverty.

46. *And*] But T. *with*] whit P. *tho*] þo EFT; of G; *miswritten* to P.
47. *þat*] as F; T *om.* *reuerences*] reu*e*rence T. *foleweth*] hem folwen F.
49. *The*] And þe T; For þe F. [*is* EFTG] P *om.* *yreuerenced* E] yreuerencede P; reu*e*renced FT. *his* EFT] is P; G *om.*
50. *yput*] putte E; put FTG. *can parauntre*] *per*-auntur can FT.
51. *wit* FG] wyt T; witt E; whiȝt (*badly*) P. *fer* EFT] feer P; for G.
52. *oþer*] & G. *and*] an P. *yhurde*] iherde E; I-herd F; herd T; y-hurd G.
53. *ryȝt* G] riȝt EFT; ryȝth P.
55. *presseþ*] preceth F. *with*] whit P. *enim*] TG *om.* *illorum*] eor*um* TG. *sequuntur*] secunt*ur* FEG; sequntur PT.
56, 57. G *omits.*
57. *and*] & his T.
58. *Also*] And TG. *pruyde*] prude E; pride F.
59. *in* (2)] G *om.* *mancion*] men-cion T. *shewith*] schewed E.
60. *Ac*] But T. *þer*] þat G. *myȝte* EF] miȝt T; myȝghte P; miȝht G.
61. [*ne may* EF] may T; no man (!) P. *ne*—*þer*] *þer* mai G.
62. *hit*] him F.

The poor man has no *pride*.

For þe poure is ay prest · to plese þe riche,
And buxume at his biddyng · for hus breed and drynke;

248 And buxu*m*nesse and bost · aren euere-more at wratthe,
And ayther hateþ oþer · and mowen nat dwelle togederes.

He resists not *wrath*.

Yf wratthe wraxle with þe poure · he hath þe worsse ende;
For yf þei boþe [pleyne] · þe poure is bote fyble,
And yf he chide oþer chatere · hym chyuyþ þe worsse.
For loueliche he lokyþ · and louh is hus speche,
That mete oþer moneye · of straunge men mote begge.

If he has *gluttony*, it is only for good ale,

And yf glotenye greue pouerte · he gadereþ þe lasse,
For hus rentes wol nat reche · ryche metes to bigge;
þauh hus glotenye be of good ale · he goþ to a cold beddyng,
And hus heued vn-heled · vneisyliche ywrye;

not for other luxuries.

For when he streyneþ hym to strecche · þe straw is hus whitel;

If he yields to sloth, he suffers for it.

So for hus glotonye and grete synne · he haþ a greuous penaunce,
That is weylawey whan he awakeþ · and wepeþ for colde;
So is he neuere more ful murye · so meschief hym folweþ.

63. *þe* (1)] a E. *prest* EFTG] preest P. *to*] for to G.
64. *his* EFTG] is P. *and*] & his FT.
65. *wratthe*] werre T.
66. *mowen*] mow E; may T; moweth F. *dwelle*] come G.
67. *wraxle*] wracsle G; wrastle EF; wrastliþ T. *with*] whit P.
68. [*pleyne* FT] pleyn E; pleyen PG; *but see* B-text. *is*] his P. *fyble*] feble EFTG.
69—71. G *omits*.
69. *chyuyþ*] cheueþ EFT. *þe*] wel þe F.
70. *louh is*] loweþ E.
72. *greue*] greueþ E; greuiþ T.
73. *rentes*] purs F.
74. *þauh hus*] And þeiz his T. *þauh—be*] His gloteny þogh it be F. *beddyng*] bedde F.
75. G *omits*. *heued*] hed E. *vn-heled*] vnheled *þer-with* F. *vneisyliche*] vneesiliche F. *ywrye*] I-writhe F; wrye E.
76. *stre3neth—to*] wol him G. *whitel*] sshetis T; schetyn G.
77. *So*] & so F. *hus*] F *om*. *and*] & his FT. *and—synne*] G *om*.
78. *That is*] *With* F. *weylawey*] wel lowe (!) T. *awakeþ*] wakiþ TG. *colde*] his colde F.
79. G *omits*. *So*] & so F. *ful*] F *om*. *hym*] aftur F.

Þaugh couetyce wolde with þe poure wraxle · þei mai nat come to-gederis,
Avarice cannot grapple with him fairly,
By þe necke nameliche · her neiþer may henten oþer.
For men knoweþ þat couetise · is of ful kene wil,
And haþ hondes and armes · of a long lengthe,
having too long arms
And pouerte is a pety þyng · apereþ nat to hus nauele;
A loueliche laik was hit neuere · by-twyne a long and a short.
for fair wrestling with him.
Thauh auarice wolde angrye pouerte · he hath bote lytel myȝte; 249
For pouerte haþ bote pokes · to putten yn hus goodes,
Ther auarice haþ almaries · and yre-bounden cofres.
And wheþer be betere to breke · lasse boost hit makeþ,
What is a beggar's bag to an iron coffer?
To breke a beggers bagge · þan an yre-bounden cofre?
Lecherye loueth none poure · for he hath bote lytel seluer,
Lechery loves not the poor.
Ne doþ men dyne dylicatliche · neyþer drynk wyne ofte.
A straw for þe stywes! · hy stod nat ful longe
And þay hadde non oþer haunt · bote of poure peple!
Thauh slewþe suwe pouerte · and serue nat god to paye,
He is saved from *sloth* by adversity.
Meschief is ay a mene · and makeþ hym to þenke,
That [god is] hus grettest help · and no gome elles,

80. *Þaugh*] And þeiȝ T; Þan E. *with*] whit P. *þe*] FG *om.* *wraxle*] wraskle E; wrastle FT; wrangle G.

81. *By*] And by F; And be T. *her neiþer*] nere noþer E. *neiþer*] noon FG; non T.

82. *ful*] a FTG. *kene wil*] clene wyes (!) E.

84. *a*] but a F; but T; bote a G. *pety*] petit F; pite (!) T.

85. *laik*] loke E. *a short*] schorte F; a sshort one T.

86. *Thauh*] And þeiȝ T. *auarice* EF] auerice PG; *so in* l. 88. *angrye*] *so* PE; angre FTG. *myȝte* F] myȝt ET; myȝthe P; myȝtte G.

87. *pouerte*] he (*sic*) E.

88. *almaries*] almarye E. *and*] & EFTG; an P. *yre*] yrene T; yren F.

89, 90. FG *omit.* *yre*] yren T.

91. *Lecherye*] And leccherie T. *none*] no FTG. *bote—seluer*] litel to spende G.

92. *men dyne*] hem drinke G. *drynk wyne*] wyn to drynken F.

93, 94. *One line in* T—A straw for þe stewis it stood · hadde þei no haunt but of pore. *stywes*] stufes E; styues FG; stewis T. *hy*] þei F; hit G. *haunt*] help G. *of*] of þe FG.

95. *Thauh*] And þeiȝ T. *suwe*] seude T.

96. *ay*] T *om.* *a*] F *om.* *and*] þat T.

97. [*god is* EFTG] good P (*omitting* is). *hus*] T *om.*

And he is *ser*uaunt al-way, he seith · and of hus secte boþe.
And wheþ*er* he be oþ*er* be nat · he beriþ þe sygne of pouerte, 99
And in þat secte oure sauyour · sauede al mankynde.
Well may the patient poor claim heaven! For-þi alle poure þat pacient is · of pure ryght may cleyme
After here endyng heere · heuene-riche blysse.
Much more may he that forsakes his wealth, Much hardyloker may he aske · þat her may haue hus will
In londe and in lordshepes · and lykynge of body, 104
And for goddes loue leueþ al · and lyueþ as a beggere.
As a mayde for a mannes loue · here moder for-sakeþ,
Hure fader and hure frendes · and gooþ forth with hure paramour;
as a betrothed maid forsakes her kindred. Muche is suche a mayde to loue · [of a man þat suche on takeþ] 108
More þan þat maide is · þat is ymaried by brocage,
As by asent of sondry bodyes · and seluer to bote,
More for couetice of catel · þan kynde loue of þe mariage.
For so is he who forsakes wealth." So hit farith by ech a persone · þat possession forsakeþ,
And putteþ hym to be pacient · and to pouerte hym weddeþ, 113

98. *is*] his G. *secte*] sute T; swete (!) G.
101. *of*] by F. *pure* FG] pur T; poure PE (*by confusion*).
102. *After*] Affter P. *heueneriche*] & hy heueneriche F.
103. *Much*] & muche F. *hardyloker*] hardere T; hardiour G. *may* (2)] miȝte T. *may haue*] hath muche F.
104. *londe*] lonnde P. *lordshepes*] lordsshipe T. *and* (2)] in T.
105. *goddes* EFT] godes G; *miswritten* goodes P.
106. *a*] T *om.* *for-sakeþ*] for-sok T.
107. *and* (1)] and alle T. *gooþ*] fareth F. *with*] whith P. *paramour*] paramours TG.
108. *suche a*] þat F. [*of—takeþ* EFG] of man þat suchon takiþ T; P *has*—here moder for-sakeþ (*repeated from* l. 106); *cf.* B-text.
109. *maide is*] maydene F. *is ymaried*] maried is F.
110. *bodyes*] segges F; personis TG. *and*] & eeke F.
111. *couetice*] kinde loue G. *þe*] FT *om.*
113. *putteþ*] put F: putte T. *to* (2)] TG *om.* *hym* (2)] hem E; TG *om.*

þe whyche is sibbe to cryst self · and semblable boþe."
Quath Actyf þo al angryliche · and argueynge as hit were, "What is poverty?" said Active.
"What is pouerte pacient?" quaþ he · "ich praye þat þou telle hit." 116
"*Paupertas*," quaþ pacience · "*est odibile bonum,* See Vincent of Beauvais, *Speculum Historiale*, l. x. c. 71.
Remocio curarum, Possessio sine calumpnia,
donum dei, sanitatis mater;
Absque solicitudine semita, sapiencie tempera-
trix, negocium sine dampno;
Incerta fortuna, absque solicitudine felicitas."
"Ich can nat construen al this" · quath *activa uita.* "What is this in English?"
"Parfay," quath pacience · "propreliche to telle 119
In english, hit is ful harde · ac somdel ich shal telle þe.

DISTINCTIO PAUPERTATIS.

Pouerte is þe firste poynte · þat prude most hateþ; 251
'Thanne is pouerte good,' quaþ good skyle · 'þauh hit greue a lytel, 1. "Poverty is hateful to pride.
Al þat may putten of pruyde · in place þer he regneþ.'
Remocio curarum:— 2. It has few responsibilities.
For selde sitt pouerte · þe sothe to declare; 124
As a Iustice to Iuge men · men enioyneþ þer-to no poure,
Ne to be a mayre ouere men · ne Mynistre vnder kynges.
Selde is þe poure [yput] · to punysshe eny peuple,

114. *whyche*] wyche P. *self*] him-selue FT.
116. *quaþ he*] F *om.* *praye*] pray þe FT.
117. *solicitudine*] solitudine T (*twice*); solittudine G (*twice*).
118. *al*] wel al F.
119. *quath*] þo *quod* F. *propreliche*] & *propurli* F; *parfitliche* G. *telle*] telle it T.
120. *In*] Al þis in T. *hit*] T *om.* *ac*] but T; & F. *somdel*] E *om.* *telle þe*] schewe F. *Distinctio, &c.*] *so in* PEF; TG *om.*
122. *quaþ*] be T. *quaþ—skyle*] & goostliche F.
124. *For*] TG *om.* *selde* EG] seelde F; seilde P; Shulde (*wrongly*) T. *sitt*] sitte E; sitteth F; sette (*wrongly*) T; sit G.
125. G *omits.* *As a*] Or as T. *men* (2)] me T. *enioyneþ þerto*] ioyneth so F.
126. *a*] T *om.*
127. *Selde* ETG] Seilde P; Ful seelde F. *þe*] any T. [*yput* TG] I-put F; pitt P; potte E; *but see* l. 50.

Ergo pouerte and poure men · parfournen þe comaundement, 128

Nolite iudicare quemquam.

3. The poor do not win wealth falsely.

Possessio sine calumpnia:—

Selde is þe poure ryght riche · bote of hus [riȝtful] heritage,

He wynneþ nat with wyghtes fals · ne with vnseled mesures,

Ne borweþ of his neyghebore · bote þat he may wel paye,

And lyghtly men leneþ to fewe men · and men [wene] hym poure. 132

4. Poverty is the gift of God.

The feorthe is a fortune · þat florisshiþ þe soule

With sobrete [from] alle synnes · and al-so ȝut more;

Hit defendeth þe flessh · fro folyes ful menye:

And a collateral confort · crystes owen sonde; 136

252 *Donum dei.*

5. It is the mother of health.

ȝut hit is moder of myȝt · and of mannes helthe,

And Frende in alle fondynges · and of foule vueles leche;

Sanitatis mater.

6. The poor may walk unrobbed through the pass of Alton;

The syxte, hit is a paþ of pees · ȝe, þorw þe pas of [altoun] 139

Pouerte myghte passe · with-oute peril of robbynge.

129. *Selde* ETG] Seelde F; Seilde P. *ryght*] F *om.* [*riȝtful* FT] ryght PE; G *om.*; *cf.* B-text.

130. G *omits.* *He wynneþ*] Wynneþ he T. *with*] whit P (*twice*). *wyghtes*] whyghtes P; wiȝtes EF; wyttes (*wrongly*) T. *vnseled* EF] vnselide P.

131. *borweþ*] borowe E. *his*] is P.

132. *lyghtly*] *miswritten* lyghly P. *lyghtly—to*] selde me leneþ G; me leniþ liȝtly T. *And—men* (2)] Nat liȝtly me leeneth to a man F. *to*] bot to E. *and*] ȝif F. *men* (3)] me TG. [*wene* EFTG] P *om.* *hym*] hem EG; he be F.

138. *is*] it is FG.

134. G *omits.* *With*] Whit P. [*from* FT] ayen E; whith P; *cf.* B-text.

135. *defendeth* FET] defendiþ G; defendit P. *ful*] riȝt FG.

136. *And*] TG *om.* *confort*] comfort is F.

137. *ȝut*] & ȝit F. *hit*] T *om.* *myȝt* EFG] miȝt; myȝth P. *helthe*] hele T; help G.

138. *in*] of (*wrongly*) T. *and*] F *om.* *vueles*] yueles E; eueles FTG.

139. *pas*] paies T. [*altoun* EF] aueltone T; aultone G; haultone P.

140. *Pouerte myghte*] For þere myȝt pouert (*see* l. 141) F. *with*] whit P.

For þer as pouerte passeþ · pees folweþ commenliche,
And euere þe lasse þat eny lyf ledeþ · the lyghter hus herte is þere,
As he þat wot neuere with wham · in [nyghtes] to mete;
Paupertas est sine solicitudine semita: Seneca. so poverty is a safe path.
The seueþe, hit is a welle of wysedome · and fewe wordes sheweþ, 144 7. It is a source of wisdom.
For lordes aloweþ hym lytel · oþer leyth ere to hus reisone;
He tempreþ hus tonge to-treuthe-ward · þat no tresour coueyteþ;
Sapiencie temperatrix.
The eyhteþe, hit is a leel labour · and loþ to take more 8. It deals fairly with others.
Than he may sothliche deserue · in somer oþer in wynter; 148
And þauh he chaffare, he chargeþ no los · mowe he charite wynne;
Negocium sine dampno.
þe nyethe, hit is swete to soules · [is] no suger swettere; 9. It is sweet to the soul,
For pacience is hus paneter · and payn to pouerte fyndeth,
And sobrete ȝeueþ here swete drynke · and solaceþ here in alle angres. 152

141. *commenliche*] comunly T. *pees—commenliche*] folweth pees oft tyme F.
142. *þat eny*] a F. *lyf*] G *om.* *eny—ledeþ*] on lede T.
143. G *omits.* *neuere*] nere T. *with*] whit P. *in*] on T. [*nyghtes*] nyȝtes E; niȝtes tyme T; miȝti tyme (*sic*) F; myghtes P. *Paupertas est*] F *om.* *sine*] absque EFG. *solicitudine*] solitudine T. *Seneca*] F *om.*
144. *The seueþe*] The seuenethe F; It semiþ T. *hit*] F *om.* *welle* EFTG] weelle P.
145. *loyth*] leiþ E; leyen F; liggeþ T.
146. *hus*] þe T. *ward*] G *om.* *Sapiencie, &c.*] ETG *om.*
147. *eyhteþe*] eiȝte T; oþer G. *hit*] EG *om.*
149. *los*] lost E.
150. *Þe*] Ne (!) T. *nyeþe*] nyþe EF; neiþe T. *Þe—hit*] Anoþer G. *swete*] so swete F. *soules*] soule F. [*is* T] þer is F; PEG *om.*
151. *hus*] TG *om.* *paneter*] panter EFT; paniter G. *payn—pouerte*] pouert payn he T; pouerte payn G.
152. *here* (1)] heere P; here EF; hire T. *drynke*] drynkus F. *here* (2)] heere P; hire T; hem E; F *om.* *alle angres*] angre G.

253 Thus leryde me a lerede man · for oure lordes loue, seint austyn,
That pure pouerte and pacience · was a louh lyuynge in erthe,
and a blessing without care." A blessid lyf with-oute busynesse · bote oneliche for þe soule; 155
Absque solicitudine felicitas.
Now god þat al þynge gyueþ · graunte hus saule reste,
That wrot þis to wisse men · what pouerte was to mene!"
(254) † Then I saw one who was named *Liberum arbitrium* (Free-will). Thenne hadde actyf a ledere · þat heyhte *liberum arbitrium*,
That knewe conscience ful wel · and clergie boþe;
"He þat haþ londe and lordshep," quaþ he · "at the laste ende 160
Shal be pourest of power · at hus partyng hennes."
† I asked Patience if I might ask him who he was. Thenne ich wondrede what he was · this *Liberum Arbitrium*,
And prayede pacience · þat ich a-pose hym moste.
And [he] suffrede me and seide · "assay hus oþer name."
† I then asked him whence he came. "Leue *liberum arbitrium*," quaþ ich · "of what londe ar ye? 165
255 He said he was Christ's creature, ȝif þow be cristes creature · for cristes loue, tel me."
"Ich am cristes creature," quaþ he · "and cristine in menye place,
And in cristes court yknowe · and of hus kynne a partye;

154. *lyuynge*] G *om.* *in*] on FT.
155. *with*] whit P. *Absque solicitudine*] Solitudine T.
156. *þynge*] T *om.* G *places* god *after* saule.
157. *þis*] þus EG.
158. *ledere* EFTG] *apparently* lodere T. *heyhte*] hiȝte EFT; het G. *liberum arbitrium*] arbitrium liberum E.
159. *That*] He TFG.
160. *Here* M *begins again.* *He*] þe M. *londe*] lonnde P. *londe and*] G *om.* *lordshep*] lordschepe boþe M
161. *hennes*] elles G.
162. *ich*] T *om.* *wondrede*] hadde wondir T. *this*] *miswritten* thees P; *þat* T.
163. *prayede*] preide to F. *ich*] M *om.* T *is corrupt here.*
164. [*he* MFTG] PE *om.* *me*] F *om.*
166. *ȝif*] And ȝif T. *tel me*] telle hit me E; me telleþ M.
167. *place*] *so* PTFG; a place E; places M.
168. *yknowe*] ich know (*wrongly*) E; Iknowe wel T.

Is noþer peter þe porter · ne paul with his fauchon, and known to Peter and Paul.
That wolde defende me heuene dore · dynge ich neuere so late.
At myd-nyȝt, at mydday · my uoise is so yknowe,
þat eche creature þat loueþ criste · welcomeþ me faire."
"Wher-of serue ȝe?" ich seide · "syre *liberum arbitrium?*" † "What do you do?" I asked.
"Of som tyme to fyghte," quaþ he · "falsnesse to destruye, † "Sometimes I fight, and sometimes I suffer.
And som tyme to suffre · boþe sorwe and teene,
Layke oþer leue · at my lykynge chese,
To do wel oþer wikke · a wil with a reyson,
And may nat be with-oute a body · to bere me wher hym lykeþ." † I go about with man's body."
"Thenne is þat body bettere þan þow," quaþ ich · "nay," quaþ he, "no betere; † "Then is that body better than thou," said I.
Bote as a wode were a fure · þenne worchen [þei] · boþe,
And ayþer is oþeres heete · and also of a wil;
And so is man þat haþ hus mynde · myd *liberum arbitrium.*
And þe whyle ich quyke þe cors · cald am ich *anima;* "I am sometimes called *Anima*," he said;
And whenne ich wilne oþer wolde · *animus* ich hyhte, "also *animus*,

169. *Is*] Nis M. *þe*] ne (!) E. *with*] whit P. *his*] þe T.
170. *wolde*] wole MG; wile T. *dore*] dere M.
171. G *omits*. *nyȝt* EF] niȝt T; nyth M; nyȝth P. *at*] ne at M. *uoise*] vois EFT; voys M.
172. G *omits*. *welcomeþ*] wolcomeþ P.
174. *Of*] MF *om*. *he*] y G; he þo F.
175. *suffre*] suffre also F. *sorwe —teene*] tene & sorewe T.
176. G *omits*. *leue*] bi-leue M. F *has*—Where I wol laike or leue · at my likyng I chese.
177. *wikke* T] wicke EM; wike P; wik F; wikkede G. *a wil*] he wile (*wrongly*) T.
178. *wher — lykeþ*] aboute F. *hym*] me G.
179. *bettere* (1)] bet MF.
180. *a* (1)] F *om*. *a fure*] on fuyre M; in fire T. [*þei* M] PEFTG *omit; but it makes the sense clear.*
181. *heete*] help M. *a*] on M; o EFG; T *om.*
182. *myd*] myþ T; *with* F; wiþ G.
183. F *omits*. *þe whyle*] while MG; whiles T; þe wyle P. *quyke*] am quyk in T. *cors* TG] corps M; cours P. *cald—ich*] I am cald T.
184. *whenne*] wenne P. *oþer*] and MTG. *hyhte*] hiȝte MF; hatte T. *animus—hyhte*] cald am y Animus G.

mens, And for þat ich can and knowe · cald ich am 'mannys þouht;'

memoria, And whan ich make mone to god · *memoria* ich hatte;

And when ich deme domes · and do as treuthe techeþ,

ratio, Then is *racio* my ryhte name · 'reson' in englissh;

And whenne ich fele þat folke telleþ · my furste name

sensus, is *sensus,*

And þat is witte and wisedome · the welle of alle craftes;

And when ich chalange oþer nat chalange · chepe oþer refuse,

conscientia, þanne am ich *conscientia* cald · godes clerk and hus notarie;

And when ich wol do oþer nat do · goode dedes oþer ille,

† *liberum arbitrium,* Then am ich *liberum arbitrium* · as lettrede men tellen;

250 And when ich loue leelly · oure lord and alle oþere,

amor, Then is 'leel loue' my name · in latyn þat is *amor;*

And when ich flee fro þe body · and feye leue þe caroygne,

and *spiritus.*" Then am ich a spirit specheles · and *spiritus* þenne ich hote.

Austyn and ysidorus · ayþer of hem bothe

Nempnede me þis to name · þow now myght cheese

185. M *omits.* *And*] F *om.* *knowe*] eke knowe F. *cald—am*] I cald am in (*sic*) T. *mannys*] F *om.*

186. *whan*] whanne þat T. *mone*] *so* PEMTG; moone F. *hatte*] *so* PEMFTG (*not as in* l. 184).

187. G *omits this and l.* 190. *techeþ*] telliþ T.

188. *in*] on T.

189. *whenne*] wenne P. *þat*] what F. *my—is*] þan am i F.

191. *nat chalange*] chalenge nout MFG. *chepe*] *so* PEMFG; chese M.

192. *am ich*] i am M. *conscientia*] concience MT.

193. *wol*] wel M; E *om.* *nat*] wol noȝt E. *dedes*] dede T.

194. *lettrede*] lered MG. *tellen*] me tellith FT.

195. *And*] E *om.*

196. *þat*] hit M. *in—is*] & in latyn T.

197. *body*] flesch F. *feye*] fei M; vey E. *feye leue*] fayle G. *þe* (2)] my M.

198. *a*] FG *om.* *hote*] hoote F (*not as in* ll. 184, 186).

199. *ayþer*] eiþer oþer T.

200. *me*] G *om.* *þis*] þus F. *name*] names G. *þow now*] now þow MG; & now þou F.

How þow coueitest to calle me · now knowest þow alle myne names.

Anima pro diuersis actionibus diuersa nomina sortitur; dum uiuificat corpus, anima est. dum uult, animus est; dum recolit, memoria est; dum iudicat, racio est; dum sentit, sensus est; dum amat, amor est; dum declinat a malo ad bonum, liberum arbitrium est; dum negat uel consentit, consciencia est; dum spirat, spiritus est."

See Isidore, Etymol. lib. xi. c. 1.

"3e ben as a bischop," quaþ ich · al bordynge þat tyme,
"For bischopes blessed · thei bereþ meny names,
Presul and *pontifex* · and *metropolitanus*,
And oþer names an hepe · *episcopus* and *pastor*."

"You have as many names as a bishop," said I.

"That is soth," he seide · "now ich seo þy wil
How þow woldest know and conne · þe cause of alle here names,
And of myne, yf þow myghtest · me þynkeþ by þy speche!"

"I suppose you would fain know what they mean?" said he.

"3e, syre," ich seyde, "by so · þat no man were a-greued,
Alle þe science vnder sonne · and alle sotile craftes
Ich wolde ich knewe and couthe · kyndeliche in myn herte."

"Yes," said I.

"Thanne art þow inparfyt," quaþ he · "and on of prydes knyghtes;

"Then you are too proud," said he.

201. *now*] MG *om.* *knowest þow*] þow knowest MTG. *sortitur*] uocatur M. *a malo*] de malo T.

202. *ben*] baw (!) M. *bischop* EF] bisshop TG; busshop M; *badly spelt* bihsshep P. *bordynge*] louryng T; bourdyng F.

203. *bischopes* E] bisshopes GT; bischops F; busshopes M; *badly spelt* bihsshopes P. *blessed*] i-blessed MG; þat beth blessed F. *þei*] G *om.*

204. *Presul*] As presul F.

205. *an*] a gret F.

206. *seide*] seide þo · & F.

207. *How*] T *om.* *cause*] clause T. *here*] M *om.*

208. G *omits.*

209. *a-greued*] a-greuede P.

210. *science*] sciences MG. *alle*] alle þe T.

211. *wolde*] wold þat F. *and*] or F. *kyndeliche*] soþlich G.

212. *art* MFT] ert PEG. *inparfyt* GT] inparfijt M; inparfyȝt P; vnparfit E; imparfit F.

For suche a luste and lykynge · lucifer fel fro heuene ;

Isaiah xiv. 14. *Ponam pedem meum in aquilone, & ero similis altissimo.*

"No one can expect to know everything. Hit were a-geyn kynde," quaþ he · "and alle kynne resoun

That eny creature sholde conne al · excepte cryst one.

Aȝene alle suche salamon speke þ · and dispiseþ here wittes,

Prov. xxv. 27. And seith, *sicut qui mel comedit multum, non ei bonum est : Sic qui scrutator est magestatis, opprimatur a gloria.*

Too much honey cloyeth the maw. To englissh-men this is to [mene] · þat mowen speke and huyre,

The man þat muche hony eet · his mawe hit engleymeþ :

The wyttiour that eny wight is · bote yf he worche · þer-after,

The biterour he shal a-bygge · bote yf he [wel] worche ;

Cf. John xiii. 17. *Beatus*, seith seynt bernard · *qui scripturas legit,*

Et uerba uertit in opera · emforth his power.

Couetise to conne · and to knowe science[s]

Putte oute of paradys · adam and eue ;

213. *luste* E] lust MFT ; louste P. *and*] & a T ; of F. *fel*] *miswritten* feel P ; ful M. *& ero, &c.*] MTG *om.*

214. *resoun* EFT] reson MG ; reisoune P.

215. *conne*] kunne E ; cunne FMG. *one*] al oone F.

216. G *omits.* *Aȝene*] Aȝens ET ; A-ȝe F. *alle*] T *om.* *dispiseþ*] spiceth F. *And seith*] For seiþ salamon þus G. *sicut—est*] G *om.* *mel —non* MFT] comedit multum mel & P ; *so also* E, *omitting* mel. *est*] *put before* ei *in* MF ; T *om.* *opprimatur*] *so in all ; read* opprimetur. *a gloria*] &c. M.

217. G *omits.* [*mene* MFT] mete PE. *huyre*] hure E ; here MT ; heere F.

218. G *omits.* *The*] þat T. *The —þat*] þat ho so F. *eet*] *so* PM ; eteþ E ; ette F. *hony eet*] honieþ (!) T. *his*] is P. *hit engleymeþ*] is engleymed E.

219. *wyttiour*] whyttiour P ; withtiere M. *wight*] whight P ; withg (*sic*) M ; wit G ; wy T. *worche*] do M.

220. *biterour*] bitturlok*ur* F. [*wel* M] wol PETG ; *but this is too close to* l. 219. *bote—worche*] whan he is brouȝt *in* graue F (*a remarkable variation*).

221. *seith*] quod M.

222. *Et*] Vt M. *emforþ*] eueneforþ M.

223, 224. *One line in* T, *omitting* and to knowe. *conne*] cunne ME. [*sciences* EMTFG] science P ; *see* l. 226.

224. *Putte* EM] Pute P ; Put FTG. *adam*] boþe adam F. [*gloria* MFT] gloriam PEG. *spoliauit*] expoliauit E.

Sciencie appetitus hominem immortalitatis [gloria] spoliauit. Lust of knowledge caused the fall.

And ryght so as hony · is vuel to defie,
Ryght so sothly sciences · swelleþ in a mannes saule,
And doþ hym to be deynous · and deme þat beth nat lerede;
Non plus sapere · seide þe wyse,
Quam oportet sapere · lest synne of pruyde wexe. 258 Rom. xii. 3.
Freres fele sithes · to þe folke þat þei prechen
Meuen motifs meny tymes · Insolibles and fallaces,
That boþe lered and lewed · of here by-leyue douten; Friars should leave hard matters, and teach the ten commandments,
To teche þe ten commaundemens · were ten sithe bettere,
And how [þat] folke folyliche · here fif wittes myspenden,
As wel freres as oþer folk · foliliche spenden
In housyng and in helyynge · in hih cleregie shewynge, and reprove foolish spending of money.
More for pomp and prude · as þe peuple wot wel
That ich lye nat, loo · for lordes þei plesen,
And reuerenceþ þe ryche · þe rather for here seluer, † Friars reverence the rich.

225. *so*] TG *om.* *vuel*] yuel EG; euel MFT.

226. *Ryght—sothly*] Soothli riȝt so F. *sothly sciences*] litel science T. *sciences*] science G. *in*] MFTG *om.*

227. G *omits.* *And doþ*] Don M. *hym*] hem T.

228. *Non*] For non F.

229. *synne—pruyde*] pruyde of synne E; pride & synne F. *of pruyde*] G *om.*

230. *Freres*] For fals frerus F. *sithes*] tymes T. *þe*] F *om.* *folke*] peple G. *þat*] þere T.

231. *motifs*] motynges M. *tymes*] time MF. *meny tymes*] G *om.* *Insolibles*] insollible F; & solibles (!) E. *fallaces*] falaces E; fallas MF; infallaes (!) T.

232. *lewed*] eke lewed F. *douten*] doten T.

233. *were*] where P. *were—sithe*] ten siþe wer it F; ton (*sic*) siþe were T; ten siþe were G.

234. [*þat* EMFTG] þe P; *cf.* B-text. *myspenden*] dispenden M; spenden F.

235. *foliliche* ME] folliliche PG (*but see last line*); folliche T. *foliliche spenden*] & feel of hem wurse F; *but cf.* B-text. *spenden*] lyuen M; worchen G.

236. *and*] M *om.* *in helyynge*] in heliyngge M; in hellynge E; in helyng F; helynge G; T *om.* *in* (2)] & E. *hih*] hi M; hy F; hey E; heiȝ T; hyȝ G. *cleregie shewynge*] herte of pride F.

237—240. G *omits.*

237. *and*] & for E. *and prude*] of þat place F. *peuple*] peple MF; pepe (!) E.

238. F *omits.* *lye*] leiȝe T. *þei*] ȝe T. *plesen* EM] plese T; plesyn P.

Cf. Deut. i. 17; xvi. 19.

Agens þe counsail of cryst · as holy cleregye witnesseþ;
Ne sitis acceptores personarum.

As good teachers spread holiness, so evil teachers spread sin.

Loo, what holy wryt wyttnesseþ · of wikked techeres;
As holyness and honeste · out of holy churche
Sprungeþ and spredeþ · and enspireþ þe peuple
þorgh *par*fit preest-hood · and prelates of holichurche,
Ryght so out of holychurche · al vuel spredeþ,

Some boughs have leaves, some are bare. (*Exemplum contra clericos—margin of* M.)

Ther in*par*fit preest-hod is · prechours and techours.
And seo hit by ensample · of trees in somer tyme,
Ther so*mm*e bowes bereþ leues · and so*mm*e bereþ none;
The bowes þat bereþ nat · and beeþ nat grene-leuede,
Ther is a myschif in þe more · of suche mane*re* stockes.
Ryght so *per*sones and preestes · and prechers of holy churche
Ys þe rote of [þe] ryght feithe · to reuwele þe peuple;

Where the root is rotten, no flower can flourish. If ye clerks would leave rich clothing,

Ac þer þe rote is roten · reson wot þe sothe,
Shal neuere floure ne frut wexe · ne fair leef be grene.
For wolde [ȝe] letteride leue · the lecherie of cloþinge,
And be courteis and kynde · of holy[kirke] goodes,
Parte [with the] poure · and ȝoure pruyde leue,
And þerto trewe of ȝoure tonge · and of ȝoure tail also,

240. *Aȝens*] Ageyn M; Aȝe F. *cleregye*] chirche M; writ F. *witnesseþ* E] whittnesseþ P; telleth F. *Ne*] Non M.

241. *what*] wiþ (!) T. *holy—wyttnesseþ*] witnesseth holy writ F. *techeres*] tecches M.

242. *honeste* EMFTG] *miswritten* honestete P.

244. *parfit*] T *om.*

245. G *omits.* *al*] as (!) E. *vuel*] yuel E; euel MFT.

246. G *omits.* *Ther* EMFT] Theer P; *so also in* ll. 248, 250. *inparfit*] in (!) T. *techours*] oþure F.

247. *And—by*] Tak þou G. *of*] on MG. *in*] a G. *of—tyme*] in som*er* tyme on tres T.

249. G *omits.* *The*] þo F. *nat*] no*n* E. *leuede*] i-leued MT.

250. G *omits.*

251. *persones and*] *in* p*er*sones & in E.

252. *Ys*] *so* PETG (*probably by intention*); Ben M; Beth F. [þe MTF] PEG *om.* *ryght*] ryghit P. *reuwele*] reule ET; rule MFG.

254. *be*] ne F; be and M.

255. [ȝe MT] þe (*wrongly*) PEG; F *om.* *the—of*] lecherie · and ȝoure gai M.

256. E *omits.* [*kirke* T] churche PG; chirches M; churches F.

257. G *omits.* *Parte*] To parte F. [*with the* EMFT] *miswritten* whithe P.

258. *þerto*] G *om.* *trewe*] trywe P. *ȝoure*] here G (*twice*). *tail*] *so in all MSS; but* F *turns* tail also *into* tailasse.

And haten harlotrie · [and] to vnderfonge þe tyþes
Of vserers and of hores · and of al vuel wynnynges,.
Loth were lewede men · bote þei ȝoure lore folweden, unlearned men would amend.
And a-menden hem of here mysdedes · more for ȝoure ensamples 262
þan for to preche and preuen hit nat; · ypocrisie hit semeþ!
Ypocrisie is a braunche of pruyde · and most among clerkes, 264 Hypocrisy is a snow-hidden dunghill, having snakes within it.
And [is] ylikned in latyn · to a lothliche dounghep,
That were by-snywe al with snow · and snakes with-ynne,
[Or to a wal whit-lymed · & were blak *with*-inne.]
Ryȝt so meny preestes · prechours and prelates, 268 So are priests whitened with fair words.
þat beþ enblaunched with *bele paroles* · and with *bele* cloþes;
And as lambes þei loken · and lyuen as wolues.
Iohannes crisostomus · karpeþ þus of clerkes,

Sicut de templo omne bonum progreditur, sic de templo omne malum procedit. Si sacerdocium integrum fuerit, tota floret ecclesia; si autem corruptum fuerit, omnium fides marcida est. Si sacerdocium fuerit in peccatis, totus populus conuertitur ad peccandum. Sicut cum uideris arborem pallidam & marcidam, intelligis quod uicium habet in radice, Ita cum 261

A sound priesthood makes a flourishing church, but, as a withered tree has an evil root, so a wicked people shews

259. *And*] & also G. *haten*] hate al F. [*and* MFTG] PE *om. to*] G *om.* þe] no M; G *om.*
260. *and* (1)] & eke F; TG *om. and* (2)] T *om. of* (3)] MEG *om. al*] F *om. vuel*] euele MF; euile T; vnclene E.
261. *were*] were þe F. *lore*] wil G.
262. G *omits. amenden hem*] amendit T. *more*] þe more F.
265. [*is* MFT] PEG *om. in*] as *in* F. *a*] E *om. lothliche*] lodli M.
266. G *omits. bysnywe*] *so* PE; bisnewe F; besnewid T; i-snewed M. *snow*] snouȝ T. *snakes*] smatte M.
267. *In* T *only; but see* B-text.
269. *beþ*] ben MT. *enblaunched*] encumbred M. *bele* (2)] faire M.
270. *And*] G *om. as* (2)] as do F.
271. F *prefixes* Loo. þus] riȝt þus F. *procedit*] cedit G. M *omits* fuerit *after* corruptum. *sacerdocium* (2)] sacerdos T. *peccatis*] peccato T. *sanum*] integrum vel sanum G.

an unsound priesthood. (Isaiah xxiv. 2; Hosea iv. 9.)

uideris populum indisciplinatum & irreligiosum, sine dubio sacerdocium eius non est sanum.

Alas ! lewede men · muche leese ȝe þat fynden
Vnkynde creatures · to beo kepers of ȝoure soules !

Things wickedly won go to wicked men.

Ac þyng þat wikkedliche is wonne · and with false sleithes,
Wolde neuere oþer-wise god · bote wicked men hit hadde,

262

As imparfit preestes · and prechers after seluer,
Secutours and sodenes · somners and here lemmannes ;

Evil got is evil spent.

And þat with gyle was gete · vngraciousliche be dispended.

Covetous clerks leave wealth which profligate men spend."

Curatours of holychurche · and clerkus þat ben auarous,
Lightliche þat þei leue · loseles hit deuouren.
Leyueþ hit wel, lordes · boþe lered and lewede,
þat þus goþ here godes · atte laste ende,
[þat] lyuen a-ȝens holy lore · and þe loue of charite."

"Where is Charity ?" said I.

"Charite," quaþ ich þo · "þat is a þing for sothe
263 That maistres comenden muche ; · wher may hit be founde ?

"I have lived long in † London," said I; "but have never found charity.

Ich haue lyued in [london] · meny longe ȝeres,
And founde ich neuere in faith · as freres hit precheþ,
Charite, þat chargeþ nat · ne chit, þauh men greue hym,

272. *men*] men alas F.
273. *creatures*] curato*urs* T. *kepers*] leders E.
274. *wikkedliche*] wiþ wickednesse M.
275. PE *insert* þat *after* neuere, *which* MFTG *omit*. *bote*] bute þat G.
276. *after*] for M.
277. *sodenes*] soudenes M ; southdenis T. *somners*] somenours E ; somnours MFG ; sompno*urs* T.
278. *gete*] geten M ; bigete F. *be dispended*] he dispend it F ; myspende T.
279. *Curatours*] For curatours F. *auarous*] auerous PG.
280. *þat*] G *om*. *hit*] to G. *deuouren* EG] deuowren M ; deoureth F ; deuoren P.
281—283. G *omits*.
281. *Leyueþ*] Leueþ MT ; Leeueth F ; Lyueþ E.
282. *atte*] at þe MTF.
283. [*þat* MFT] And PE. *a-ȝens*] a-ȝe þe F.
285. *wher*] but whare F. *hit*] he F.
286. *haue*] aue P. *lyued*] i-lyued M ; lyuede P. [*london* M] londoun F ; lundoun T ; londen PEG.
287. *ich*] i hit MF.
288. *þat*] þei (*sic*) T. *chargeþ*] chaungeþ G. *þauh*] & G. *men*] m TG. *greue hym*] hi*m* greue F.

As paul in a pistele · of hym bereþ witnesse;
Non inflatur, non est ambiciosa, non querit que sua sunt. 1 Cor. xiii. 4, 5.
Ich [knew] neuere, by cryst · clerk noþer lewede,
That hé ne askede after hus · and oþer-whyle coueytede
Thyng þat needede hym nat · and nyme hit, yf he myghte!
[For þoȝ men soȝt al sectes · of sustren & of breþeren,]
And [þow] fynde hym, bote figuratifliche · a ferly me þynkeþ;
Hic in enigmate, tunc facie ad faciem:— 1 Cor. xiii. 12.
And so ich trowe trewely · by that men tellen of charite."

All whom I have seen are covetous."

"Charite is a childish thing · as holichurche witnesseþ,
Nisi efficiamini sicut paruuli, [non intrabitis in regnum celorum:] Mat. xviii. 3.

"Charity," said he, "is a childish thing." 262 263

[DISTINCTIO CARITATIS.]

As proud of a peny · as of a pounde of golde,
And al-so glad of a goune · of a grey russet
As of a cote of cammoka · oþer of clene scarlett.
He is glad with alle glade · as gurles þat lauhen alle,
And sory when he seeþ men sory · as þow seest children
Lauhen þer men lauhen · an loure þer men loureþ.

He is ever glad. 264

289. *paul*] seint poul F. *a*] his T. *pistele*] pistel EMFG; pistil T. *non querit—sunt*] MTG *om.*
290. [*knew* EMFG] kneuȝ T; knowe P. *clerk*] *miswritten* clek P.
291. *whyle*] wyle P; whiles T.
292. *needede hym*] hym neded EF. *and*] to M.
293. *From* E; *also in* MFGT; P *omits.* *sectes*] þe sektis T; folc M. *of* (2)] T *om.*
294. [*þow* M] þou F; PETG *om.* *hym*] hem M. *bote*] G *om.* *figuratifliche*] furatif (!) T; fugynatijf (!) M. *a ferly*] wonder M. *Hic*] Quia hic *per* speculum F.
295. *And so*] Also M. *so*] E *om.* *men*] me G. *of charite*] *per*-offe F.
296. *childish*] childlich M; childes FG. *sicut*] ut M. [*non—celorum*] *from* E; F *has*—non intrabitis, &c.; MTG *om.* [*Distinctio, &c.*] *from* M; PEFTG *om.*
297. *of* (2)] G *om.*
298. *al-so*] as TFG.
299. *cammoka*] cammoca E; camaca M; camaka FT; cammaka G. *clene*] a clene T; reed F.
301—312. G *omits.*
301. *childre*n] babes F.
302. *an*] and MEFT. *men loureþ*] oþere louren T.

And when a man swereþ for soþ · for soþ he hit troweþ;
† He trusts that none will beguile him. He weneþ [þat] no wiȝt · wold lyghe and swere,
Ne þat eny gome wolde gylen · oþer, ne greue,
For drede of god þat is so good · and þus-[gates] ous techeþ,
† Mat. vii. 12. *Quodcunque uultis ut uobis faciant homines, facite eis.*
He hath no lykynge to lauhe · ne lyghe, men to scorne;
He accepts sorrows as a solace." Alle siknesses and sorwes · for solas he [hem] takeþ,
And alle manere meschifs · as minstracie of heuene.
Of deþ ne of derþe · drad was he neuere,
Ne mysliked, þauh he loore · oþer lenede to þat ilke
þat neuere payed peny aȝe · in place þere he borwede."
"Who provides for him?" I said. "Who fyndeþ hym his fode?" quaþ ich · "oþer what frendes hath he,
Rentes oþer richesses · to releue hym at hus neode?"
"He cares not for riches. "Of rentes ne of richesses," quaþ he · "recche þ he neuere,
[A frend he haþ þat fynt him · þat faileþ him neuere].
† Ps. ciii. 28. On *aperis-tu-manum* · alle þynge hym fyndeþ;

303. F *omits.*

304. *He*] For he F. *wenep*] leueþ M. *He weneþ*] Weniþ he T. [*þat* MFT] nat PE. *wiȝt* F] whiȝt P; withg M; wiȝ T. *lyghe*] lie MEF.

305. F *omits.* *gylen*] bygilen E; bi-gyle M. *ne*] M *om.*

306. *is*] T *om.* *so*] E *om.* *and*] and þat MF. [*gates*] gatis T; PEMF *omit, but the alliteration seems to require it.* *ous*] us MF; vs T. M *ends the line*—and þat us þus techeþ. *eis*] & eis F.

307. *He*] T *om.* *to* (1)] for to F. *ne* EMF] ne to T; *apparently* no P. *lyghe*] *spelt* lyhe P (*but see* l. 304); liȝen E; lyke T; likne F; likene M. *to* (2)] ne M. (*Observe that the order of words differs from* B-text.)

308. [*hem* MF] hit PET.

309. *meschifs*] myscheues M; of meschiefs T. *as*] for F. *minstracie*] mynstralcie E; mynstralsye F; menstralsie M; minstracies T.

310. *drad*] a-drad M.

311. *loore*] *so* PF; lore MET. *oþer*] & T. *lenede*] lente M. *to*] T *om.*

312. *aȝe*] *so* PEF; aȝen T; a-geyn M. *place*] places T.

313. *fyndeþ*] fynt T. *hym*] E *om.* *Who—fode*] Hou is charite y-founde G.

314. *richesses*] richesse *quod* he F. *hym*] F *om.* *hus*] MT *om.*

315. F *omits.* *ne*] G *om.* *of*] T *om.* *quaþ he*] TG *om.* *recchep*] ne recchiþ T.

316. *From* M; *also in* FTG; PE *omit.* *fynt*] fyndeth FG. *faileþ*] failide T. *þat faileþ—neuere*] & fail him he nelle F.

317. *On*] Oon F; On ys G; Domine T. *manum*] manum tuam M. *alle*] þat (*sic*) G.

Fiat-uoluntas-tua · festeþ hym eche day. Mat. vi. 10.
And also he can clergie · *credo-in-deum-patrem* Ps. xli. 6 (Vulg.).
And portreieþ [wel] þe *pater-noster* · and peynteþ hit with *auees.*
And oþer-while hus wone is · to wende in pilgrymages,
Ther poure men and prysouns beþ · and payeþ for here lyflode, He visits men in prison.
Clotheþ hem and comforteþ hem · and of crist precheþ hem,
What sorwes he suffrede · in ensample of ous alle, † He tells men of Christ's sufferings.
That pouerte and pacience · *par*fitliche ytake
Ys muche merit to þat man · þat wel may suffren.
Whan he haþ thus visited fetered folke · and oþer folke poure, 265
Then he 3erneþ in-to þouht · and 3epliche he secheþ
Pruyde, with alle þe portinaunce · and packeþ hem to-gederes,
And laueþ hem in þe lauandrie · *laboraui-in-gemitu-meo,* He works in the laundry;
And boukeþ hem at hus brest · and beteþ hit ofte, Ps. vi. 7 (Vulg.).
And with warme water of hus eyen · wokeþ hit [til hit] white;

Lauabis me, et super niuem dealbabor. † Ps. l. 9 (Vulg.).

318. *Fiat*] And fiat G. *eche*] iche a T. *eche day*] euermore F.
320. *And*] He M. *portreieþ*] portreye T. [*wel* MFTG] PE *om.* *peynteþ*] peynte T. *hit*] it wel F. *auees*] *so* PEFG; aues MT.
321. *in*] on T.
322. *payeþ*] paye T. *lyflode*] fode TG; table F.
323. *hem* (2)] F *om.* *precheþ hem*] to hem techeth F.
324. *he*] þat he F. *ensample*] saumple F. *ous*] us MF; vs TG.
325. G *omits.* *pacience*] penaunce T. *parfitliche ytake*] pacientliche taken T; þat parfitly be take F.
326. G *omits.* *Ys*] Worþ T. *muche*] gret M. *to*] for F. *wel*] it T. *may*] may hem M.
327. *Whan*] And whanne T. *thus*] M *om.* *visited* EF] visitid TG; i-visited M; visetid P. *fetered*] vetered F. *oþer folke*] EG *om.*
328. *he 3erneþ*] 3erniþ he T. *þouht*] *so all but* T, *which has* 3ouþe, *as in* B-text.
329. *þe*] here G. *portinaunce*] *so* PG; aportenaunce M; portenaunces E; purtenaunces F; appurtenaunces T. *packeþ*] pekk (*sic*) E.
330. *hem*] hym E. *þe*] G *om.* *lauandrie*] launderie T.
331. *And*] T *om.* *hem*] M *om.* *beteþ*] beeteþ P. *hit*] hem G; it ful F.
332. *warme*] wharme P. *eyen*] eiȝes T. *wokeþ*] *so* PEM; weoketh F; werkiþ T; wetiþ G. *hit—hit* M] hem til hit G; it til he F; hit he PT; hit þe (*sic*) E.

þanne syngeþ he whanne he so doþ · and som tyme wepynge,

Ps. l. 19 (Vulg.). *Cor contritum & humiliatum, deus, non despicies.*"

"Were ich with hym, by crist," quaþ ich · "ich wolde neuere fro hym,

þauh ich my by-lyue sholde•begge · a-boute at menne hacches.

Wher clerkus knowe hym nat," quaþ ich · "þat kepen holychurche?"

"Peers the plouman," quaþ he · "most parfitliche hym knoweþ;

Mat. ix. 4; Luke xi. 17. *Et uidit deus cogitationes eorum.*

266 By cloþynge ne by karpinge · knowe shalt thou hym neuere,

Ac þorw werkes þou myght wite · wher forþ he walkeþ;

† John x. 38. *Operibus credite.*

He is þe muriest of mouthe · at metes þer he sitteþ,

And compenable in companye · as crist hym-self techeþ,

267 Mat. vi. 16. *Nolite tristes fieri, sicut ypocrite.*

Ich haue seyen hym my-self · som tyme in russett,

He wears both russet and fur. Bothe in greye and in greys · and in gylt harneys,

And al-so gladliche he gyueþ · to gomes þat hit needeþ.

Edmund and Edward were kings and saints. Eadmund and edward · ayþer were seyntes,

And chief charite with hem · and chast al here lyue.

333. *þanne*] And þanne T. *he* (1)] F *om.* *whanne*] wanne P. *so doþ*] doþ so TG.

334. *quaþ ich*] G *om.*

335. *bylyue*] bileue G; bileeue F; lijflode M. *menne*] mennes F; menes M; men ET.

336. *Wher*] Wheþer EFT. *hym*] hit G. *hym nat*] nout him M.

337. *the*] M *om.* *hym*] hit G.

339. *Operibus, &c.*] MF *om.*

340. *þe*] MF *om.* *at*] atte G. *metes*] mete M.

341. *compenable*] *so* PFG; companable EM; compayniable T.

342. *seyen*] seyn E; seiȝe T; seye FG · i-seyn M.

343. *greys*] gris EFT; grys G; grees M. *and*] & also G.

344. *gyueþ*] it gaf T. *gomes—needeþ*] hem þat han nede G. *hit needeþ*] ben nedi M. *needeþ*] nedite T.

345. *ayþer*] boþe þei M; boþe F.

346. E *omits from* with hem *to* charite *in next line.* *chief*] G *om.* *al*] in alle G.

Ich haue seyen charite al-so · syngen and rede,
Ryden, and rennen · in raggede cloþes,
Ac biddyng as a beggere · by-heold ich hym neuere.
Ac in riche robes · raþest he walketh,
Y-called and ycrymyled · and hus croune shaue.
And in [a] freres frocke · he was yfounde ones,
Ac it is fer and fele ȝeres · in fraunceys tyme;
In that secte sitthe · to selde he haþ be founde.
Riche men he comendeþ · and of here robes takeþ,
Of þo þat leelliche lyuen · and louen and by-leyuen;
Beatus est diues sine macula.
In kynges court he comeþ · yf hus counsail be trewe;
Ac yf couetise be of hus counsail · he wol nat come þer-ynne.
Among þe comunes in court · he comeþ but selde,
For brawelynge and bacbytynge · and beryng of false wittnesse.
In constorie by-fore þe comissarie · he comeþ nat ful ofte,
For here lawe is ouere-longe · bote yf þei lacche seluer.
With bisshopes he wolde beo · for beggers sake,
Ac auarice oþer-whiles · halt hym with-oute þe gate.
Kynges and Cardineles · knowen hym som tyme,
Ac þorw couetise and his consail · congeied is he ofte.

348 Charity sometimes wears ragged clothes.
352 He once wore a friar's frock, long ago.
356 Ecclus. xxxi. 8.
He seldom comes to court.
268
He is seldom in the consistory.
Avarice keeps him without the gate.

347. *seyen*] i-seie M; seie F; seiȝe T; seyȝe G.
349. *by-heold*] bi-hult M.
350. *raþest*] raþerest M.
351. G *omits*. *Y-called*] Cald T. *shaue*] i-shaue ME.
352. [*a* EMFTG] P *om*. *freres*] frere FG; fair (!) T.
353. *is*] was M; T *om*. *fer* FTG] feer P; ferre E. *fer—ȝeres*] fer & fele ȝere goo F; fele ȝer ago M. *ȝeres*] ȝer MTG; ȝere F. *fraunceys*] frauncesses M.
354. *secte*] siȝte M. *to*] ful MF; wel G.
355. *comendeþ*] recomaundiþ T.
356. *by-leyuen*] bileuen MEG; beleuen T; bileeuen F.
357. *hus*] E *om*.
358. *wol—come*] comeþ nat G.
359. *comunes*] comyne G. *selde* EMTG] seilde P (*but see* l. 354); riȝt scelde F.
360. *brawelynge and*] G *om*.
361. *þe comissarie*] commissaries G. *ful*] M *om*.
362. *here—longe*] ouerlong is here lawe T. *þei*] he F.
363. *With*] For G. *bisshopes*] bihsshopes P.
364. *auarice*] auerice P. *whiles*] while MFG. *hym*] hem G. *þe gate*] þe gates E; gates F.
365. G *omits*. *knowen*] *so* PM; knewen EF; kneuȝ T.
366. G *omits*. *congeied*] conged MF; cunged T. *is he*] he is MF.

And ho so coueyteþ to know hym · such [a] kynde hym folweþ,
As ich tolde þe with tonge · a lytel tyme passed;
He neither begs nor borrows." For noþer he beggeþ, ne biddeþ · ne borweþ to ȝelde;
He halt hit a nycete · and a foul shame
To beggen oþer to borwe · bote of god one;
† Luke xi. 3. *Panem nostrum cotidianum* [*da nobis hodie*]."

Hic explicit passus septimus & ultimus de dowel.

367. E* *omits.* [*a* MFT] P *om.* *such—hym*] G *omits.*
368. *tyme*] while G. *passed*] a-passed MG; ypassid T.
369. *he beggeþ*] he ne beggiþ T; þe beggere (*sic*) M. *ne* (1)] nor F.
370. *He*] For he F. *hit*] þat F. *a nycete*] for a vice T (*which is probably right, as it suits the alliteration*). *and*] & èke F.
371. *To*] For to F. *to*] for to F. *bote*] but it be F. *Panem, &c.*] M *omits.* [*da—hodie*] *supplied from* F.
COLOPHON. *So* PG; M *omits.* *Hic*] EF *om.* *septimus &*] E *om.* T *has*—Passus septimus de dowel: & explicit.

Visio eiusdem Willelmi de Do-bet.

PASSUS XVIII. (DO-BET I.)

Incipit passus primus de dobet.

"Ther is no suche," ich seide · "þat som tyme ne borweth,
Oþer beggeþ oþer byddeþ · beo he ryche oþer poure,
And ȝut oþer-while wroþ · with-oute eny synne."
"Ho so is wroþ and wolde be awreke · holi wryt," quaþ he, "proueþ.
He passeþ chief charite · if holichurche beo trewe;
Caritas omnia suffert.
Holy writ witnesseþ · þer were suche eremites,
Solitarie by hem-self · and in here selles lyueden
Wiþ-oute borwynge oþer beggynge · bote of god one;
Excepte þat egidie · an hynde oþer-while
To hus selle selde cam · and suffrede to be melked.
Elles fouweles fedden hem · in frythes þer þei woneden,
Boþe antonye and erseny · and oþer mo fele.
Paul *primus heremita* · hadde parroked hym-selue,

† "There is no one," said I, "but sometimes borrows or is wroth."
† "He that is wroth hath not charity.
† 1 Cor. xiii. 7.
(269)
† Once there were hermits,
like Egidius,
270
† Anthony, and Arsenius.
Paul the first

TITLE. *So* PFG; M *prefixes* Hic; E *omits* passus; T *omits*.
2. *ryche—poure*] neuere so riche M.
3. *with*] whith P.
4. *so*] T *om.* *quaþ—proueþ*] preuiþ *quod* he T.
5. *He*] þat he F. *chief*] F *om.* *if*] ȝif FT; and M; *miswritten* hif P. *trewe* EMFTG] trywe P; *so also in* ll. 15, 33.
6. *witnesseþ*] whitnesseþ P; with-nesseþ M. *þer were*] þat G.
7. *and*] MT *om.* *selles*] celles E.
8. *Wiþ*] Whiþ P.
9. *egidie*] Egide T; seint egidie F.
10. *selle*] celle E, *selde* EMTG] seilde P; seelde F. *to*] T *om.*
11. *hem*] him M; hym TG. *frythes*] friþ M.
12. *erseny*] arseny T; arceny M. *mo fele*] ful manye T.
13. *parroked*] i-parroket M; parlokkid (*sic*) T.

hermit founded the Augustine friars.

That no man myghte se hym · for muche mos and leues ;
Foweles hym fedde · yf frere austyn be trewe ;
For he ordeynede þat ordre · other elles þei gabben.

St Paul made baskets.

Paul after his prechynge · panyeres he made,
And wan with hus hondes · al þat hym neodyde.

St Peter fished.

Peter fysshed for hus fode · and hus fere Andreu ;
Som thei solde, and som thei sode · and so þei leueden boþe.

Mary Magdalen lived in desert places.

Marie magdalene · by mores leuede and dewes ;
Loue and leel by-leuye · heeld lyf and soule to-gedere.

† Mary of Egypt ate 3 loaves in 30 years.

Maria egyptiaca · eet in þyrty wynter
Bote þre lytel loues · and loue was her souel.
Ich can nat rekene hem ryght now · ne reherce here names,
That lyueden þus for oure lordes loue · meny longe ȝeres,
With-oute borwyng o*þer* beggyng · oþer þe bok lyeþ,
And woneden in wildernesse · a-mong wilde bestes ;

271

No wild beast harmed them.

Ac dorst no best byten hem · by daye ne by nyghte,
Bote myldeliche, whan þei metten · maden louh chere,
And feyre by-fore þo men · fauhnede with þe tayles.

God fed them by birds, not by beasts.

Ac bestes brouhte hem no mete · bot onliche þe fouweles,

14. *muche*] TG *om.* *leues*] for leues TG.

15. *Foweles*] And foul*us* F. *frere*] M *om.* *austyn*] austyns F ; austynes T (*wrongly*).

16. *þat*] her F. *gabben* EMTG] gabbyn P ; fowle gabben F.

17. *his*] is P.

18. *with*] whith P ; *and in* l. 31. *neodyde*] nedede MFG ; neded E ; nedite T.

19. G *omits.* *hus* (2)] for his E. *fere*] felow F.

20. G *omits.* *solde*] sode T. *sode*] sente M ; sende F ; solde T ; toke E. *leueden*] lyueden EM.

21. *by—dewes*] be mores · lyuede ȝeres and daies M ; heo leuede · bi moor*us* and bi dewes F ; by meris mylk lyuede & Ewis (!) T.

22. *Loue*] Her loue F. *leel*] her leel F. *heeld*] held TG ; halt M.

23. *eet*] *so* PMTG ; ete E ; eet but F.

24. *souel*] *so* PEMG ; sowel F ; soul T.

25. *ne*] nor F ; & G.

27. *With*] Whit P ; *and in* ll. 73, 79.

28. *wildernesse*] wilder nessis T.

29. *ne*] nor F ; noþer M.

30. G *omits.* *louh*] low M ; lowe EMF. *chere* EMT] cheere F ; chire P.

31. G *omits.* *by-fore*] bi-forn M. *þo*] þe MT. *men*] folk F. *fauhnede*] fauȝned E ; faunede M ; faunide T ; faynede F. *þe*] heore M.

32. *Ac*] & F. *fouweles*] foules EMG ; foulis T ; foul*us* F.

In tokenynge þat trewe man · alle tymes sholde
Fynde honeste men [and] holy men · and oþer ryghtful peuple.
For wolde neuere feithful god · þat freres and monkes token
Lyflode of luþer wynnynges · in al here lif-tyme. 36
As wytnesseþ holy writ · what thobie seyde
To his wif, whan he was blynde · [he] herde a lamb blete;
'A! wyf! be war,' quaþ he · 'what ȝe haue here-ynne;
Lord leyue,' quaþ þe lede · 'no stole þyng be here!' 40
Videte ne furtum sit: & alibi, melius est mori quam male uiuere.
This is no more to mene · bote men of holychurche
Sholde receyue ryght nauȝt · bot þat ryght wolde,
And refuse reuerences · and raueneres offrynges. 43
Thenne wolde lordes and ladies · be loth for to agulte,
And to take of here tenauns · more þan treuthe wolde;
And marchauns merciable wolde be · and men of lawe boþe.
Wolde religiouse refuse · raueneres almesse,
Then grace sholde growe ȝut · and grene-leued wexe, 48
And charite, þat child is now · sholde chaufen of [him-] self,
And confortye alle cristene · wold holy[kirke] amende.

† Remember what Tobit said to his wife.

† Tobit ii. 21.

Lords would not exact too much, if friars took no alms from robbers.

† Then should Charity grow warm.

33. *man*] men M. *tymes*] time G.
34. [*and* MFTG] in PE. *men* (2)] T *om.*
35. *god* EMTFG] goud P. *token*] taken E.
37. *writ* EFTG] writt P; writh M. *what*] what þat F; as M.
38. *To—wif*] *at end of* l. 37 *in* T. *his*] is P. *blynde*] blynd as a betil T. [*he* MFTG] PE *om.*
39. *A*] T *om.* *A wyf*] Woman F. *ȝe haue*] haue we T. *here-ynne*] þer-Inne E.
40. *leyue*] *so* PE; leue MTG; leeue F. *þe*] þat EMFG. *no*] þat no T. *here*] here-Inne EMTG. *no—here*] þat it be nat of stelthe F. *& alibi*] M *om.*
42. *nauȝt* MFT] nauth P.
43. *offrynges*] offryng MF; conge (!) G.
44. *for*] TG *om.*
45. *And*] Or F. *to*] forte M. *tenauns*] tenauntes MEFG.
47. *religiouse*] religioun M. *almesse*] almesses M; almus F; offringes T.
48. *ȝut*] F *om.* *leued*] levus F; loue (!) T; leues G.
49. *child*] *so* PET; cold MF; scheld G. *chaufen*] chawfe F; chafen E; chaunce T. [*him* MF] hem PETG.
50. *confortye*] confort E; comforte MFG; counforten T. [*kirke* T] churche PEFG; chirche M.

Iob þe parfit patriark · þis prouerbe wrot and tauhte,
To makye a man louye mesure · þat monkes beeþ and Freres;

272 Job vi. 5.
Nunquam, dicit Iob, rugiet onager cum habuerit herbam, aut mugiet bos cum ante plenum presepe steterit? Brutorum animalium natura te condempnat, quia cum pabulum sufficiat commune, ex adipe prodiit iniquitas.

Unlearned men might hence learn to give less to monks.
Yf lewede men knewe this latyn · a litel þei wolde auisen hem
Er thei amorteisede eny more · for monkes oþer for chanons.

Why should lords leave lands away from their heirs?
Alas! lordes and ladies · lewede counsail haue [ȝe]
Þat founded beþ to fulle · to feffe suche and fede
With þat ȝoure barnes and ȝoure blod · by goode lawe may cleyme!
For god bad hus blessede · as þe book techeþ,

† Exod. xx. 12.
Honora patrem & matrem, [ut longeuus sis, &c.]

To helpe þy fader formest · by-fore freres and monkes,
And er prestes oþer pardoneres · oþer eny peuple elles.

† Charity begins at home.
Help þi kynne, crist bit · for þer by-gynneþ charite,
And afterwarde awaite · hoo haþ moost neede,
And þer help yf þou hast · and þat halde ich Charite.

† Observe what St Lawrence did.
Loo! laurence for hus largenesse! · as holy lore telleþ,

52. *To*] & T. *makye*] make MFTG. *a man*] men MFG. *louye*] *so* PE; loue MFTG. *ante*] ante eum PET; *but* MF *om.* eum. *sufficiat commune*] commune sufficiat MFG. *iniquitas*] iniquitas tua T.

53. *knewe—latyn*] þis latyn knew F. *þei*] E *om.*

54. *Er*] Or EMFG. *amorteisede*] enmorteiside M; morteysede G. *for* (2)] FG *om.*

55. E *omits last halves of* ll. 55 *and* 56. [*ȝe* MFTG] we P; *cf.* B-text.

56. To feffe swiche and fede · þat founden ben at þe folle M; To feffe suche & feede · *þat* founded be to þe fulle FT; To feffen suche & fynde · þat founde biþ atte fulle G.

57. *With*] Be T. *by*] wiþ G. *may*] myȝt G.

58. *hus*] þe MF. *blessede* MFG] blesside P; blessid childir T; blesse (*wrongly*) E. *book*] book us F. *techeþ*] telleþ MF. [*ut—&c.*] *in* F *only.*

59. *Here* I *begins again.* *and*] or T.

60. *And*] Or ITG. *er*] or ME; ar FI; T *om.* *er prestes*] oþer peple G.

61. *for*] & F. *þer*] her M.

62. T *omits.* *awaite*] awhaite P.

63. T *omits.* *and—Charite*] & þan hadde ich charite E; for charite I it halde F; & þat halt charite G.

64. *lore*] writh M.

þat hus mede and hus man-hede · for euere-more shal laste;

Iusticia eius manet in eternum. † Ps. cx. 3 (Vulg.).

He gaf godes men [godes] goodes · and nat to grete lordes,

And fedde þat a-fyngred were · and in defaute lyueden.

Ich dar nat carpe of clerkes now · þat cristes tresoure kepen, † Clerks that keep Christ's treasure spend money on apparel and concubines.

That poure peuple by pure ryght · here part thei myghten aske;

Of þat [þat] holychurche · of þe olde lawe cleymeþ,

Priestes on aparail · and on purnele spenen.

Men may lykne letterid men · to a lussheborgh, oþer werse, 274

And to a badde peny · with a good preynte.

For of muche moneye · þe metal is ryght nauht, Of counterfeit coin.

ʒut is þe prente pure trewe · an parfitliche graue.

And so it fareþ by false cristine · here follouht is trewe,

Cristendome of holy[kirke] · þe kynges marke of heuene;

Ac þe metal, þat is mannes saule · of meny of þese techeres Man's soul is alloyed with sin.

Is alayed with lecherie · and oþer lustes of synne,

66. [*godes* MG] goddes I; godis T; his F; PE *om.* *to*] I *om.*

67. *a-fyngred*] *so* PEFG; a-fyngrit T; of-hongret M; anhungred I.

68. *dar* IMFTG] der P; derre E. *In the margin of* M—contra clericos.

69. *thei*] IFTG *om.*

70. *Of*] And of F. [*þat* MFITG] PE *om.* *of þe*] by G.

71. *on* (1)] in heore M. *spenen*] spenden M; spendeth F; now spene I; now spenden T; now speneþ G.

72. *Men*] Me I. *may*] may now IT. *lykne*] likne FTG; likene MI; liken E. *a*] TG *om.* *lussheborgh*] luhssheborgh P; luscheborgh E; losscheburgh I; lusscheburne MFT; luscheboru G. *werse*] a wurse F.

73. *And*] & eke F. *preynte*] preente I; prente MFT.

74. *For*] IT *om.* *moneye*] mone þat is mad T. *ryght*] IT *om.* *nauht*] feble F.

75. *ʒut*] & ȝit IT. *is*] *follows* prente *in* T. *an*] and MI; & EFTG. *graue*] i-graue MFITG.

76. *follouht*] folloȝt E; fullynge MI; folewyng T; preente F. *trewe*] triwe P (*but see* l. 75); ful trewe F. *is trewe*] y trowe I.

77. [*kirke* I] churche PEFG; chirche MT. *þe kynges*] ys cristes G.

78. *mannes*] many (!) T. *meny of*] I *om.* *þese*] F *om.*

79. *Is*] Hit is F. *synne*] synnes I.

That god coueiteþ nat [þe] coygne · þat crist hym-self prentede;

And for synne of [þe] soule · for-sakeþ hus owne coygne.

† Bad men are like counterfeit coin.

Thus are þe lithere lykned · to lussheborue sterlinges,
That faire by-fore folke · prechen and techen,
And worchen nat as þei fynden wryten · and wissen þe peuple.

For what þorw werre and wrake · and wycked hyfdes,

† No prayer now brings peace.

May no preiour pees make · in no place, hit semeþ;
Lewede men hauen no by-leyue · so letterid men erren.

† The fruits of the earth and sea fail.

Neiþer þe see ne þe sande · ne þe seed ȝeldeþ
As þei woned were; · in wham is defaute?
Nat in god, þat he nys good · and þe grounde boþe;
And þe see and þe seed · the sonne and þe mone
Don her deuer day and nyȝt · and yf we duden also,
Ther sholde be plente and pees · perpetuel for euere.

Weatherwise men are now-a-days at fault.

[Wederwise] shupmen now · and oþer witty peuple
Han no by-leyue to þe lyft · ne to þe lood-sterre;
Astronomyens al day · in here art faillen,

80. [*þe* EMIFTG] þat P. *coygne*] *so* PE; coyne MFIG; coyn T. *prentede* MIFT] preentede PE; *preynted* G.

81. *And*] But F. *synne*] þe synne IT. [*þe* EMIFTG] P *om.* *coygne*] marke F.

82. *þe*] þese M; ȝe I. *lykned*] lyknede P; likned EFG; i-likened MI; ylikned T. *lussheborue*] luhssheborue P; luscheborue E; losscheborwes I; lusscheburne MF; lussheb*o*urnis T; luschebornes G. *sterlinges*] starlyng*us* FG; starlyng T.

83. *faire*] so fair F. *by-fore*] biforn þe M.

84. *And*] F *om.* *þei*] ȝe I. *wryten*] i-writen M; y-write IT. *and*] ne MF. *wissen*] wisse nat F.

85. *For—þorw*] What so þourgh G. *hyfdes*] heuedes MTG; hedes EIF.

86. *pees make*] make pees F.

87. F *omits.* *Lewede*] þat lewede M. *so*] and I.

88—93. G *omits.*

88. *þe* (1)] ITF *om.* *þe* (2)] IMFT *om.* *þe* (3)] no I. *In margin of* M —defect*us* populi.

89. *As*] As þat F. *woned*] I-woned F; I-wont T. *is*] is þe M.

90. *nys*] ne is F. *good* IMFT] goud P.

91. *the*] and þe I.

92. *deuer*] dyuer M; deuyer I. *nyȝt* EMFIT] nyȝth P. *duden*] dyden F; dede IT. *also*] eke F. *and—also*] dede we so also IT.

93. *sholde*] ich holde E. *and*] of M. *for*] IT *om.*

94. [*Wederwise* I] Wonderwyse PEMFTG; *but see* B-text. *shupmen*] schipmen IFG; chappmen M; shuppen (*sic*) E. *witty*] wise F.

95. *lyft*] liȝt F. *lood-sterre*] lodesterres PEIT; *but* MFG *have* lodesterre, *which is of course right.*

96. *day*] day now F.

That whilom warned men by-fore · what shoulde by-falle after.
Shupmen and shephurdes · by the seuen sterres
Wisten while and tolden · whenne hit shoulde reynen.
Tyliers þat tyleden þe erthe · tolden here maystres
By þe seed þat þei sowe · what þei shoulde notye,
And what lyue by and lene · þe londe was so trewe.
Now failleþ þis folke · boþe sowers and shupmen,
Noþer þei knoweþ ne conneþ · o cours by-a-noþer.
Astronomyens al-so · aren at here wittes end;
Of þat was calculed of þe clymat · the contrarye þey fyndeth.
Grammere, þat grounde is of alle · by-gyleþ now children;
For þer is nouthe non · who so nymeþ hede,
That can [versifie] fayre · oþer formeliche endite,
Ne þat can construen kyndeliche · þat poetes maden.
Gowe now to eny degre · and, bote gyle be halde a mayster,

Tillers could once calculate the yield of the soil;

but are now at a loss.

There are none now who can versify.

97. *whilom* IFTG] whilen PE; wel lome M. *by-falle*] fallen F.
98. *Shupmen*] Schipmen MFTG; Schepmen EI.
99. *while*] wel I; wel ofte M; sum tyme F. *hit*] þat hit M.
100. *tyleden*] tiliede I; tilied F; tilide T. *þat tyleden*] of M. *tolden*] sum tyme toold F. *here*] to heore M.
101. *notye*] notiȝe M; note FG. *shoulde notye*] sullé myghte I; selle miȝte T.
102. *was*] whas P; ys (*wrongly*) G.
103. *Now*] But now F. *þis*] our F. *sowers*] felders F; folwers I. *shupmen*] schipmen MFITEG.
104. *knoweþ*] ne knoweþ I. *conneþ*] kunneþ E; cunne M; þei can F. *o*] on M. *a-noþer*] an oþer EMG.
105. *aren*] ben ME (*badly*). *al-so aren*] arn also · alle F. *here wittes*] *miswritten* ere whittes P.
106. *calculed*] i-calkuled M. *was calculed*] þei calcle F.
107—110. G *omits*.
107. *þat—is*] þat is ground M; þe grounde I. *now*] nowþe MF; nouthe I; now þe T.
108. *per is*] is þer M; is I. *nouthe*] now E; now of hem F; IT *om*. *nouthe non*] no withg now M. *hede* EMIT] heede F; *miswritten* hete P.
109. *That*] T *om*. [*versifie* IFT] uersefiȝe M; versfy E; uersie P. *versifie fayre*] faire versifie F. *oþer*] ne M. *formeliche*] foormally F; formaly T. OBS. T *wrongly makes* ll. 108, 109 *into* one *line; and* I *makes* ll. 108—110 *into* two *lines*.
110. *þat can*] I *om*. *þat* (2)] þat þe M. *maden*] haue maked F.
111. *Gowe*] *so* PEI; Go we MFTG. *and*] F *om*. *bote*] I *om*. *halde*] i-holde M; holde ITG; hadde E; F *om*. *a*] M *om*.

And a flaterer for hus vsshere · [a] ferliche me þynkeþ !
Masters of divinity know no logic. Doctours of decree · and of dyuyn maystres,
That shoulde þe seuene ars conne · and a-soile *ad quodlibet*,
Bote þei faille in fylosophye · —and filosophers lyueden,
[And wolde wel examene hem— · wonder me þynkeþ !]
Even churchmen, perhaps, skip the 276 services. Lord leyue þat þese preestes · leelly seyn here masses,
That þei ouerhuppe nat for hast ! · as ich hope thei do nat,
[þogh] hit suffise for oure sauacion · sothfast by-leyue ;
As clerkus in *corpus-christi* feste · syngen and reden,
Mere faith, they say, suffices. That *sola fides sufficit* · to saue with lewede peuple.
Ac yf preestes do her deuer wel · we shullen do þe bettere.
† Even Saracens might thus be saved. For saresyns mowe be saued so · yf þei so by-leyuede,
In þe lengthynge of here lyf · to leyue on holychurche."
† Holy-Church is charity, life, love, truth, in one belief and law. "What is holychurche, frend ?" quoþ ich · "charite," he seyde,
"Lyf, and loue, and leaute · in o by-leyue [and] lawe,
[A loue-knotte] of leaute · and of leel by-leyue,

112. *a—for*] false flaterer F. *for*] G *om.* *a*] I *om.* *vsshere* T] vsschere E; vschere IF; vsscher M; husshere PG. [*a* FT] and PEI; MG *om.* *ferliche*] ferlich E; ferly IFTG; wonder M.

113. *of* (1)] now of F. *decree*] *so* PE; decre MFI; degre T; decreete G. *dyuyn*] deuyn MG; diuinite IT.

114. *ars*] arts F; M *om.* *ad*] a ITFG.

115. *faille*] failede M. *in*] in þe T. *and*] E *om.* *and—lyueden*] a ferly me thinketh F (*from* l. 112).

116. *From* M; *not in* PEIFTG, *which leave the sentence incomplete ; cf.* B. xv. 376.

117. *leyue*] *so* PE; leue MFTG; lete I. *masses*] masse MIT.

118. *That þei*] And nat to F. *ouerhuppe*] *so* PG; ouerhippe EFIT; ouerlippe M.

119. [*þogh* I] þoȝ E; þowh F; þhaw M; þauȝ G; þeiȝ T; That P; *cf.* B. xv. 380. *suffise* EFT] suffice IG; soffice M; suffuse P. *for*] to T. *oure*] F *om.*

121. *with*] whith P; *and in* ll. 129, 130, 131, 134.

122. *deuer*] dyuer M. *yf—her*] doctours dooth ȝour F. *we*] & we F; *miswritten* whe P.

123. G *omits.* *by-leyuede*] bileue MFT.

124. G *omits.* *lengthynge*] letyng I; lettyng T; (*this may seem better ; but cf.* Lyf *in* l. 126.) *leyue*] leue EMIT; leeue F.

125. *frend*] dere frende IT; F *om.*

126. *Lyf*] Leue (*wrongly*) T. *o*] on M; oo F. [*and* M] & oo F; a PEIG; of T.

127. [*A—knotte* MFITG] And loue a knotte PE.

Alle kynne cristene · cleuynge on o wyl,
With-oute gyle and gabbynge · gyue and selle and lene.
Loue lawe with-oute leaute · lowable was it neuere;
God lereþ no lyf to loue · with-oute leel cause:
Iewes, gentiles, and sarrasines · Iugen hem-selue
That leeliche þei by-leyuen · and ȝut here lawe [dyuerseþ];
And on god þat al by-gan · with goode herte þei honoureþ,
[And eiþer loueþ, and bileuiþ · in on lord al-myȝti.]
Ac oure lorde loueþ no loue · bote lawe be þe cause;
For lechours louen aȝen þe lawe · and at þe laste beeþ dampned:
And theeues [louen, and] leaute haten · and at þe laste beeþ hanged:
And leelle men louen as lawe techeþ · and loue þer-of aryseþ,
The which is hefd of charite · and hele of mannes soule.

Dilige deum propter deum; id propter ueritatem est. Et inimicum tuum propter mandatum; id propter legem est. Et amicum propter amorem; id est, propter caritatem.

Loue God, for he is good · and grounde of alle treuthe;
Loue þyn enemy entyerly · godes heste to ful-fille;

† Jews and Saracens think their belief is *true*.

† Lechers love against *law*, and perish; thieves love against *truth*, and are hanged.

† Love God, because of the *truth*; and your enemy, because of the *law*; and your friend because of *charity*.

128. *cleuynge* E] cleuyng FTG; cleueynge I; *a better spelling than* clyuynge P; cleymyng (*wrongly*) M. *on*] in I.

129. *and* (1)] or M. *and* (2)] G *om.* *and* (3)] T *om.* *lene*] lene & loue T (*which omits* Loue *in* l. 130).

130. *lowable*] allowable TI; alowable FG.

132. *gentiles and*] and gentil I; & ientil T.

133. [*dyuerseþ* EMIFTG] dyuersen P.

134. *on*] o ITG; oo F; of E.

135. *From* M; *also in* IFGT; PE *om.* *eiþer*] ayþer IG; aither oþur F. *bileueþ*] leeueth F.

136. *loueþ*] alloweþ I.

138. [*louen and* T] louyen and I; PEMFG *om.* (*But cf.* ll. 137, 139.) *theeues—at*] lurdeynus þat lewte hate · at F. *hanged*] i-hanget M.

139. *And—as*] Ac leel loueth & F. *men*] G *om.* *louen*] lyue I.

140. *hefd*] hed EMFG; þe hede I; þe heuid T. *For* id, MITG *have* i., *and omit* est (*thrice*); F *has* id est *the first time only, and* i. *afterwards.*

142. *entyerly*] enterli M; enterly EG.

† Love one friend especially, viz. thine own soul.

Loue þy frend þat folweþ þy wil · þat is [þy] faire soule.
For whanne alle frendes faillen · and fleen a-wey in deiynge, 144
Then suweþ þe þy soule · to sorwe oþer to ioye,
And ay hopeþ eft to be · with here bodye atte laste

† Charity is to be dear (*cher*) to thy soul.

In murthe oþer in mornynge · and neuere eft to departe.
And þat is charite, my leue childe · to be cher ouer thi soule; 148
Contrarie hure nauht, as in conscience · yf þou wolt come to heuene."
"[Wher] sarrasyns," ich seyde · "seo nat what is charite?"

† Saracens have some charity; for they love God their Creator.

"Hit may be þat sarrasyns hauen · a suche manere charite, 151
Louye, as by lawe of kynde · oure lord god al-myghty.
Hit is a kynde þyng, a creature · hus creatour to honoure;
For þer is no man þat mynde hath · þat ne meokeþ hym and by-secheþ 154
To þat lord þat hym lyf lente · and lyflode him sendeþ.

† But many love Him not aright.

Ac meny manere men þer beoþ · as sarrasyns and Iewes,
Louyeþ nat þat lorde a-ryght · as by þe legende *sanctorum*, 157

143. [*þy* EIG] þi MFT; þe P.
144. *alle*] þi F. *deiynge*] *so* PE; deyyng G; deiyng M; dyyng F; deynge I; doyng (!) T.
145. *þe*] so G. *þy*] IT *om.*
146. *eft to*] for to FTG; forte M. *with*] whit P; *and in* l. 166. *here*] F *om.* *atte*] at þe MTG.
147. *eft*] F *om.*
148. *my*] IT *om.* *leue*] F *om.* *child*] sone M. *cher*] cheer F. *ouer*] of G. *be—ouer*] loue wel M.
149. *as*] F *om.* *to*] in T.
150. [*Wher*] Where IG; Whare F; Were P (*for* Wher, *contr. form of* Wheþer); Wheþer ET; For (*wrongly*) M. *ich seyde*] seiden (*wrongly*) M. *nat*] now M. *seo*] i-se I.
151. F *omits.* *be*] be so ITG. *a suche*] swich a M; such a ITG.
152. *Louye*] Louen T; To loue F. *by*] be þe M.
153. *a kynde*] kende F; kyndely IT. *a*] for a M; euery T; IG *om.* *to*] G *om.*
154. *For*] F *om.* *is*] nys FT. *mynde*] kynde M. *ne*] M *om.*
155. *lyf*] F *om.* *and*] I *om.* *him*] M *om.* *sendeþ* EMFG] sende I; sente T; seyndeþ P.
157. *Louyeþ—þat*] Leuiþ nat on oure T.

And lyuen oute of leel by-leyue · for thei leyue in a mene. 158

A man þat hihte makamede · for messye thei hym heolde, (276)
And after hus lerynge thei lyuen · and by lawe of kynde.
And when kynde hath hus cours · and no contrarye fyndeth, 161

The Saracens suppose Mahomet to be the Messiah.

þenne is lawe lost · and lewete vnknowen.
Beaute saunz bounte · blessed was hit neuere,
Ne kynde *saunz cortesie* · In no contreye preysed. 164

Men fyndeþ þat makamede · was a man ycrystned,
And a cardinal of court · a gret clerk with-alle,
And porsuede to haue be pope · pryns of holychurche;
And for he was lyke a lussheborgh · ich leyue oure lord hym lette. 168

Mahomet was a Christian once, and wanted to be pope, but failed.

For-thi souhte he in-to surrye · and sotile[d] hou he myghte
Beo mayster ouer alle þo men · and on þis manere wroughte.
He endauntede a douue · day and nyght here fedde;
In aiþer of hus eris · pryueliche he hadde 172
Corn, þat þe coluer eet · when he cam in places.

He then went to Syria and tamed a dove.

He used to put corn in his ears.

158. *And*] But F. *in*] on IG.

159. *hihte*] he hęte E. *makamede*] makemed E; makamete MF; makameþ I; macumeþ T (*here and elsewhere*). *heolde*] helde EG; hoolde F; holdeth IT; holden M.

160. *lerynge*] lernyng G. *and*] as M. *by*] bi þe MF.

162. E *omits*. *lawe*] þat lawe F. *lost*] i-lost MF; y-left ITG. *vnknowen*] vnknowyn P; vnknowe MIFTG.

163. *saunz*] sauiþ (l) T; *and in* l. 164.

164. *Ne*] No T; And M. *preysed*] i-preised MG; is y-preisid IT.

165. *Men*] Me I. *fyndeþ*] fynde wel I; fynt wel T.

167. *And*] He M. *be*] *so* PEMFI; beo G; ben T.

168. *And*] Ac I. *was*] whas P. *lyke*] lik to M. *lussheborgh*] louhssheborgh P; luscheborȝ E; lossceburgh I; lusscheburne MFT; lussheborue G.

169. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *souhte*] souȝte EMFIT; southte P. *he*] I *om*. *souhte he*] he souȝte M. *in-to*] in E. *surrye*] surye IG; sorie M. *sotiled* I] sotilide T; sotelede G; sotelde M; *miswritten* sotile PE; sȯuled F.

170. *ouer*] of M. *and*] F *om*. *Before* wroughte MIFTG *insert* he.

171. *douue*] dowue *or* downe MG; doun IT; coluer (*over an erasure*) E. *day*] and day IFG.

172. *In*] þan in F.

173. *þat þe*] I *om*. *þat*] G *om*. *þe*] T *om*. *coluer*] culuur F. *eet*] *so* PMFIG; ete E; et T. *in*] in-to F. *places*] place G.

And in what place he prechede · and þe peuple tauhte,
Then the dove pecked at his ears for the corn. Then sholde þe coluere come · to the clerkes ere,
Menynge as after mete · thus makamede here enchauntede. 176
And whan þe coluer kam þus · þenne [knelede] þe peuple,
277 Mahomet gave out that the dove was the messenger of God. For makemede to men swor · 'hit was a messager of heueue,
And sothly god self · in suche a coluere lyknesse
Tolde hym and tauhte hym · hou to teche þe peuple.'
Thus he misled many. Thus makamede in mysbyleyue · man and womman brouhte, 181
And in hus lore thei leyuen ȝut · as wel lered as lewede.
Since our Saviour suffered this, And sutthe oure sauyour suffrede · suche a fals crystine
Deceyue so sarrasyns · sothly me thynkeþ, 184
† holy men should now convert these Saracens. Holy men, as ich hope · thorw help of þe holy gost,
Sholde conuerten hem to crist · and cristendom [to] take.
281 Alas! þat men so longe · on makamede by-leyuen,
See how many bishops the pope makes! So meny [prelates] to preche · as þe [pope] makeþ, 188
Of Nazareth, of Nynyve · of Neptalym, of damaske,
That thei ne wendeþ þe wey · as holy writ biddeth,

174. *he*] þat he F.

176. *mete*] hus mete PE; her meete F; hure mete G; *but* MIT *omit* hus *or* her; *cf.* B-text. *thus*] so F.

177. [*knelede* MIT] kneled F; knelde G; knewele P; knewlen E.

178. *For*] F *om.* *men*] hem M. *to—swor*] swoor to men F. *hit*] he G. *of*] fro E.

179. *god*] þat god I. *self*] himself MF. *suche*] G *om.*

180. *to*] he schulde M.

181. *man—womman*] men and wemmen M.

182. *in*] *so* PEMFG; on IT, *as in* B-text. *leyuen*] leuen IEG; leue T; lyuen M; lyue F.

184. *so*] so þe IFT; þe G.

185. *ich hope*] þe pope (!) E. *þe —gost*] god almyȝti F.

186. *and*] F *om.* [*to* IMFT] PEG *om.*

OBS. *After* l. 186, M *inserts* l. 288; *see note below, to* l. 187.

187. *on*] in I. *by-leyuen*] beleuid T.

OBS. *Here the subject-matter is misarranged in* M; l. 188 *appears* 30 *lines further on.*

188. [*prelates* IFTG] priestes PE; prestes M; *cf.* B. xv. 485. *preche*] prechie P. [*pope* EMIFTG] peuple (!) P.

189. *of* (4)] and of M.

190. *wendeþ*] wente IT. *þe wey*] in world T; I *om.* *as*] þat G. *bideth* EFM] biddith P; byddeþ G; bitte I; bit T.

Ite in universum mundum · sutthe ȝe wilneþ þe name — Mark xvi. 15.
To be prelates, and preche · þe passion of Ihesus,
And as hym-self seyde · so lyue and deye;
Bonus pastor animam suam ponit pro ouibus suis. — John x. 11.
Hit is reuthe to rede · hou ryght holy men lyueden, — Good men of old suffered many things.
How thei defouleden here fleessh · for-soken here owen wil,
Fer fro kuth and fro kyn · vuel-cloþed ȝeoden,
Baddeliche beddyd · no book bote here conscience,
Noþer richesse bote þe rode · to reioysen hem inne;
Absit [nobis] gloriari nisi in cruce domini nostri iesu christi. — Gal. vi. 14.
And þo was pees and plente · a-mong poure and riche;
And now is reuthe to rede · hou þe rede noble — The noble is now preferred to the cross.
Ys yreuerenced by-fore þe rode · and receyuyd for þe worthier
To a-mende and to make · as with men of holichurche,
Than cryst, oþer croys þat ouercam · deþ and dedly synne!— — 282
And now is werre and wo · and ho so 'whi' askeþ,
For couetyse after a croys · þe croune stant in golde. — All men honour

191, 192. T *makes* sutthe—Ihesus *into* one *line;* I *begins a new line with* Sitthe (*for* Sutthe), *and wrongly divides* ll. 191—193.
192. *To be*] of T. *Ihesus*] crist M.
193. *so*] so to I; to MG. *deye*] to deien M; to deye G; T *puts* ponit *before* animam. *ponit*] dat M.
194. *ryght*] F *om.*
195. *for-soken*] & forsoke FTG.
196. *Fer* MITG] Fere E; Feer P. *Fer fro*] & fro here F. *kuth*] couthe I; kyþ M; kith FT. *fro* (2)] F *om.* *vuel*] euel IF; euele M; yuel E. *cloþed*] i-cloþed MI. *ȝeoden*] þei ȝede T; hy ȝede G.
197. *Baddeliche*] Ful baddeliche F. *beddyd*] ybedded EIT; i-bedded M. *no*] & (!) G.
198. G *omits.* *Noþer*] Ne no IT; No M. *richesse*] riche I; richchesses F. *reioysen* I] reioyesen P; reioyse E; reiosche F; reioisshen T; reioie M. [*nobis* IG] vobis T; nos PEM; michi F; *cf.* B-text. *Absit nobis*] Michi autem absit F.
199. *þo*] E *om.*
200. *now*] G *om.* *to*] for to F.
201. *receyuyd*] reuerensid (*repeated*) T. *for—worthier*] as for beture F. *worthier*] worschepour M.
202. G *omits.* *with*] whit P; T *om.*
203. *Than*] In I. *oþer*] on M; þat (!) E. *cryst oþer*] cristes IT.
204. *And*] M *om.*
205. *For*] For þe F. *a*] þe F; G *om.* *stant*] *so* PEFG; stande I; stand M; standiþ T.

the *cross* that is engraved upon coins.

Boþe riche and religiouse · that rode þei honouren
þat in grotes is y-graue · and in gold nobles.
For couetyse of þat croys · clerkes of holychurche
Schullen ouerturne as templers duden · þe tyme aprocheþ faste.

The fall of the Templars.

Mynne 3e nat, lettered men · hou þo men honourede
More tresour [þan] treuthe? · ich dar nat telle þe sothe
How þo corsede crystine · catel and richesse worshepeden;
Reyson and Ri3tful dome · þe religious damnede.
Right so, 3e clerkus, 3oure couetise · er come ouht longe,
Shal dampne *dos ecclesie* · and depose 3ow for 3oure pruyde;

Luke i. 52.

Deposuit potentes de sede.

Yf kny3t-hod and kynde wit · and þe comune and conscience
To-gederes louen leelliche · leyueþ hit wel, bisshopes,

Bishops shall live like Levites.

[þe] lordshup of londes · leese 3e shulle for euere,
And lyuen as *leuitici* dude · and as our lord 3ow techeþ,

Cf. Deut. xii. 6.

Per primicias et decimas.

Constantine's gift condemned by an angel.

Whenne constantyn of hus cortesye · holy[kirke] dowede

207. *y-graue*] graue I; grauen M. *gold*] goldene G. *gold nobles*] nobles of golde M.

208. *þat*] þe IF.

209. *Schullen*] Schulde I; Schal F. *templers*] þe templeris T; þe temple (!) I. *duden*] *so* PMEG; deden F; dede IT. *aprocheþ*] comiþ G.

210. *Mynne*] Mynewe T; Mene M; Wyte G. *nat*] I *om.* *lettered*] 3e lettred MF. *þo*] þat G.

211. [*þan* IMETG] þan þe F; P *om.* *sothe* EMIFTG] southe P.

212. *þo*] þe EFG.

213. *Reyson*] þat resoun F. *and*] as E. *þe*] *so* PEIT; þo MF. *religious* EMFT] religiouns I; *miswritten* relious (*by a mere slip*) P; *see* l. 206. *dome—religious*] þo freris of religion G.

214. *3e*] EFG *om.* *3oure*] þoru3 T. *er*] ar I; or EMG; 3e 3it or (*sic*) F.

215. *3ow for*] F *om.*

216. *Yf*] Hyf P; 3if EMFIG. *kny3t*] kny3tht P. *wit* F] wyt TG; witte I; witt E; whit P; with M. *and* (2)] MF *om.*

217. *To-gederes*] *at end of* l. 217 *in* T. *louen*] louyen I; louye F; loueden MT. *hit*] F *om.* *wel*] wel 3e F; I *om.*

218. [þe EMITG] To (*wrongly*) P; F *om.* *londes*] 3our londes F. *3e*] þey G. *shulle*] schulde M.

219. *our*] 3oure IE. *3ow*] M *om.*

220. [*kirke* IT] churche PEFG; chirche M.

With londes and leedes · lordshepes and rentes,
An angel men hurde · an hih at rome crye—
'*Dos ecclesie* this day · haþ ydronke venym,
And tho þat han petres power · aren poysoned alle.'
A medecine moste þer-to · þat myghte amende þe prelates,
That sholden preye for þe pees · and possession hem letteþ;
Takeþ here londes, 3e lordes · and leet hem lyue by dymes,
Yf 3e kynges coueyten · in cristene pees to lyuen.
For yf posession be poyson · and inparfyt hem make,
The heuedes of holychurche · and tho þat be vnder hem,
Hit were charite to deschargen hem · for holychurches sake,
And purge hem of þe olde poyson · ere more perel falle.
For were preest-hod more parfyt · þat is, þe pope formest,
That wiþ moneye menteyneþ men · to werren vp-on cristine,
A-3ens þe lore of oure lorde · as seynt luk wytnesseþ,
Michi uindictam, [& ego retribuam, dicit dominus, &c.]
Hus prayers with hus pacience · to pees sholde brynge

If then their wealth hinders churchmen in their duty, it were well to take it away from them.

It were well to free them from such poison.

† If the pope would cease to maintain war,

† Rom. xii. 19; Deut. xxxii. 35.

† his prayers

221. *With*] Whith P; *and in* ll. 234, 236, 245.
222. *hurde*] herde MITF; herd E. *hih*] hey I; hey3 E; hy F; hi M; hei3 T. *at*] aboute F. *crye*] þo criede M.
223. *this*] þis ilke F.
224. G *omits*. *tho*] I *om*. *petres* MIE] petrus FT; petris P. *aren*] ben E; be F. *poysoned*] apoysoned EIF; I-poysoned F; enpoisened M.
225. *A*] M *om*. *moste*] þer most F. þe] F *om*.
227. 3e MEIFTG] *miswritten* 3 (*sic*) P. *leet*] late F; lat I; letip T; letteþ M; lete G.
228. 3e—*coueyten*] þe kynge coueyte I. *in*] on G. *cristene*] cristes FITG.
229—232. G *omits*.
229. *inparfyt*] inparfy3t P. *inparfyt hem*] hem inparfit F.
230. *heuedes*] hedes EF. *tho—hem*] ho so is hem vndur F.
231. *churches*] churche F; chirche I.
232. þe] heore M. *olde* MIT] old E; oolde P; F *om*.
233. *parfyt*] parfy3t P; *and in* l. 251. þat] þan G. *In margin of* M —De papa.
235. [*&—&c.*] *in* F *only*.
236. *prayers*] pees (*sic*) F. *with*] for G. *pacience*] penaunce M.

might bring peace.

Alle londes to loue · and þat in a lytel tyme;
The pope with alle preestes · *pax-uobis* sholde make!

† Observe how Mahomet prevailed by means of a dove,

And take hede hou makamede · þorwe a mylde doue,
He hald al surrye as hym-self wolde · and sarasyns in quyete; 240

† not by might, but by guile.

Nouht þorw manslauht and [mannes] strengthe · makamede hadde þe mastrie,
Bote þorw pacience and pryuy gyle · he was prynce ou*er* hem alle.

† So should the pope pray Christ to send his Dove,

In suche manere, me þynkeþ · moste þe pope,
Prelates, and preestes · prayen and by-seche 244
Deuowtliche day and ny3t · and wiþ-drawe hem fro synne,
And crye to crist þat he wolde · hus coluere sende,

† which is the Holy Ghost, who makes peace.

The whiche is þe holy gost · þat out of heuene descendede, 247
To make a p*er*petuel pees · by-twyne þe prynce of heuene
And alle manere [of] men · þat on þis molde lybbeþ.
Yf preest-hod were p*ar*fit and preyede thus · the peuple sholde amende,
That now contrarien cristes lawes · and cristendom despisen. 251

281 For sutthe þat þes sarasyns · scribes, and þese Iewes

237. *Alle*] And alle M. *to*] in-to MIFTG. *a*] MIFT *om. tyme*] while GT.
238. *pax-uobis*] E *om. make*] synge M.
239. *hou*] on I. *þorwe*] with FM. *doue*] dowue MIF; douue T; dome (!) E.
240. *He hald*] He halde E; Hadde MIFTG. *hym-self*] he F. *quyete*] equite I.
241. *and*] ne M. [*mannes* I] manis T; PEMFG *om. makamede hadde*] hadde he M.
242. *pryuy*] G *om. ouer*] of F.
243. *suche*] such a IFG. *me*] as me F.
244. *Prelates*] Prelatis P; With prelats F; Boþe prelatis T.
245. *and*] T *om. fro*] fro here G.
246. *þat*] IT *om. sende* EMIFTG] seynde P.
247. *whiche*] wiche P. *þe*] þe hye I; þe heiȝe T. *descendede*] descende F; descendeþ I.
248. *by-twyne*] bitwix F; bytwene EIMG. *prynce*] kyng M.
249. [*of* MFT] PEIG *om.* *þis*] his T; þe M.
250. *Yf—and*] Parfit presthode þat F.
251. *now*] T *om. now contrarien*] contrarien now IG; contrarie þus T. *lawes*] lawe M.
252—262. G *omits.*
252. *scribes*] tribus (*wrongly*) T. *þese*] þes P; þe M.

Hauen a lippe of oure by-leyue · þe lightloker, me þynkeþ,
Thei sholde turne, [who so] trauayle wolde · and of þe trinite techen hem.
For alle paynymes preyen · and *par*fitliche by-leyuen 283
In þe grete heye god · and hus grace asken, 256
And maken here mone to makamede · here message to shewe.
Thus in a faith lyueþ þat folke · and in a false mene;
And þat is reuthe for þe [ryghtful] men · þat in þe reame wonyeþ,
[And perel for þe prelates · þat þe pope makeþ;] 260
[þat] bereþ name of Neptalym · of Nynyue and of damaske.
For when þe holy kynge of heuene · sende hus sone to erthe,
Meny myracles he wrouhte · man for to turne,
In ensample þat men · sholde seo by sad reyson, 264
That men myghte nat be sauede · bote þorw mercy and grace,
And þorw penaunce and passioun · and parfyt by-leyue;
And by-cam a man of a mayde · and *metropolitanus*,
And baptisede, and busshoppede · with þe blode of hus herte 268

Paynyms pray to God and Mahomet,

which is a peril to the pope and his prelates.

Christ wrought many miracles,

baptized men, and confirmed them with His blood.

254. *turne*] IT *om.* [*who so* IT] þat PEMF. *hem*] F *om.* *techen hem*] hem teche M.

255. *preyen*] preche þ (!) I. *and*] þat F. *parfitliche*] parfite I.

256. *heye*] hy F; hie M; of (*sic*) I; T *om.* *god*] god of heuene T.

257. *to shewe*] for to sewe F.

258. *a*] T *om.* (*twice*). *faith*] fay F. *þat*] þis F. *in* (2)] F *om.*

259. M *inserts* ll. 259—287 *after* l. 187. *þe* (1)] þat T; F *om.* [*ryghtful* IFT] rithful M; ryght PE; *cf.* B. xv. 536. *þe* (2)] þat IM; FT *om.* *þe reame*] rome F.

260. *From* M; *also in* IFT; PE *om.* *perel*] a peril T. *þe* (1)] IT *om.*

261. [*þat* IMFT] And PE. *name*] þe name T. *and*] I *om.* *of* (3)] F *om.*

262. *holy*] heye I; heiȝe T. *sende*] *so* PFG; sente IMT. *to*] til I. *erthe*] eerthe P.

263. *he*] þo he F; a I. *man*] men IF. *man for*] to cristene lawes man G.

265. *bote*] and but I.

266. *parfyt*] parfyȝt P.

267. *a* (1)] M *om.* *metropolitanus*] metropolanus (*sic*) IMTG.

268. *And*] He M. *and*] an P. *busshoppede*] busshopede M; busshupede G; bischopede EF; bisshopid T; bisshemed (*sic*) I.

Alle þat wilnede oþer wolde · with inwit by-leue hit.

284 Saints suffered death in many countries.

Meny seint sitthe · suffrede deþ al-so;
For to enforme þe faithe · ful wyde-where deyden, 271
In Inde and in alisaundrie · in ermanye, in spayne,
And fro mysbyleue · meny man turnede.

St Thomas died a martyr.

In sauacion of mannys saule · seynt thomas of Caunterbury . 274
Among vnkynde cristene · in holychurche was sleye,
And alle holychurche · honoured for þat deyinge.

He is a pattern to all bishops.

He is a forbusne to alle busshopes · and a bryȝt myrour,
And souereyneliche to alle suche · þat of surrye bereþ name; 278
And nat in engelonde to huppe abowte · and halewen menne auters,
And crepe in a-monge [curatours] · and confessen a-ȝen þe lawe;

Cf. Deut. xxiii. 25. *Nolite mittere falcem in messem alienam.*

Meny man for crystes loue · was martred a-mong romaynes 281

269. *oþer*] and IMFTG. *with*] whit P; *and in* l. 268. *inwit* FG] Inwyt T; inwitt EI; inwith M; *badly spelt* inwhiȝt P. *hit*] TG *om.*

270. *Meny*] Many a FG. *seint*] seyntes M. *suffrede*] hath suffred þe F. *al-so* EIMFTG] al-soo P.

271. *enforme*] enferme PG; *but* enforme EM; enfo*ur*me T; co*n*ferme F; . . .ferme I. *ful*] M *om.* *deyden*] þei dede F; þei deieden M.

272. *and*] I *om.* *in ermanye*] mat*r*imonye (!) I. *ermanye*] ermonye MT; hermonye F. *in* (4)] and in MEG.

273. *And fro*] And so fram her F. *man*] men MI; a man F; me*n* hy E; mo G.

274—276. *These lines are much rubbed in* M *and* I. *Caunterbury*] Cauntelbury P; cauntilburye E; *but* caunt*er*bury MTG; kaunt*ur*bury F.

275. *sleye*] *so* PG; slawe IFT; sleyn E; slayn M.

276. G *omits.* *honoured*] honourede P. *for*] þoruȝ T.

277. *forbusne*] *so* PE; forbisne I; forbisen T; forbisme G; forbison MF. *alle*] F *om.* *busshopes*] *so* PEM; bisschopes IT; bischops F. *bryȝt*] bryȝthe P.

278. *to alle*] of IT. *name*] þe name IT. *of—bereþ*] beere of surry F.

279. *nat*] þat (!) I. *engelonde*] engelounde P. *huppe*] *so* PEI; hoppe T; hop F; lepe M; lyppe G. *and*] an P. *menne*] mennes F; menes M; me*n* EITG.

280. *in*] G *om.* [*curatours* MIFT] curatures G; creatours (*wrongly*) PE; *cf.* B. xv. 558. *confessen* MT] confesson P; co*n*fesse F; *con*fessye G; confession (*wrongly*) EI. *þe*] G *om.* *messem alienam*] *so in* MIFTG; alienam messem PE.

281. *man*] a man F; men M. *was*] weren MT. *martred*] i-martyred M.

Er cristendome were knowe þer · oþer eny croys honoured.

Eueriche busshope, by þe lawe · sholde buxumliche wende, Bishops are bound to teach their people.

And pacientliche, þorgh hus prouynce · and to hus peple hym shewe, 284

Feden hem and [fillen] hem · and fere hem fro synne;

In baculi forma · sit presul hec tibi norma,

Fer, trahe, punge gregem · seruando per omnia legem;

And enchaunte hem to charite · on holychurche to be-leyue. 288

For as the kynde is of a knyȝt · oþer for a kynge to be take, † Just as a knight or king is liable to captivity or death when defending his people,

[And] among here enemys · in morteils bateles

To be culled and ouercome · þe comune to defende;

So is þe kynde of [a curatour] · for cristes loue to preche, 292 † so should it be with priests.

And deye for hus dere children · to destroye dedly synne;

Bonus pastor; † John x. 11.

And nameliche þer as lewede lyuen · and no lawe knowen.

Ac we crystine conneþ þe lawe · and hauen of oure toun*g*e 295 285

282. *Er*] Or EMFI. *were* EIMFT] wher P; was G. *knowe*] i-knowe MI. *eny*] þe G. *honoured*] honourede P.

283. *busshope*] bischop EFIT. *wende* EMF] weynde P; walke ITG.

285. *Feden*] Fenden T. [*fillen* M] follen I; fullen T; fulle FG; folwen PE. *hem* (3)] hym E.

286. *forma sit*] sit forma (*wrongly*) T. *norma*] forma M.

287. *punge*] pasce G.

288. *This line is placed in* M *after* l. 186, *as already noted.*

289. *Here* M *inserts* ll. 188—258, *already collated.* *knyȝt*] knyȝth P. *oþer*] and M; I *om.* *for*] of MTG. *a* (2)] þe T; F *om.* *take*] i-take M.

290. [*And* MIT] Al FG; FE *om.* *morteils*] morteil E; mortele IFG; mortail T; mortel M. *bateles*] batayle G.

291. *culled*] i-kulled M. *and*] or MT.

292. [*a curatour* EMIF] curatours T; curatour G; creatour P; *see* l. 280. *preche*] teche E.

293. *dere childuen*] children dere E. *destroye* IMFT] distrye P; destruye EG.

294. *as*] þat IT. *knowen*] ne knowe I; no knowen T.

295. *conneþ* I] kunneþ EF; cunneþ M; *misvritten* comeþ (*by a mere slip*) P; come T; conne G. þe] to T.

Busshopes and bookes · the byleyue to teche. 296

Jews live according to the law, and trust to it.

Iuwes lyuen in þe lawe · þat oure lord tauhte,
Moyses to be maister þer-of · til messie come,
And in þat lawe þei leyue · and leten hit for the beste.

They know Christ to be a prophet,

And ȝut knewe þei crist · þat cristendome tauhte, 300
And for a *parfyt* prophete · þat muche peuple sauede,
And of selcouþe sores · sauede men ful ofte;

because He did many miracles.

By þe myracles þat he made · messie he semede,
Tho he lyfte vp lazar · þat leyde was in graue, 304

286 He raised Lazarus.

Quatriduanus cold · quik dude hym walke.

They sought to slay Him.

Iuwes seyden, þat hit seyn · with sorcerie he wrouhte,
And [stodieden] hou to struyen [him] · and struyeden hem-selue,
And here power thourh hus pacience · to pure nouht brouhte. 308

Jews still think Christ a false prophet.

And [ȝut] thei seien soþliche · and so doþ þe sarrasyns,
That Iesus was bote a Iogelour · a Iaper a-monge þe comune,
And a sophistre of sorcerie · and *pseudo-propheta*,
And hus lore was lesynge · and lacken hit alle, 312

296. *Busshopes*] Bischopes EFT; Bisschop I.

298. *to be*] þe T. *þer-of*] of hem M. *til*] til þat MFT.

299. *And*] F *om.* *in*] on IT; G *om.* *þat*] þe T. *leyue*] lyuen MFT; lyue E; leue I; leuen G.

300. *ȝut*] F *om.* *knewe*] *so* EMT; knowen F; knoweþ G; knowe PI. *þei*] þat F. *tauhte*] made G.

301. *And*] As F. *peuple*] folc M.

302. G *omits.* *sauede*] salued F. *ful*] wel M.

303. G *omits.* *By*] And bi M. *myracles* EIF] miraclis T; myracle M; meracles P.

304. *Tho*] Lo F. *lazar*] þe lazer M. *in*] in a I.

305. *cold*] & cold F. *quik*] & quike G. *dude hym*] he made M. *walke*] to walke F; wake I.

306. *seyn*] say I; sy F; seien EM; seiȝe T; syen G. *with*] whit P. *sorcerie* G] *apparently* sorceris P; *but we find* sorcery FT; *sorserie* I; *miswritten* soserie M; *scorcerie* E; *cf.* B-text, *and see* l. 311.

307. [*stodieden* IT] fondeden PEM; fondede FG; *but observe the alliteration, and cf.* B-text. *hou*] M *om.* *struyen*] *so* PE; destreie M; destroye I; stroye T; stroyn F. [*him* MF] hym T; hem PEIG (*wrongly*). *struyeden*] *so* PE; destroieden M; studieden (!) I; stroieden FT.

308. *And*] F *om.* *hus*] here I. *brouhte*] turnede M; he brouȝte F; *miswritten* brouhten P.

309. [*ȝut* MG] ȝit IF; ȝet T; PE *om.* *seien*] seiden M. *doþ*] dede M.

310. *was*] nas M. *a-monge*] of G

311. *a*] E *om.* *and*] and a I; a T. *pseudo-propheta*] propheta seudo M.

312. *And*] And þat MIFG. *lesynge*] lesynges IT.

And hopen þat he be to comynge · þat shal hem releue ;
Moyses oþer Makemede · here maistres deuineþ ;
And haueþ suspecion to be saf · boþe sarrasyns and Iewes,
Thorwe Moyses and makamede · and myghte of god þat mad al. ·

Now sytthe þat these sarrasyns · and al-so þe Iewes
Conne þe ferste clause of oure by-leyue · *Credo in deum patrem,*
Prelates and preestes · sholde preoue, yf thei myghte,
Lere hem lytulum and lytulum · *& in iesum christum, filium eius,*
Til þei couþe speke and spelle · *& in spiritum sanctum,*
Recorden hit and rendren hit · wyth *remissionem peccatorum,*
Carnis resurrectionem, & uitam eternam ; amen."

Since they know the first clause of the creed, they should be taught the second, till they know it all."

Hic explicit passus primus de dobet.

313, 314. *Transposed in* F.
313. *þat*] F *om.* *to*] M *om.* *comynge*] *so* PEMF; come ITG (*here* comynge = comene, *the gerund*). *hem releue*] releue hem alle G.
314. *oþer*] & F. *here*] or T. *deuineþ*] þei diuineth F.
315. *haueþ*] han a MIT ; haue a G ; han EF.
316. *god*] him F. *al*] hem F.
317. *Now*] And IT. *sytthe*] seiþ T. *þat*] MG *om.* *these*] theese P; þe G; E *om.* *and*] an P. *þe*] þise T ; þis E.
318. *þe ferste*] a F.
319. *preoue*] preue hit M.
320. *Lere hem*] And leren M ; & lere hem F. *lytulum—lytulum*] litelum & litelum EI ; litlum & litlum T ; litel and litel M ; litel & bi litel F ; *miswritten* lytulhum and lytulum P ; lytulum (*only*) G. *&* MTEG] *miswritten* and PI ; (*but it means* et) ; F *om.* *eius*] eius vnicum M.
321. *spelle*] *so* MIT ; spele PFG. *&* MIFET] et G ; *miswritten* and P (*but it means* et).
322. *hit*] him G (*twice*). *rendren*] reden MI. *Carnis resurrectionem*] & carnis resurrectionem þer-to F.
COLOPHON. *So* PG ; M *om.* *Hic*] EF *om.* *Hic explicit*] IT *om.*

PASSUS XIX (DO-BET II).

Hic Incipit Passus Secundus de Dobet.

(288) "Can you shew me Charity?" said I.

"LEue *liberum arbitrium*," quaþ ich · "ich leyue, as ich hope,
Thou coupest telle and teche me · to charite, ich leyue?"
Then louh *liberum arbitrium* · and ladde me forþ with tales,

(289) † Then he led me to the garden of Man's-Heart,

Til we comen in-to a contree · *cor-hominis* hit hyhte,
Herber of alle pryuytees · and of holynesse.
Euene in þe myddes · an ympe, as hit were,
þat hihte *ymago-dei* · graciousliche hit growede.
Thenne gan ich asken what hit hyhte · and he me sone tolde—

† where grew the tree of True-love.

"þe tree hihte trewe-loue," quaþ he · "the trinite hit sette;
þorgh louely lokynge hit lyueþ · and launceþ vp blossemes,
The whiche blosmes burnes · benygne-speche callen;

† The fruit is called *Caritas*.

And þer-of comeþ a good frut · þe which men callen werkes

TITLE. *So* PMG; Incipit passus secundus EF; IT *om.*
1. *leyue*] leue EMITG; leeue F.
2. *coupest*] coudest MFI. *telle*] telle me I. *ich leyue*] i leue ME; as I leue ITG; as I leeue F.
3. *louh*] louȝe E; louȝ T; louȝh FG; low M; lowe I.
5. *Herber*] Erbere E; Herbarwe M. *and*] & al-so G.
6. M *omits*. *myddes*] myddus is F.
7. *hihte*] F *om.* *hit growede*] it growith FG; I-graued I.
9. *hihte*] hatteþ MT; hatte IG; hit F.
10. *lokynge*] likyng T.
11. *whiche*] wiche P. *blosmes*] blosme F. *burnes*] barnes M. *callen*] it calleþ ITG; hit callen E; is calde F.
12. *good*] grete I. *frut*] fruyt MIFTG. *which*] wich P. *men*] me F.

Of holynesse, of hendynesse · of help-hym-þat neodeþ,
The whiche is callid *caritas* · cristes owen fode,
And solaceþ alle soules · sorghful in purgatorie."
"Now, certes," ich seide . and sykede for ioye,
"Ich þonke [ȝow] a þowsend sythes · þat ȝe me hider kende; † I thanked him for shewing me the tree.
And suþþen þat ȝe fowche-saue · to seye me what hit hihte."
And he þonked me þo · bote þenne took ich hede,
Hit hadde shoriers to shoue hit vp · þre shides of o lengþe, It was supported on three props.
And of o kynne colour · and o kynde, as me þouhte,
All þre yliche longe · and yliche large.
Muche meruailede me · on what more thei growede;
And efte askede of hym · of what wode þei were?
"Thees þre shoryeres," quaþ he · "þat bereþ vp þis plonte, † These props denoted the Trinity.
Thei by-tokneþ trewely · þe trinite of heuene;
Thre persons in-departable · perpetuel were euere,
Of o wyl, of o wit · and here-with ich kepe
The frut of þis faire tree · fro þre wykkede wyndes,

13. *of hendynesse*] of hendenesse IFETG; and hendenesse M. *of help*] to helpe M.
14. *whiche*] wiche P. *callid caritas*] caritas y-called IFT; caritas called G.
15. *And*] & he F; þat G.
16. *seide*] saide þo F. *and*] an P. *sykede*] sighede I.
17. [*ȝow* MIT] þe PEFG. *þowsend*] hondred M. *sythes*] siþe MIFT; side G. *kende*] tauȝte F; brouȝte G.
18. *suþþen*] sith F; for M. *fowche-saue*] fouchensaf E; fouchesaaf F; vouchen saf M; vouche-sauf IT; foweche-saue P; fuchede saf G. *what*] as IT. *hihte*] hoteþ IT.
20. *Hit hadde*] I hadde T; He hadde G. *shoriers*] schorares I; schulieres G. *to*] I *om*. *shoue*] schyuyn I; shyue T; schule G. *o*] on M. *lengþe*] lengþye *or* lengþþe P.
21. *o* (1)] on M. *o* (2)] IT *om*.
22. *and*] & alle G.
23. *thei*] þat þei M.
24. *efte askede*] I asked efte F; askide eft T; asked ofte I; eft y askede G. *of* (1)] at G. *of* (2)] G *om*.
25. *plonte*] *so* PEF; plaunte I; plante MT; plente G.
26. *Thei*] IT *om*.
27. *in-departable*] vndepartable E. *euere*] for euere F.
28. *of*] and M; & of TG. *o* (1)] on M. *wit*] whit P. *with*] whith P; *and in* l. 34.
29. *frut*] fruyt MFITG. *fro*] for G. *þre*] þe G; M *om*.

And fro fallyng of stok · hit faille nouht of hus myghte.

"The world," said Liberum-Arbitrium, "is a wind that blows against the tree:"

The worlde is a wykkede wynde · to hem þat wolde treuthe;

Covetyse comeþ of þat wynde · and [*caritas* hit abiteþ,]

And for-freteþ þat frut · with manye fayre syghtes; 33

The first prop is the Father's might.

And with þe ferste plaunke ich palle hym doune · *potencia-dei-patris.*

290 The flesh is also a fell wind.

Þanne is flessh a fel wynde · in flouryng-tyme;

Þorgh lecherie and lustes · so loude he gynneþ blowe,

Þat hit norischeþ nyce syȝtes · and som tyme wordes,

And menye wykkede wormes · workes of synne, 38

And al for-bit *caritas* · to þe bare stalke;

The second prop is the Son, or the Father's Wisdom.

Thanne sette ich þe secunde plaunke · *sapiencia-dei-patris,*

The which is þe passion and penaunce · and þe *par*fytnesse of ihesus, 41

And þer-with ich warde hit o*þer*-whyle · til hit wexe rype.

The third enemy is the devil,

Thenne fondeþ þe feende · my frut to destruye,

And leith a laddere þer-to · of lesynges be þe ronges;

30. *of* (1)] of þe MFG; þe (*sic*) IT. *hit—of*] þat he nat faile F. *of* (2)] FG *om.*

31. *worlde*] wordle PG. *wolde*] wolle I; wulleth F.

32. *wynde*] whynde P. [*caritas —abiteþ* ITG] hit abiteþ caritas E; hit abiteþ (*omitting* caritas) M; charite it abideth F; hit beteþ caritas P.

33. T *omits.* *for-freteþ*] forfrete I. *þat*] þe MG. *frut*] fruyt IMFG. *with*] whit P; þorgh I.

34. *And*] M *om.* *with*] whith P. *plaunke*] planke IFTG; plante (*wrongly*) M. *palle*] fal F; platte M; pallede G. *doune*] a-doun M. *potencia—patris*] M *om.*

35. *is flessh*] is þe flessche IT; fleysch is M. *fel* MFTG] felle EI; feel P. *in*] *in* his F; & in IT.

36. *Þorgh*] Wiþ M. *so*] M *om.* *blowe*] to blowe E.

37. *þat*] M *om.* *hit*] G *om.* *norischeþ* IEG] norijsseþ M; nurscheth F; norisshiþ T; (*all preferable to* norceþ P). *wordes*] nise wordes G.

38. I *transposes* wormes *and* workes.

39. *for-bit*] *so* PEM; forbitte I; forhitte (*sic*) T; forbiteth F. *caritas*] charite F. *to*] riȝt to FIT; nouȝt to (!) G. *stalke*] stocke M.

40. *sette*] si M. *plaunke*] planke MFIT. *patris*] I *om.*

41. *which*] wich P. *þe* (1)] MF *om.* *þe* (2)] F *om.* *of ihesus*] T *om.*

42. *And*] MT *om.* *warde*] wardede MF. *hit* (1)] FG *om.*

43. *Thenne*] And þanne IFT. *fondeþ* EMIFTG] foundeþ *or* fonndeþ P. *frut*] fruyt MIFTG.

44. *leith* FEM] laith I; leyþ G; leithe P; leiȝe T. *lesynges*] lesynge G.

With alle þe wyles þat he can · waggeþ þe roote
þorw bak-byters and brawleres · and þorwe bolde chyderes,
And shakeþ hit; ne were hit vnder-shored · certes hit sholde nat stande. † who shakes the tree violently.
So þese lourdeines litheren þer-to · þat alle þe leues fallen,
And feccheth a-way this frut som tyme · by-fore boþe myn eyen.
Thenne palle ich a-downe þe pouke · with þe þridde shoryere, 291 The third prop is the Holy Ghost."
The whiche is *spiritus-sanctus* · and soþ-fast byleyue,
And þat is grace of þe holy gost; · and þus gat ich þe mastrye."
Ich totide vp-on þat tree þo · and þenne tok ich hede, † I looked upon the fruit of the tree,
Wheþer-þe frut were faire · oþer foul to loken on.
And þe frut was wonder fair · non fairer beo myghte;
Ac in þre degrees hit grew · gret ferly me þouhte,
And askede þo 'yf hit were · al of on kynde?' † and asked if it were all of one kind.
"Ȝe, certes," he seide · "and sothliche þow leyue hit.
Hit is al of o kynde · and þat shal ich prouen;

45. *With*] And wiþ IT. *waggeþ*] he wageth F; he waggeþ G.
46. *chyderes*] chidynge F.
47. *And shakeþ*] Þei schaken F. *vnder-shored*] vnder-shorede P; schoried F. *ne — shored*] ȝif it nere vndirshorid T. *certes*] IFT *om. nat*] nat lenger F.
48. G *omits*. *þese*] þees P. *lourdeines*] lordeynes EIM; lurdeynus FT. *litheren*] litheren IT; lithur F.
49. *this*] þe IT.
50. *Thenne*] And þanne IT. *palle*] polle E; platte M; falle T. *a-downe*] doun MTG. *a-downe—pouke*] him adoun F.
51. *whiche*] wiche P. *is*] I *om. and*] a M.
52. *grace*] þe grace M. *and*] M *om. gat*] *so* PM; gaat G; gate E; gete I; geet F; kepe T.
53. *totide*] totrede M. *vp-on*] vp in I; on M. *þat*] þe EFTG.
54. *þe*] þat F. *were*] wher P. *to*] for to EIT. *loken on*] be-holde M.
55. *And*] M *om. wonder*] I *om. And—was*] Þo was þe fruit F. *beo myghte*] be *þer* myȝte FG; myȝt be E.
56. G *omits*. *Ac*] As I. *þre*] þe þre I. *grew*] groweþ E. *ferly*] ferli þo F; wondere E.
57. *askede*] I asked at him F; y askede G. *þo yf*] efte þo where I; eft þo wheþer T. *al*] F *om. of*] I *om.*
58. *he seide*] sire q*uod* he F. *þow*] IT *om. leyue hit*] hit leue MG.
59. *o*] on M.

Ac *somme* ar swettere þan some · and sonnere wollen rotye.

† "We see different apples on the same tree, some riper than others."

Men may seo on an appul-treo · meny tyme and ofte,
Of o kynne apples · aren nat yliche grete,
Ne of sewynge smale · ne of [o] swetnesse swete.
Tho þat sitten in þe sonne-syde · sonner aren rype,
Swettour and saueriour · and also more grettoure
Than [þo] þat selde hauen þe sonne · and sitten in þe north-half;
And so hit fareþ sothly · sone, by oure kynde.

† Adam was the tree, and we are the apples.

Adam was as tree · and we aren as hus apples,
Somme of ows sothfast · and some variable,
Somme litel and some large · like apples of kynde.

† Wedded men, widows, maidens, and monks are at the top of the tree, and receive the sun.

As weddede men and wedewes · and ryȝt worthy maidenes,
þe whiche þe *seynt esprit* [seweþ] · the sonne of al heuene,
Conforteþ [hem] in here continence · þat lyuen in contemplacion,
As monkes and monyeles · men of holichurche;

60. *ar*] beþ E. *sonnere*] sannere P (*but see* l. 64); sonere E; some (*wrongly*) I. *rotye*] rote FTG.

61. *Men*] Man E; Me IF. *on*] in L. *meny*] many a F.

62. *Of*] Þat of F. *kynne*] kynde EIGT; kynde of F. *aren*] beþ E; ben M. *nat*] nat alle F; & (*sic*) T.

63. G *omits*. *of* (1)] IT *om*. *sewynge* EIMT] sywynge P; o suyng F. [*o* EIF] PMT *om*.

64. *in*] on F. *þe sonne*] summe F. *sonner*] sone þei F; *son or som* E. *aren*] ben E.

65. *saueriour*] of more sauour M. *grettoure*] grettere MEI; grete F.

66. [*þo* MIFTG] PE *om*. *selde* IM] selden ETG; seelde F; seilde P.

67. *sothly*] sotthly P. *sone* IFT] soone P (*but* sone = son); summe M; by some G. *by*] be MT; of G.

68. *Adam*] Our alder adam F. *as* (1)] a EMIFG; þe T. *aren*] weren E; ben EM. *as* (2)] MF *om*.

69. *ows*] vs IT; vs beþ E; vs buþ M; vs be F. F *transposes* ll. 69 *and* 70.

70—75. G *omits*.

70. *and*] MIT *om*. *kynde*] o kynde FT.

71. *As*] Among F. *wedewes*] wedewes *or* wodewes P (*but see* l. 76); wydewes MIT; widues E; wyuus F. *ryȝt*] ryȝth P; rith M.

72. *whiche*] wiche P. *þe*] EM *om*. *esprit*] spirit IT. [*seweþ* MI] sueth F; seueth T; PE *om*.

73. *Conforteþ*] And comforteþ I. [*hem* MEITF] him P.

74. *men*] and men MF.

These hauen hete of þe holi gost · as crop of treo þe sonne.
Wedewes and wedeweres · þat here owen wil for-saken,
And chast leden here lyf · ys lyf of contemplacion,
And more lykyng to oure lorde · þan lyue as kynde askeþ, 78
And folwe þat þe flessh wole · and frut forþ brynge,
That lettered men in here langage · *actiua-uita* callen."
"3e, syre," ich seide, "and sitthen · þer aren bote two lyues
þat oure lorde a-loweþ · as lered men ous techeþ,
That is *actiua-uita* · and *uita contemplatiua*,
Whi groweþ this frut in þre degrees?" · "for a good skyle," he seide; 84
"Her by-neoþe ich may nyme · yf ich neode [hadde,]
Matrimonye, a moiste frut · þat multiplieþ þe peple.
Thenne a-boue is a betere frut · ac boþe two ben goode,
Wedewehode, more worþier · þan wedlok, as in heuene.
þanne is virginite, more vertuous · and fairest as in heuene, 89
For þat is euene with angeles · and angeles peer. 292
Hit was þe furste frut · þat þe fader of heuene blessede,

† The contemplative life pleases God more than the active life.".

† *Activa Vita* and *Vita Contemplativa*.

"Beneath, is the fruit of Matrimony.

† Above it is Widowhood; and above that is Virginity.

75. *hete*] þe hete T; þe 3ifte I. *crop*] haþ þe crop I; han (*sic*) þe crop T. *of treo*] hath of F. *treo*] þe tre IT; þe tree E.
76. *here*] F *om.*
77. *leden*] leten M. *ys*] as M; *in* F. *ys lyf*] E *om.*
78. *to*] of F. *lyue*] life I; lif T; lijf M. *as*] of T.
79. *And*] Or F. *folwe*] foleweþ M. *þe*] þat M; G *om.* *wole*] wolde IT. *brynge*] to brynge M.
80. *uita*] lif MG. IT *have*—þat *actiua* lif lettrede men · in here langage it calleþ.
81. *and*] þo M. *aren*] beþ E. *two* FG] to PM; twey E; tweye T; tweyne I.
82. *lered*] lewed (!) IT; our lawe F. *ous*] vs ITG; us MF.
83. *That is*] þo beth F; IT *om.* *and*] et I. *uita contemplatiua*] contemplatiua vita IT.
84. *this*] þi F; þe T. *for*] IT *om.* *a*] MF *om.*
85. [*hadde* MIFTG] habbe PE; *cf.* B-text.
86. *multiplieþ* IFTG] multepliep PM.
87. *Thenne*] And þenne IT. *a*] MIFGT *om.* *two* ET] tuo I; to PMFG.
88. *worþier*] worþiere is T; wurthi F.
89. *is*] M *om.* T *places* is *after* virginite. *more*] moost GT. *as*] is T. *heuene*] blisse G.
90. *angeles* (2)] archaungelus F.
91. *Hit*] For þat F. *þat*] F *om.* *þe* (2)] G *om.*

And bad hit be [of] a bat of erþe · a man and a mayde;
† That which was fairest honoured that which was first. In menynge þat þe faireste þyng · þe furste þyng sholde honoure,
And þe clennest creature · creatour ferste knowe.
In kynges court and knyghtes · þe clennest men and fairest
Shullen serue for þe lord selue · so fareþ god almyghty.
† Maidens and martyrs ministered to Christ on earth." Maidenes and marteres · ministred hym her in erthe,
And in heuene buth most pryue · and next hym by reson,
For þe fairest frut · by-fore hym as of eorthe,
And swète wiþ-oute swellinge · soure worth hit neuere."
† "This plant produces fair fruit," said I, "This is a propre plonte," quaþ ich · "and pryueliche hit bloweþ,
And bryngeþ forþ faire frut · folke of all nacion,
Bothe *par*fit and in*par*fit; · pure fayn ich wolde
A-saye what sauour hit hadde" · ich seide þat tyme;
† and prayed him to shake the tree. "Leue *liberum arbitrium* · leet som lyf hit shake."
A-non he het elde · an hih for to clymbe,
† Then Old-Age climbed up the tree and shook it. And shaken hit sharply · þe ripen sholden falle.
Elde clam towarde þe crop · þan comsede hit to crie;

92. *hit*] F *om.* [*of* EMIFG] in T; P *om.* *a*] in a T (*twice*).

93. *faireste*] furste M. *furste*] fairest M. G *om. from* faireste *to* þe *in* l. 94.

94. *creatour*] his creator MFG. *creatour ferste*] first creatour IT. *knowe*] i-knowe M.

95. *court*] hous M. *knyghtes*] in knyȝtes IF. *men*] T *om.*

96. *serue*] suffre (!) T. *for*] bifore F; M *om.* *selue*] hym-silf EFT. *so*] and so I. *god*] *our* kyng F.

97. *Maidenes*] For maiden*us* F. *hym*] I *om.* *in*] on MFT.

98. F *omits.* *buth*] beþ E; ben M. *in—pryue*] in heye heuene is preue ofte I; he (*sic*) heiȝ in heuene is preuyest T.

99. FG *omit.* *For*] And for IT. *of*] on M.

100. G *omits.* *swete*] swetnesse F. *wiþ*] whiþ P.

101. *plonte* EFG] plente (*for* plonte) P; plante MIT. *pryueliche*] propurliche M. *bloweþ* EIMT] bleweþ (*for* bloweþ) PG; groweth F.

102. *Here* a leaf *fails in* I; *from* l. 102 *to* l. 162. *faire*] T *om.* *nacion*] naciounus F.

104. *ich seide*] & seide T; so seide i F; he seide G.

105. *arbitrium*] arbitrium *quod* i. F. *leet*] let MT; late ET.

106. *het*] hete E; heet G; heete F; hiȝte MT.

107. *þe*] þat þe M. *ripen*] *so* PE; ripe MFTG.

108. *Elde*] And elde T; Whan eelde F. *clam*] clomb T; cam MF. *towarde—crop*] to þe cropward T. *hit*] i T.

He waggede wedewehodé · and hit wepte after ; 109
He meuede matrimonye · hit made a foule noyse.
For euere as elde hadde eny doun · þe deuel was wel redy, — The devil gathered up all that fell,
And gederide hem alle to-gederis · boþe grete and smale,
Adam and abraham · and Ysaye þe prophete, 115
Sampson and samuel · and seynt Iohan þe baptist,
And bar hem forþ baldely · no body þo hym lette, — and placed his prey in *limbo*.
And made of holy men hus horde · in *limbo inferni*,
Ther is derknesse and drede · and þe deuel maister.
Þenne meuede hym mod · *in maiestate dei*, 118
Þat *libera uoluntas dei* · lauhte þe myddel shoriere, — † Then Free-will-of-God seized the second prop,
And hitte after þe fende · happe hou hit myghte. 120
Filius, by þe faders wil · flegh with *spiritus sanctus*, — and *Filius* undertook to regain the fruit.
To ransake [þat] rageman : and reue hym hus apples,
Þat fyrst man deceyuede · thorgh frut and false by-heste.
And þenne spake *spiritus sanctus* · in gabrielis mouthe — The Annunciation.
To [a] mayde þat hihte marie · [a] meek þyng with alle,
Þat on Ie*sus*, a Iustice sone · moste Iouken in hire chaumbre, 293
Til *plenitudo temporis* · tyme [y]come were, 127 — Gabriel's address to Mary.

110. *He*] Hit F. *meuede*] meeuede PF ; moeued E. *a*] E *om*.
111. *wel*] ful T. *wel redy*] aredy G.
113. *Ysaye*] ysaac EM ; amos F. *prophete*] *pat*riarke E.
114. *samuel*] salomon F. *Iohan*] Ion EMF.
115. *baldely*] *so* PMT ; boldelich E ; boldly F ; boldely G. *þo*] to E ; T *om*. *hym*] hem T.
116. G *omits*. *hus*] an M. *horde*] lord (!) F. *limbo*] limbo doun PM ; limbo dom*us* E ; limbo domo F ; *but* T *omits the doubtful word after* limbo ; *cf*. B-text.
117. G *omits*. *derknesse* EMFT] deornesse (*an error for* deorknesse) P.
118. *meuede* MFG] meouede P ; moeued E. *mod*] *so* PM ; mood FTG ; mode E.
119. *dei*] M *om*. *lauhte*] lauȝte MT ; lafte F. *myddel*] mydel P.
120. *hitte*] hit it F. *hit*] he M.
121. *Filius*] Filius dei F. *by*] wiþ T. *flegh*] *miswritten* fleght P ; *but observe* fleȝe E ; fleiȝ T ; fliȝ F ; fly M ; fley G.
122. *To*] To go T. [*þat* EMFTG] þe P ; *cf*. B-text. *reue*] bi-reue M. *hus*] of his T.
123. *thorgh*] *with* F. T *has*—þat þoruȝ fals behest & fruyt · ferst man disceyuede.
124. *in*] M *om*. *mouthe*] ore M (*the* Latin *word*).
125. [*a* EMFTG] that P. *hihte marie*] marie hiȝte F. [*a* MFTG] PE *om*. *meek*] mylde M.
126. *a*] T *om*. *Iustice*] iustices MEG. *Iouken*] Iauken E ; ioyken M.
127. *ycome* ETG] i-come MF ; come P.

That elde felde efte þat frut · oþer fulle to be rype,
þat *Iesus* sholde Iuste þer-fore · [in] Iugement of armes,
Who sholde fecche þis frut · þe feend oþer *Iesus* self.

Mary assents. The maide myldeliche þo · þe messager hue answerede,
And saide hendyliche to him · "loo, me, hus handmayde,
For to worchen hus wil · with-oute eny synne; 133

Luke i. 38. *Ecce ancilla domini, [fiat michi secundum verbum tuum,]" &c.*

And in þe wombe of þat wenche · he was fourty wokes,

The Incarnation. And man by-cam of þat mayde · to saue mankynde,
Byg and abydynge · and bold in hus barn-hede, 136
To hauen fouhten with þe feende · ar ful tyme come.

Jesus learns leech-craft, Ac *liberum arbitrium* · leche-crafte hym tauhte,
Til *plenitudo temporis* · hih tyme a-prochede, 139
That suche a surgeyn setthen · yseye was þer neuere,

and heals the sick. Ne non so faithfol fysician; · for, alle þat [hym] bysouhte,
He lechede hem of here langoure · lazars and blynde
294 bothe;

† Mat. xi. 5. *Ceci uident, claudi ambulant, leprosi mundantur:*

And comune wymmen conuertede · and clansede hem of synne.

He restores life to Lazarus; And he lyft vp Lazar · þat lay in hus tombe, 144

128. *felde*] *so* PMGT; feld F; fulde E. *þat*] þe EFGT. *oþer*] or it F. *fulle*] *so* PE; felle M; fel FGT. *rype* MFGT] rypy PE.

129. *Iuste*] E *om.* [*in* M] and PE; & by FG; & be in T.

130. *þis*] þe F.

131. *þo*] GT *om.* *hue*] ȝo E; heo FG; MT *om.* *answerede*] grauntede FGT.

132. *me*] me here F.

133. G *omits.* [*fiat—tuum*] *in* F *only.*

134. *wokes*] wik*us* F.

135. *man by-cam*] be-com a man T. *to—mankynde*] mankynde to saue T.

136. G *omits.* *abydynge*] biddinge T.

137. *To*] He þouȝte G. *fouhten*] i-foute M; i-fouȝte FT.

139. *hih*] an hi M. *hih—aprochede*] aproched pure fast F.

140. *surgeyn*] sorgien EM. *setthen*] seþen M; siþen GT; suþ E; sith F. *þer*] E *om.*

141. [*hym* EMFGT] P *om.* *hym biȝsouhte*] besouȝte hym T.

142. G *omits.* *lechede*] lechende M. T *puts* bothe *before* lazars. *Ceci uident*] MFGT *om.* *ambulant*] ambulabant T. *mundantur*] mundabantur T.

143. *conuertede*] comfortede M.

144. *he*] MT *om.* *Lazar*] þe lazer M. Cf. Pass. xviii. 304.

Quatriduanus cold · quyke dude hym rome.
Ac er he made þat miracle · *mestus cepit esse,* John xi. 35.
And wepte water with hus eyen · the whi witen fewe.
Ac þoo þat seyen þat selcouþ · seyden þat tyme, 148
· þat he was god oþer godes sone · for þat grete wonder.
And somme Iewes seiden · with sorcerie he wrouhte, The Jews said He was a wizard.
And þorwe þe myghte of Mahon · and þorw mysbyleyue;
Demonium habes. John x. 20.
"Thanne sathan is 3oure sauyour," quaþ *Iesus* · "and Mat. xii. 27.
haþ saued 3ow ofte; 152
Ac ich sauede 3ow sondry tymes · [and] also ich fedde He reminds the Jews of His miracles.
3ow
Wiſh fisshes and with fyf loues · fyfe þousend at ones,
And þer-of lefte baskettes · ful of broke mete, 295
Broke bred, to beren hit · a-weye hoo so wolde. 156
Vnkynde and vnknowing!" quaþ Crist · and with a He beats them with a rope.
rop smot hem,
And ouer-turnede in þe temple · here tables and here John ii. 15.
stalles,
And drof hem out alle · þat þer bowten and solde,
[*Eiecit ementes & vendentes de templo, &c.*]
And seide, "þis is an hous · of orisouns and of holynesse, Mat. xxi. 13.
And whenne þat my wil is · ich [wol] hit ouer-throwe, John ii. 19.
And er þre dayes after · edefye hit newe;" 162
[*Intra triduum reedificabo illud.*]

145. G *omits.* *cold*] he was cold F; cold-ded T. *quyke—hym*] quik he dede M; he quyc dede him to F. Cf. Pass. xviii. 305.
146. *Ac er*] & for F.
147. *And*] He M. *witen* MEG] wyten T; *miswritten* whiten P.
150. *with*] whith P; þat F.
151. *Mahon*] mahound MFG. *habes*] habens M; habens T.
152. *sathan is*] is sathân FT. *sauyour* MFT] saueour G; saveyour P. *saued*] sauede P; i-saued MFTG.
153. [*and* MFTG] PE *om.* *ich—3ow*] 3ou fedde F.
154. *fisshes*] fyue fyssches MFTG; twey fisches E. *fyf*] foure F; to M; G *om.*
155, 156. G *omits.* *One line in* T —And I lefte basketis ful of broke mete · bere awey who so wolde.
157. *vnknowing*] vnconnyng T.
159. *bowten*] bou3ten E; bou3te TG; bou3t F. *and*] or T. [*Eiecit, &c.*] *in* F *only.*
160. *orisouns, &c.*] holinesse & of prayeres G. *of* (2)] FT *om.*
161. [*wol* EG] wolde PT; wole M; wil F.
162. [*Intra—illud*] *in* F.

The Iewes tolden þe Iustice · how þat *Iesus* seyde;
† John ii. 21. Ac þe ouerturnyng of þe temple · by-tokned þe resurrec-
cion. 164

The Jews seek to slay Him. Enuye and vuel will · ȝorn in þe Iewes,
And porsuede [hym] pryueliche · and for þans hym
bouhte,
† Mat. xxvi. 5. *Ne forte tumultus fieret in populo,*
Of Iudas þe Iewe · *Iesus* owene disciple.
On Good Friday the Jews met Jesus. This by-fil on a fryday · a litel by-fore paske, 168
þat Iudas and Iewes · *Iesus* thei mette.
296 Mat. xxvi. 49. "*Aue, rabbi,*" quaþ þat ribaud · and right til hym he ȝede,
And custe *Iesus*, to be knowe þer-by · and kauht of þe
Iewes.
Thanne *Iesus* to Iudas · and to þe Iewes seyde, 172
"Falsnesse ich fynde · in þy faire speche,
"I find sorrow in thy kisses," said Jesus. And kene care in þy cossyn[g]s · and combraunce to
[þi]selue.
Thow shalt be myrour to menye · men to deceyue; 175
Wo to hem þat þy wiles vsen · to þe worldes ende!
Mat. xviii. 7. *Ve homini illi per quem scandalum uenit.*
John xviii. 8. Sitthe ich by treson am take · and to ȝoure [wille,] Iewes,
Suffreþ myne apostles in pees · and in pees gangen;"

163. M *omits.* I *beyins again.*

164. *ouer*] F *om.* *bytokned*] bitokeneþ MIG. *þe* (3)] his T.

165. G *omits.* *vuel*] euel MI; euyl FT. *ȝorn*] *so* PEM; orne T; aren I; ernede F. *in þe*] in-to F.

166. G *omits.* [*hym* T] him MFI; hem PE. *pans*] pens MI. *hym*] F *om.*

167. *þe*] þilke M; þat F.

168. *by-fil*] bi-ful M; befel TI; bifel G; fel F. *fryday*] friday nyȝt F. *litel*] lite F. *paske*] þe paske I.

169. *Iudas*] þis iudas F.

170. *þat ribaud*] þo Ribaudes I; ribawde F; ribaudes G. *til*] to MFT. *he ȝede*] þey ȝeden ITG; he wente F.

171. *custe*] kiste IT; kuste M; kissed F. *Iesus*] him F. *knowe*] i-knowe M. *kauht*] kauhte P; cauȝte E; cauȝt MFT; caght I. *and—þe*] þan cauȝt was he of F.

173. *faire speche*] speche fayre I.

174. *kene*] F *om.* *þy*] M *om.* *cossyngs*] cossyns PE; kussyng MIG; kissing FT. *to*] of F. [*þi* EFT] þy IG; þe P. *þi-selue*] þe soule M.

175. *men*] man T. *to*] for to F.

176. *hem*] þo IT. *þy*] þyn P; *but* þy EIG; þi MFT. *worldes*] wordles PG. *Ve*] Ve autem F.

177. *take*] I-take F. [*wille* GT] wil F; wiles I; PE *om.* *Cf.* B-text. *Iewes*] ȝe iewes F. *ȝoure—Iewes*] ȝow iewes i-sold M.

178. *pees* (1)] *so* PMFG; payes I; pais T; pes E. *pees* (2)] *so* PITG; pes E. *and—gangen*] among ȝow to gange M; a-wey to goone F.

[*Sinite hos abire, &c.*]

Thus Iewes to þe Iustices · *iesus* thei ladden.— 179

With muche noyse þat nyght · ner frentik ich awakede, **297**
In Inwit and in alle wittes · after *liberum arbitrium*
Ich waitede wyterly, ac ne wiste · whider he wente,
And þanne mette ich wiþ a man · on mydlentens soneday,
As hor as an haweþorn · and abraam he hihte. 184
"Of whennes art þow?" quaþ ich · and hendeliche hym grette.
"Ich am with faiþ," quaþ þat freek · "hit falleþ nat me to lye,
An heraude of armes · er eny lawe were."
"What is hus conysaunce," quaþ ich · "in hus cote-armure?" 188
"þre p*er*sones in o pensel," quath he · "dep*ar*table from oþer;
O speche and o spirit · sprynge þ out of alle,
Of o wit, of on wil · were neuere a-twynne;
And sondry to seo vpon · *solus deus* he hoteþ." 192
"Siþthen thei ben surlepes," quaþ ich · "thei han sondry names."
"That is soþ," saide he · "þe syre hatte *pater;* **298**
And þe secunde is a sone · of þe syre, *filius;*

Then I awoke, and sought everywhere for Liberum-Arbitrium.

On Midlent Sunday I met Abraham, or FAITH.

Abraham de trinitate (margin of P); *De trinitate* (M).

Abraham is seeking one whose cognisance is the Trinity,

the Father, the Son,

[*Sinite, &c.*] *in* F *only.*
179. *Thus*] þis I; þese F; þes G.
180. *With*] Whith P.
181. *In*] T *om.* *in*] MFG *om.* *wittes*] whittes P.
182. G *omits.* *waitede*] awayted EM; wakide T. *wyterly*] sikerly I. *ac*] ac ich E; ac i MF. *whider* MFIT] weder P; whodere E. *ac—wente*] ac whider a wende y ne wiste I; but whider he wente I ne wiste T. *he*] heo P; a I.
183. *wiþ*] whiþ P. *on*] a IFT. *mydlentens*] myd-lentene F; myd-lenten TG; mydlente M.
185. *whennes*] wennes P. *art* MI FT] ert PEG.
186. *nat me*] nat for F; nout M; me nat G.
187. *An* EMIFTG] *miswritten* And P. *armes*] his armes M.
189. *pensel*] penson M. *departable*] indepartable eche F; *but see* l. 216.
190. *O*] And T; G *om.* *o*] ITG *om.*
191. *of*] & of T; and MG. *were*] and weren M; þei were FT; were þey G.
193. *surlepes*] surlep*us* F; surlepis T; suyrelep*us* I; sondrilipes M; *miswritten* surlepees PE; seperable (*over erasure*) G. *thei* (2)] I *om.*
194. *he*] he þenne IT. *hatte*] hatteþ MT; highte I; hiȝt F. *pater*] pat*er*-noster IT.

and the Holy Ghost.

The þridde is þat halt al · a þyng by hym-selue,
Holigost is hus name · and he is in alle."
"This is merk þyng for me," quaþ ich · "and for meny oþer,
How o lord myghte lyue a þre · ich leyue hit nat," ich seyde.

† Concerning faith in the Trinity in Unity.

"Muse not to muche þer-on," quaþ faith · "tyl þow more knowe,
Ac looke þow leyue hit leelly · al þy lyf-tyme,
That þre by-longeþ to on lorde · that lygaunce cleymeþ,
Mighte, and [a] mene · to seo hus owen Mighte,
Of hym-self and of hus seruaunt · and [what] suffreþ hem boþe.

"The Father sent forth His Son as a servant.

God þat gynnynge hadde neuere · bote þo hym gode þouhte,
Sente forth hus sone · as for seruaunt þat tyme,
To okupien hym here · til issue were spronge,
The whiche aren children of charite · and holichurche þe moder.

Patriarchs, prophets, and apostles are God's children.

Patriarkes and prophetes · and apostles were þe children;
And crist and cristendome · and cristene holichurche
By-tokeneþ þe trinite · and trewe by-leyue.
O god almyghty · þat man made and wrouhte,
Semblable to hym-self · er eny synne were,
A þre he is þer he is · and hereof bereþ wittnesse

196. *is*] is a þyng M. *þyng*] thing halt (*wrongly*) F. *hym*] his G.
197. *hus*] þe F. *and*] an P.
198. *merk* MTG] merke EI; meerk P. *is—þyng*] þing is me (*sic*) F. *oþer*] anoþer IFTG.
199. *o*] a ET. *a þre*] on þreo M. *ich* (2)] he M.
200. *to—þeron*] þer-on to muche T. *tyl*] or G. *more knowe*] knowe more M.
201. *looke þow*] IT *om.*
202. *That*] T *om.* *on*] a MIT; o FG. *lygaunce*] *so* PEM; ligeance I; a-ligeaunce F; leggeaunce T.
203. [*a* MFTG] P *om.* *and—mene*] he mene I; ich moeue E.
204. *of*] EMIFT *om.* *hus*] T *om.* [*what* MIFTG] PE *om.*
205. *gynnynge*] by-gynnyng IG. *gynnynge—neuere*] no bigynnyng hadde E.
206. *sone*] deere sone F. *for*] for his M.
208. G *omits.* *whiche*] wiche P. *þe*] I *om.*
209. *apostles*] þe aposteles M. *þe*] M *om.* F *omits last half of* l. 209 *and first half of* l. 210.
210. *and* (2)] & alle IT.
211. *trewe*] trywe P; holy G.
214. G *omits.* *A*] And M.

þe werkes þat hym-self wrouhte · and þis worlde boþe;
Celi enarrant gloriam dei, & opera manuum eius annunciat firmamentum. † Ps. xviii. 1 (Vulg.).
That he is þre persones departable · ich proue hit by man-kynde,
And o god almyghty · yf alle men beo of adam.
Eue was of adam · and out of hym ydrawe, Adam, Eve, and Abel were *one*.
And abel of hem boþe · and alle þre o kynde;
[Ac] these þre þat ich carpe of · adam, and eue,
And abel, here issue · aren bote on in man-hede.
Matrimonie with-oute moillere · is nat muche to preyse, 299
The bible bereþ witnesse · a book of þe olde lawe,
þat a-corsed alle couples · þat no kynde forth brouhte;
Maledictus sit homo qui non reliquit semen in israel.
And a man with-oute a make · myghte nat wel of kynde Man and his wife resemble the first Two Persons of the Trinity:
Multeplie, ne more-ouer · with-oute a make louye,
Ne with-oute a sowere be suche seede · þis we seen alle.
Now go we to god-hede; · in god, fader of heuene, † just as Eve came out of Adam.
Was þe sone in hym-selue · in a *simile*, as eue
Was, whanne god wolde · out of þe wye y-drawe.
And as abel of adam · and of hus wif eue † And, as Abel proceeded from

215. G *omits.* *þis*] þe MT. *worlde*] wordle P. *&—firmamentum*] IFT *om.* *eius—firmamentum*] M *om.*
216. *In margin of* M—*probacio.*
218. *was—adam*] of Adam was I; & Adam was (1) T. *and*] T *om.*
220. [*Ac* M] And IFTG; *miswritten* As PE. *these*] theese P. *þat*] as E.
221. *here* EITG] heer P; her F; heore M. *issue*] essue P; *but see* l. 207.
222. G *omits.* *moillere*] *so* PM; moylere EI; moilere F; muliere T.
223. G *omits.* *The*] As þe IT.
224. G *omits.* *a-corsed*] accurseth I. *sit*] MFT *om.* *reliquit*] reliquid M; reliquerit F.
225. *And*] FG *om.* *a* (1)] IT *om.* *a* (2)] M *om.* *And a*] *With*-out (*sic*) E. *wel* IMFTG] *miswritten* welle PE.
226. *ne*] no FT; and M.
227. *be sucke*] bisowed F. *seen*] se wel F; wyten T.
228. *go we* TG] gowe I; gawe MF; goo wee P. *god-hede*] þe godhood M; þe god-heede F.
229. *simile*] saumple M.
230. *whanne*] wanne P; whan þat F. *wye* EG] wiȝ T; wy F; *badly spelt* weye PI; vie M; *see* l. 280. *y-drawe*] drawe EMT; here drawe F.
231. *And*] T *om.* *as*] G *om.*

Adam and Eve, so the Holy Ghost proceeded from the Father and the Son.

Sprang forth and spak · a spire of hem tweyne,
So out of þe syre and of þe sone · the *seynt espirit* of bothe
Ys, and ay [was] · and worth with-outen ende.

Man and his wife and children form a Trinity.

And as þre *per*sones palpable · is pureliche bote o man-kynde,
The whiche is man and hus make · and moillere-is issue,
So is god godes sone · in þre *per*sones þe trinite.
In mat*r*imonie aren þre · and of o man cam alle þre,
And to godhede goþ þre · and of o god is alle þre;

† There is a Trinity both in Manhood and in the Godhead.

Loo, treys encountre treys," quaþ he · "in godhede and in manhede."
"Hauest þow seyen þis?" ich seide · "alle þre, and o god?"
"In a somer ich seyh hym," quaþ he · "as ich sat in my porche,

300 I, Abraham, saw the three Persons (Gen. xviii. 2).

Where god cam goynge a-þre · ryght by my gate;
Tres uidit et unum adorauit.
Ich ros vp and reuerencede god · and ryght fayre hym grette,
Wesh here feet, and wypede hem · and after þei eten,
And what ich þouhte and my wyf · he ous wel tolde.

232. *spire* EFT] spir P; spyr G; spyer I; spirijt M. *tweyne* MIT] tweye EFG; tweyene P.

233. *out*] MF *om.* *of* (2)] T *om.* *seynt*] G *om.* *espirit*] spirit EIFGT; spirijt M. *bothe*] hem boþe ITG.

234. [*was* T] weren PEMFG; were I (*which looks as if* weren *is the author's own error*). I *omits last half of the line.*

235. *palpable*] palpablis T. *pureliche*] priueliche I. *bote*] F *om.*

236. *whiche*] wiche P. *moillere*] moiller M; moilere FTG; mulier I. *-is*] *so* PT; here EIFG; heore M; (*the possessive case of* moillere *is intended.*)

237. *god*] god and M. *in*] & E; G *om.*

238. *aren*] ben E; arn alle M.

239. *of*] MIFTG *om.* *o*] T *om.*

240. *treys*] treis EMIFTG. *encountre*] acountre MTG. *in* (2)] F *om.*

241. *Hauest þow*] Hast þow EMT; Hastou IF. *seyen*] i-seyn M; y-seye IFG; soþe (!) T. *and*] but M.

242. *seyh him*] si him M; him seye I; hym seiȝ T. *as*] T *om.*

243. *Where*] Were P. *goynge*] gangande I; gangyng TG. *a-þre*] in þreo M. *ryght*] F *om.* *et*] F *om.*

244. *ros*] a-ros M. *vp*] I *om.* *ryght fayre*] fayre y G.

245. *Here* M *has lost* a leaf; *down to* xx. 30. *Wesh*] Wesch I; Wissche F; Wissh G; Wysschen T. *after*] afterward IG.

246. *my wyf*] what my wyf þouȝte T.

He by-hihte ous issue and heir · in oure olde age,
Ful trewe tokne by-twyne ous is · what tyme þat ich mette hym;
How he fondede me ferst · my faire sone ysaac, — God commanded me to sacrifice Isaac.
To make sacrifice of hym · he het me, hym to honoure.
Ich with-sat nat hus heste · ich hope and by-leyue
Wher ich walke in þis worlde · he wol hit me a-lowe.
Ich circumsysede my sone · and al-so, for hus sake,
My-self and my meyne · and alle þat maule were
Bledden blod for þat lordes loue · ich hope to blesse þe tyme.
Myn affiaunce and my feith · is ferm [in] hus by-leyue;
For hym-self seide ich sholde haue · and myn issue boþe — God promised me an inheritance.
Lond and lordshup ynow · and lyf with-outen ende.
To me and to myn issue · more he by-hihte,
Mercy for oure mysdedes · as meny tymes
As we wilnede and wolde · with mouth and herte asken.
And sitthen he sende me to sayn · and seide þat ich sholde — God bade me honour Him with bread and wine.
Worshupen hym with wyn · and with bred boþe
At ones on an auter · in worshup of þe trinite,
And make sacrifice so · som-what hit by-tokneþ;
Ich leyue þat þilke lorde thenke · a newe lawe to make;
Fiet unum ouile et unus pastor. † John x. 16.

247. *heir*] erthe (l) F. *age*] gate (l) F.
248. *Ful*] But T. *tokne*] tokenys IT. *by-twyne*] bi-twix F. *what*] wat P; of what G. *what tyme*] whan tyme comþ IT. *mette* EFG] mete PT.
249. *me*] T *om.*
250. *het*] heet F; hete EI; leet G. *hym* (2)] E *om.*
251. *by-leyue*] ich bileue E; I leeue F.
252. *worlde*] wordle P. *he wol*] a wille I. *hit me*] me hit F.
253. *and*] IFTG *om.*
254. *alle*] T *om.* *maule*] *so* PEG; male IT; malus F.
255. *þat*] our E. *þe*] *þat* IT.
255—261. G *omits.*
256. [*in* IFT] PE *om.*
257. *and*] I and IT.
258. *lordshup*] lordscipes E.
259. *to*] T *om.* *he*] he me IFT.
260. *as*] also FT.
261. *wilnede*] willed F; wilne T. *and* (2)] & with T. *asken*] also I.
262. *sende*] *so* PEF; sente IG; sette T.
264. *At*] Ac F; But T.
265. G *omits.* *by-tokneþ*] betokened F.
266. *þilke*] þulke EG; ilke IFT. *thenke*] þenkeþ IF; þenkyþ G; þinkeþ T.

Thus have I ever been God's herald.

Thus haue ich beo hus heraude · her and in helle,
And comforted menye carful þere · þat after hus comyng loken. 268

301

I seek Him whom John baptized;

For-thi ich seke him," he seide · "for seynt Iohan þe baptist
Seide þat he seih hym her · þat sholde [saue] ous alle;

John i. 29.

Ecce agnus dei [qui tollit peccata mundi]."
Thenne hadde ich wonder of hus wordes · and of hus wide cloþes,
For in hus bosom he bar a þyng · and þat he blessede ofte. 272

I saw a leper in Abraham's lap,

And ich loked in hus lappe · a lazar lay þer-ynne,
With patriarkes and prophetes · pleiynge to-gederes.
"What waytest þow," quaþ faith · "and what woldest thou haue?"

whom I asked him to shew me.

"Ich wolde wyte," quaþ ich þo · "what is in þy lappe?"
"Loo!" quaþ he, and leet me seo · "lord, mercy!" ich seide, 277
"This is a present of muche prys · what pryns shal hit haue?"

"The devil," said he, "has claimed this leper and me:

"Hit is a preciouse present," quaþ he · "ac þe pouke hit haþ attached,
And me þer-wiþ," quaþ þe wye · "may no wed ous quite,

no one can ransom us

Ne no bern beo oure borghe · ne brynge ous out of daunger, 281
Fro þe poukes poundfalde · no maynprise may ous fecche,

267. *beo*] be EFG; ben IT.
268. *menye*] many a IFT. *loken*] loked IF.
269. *he*] i F; y G. *Iohan*] Ion EF. *þe*] F *om.*
270. *seih*] sey EG; sy F. *hym*] IT *om.* *sholde*] schal F. [*saue* IFTG] ioye PE; *cf.* B-text. [*qui, &c.*] *from* F.
271. *hus* (2)] I *om.* *hus wordes*] þys G.
272. *a*] IFTG *om.*
274. *pleiynge*] pleiȝeden T.
275. *waytest*] awaitest FTG. *faith*] *miswritten* faiht P. *woldest*] wolt I; wost (!) T.
276. *wyte*] ywite EIFG.
277. *leet*] lete E; let TG. *lord*] a lord F.
279. *attached*] attachede P; y-tachid T.
280. *þe*] þat FT. *wye*] wy F; wiȝ T; wey I. *quite*] aquyte FG.
281. G *omits.* *bern*] *so* PEI; barn F; burn T. *borghe*] borgh I; borw E; borwe F; boruȝ T. *out*] E *om.*
282. G *omits.* *poundfalde*] pyn-fold F.

Til he come that ich carpe of · crist is hus name, 302 till Christ comes,
þat shal delyuery ous som day · out of þe deueles powere, 284
And betere wed for ous wagen · þan alle we beon worthi,
And þat is, lif for lyf · oþer ligge þus euere, and offers life for life."
[Lollynge] in my lappe þus · til such a lord ous fecche."
"Alas!" ich seide, "þat synne · so longe shal lette
The myght of godes mercy · þat myghte ous alle amende!" 289
And wepte for hus wordes; · with þat ich seyh an oþer Then I wept, but soon beheld another,
Rappliche renne · þe righte wey we wente;
And ich fraynede hym furst · fro whennes he come,
What he hihte, and whider he wolde · and wyghtliche he ous tolde. 293 whose name I asked.

Hic explicit passus secundus de dobet.

283. *of*] F *om.*
284. *delyuery*] delyuere EIFTG.
285. *alle we beon*] we ben alle ITG.
286. *euere*] for euer EFG.
287. [*Lollynge* IT] Longynge PEFG; *cf.* B-text.
288. *ich—synne*] þat synne ich seide E. *seide*] seide þo F. *lette*] I-lette F.
289. *myghte*] schal G.
290. *for*] wiþ G. *ich seyh*] ich sey E; I saw F; sagh i I; sauȝ i T.
291. *Rappliche*] Rappelich E; Rapeliche IT; Ful rapeliche F. *Rappliche—righte*] þat rapliche wente þe hyȝe G. *we*] þat we FG.
292. *ich*] T *om.* *whennes*] wennes P; whenne þat F.
293. *whider*] IT whed*ur* F; whodere (*for* wheder?) E; woder (*for* wheder?) P; what G. *and* (2)] G *om.* *wyghtliche*] wittilich E. *tolde*] tauȝte G.
COLOPHON. *So* PG. *Hic*] EF *om.* *Hic explicit*] IT *om.*

PASSUS XX (DO-BET III).

Hic incipit passus tercius de dobet.

303 "I am HOPE," said he, "and bear a letter,

"Ich am *spes*, [a spye]," quaþ he · "and spire after a knyght,
þat tooke me a maundement · vp-on þe mounte of synay,
To ruele alle reames *þer*-with · in right and [in] reison.
Loo, here þe lettere," quaþ he · "in latyn and in ebrew,
That ich seye is soþe · seo ho so lykeþ."
"Ys hit a-seled?" ich seyde · "may men seo þe letteres?"

and seek Him who shall seal it."

"Nay," he seyde, "ich seke hym · þat haþ þe seel to kepe,
The whiche is criste and cristendome · and a croys þer-on to honge.
Were hit þer-with a-seeled · ich wote wel þe soþe,
That lucifers lordshup · ligge sholde ful lowe."

"Shew me," said I.

"Leet se thi letteres," quaþ ich · "we myghte þe lawe knowe."

Then he shewed me a stone,

He plyghte forþ a patente · a pece of an harde roche,

RUBRIC. *So in* P; Incipit tercius F; IT *om.*

OBS. M *begins at l.* 31.

1. [*a spye* IG] a spie FT; PE *omit; cf.* B-text. *spire* T] spirr P; speore F; spere I; spur*e* EG. *knyght*] kyng E.

3. [*in* EIFT] PG *om.*

4. *in* (1)] a I; o T. *in* (2)] an I; on T.

5. *That*] þat þat ITF; For þat G. *seye*] seih I; seiȝ T; say F. *is*] was F. *seo*] se it F; a-say G.

6. *a-seled*] a-selede P; assealed I; asselide T; I-selid F. *seo*] y-se I. *þe*] þy EG.

7. *he seyde*] sede he E; I seide (*wrongly*) F. *þe*] þat F.

8. *whiche*] wiche P. *criste and*] croys of G. *a*] IFT *om.* *a croys*] G *om.* *to honge*] y-honged I.

9. *a-seeled*] I-selid F.

10. *ligge—lowe*] schold ligge lowe F; lowe schulde ligge ITG.

11. *Leet*] Let T; Lat IFG. *þe*] þi F.

12. *forþ*] out F. *an harde*] a F.

Wher-on was write two wordes · in þis wise glosede;
Dilige deum & proximum [tuum]. 13 **304** whereon were the Commandments.
This was þe tyxt treweliche · ich toke ful good gome;
The glose gloryousliche was wryte · wyth a gylt penne;
In his duobus mandatis pendet tota lex [& prophete]. Mat. xxii. 40.
"Ys her al þy lordes lettere?" quaþ ich · "ȝe, [leue me," he] sayde, · 16
"And ho so worcheþ after þis write · ich wol vnder-take, "He that doeth thus is safe."
Shal neuere deouel hym dere · ne deþ in soule greue.
For þauh ich seye hit my-self · ich haue saued with þis charme
Of men and of wymmen · meny score þousend." 20
"He seiþ soþ," seide faith · "ich haue founde hit trewe. "Yes," said Faith; "behold
Loo, her in my lappe," quaþ faith · "þat leyuede vp-on þe lettere, here are Joshua, Judith, and others."
Boþe Iosue and Iudith · and Iudas makabeus,
And sixe þousand mo," quaþ faith · "ich can nat [seye] here names." 24
"ȝoure wordes aren wonderful," quaþ ich · "wher eny of ȝow be trewe "Which of you must I believe?" said I.
And leel to be-leyuen on · for body oþer for soule?
Abraam seith þat he seih · holiche þe trinite,

13. *write*] writen IF; ywrit E. *two* ET] to PFG; tweye I. *write—wordes*] two wordes ywrit E. *in*] and on IT. *glosede*] I-glosed F; a-glosed G. [*tuum*] *supplied from* T; PEIG *om.* F *has*—Diliges *dominum deum tuum super omnia & proximum tuum sicut te ipsum.*

14. *treweliche*] triweliche P. *gome*] *so* PEF; geme I; ȝeme T; kepe G.

15. *gloryousliche was*] was gloriousely IT. *wryte*] writen I. *gylt*] gulte I; gilden E. *mandatis*] IT *om.* *pendet*] pependit IT. *tota*] uniuersa E. [*& prophete* EF] PITG *om.*

16. *þy*] þis I. *lettere*] lettres IT. [*leue—he* EIT] leef me he F; leyf he me (*by mistake*) P; leof he me G.

17. *þis write*] his wit F.

18. *Shal*] Schal *þer* F. *deouel*] deuel EFIG; deuil T. *in*] in his T.

19. T *omits from* ich haue *to* faith *in* l. 21. *saued*] sauede P.

20. *meny*] many a F.

21. *seiþ*] seide F. *founde*] y-founde IF; vounde G.

22. *leyuede*] leued EI; leeued F; leuide T. *þe*] *þat* EITG; þis F.

24. G *omits.* [*seye* F] seiȝe T; seyn I; telle PE; *but obs. alliteration.*

25. *aren*] arn ful T. *ich*] i þo I. *wher*] wheþer T. *trewe*] trywe P.

26. G *omits.* *And*] And al P; *but* EIFT *omit* al. *body*] *so* PEIF; lif T (*as in* B-text). *oþer*] & T.

27. *seih*] sauȝ T; seiȝe E; sy FG.

þre persones parcel-mele · departable from oþer,
And alle þre bote o god; · thus abraam bereþ wittnesse,
And ysauede þat by-leyueþ so · and sory for here synnes,
305 He can no certayn summe telle · and somme aren in hus lappe.

"What need of a new law,

What neodeþ [hit] þanne · a newe lawe to brynge,
Sutthe þe furste suffisede · so by-leyue and be ysaued?
And now comeþ her this *spes* · and haþ aspied þe lawe,
þat of þe trinite ne telleþ · ne takeþ mo persones

such as Hope now proclaims?

To god-hede, bote o god · and o god almyghty,
The whiche alle men aren holde · ouere alle þyng to honoure;
And sitthe to loue and to leue · for þat lordes sake
Alle manere of men · as muche as ous self.
And for to louye and to leyue · in o lord almyghty.
Hit is lyght for lewede · and for lerede boþe;

Hope's law is harder than Abraham's.

Ac for to by-leyue in o lorde · þat lyueþ in þre persones,
And lereþ þat we louye sholde · as wel lyeres as leele—

Go thy way, *Spes!*"

Go þy gat," quaþ ich [to] *spes* · "so me god helpe,
Tho þat leorneþ thi lawe · wolle litel while hit vsen!"
And as we wente in the way · thus [wordyng of] þis matere,

30. G *omits.* *ysauede*] haþ y-saued I; haþ sauid T; seeth I-saued F. *by-leyueþ*] byleued I; beleuid T; lyue F. *for here*] be of F.

31. G *omits.* *Here* M *begins again.* *He*] i M.

32. *What*] But what F. *neodeþ*] neded I; nedite T. [*hit* G] it IFT; PE *om.*

33. *suffisede*] suffiseth F. *so* PETG] to IF; so to M. *be*] M *om.* *ysaued* E] ysauede P; i-saued M; saued IFG; sauid T.

34. *her*] þer M; IT *om.* *and*] þat I.

35. *þe*] no ITG. *ne*] TG *om.* *mo*] no T.

36. *o* (2)] E *om.*

37. *whiche*] wiche P. *holde*] i-holde M.

38. G *omits.* *to loue—leue*] loue and bileue M. *leue*] *perhaps* lene.

39. G *omits.* *muche* MFT] meche P; myche E; mochel I. *ous*] us MF; oure IT. *self*] selue MFI; seluen T.

40. *to* (2)] IMG *om.* *leyue*] leue ET; bileue MIFG. *lord*] god FG.

41. *lyght*] like F. *lewede*] lewed men M. *for* (2)] fore P.

42. *Ac*] & F. *o*] a MFG.

43. *þat*] nat (!) F.

44. [*to* EMIFTG] þo P; *cf.* B-text. *spes*] pes (!) T.

45. *Tho*] þei F. *leorneþ*] lereth F. *thi*] þe E. *wolle*] wel FT; wiln I. *while*] wile P. *vsen*] useth F.

46. *we—the*] I went in my F. [*wordyng of* IMFTG] wondrynge in P; wondrynge of E; *cf.* B-text.

Then seih we a samaritan · cam syttynge on a mule,
Rydynge ful raply · þe ryght way þat we wente,
Comynge fram a contreie · þat men callide Ierico,
To Iusten in ier*usalem* · he iacede awey ful faste.
Boþe abraam and *spes* · [and] he metten to-gederes
In a wilde wildernesse · wher theoues hadden bounde
A man, as me tho thouhte · to muche care þei brouhte.
For he ne myghte steppe ne stande · ne stere fot ne hondes,
Ne helpe hym-selue sothliche · for *semiuiuus* he semede,
And naked as a neelde · and non help aboute hym.
Faith on hym hadde furst a sight · ac he fleih a-syde,
And wolde nat neyhle hym · by nyne londes lengthe.
Hope cam hippyng after · þat hadde so ybosted
Hou he with moyses maundement · hade meny men holpen;
And whanne he hadde siht of þis sike · asyde he gan drawe,
And dredfulliche with-drow hym · an dorste go no nerre.
Ac as sone so þe samaritan · hadde sighte of þat syke,

Then we saw a Samaritan, riding on a mule, coming from Jericho. 306

Faith, Hope, and the Samaritan find a wounded man (Lu. x. 33).

Faith passes by him.

Hope also passes by him.

But the Samaritan alights,

47. *cam*] come IM; com T.

48. *Rydynge*] Ridande T. *ryght*] same G. *þat*] MIT *om.* *we*] he M. *wente*] ȝeden IT.

49. *Comynge*] Comande T. *callide*] callen T; calden M; callyþ G.

50. *in*] at T. *iacede*] *so* PM; iaced EIF; iaside TG. *ful*] M *om.*

51. [*and* MIFTG] as E; adde (*sic*) P. *to-gederes*] at ones ITG.

52. *hadden bounde*] hadde i-bounde MIFT.

53. *tho*] MG *om.* *muche*] *miswritten* muce P. *þei*] þo F.

54. G *omits.* *ne* (1)] IF *om.* *stere*] stire MF; T *om.* *hondes*] hand T.

55. G *omits.* *semiuiuus*] semiuyf IF; semyvif T; semeuijf M.

56. G *omits.* *And*] And as IFT. *neelde*] nelde ET; nedle F; nedel I; uedele M. *non—hym*] no lijf him aboute M. *aboute hym*] abouȝten I.

57. *on—sight*] first of him sight (*sic*) I; ferst had on him siȝt T; furst on him had siȝt F; of him furst hadde a syth M. *fleih*] fleiȝ ET; fly FG; fli M. *a-syde*] on side M.

58. *wolde*] nolde FT. *neyhle*] *so* PG; neȝle E; neyȝhele I; neiȝhen F; neihe M; neiȝe T. *nyne*] many M.

59. *hippyng*] hoppynge E; huppyng G; lippyng M. *þat*] & F. *so*] M *om.*

60. *men*] man T. *hade—holpen*] many men hadde i-holpe M.

61. *And*] Ac I; F *om.* *whanne*] wanne P. *of*] on EF. *þis*] þe F. *gan*] gan him MT.

62. *And*] M *om.* *hym*] him þo IT. *an*] and MEIFTG. *nerre*] ner hym T.

63. *as*] so ITG. *so*] as EMF; IG *om.* *þe*] þat M. *þat syke*] þis careful IFTG.

He alyghte a-non of lyarde · and ladde hym in hus hondes, 64
And to þis wye he wente · hus wondes to [be]holde.
He perceyuede by his pous · he was in peril to deye,
And bote he hadde recouer þe raþer · þat rise sholde he neuere. 67

and washes his wounds with wine and oil,

He vnbokelede hus boteles · and boþe he a-tamede;
With wyn and with oile · hus wondes he can lithe;
Enbaumede hym and bond hus heuede · and on bayarde hym sette, 70

takes him to a grange called *lex dei*,

And ledde hym forth to *lauacrum · lex-dei*, a graunge,
Is sixe myle oþer seuene · by-syde þe newe markett,
And lefte hym þere a lechinge · to lyuen if he myghte.

and tells the innkeeper to take care of him, giving him two pence.

And took two pans to þe hosteler · to take kepe to hym,
"And þat goþ mor for hus medicine · ich make þe good aȝenwarde,
For [ich] may nat lette," quaþ [þat] lede · and lyarde he bystrydeþ, 76

Then he rides on to Jerusalem.

And rapede hym to ryde · þe righte wey to Ierusalem.
Bothe faith and hus felawe *spes* · folweden faste after;

Then ran I after the Samaritan,

Ac ich suwede þe samaritan · and seide hou þei bothe
Weren afered, and flowen · fro þe man y-wonded. 80

4. *He*] I *om.* *alyghte*] liȝt F; liȝte T. *anon*] M *om.* *hym—hondes*] hit on his hand M.

65. *wye* E] wy F; wiȝ T; *badly spelt* weye P; wey I; wythg M. *beholde* MT] by-holde I; biholde E; behoolde F; holde (*wrongly*) P.

66. *He*] And ITFG. *perceyuede*] aperseyuede M. *pous*] puffis (!) T. *he*] þat he G. *he—peril*] in perel he was F.

67. G *omits.* *bote*] but if I; but ȝif T. *recouer*] rekeuere E; rekeuour F; recuuerer M; recouerer I. *þe*] FT *om.* *þat rise*] a-rise M.

68. *He*] And IT. *a-tamede*] gan atame T.

69. *wondes*] wounde T. *can*] gan EIMFTG. *lithe*] light I.

70—76. G *omits.*

70. *heuede*] hede E; hed MT; heed F.

71. *dei*] dei *omnipotentis* M.

73. *a*] at M. *if* I] ȝif MFT; hif P.

74. *pans*] pens MI; panys T.

75. *goþ mor*] more goþ I. *þat—hus*] what is more for F. *þe*] hit M.

76. *For*] F *om.* [*ich* E] i MIFT; P *om.* [*þat* EIMFT] þe P. *bystrydeþ*] gan stride F.

77. *rapede*] rapeþ I; rape (*sic*) E. *rapede—ryde*] to ride him rapede M.

78. *faith*] þe faiþ I. *folweden*] hyeden G. *folweden—after*] þei folwede faste F.

80. *y-wonded*] y-wondede P; y-wounde I.

"Haue hem excused," quaþ þe samaritan · "here help wolde nat vaille,
Ne medecine vnder molde · þe man to hele brynge,
Noþer Faith ne fyn hope · so festered aren hus wondes;
With-oute þe blod of [a] barn · he beoþ nouht ysaued,
The whiche barn mot needes · be bore of a mayde,
And with þe blod of þat barn · embaumed and baptized.
And þauh he steppe and stande · right strong worth he neuere
Tit he haue eten al þat barn · and hus blod dronken,
And ȝut be plastred with pacience · when fondynges hym prykieþ—
For wente neuere [man] þis way · þat he ne was here rifled,
Saue my-selue sothliche · and suche as ich louede—
And ȝut be-leyue leelly · vpon þat litel baby,
þat his likame [schal] lechen atte laste ous alle."
"A! syre," ich seide · "shul nat we by-leyue,
As faith and hus felawe *spes* · enformede me boþe,
In þre persones, a parceles · departable from oþer,
And all þre bote o god? · þus abraham me tauhte.
And hope afterwarde · of god more me tolde,

and told him what Faith and Hope had done.

He told me that nothing could cure the wounded man but the blood of a child born of a virgin.

"Nearly all," said he, "who pass through that wilderness are robbed."

"Shall I believe in the Trinity, as Faith taught me?" said I,

81. *excused*] ascusid T. *quaþ*] seide F. *wolde*] may IFTG; mai M. *vaille*] auaile IMFTG.
82. *Ne*] Ne no IT. *þe man*] hym G.
83. *aren*] ben EM.
84. [*a* EIMFTG] þat P. *he beoþ*] þei ben M; he worþ G. *ysaued*] ysauede P.
85. *whiche*] wiche P. *bore*] *so* PG; born EMIFT.
86. *embaumed*] embaumede P. *baptized*] baptizede P; y-baptized I.
87. *steppe—stande*] stande & steppe ITG.
88. *eten* EIFT] heten P; i-ȝeten M; ȝete G. *al*] G *om.*
89—91. G *omits.*
89. *he*] I *om.* *plastred*] plastrede P; y-plastred I. *fondynges*] fondyng MF. *hym*] hem T.
90. [*man* MIT] *better than* men PEF (*though* men *is also used in the* singular, *when indefinite*). *ne was*] nas FT. *rifled*] riflede P; i-rifled M; y-ruyfled I; I-robbed F.
92. *be-leyue*] bileue M; to be-leyue P; to bileue E; to leeue F; but þey leue ITG (*the reading of* M *is the only one that makes sense*). *þat*] þe I; a M. *baby*] barn E.
93. *his*] is P. [*schal* EMIFG] shal T; P *om.* *atte*] at þe MEFT; & at þe G.
94. *we* EMIFTG] *miswritten* weye P.
96. *a parceles*] aparseld M; apertly F; a parcel G.
98. *hope*] sir hope F. *of*] of o I. *me*] he me G.

"or in the law of Love, as Hope taught me?"

And lerede me for hus loue · to louye al man-kynde,
And hym abouen alle · and hem as my-selue; 100
Noþer lacky ne alose · ne leyue þat þer were
Eny wickeder in þis worlde · þan y were myself,
And most imparfit of alle persones · and pacientliche suffre 103
Alle manere of men · and þauh ich myghte me venge,
I sholde tholie and ponken hem · þat me vuel wolde."

"Follow the teaching of both."

"He seide soth," quaþ þe samaritan · "and so ich rede þe also.
And as abraam þe olde · of o god þe taughte,
Loke þow louye and by-leyue · al þy lyf-tyme. 108
And if kynde witt carpe her-aȝen · and oþer kynne þouhtes,

Shew to heretics thy HAND.

Oþer heretikes with argumens · þyn hond þou hem shewe!
For god þat al by-gan · in gynnynge of þe worlde,
Ferde furst as a fust · and ȝut is, as ich leyue, 112

† Cf. Isaiah xl. 12.

Mundum pugillo continens,

The Father is like the folded FIST;

As with a fust with o fynger · yfolde to-gederes,
Til hym liked and luste · to vnlose þe fynger,

the PALM betokens the Holy Ghost;

And profrede hit forth as with þe paume · to what place it sholde.
The paume is þe piþ of þe honde · and profreþ forþ þe fyngres, 116

100. G *omits.* *and*] I *om.*

101. *lacky*] *so* PE; lacke MF; lakke IG; lak T. *alose*] *so* PMFG; allose I; loose E; los T.

102. *Eny*] A E. *wickeder*] worse MF. *þis*] þe I; T *om.* *worlde*] *written* wordle P.

104. *of*] I *om.* *myghte me*] me miȝte T. *me*] IG *om.* *venge*] a-venge M.

105. *sholde*] schal M. *tholie*] þole T. *vuel*] euel MF; yuel IEG; euil T.

106. *He seide*] A seyde I.

107. *taughte*] tauhgte P.

109. *And*] F *om.* *her*] þer ME. *and oþer*] or eny MIFTG.

110. *þou*] þat þou IT. *hem*] hym E.

111. *gynnynge*] bigynnyng IF; þe bi-gynnyng M.

113. *with* (1)] MG *om.* *with* (2)] without (*sic*) I. *o*] a IMTG; F *om.*

114. *liked*] likeþ I. *liked—luste*] lust & likede F. *vnlose*] vnclose M; vnlouke F. *þe*] þat MFTG.

115. *hit* (1)] M *om.*

116. *þe piþ*] pith F; þe put M; piþe G. *forþ*] I *om.* *fyngres*] fynger MT.

To mynystre and to make · þat myght of hond knoweþ,
And bytokneþ trewely · telle ho so liketh, 311
The holy gost of heuene; · he is as þe paume. 119
The fyngres þat freo beo · to folden and to clycchen
By-tokneþ sothliche þe sone · þat sente was tyl erthe,
Touchede and tastede · at techynge of þe paume,
Seynte marie, a mayde · and mankynde lauhte;
Natus ex maria uirgine.
The fader is þenne as þe fust · with fynger and with paume, 124
To huden and to holde · as holy writ telleþ;
Omnia traham ad me ipsum.
Al þat þe fynger groþeþ · graythly he grypeþ,
Bote yf þat þat he groþeþ · greue þe paume.
Thus are thei alle bote on · as hit an hande were, 128
A fust with a fynger · and a foll paume.
And as þe fust is ful hand · yfolde to-gederes, 312
So is þe fader a ful god · þe furste of hem alle.
And as my fust is furst · er ich my fyngers shewe, 132
So is he fader an former · þe furste of alle þynges;
Tu fabricator omnium;
And alle þe myghte with hym is · was, and worth euere.

the FINGERS betoken the Son.

John xii. 32.

The FIST, PALM, and FINGERS are but ONE HAND.

The folded fist is like God the Creator.

117. *mynystre* MI] mynestre P; mynystre *þer-with* F.
118. *bytokneþ*] bytockneþ P; *but see* l. 121. *telle*] telle hit M.
119. *he*] for he F.
120. *folden* E] folde MIFTG; *mis-written* felden P. *clycchen*] clucche EIT; clenche M; clouche F.
121. *sothliche*] sotthliche P; treulich E. *tyl*] on M; to T.
122. *tastede*] techide T. *techynge*] tastyng T.
123. G *omits*. *Natus*] Natus est I.
124. G *omits*. *is þenne*] þanne is M.
125. *huden*] *so* PE; huyde IG; hiden MF; hide T. *writ*] *badly spelt* wriȝth P. *telleþ*] techeþ M.
126, 127. *One line in* I—And *þat þe fynger* groþeþ he gripeþ · but if it greue þe paume; *so also* T.
127. *groþeþ*] gripeþ MG; gripe F.
128. *an*] on a E.
129. *fust*] fist T. *foll*] ful EMI FTG.
130. *þe fust*] þere M. *ful*] a ful MIFTG; *but* PE *omit* a; *cf.* B-text. *yfolde*] yfoolde P; ydrawe G.
131, 132. M *omits*.
132. *And*] ITG *om.*
133. *So is*] And IT. *fader*] þe fadere EF. *an*] and MEIFT. *former*] formoure EIF; fourmetour T. *Tu, &c.*] M *om.*
134. *þe*] G *om.* *was*] and was MT; E *om.* *and*] as E.

The fingers are as the Son.

Þe fyngres is ful hand · for, failled thei here þombe,
Portrey ne peynte · parfitliche, ich leyue,
Sholde no wryȝt worche · were he aweye.
Ryȝt so, faillede þe sone · þe syre be ne myghte,
Ne holde, ne helpe · ne hente þat he louede;
Dextre dei tu digitus.
The paume is pureliche þe honde · and haþ power by hym-self,
Oþer-wise þan þe wrythen fust · oþer werkmanshup of fyngres.

The palm unfolds the fist, and receives from the fingers,

For þe paume haþ power · to putten oute þe Ioyntes,
And to vnfolde þe fust · for hym hit bylongeþ,
And receyuen þat þe fyngres rechen · and refuse, yf hym likeþ,
Al þat þe fyngres and þe fust · felen and touchen,
Beo he greued with here gripe · þe holy gost let falle.
Thus is þe holigost god · noþer grettoure ne lasse
Thenne is þe syre oþer þe sone · and of þe same myghte,

and fingers, fist, and palm are but one hand.

And alle þre nys bote o god · as my hand and my fyngres,
Vnfolde oþer yfolde · a fust-wyse oþer elles,
Al is hit bote on hand · hou so y turne hit.

313

He who is hurt in the palm fails in power over the fingers and the fist.

Ac ho so is hurt in þe hand · euene in þe myddes,
He may receyue ryght nouht · reson hit sheweþ;
For þe fyngeres þat folde sholden · and þe fust make,
For peyne of þe paume · power [hem] failleþ

135. *fyngres*] fust M (*wrongly*). *ful*] a ful EMFG. *for*] ac F. *thei*] M *om.*
136. *Portrey*] Noþur portreie F; Ne myȝte portreie G. *leyue*] wene G.
137. *wryȝt* E] wriȝt F; write (*sic*) I; withg M; wiȝt T; *spelt* wryȝth P; whyȝt G. *worche*] noþur wurche wel F. *he*] þey IT; hit M.
138. *Ryȝt*] Ryȝght P.
139. M *transposes* helpe *and* hente.
140. *pureliche*] propurliche M.
141. *þe wrythen*] þei write (!) T.
142. *to*] for to I. *oute*] forþ M.
143. *for*] to F.
144. *And*] And to G. *hym*] hem I.
146. *Beo he*] But he be IT. *greued*] *miswritten* greueued P. *let*] lat IF.
147. *Thus*] And þus IT. *lasse*] lessere IT; smaller MF.
148. *is*] I *om.* *oþer*] and M. *and*] bute G. *of*] F *om.*
149. *nys*] is MIT; F *om.*
150. *Vnfolde*] Vnfolden MIT. *y-folde*] folden MIT.
151. *hit*] MG *om.*
152. G *omits.* *so*] I *om.*
155. [*hem* MIFG] hym PET.

To clucche oþer to clawe · to cluppe oþer to holde.
Were þe myddel of myn hand · with-oute mal ese,
In menye kynne manere · ich myghte my-self helpe,
Boþe meue and amende · þauh alle my fyngres oken.
By this *simile*," he seide · "ich seo an euidence,
That ho so syngeþ in þe *seynt espirit* · asoilled worth he neuere,
Noþer her ne elles-wher · as ich herde telle;
Qui peccat in spiritum sanctum [*neque remittetur ei*,] *&c.*
He prikeþ god as in þe paume · þat *peccat in spiritum sanctum*.
For þe fader is as þe fust · þe sone is as þe fyngres,
The holy gost of heuene · he is as þe paume.
So ho so syngeþ aȝens þe *seynte espirit* · hit semeþ þat he greueþ
God, þer he gripeth · and wolde hus grace quenche.
For to a torche oþer to a taper · the trinite is likened,
As wexe and a weke · [were twyned] to-gederes,
And fuyr flaumed · forth of hem boþe;
And as wex and weke · [and warm fuyr] to-gederes

If the fingers only are hurt, the palm still retains power.

Likewise he who sins against the Holy Ghost is never forgiven,

Mark iii. 29,

for he grieves the HAND in the PALM.

314

The Trinity is like a TORCH, having WAX, WICK, and FIRE.

150. *To*] For to F. *clucche*] clicche MTG; clyche F. *cluppe*] clippe MFITG.
157. *Were*] Ac were F.
158. *menye*] many a F. *my*] me M.
160. *By*] & so by F. *simile*] similitude T. *he*] y G. *he seide*] F *om.*
161. *That*] F *om.* *syngeþ*] synneþ EMT; senneþ I; synnede F. *þe*] F *om.* *seynt*] I *om.* *espirit*] spirit IEG; espijt (*sic*) M. *asoilled*] asoillede P; amended G.
162. *ne*] nor F. *spiritum sanctum*] *spiritu sancto* I. [*neque—&c.*] *from* F; M *has*—ne r. &c.; PEIT *om.*
163. *He*] For he IT. *as*] M *om.* *þe*] his IT.
164. *þe* (1)] god þe IG. *as*] M *omits* (*twice*). *fyngres*] fynger MEIFG.
165. *The*] & þe F. *he*] MG *om.*
166. *So*] F *om.* *so*] þat G. *syngeþ*] synege F; synneþ MEITG. *seynte*] FG *om.* *espirit*] spirit EIFG. *hit*] hem I.
167. *þer*] *þer*-wiþ I. *quenche* EM IFTG] queynche P.
168. *likened* MI] likenede P; lyknedGT; I-likned F; ylickened E.
169. *As*] & as F. *a*] FTG *om.* [*were twyned* I] were tweyned M; were twynnyd P; if þei were wounde F; and warme fur PEG (*by confusion with* l. 171); *see* B-text.
170. FT *omit.* *fuyr flaumed*] flaumed fuyr PEG; *but* fuyr flammede M; þanne flammyng fure I; *see* B-text.
171. FT *omit.* [*and warm fuyr* MG] and warme fure I; were twynede P; were twyned E (*by confusion with* l. 169); *see* B-text.

Fostren forþ a flaume · and a fayre lye,
That seruep þese swynkeres · to seo by a nyghtes,
So doþ þe syre and þe sone · and *seynt espirit* to-gederes,
Fostren forth a-mong folke · fyn loue and by-leyue,
þat alle kynne crystene · clanseþ of synne.

Like a smouldering torch without light,

And as þou suxt some tyme · sodenliche, of a torche
þe blase beo blowen out · ȝut brenneþ þe weke,
With-outen lye and lyght · [lith] fuyr in þe macche,

so is the quenching of the Spirit.

So is þe holy gost god · and grace with-oute mercy
To alle vnkynde creatures · þat coueyten to distruye
Leel lycame, and lif · þat oure lorde shupte.

Glowing coals give no light like a blazing torch does.

And as glowynge gledes · gladeþ nat þese workemen
þat worchen and waken · in wynteres nyghtes,
As doþ a kyx oþer a candele · þat cauht haþ fuyr, and blaseþ,
No more doþ the syre ne þe sone · ne *seynte espirit* to-gederes
Graunten eny grace · ne for-gyuenesse of synnes,
Til þe holy gost by-gynne · to glowen and blase.

The Spirit, blown upon by Love, flames like FIRE.

So þat þe holy gost · gloweþ bote as a glede,
Til þat loue and by-leyue · leelliche to hym blowe.
Thenne flammeþ he as fuyr · on fader and on *filius*,

172. *fayre*] fyre I. *lye*] lie E; liȝe M; leye IF; leiȝe T.
173. *þese*] þes P. *seo*] werke I. *a*] on M.
174. *þe* (1)] F *om.* *seynt*] þe seynt M. *espirit*] spirit IETG.
177. *suxt*] sixte E; sixt FG; seest IM; sest T.
178. *þe*] ȝif þe F. *blowen*] y-blowen IT.
179. *lye*] lie M; leye I; lowe T. *and*] oþer T. *lyght*] lith (= lyght) M. [*lith* IF] liþ MTG; *miswritten* lyght P; liȝt E (*by repetition*).
181. *coueyten*] conuerten (!) E.
182. *lycame*] liham M. *shupte*] schapte MF.
183. *gledes*. EIMFT] *miswritten* glades P; *but see* l. 188. *gladeþ*] gladieþ I. *nat*] now M; I *om.* *þese*] þes P.
184. *worchen—waken*] waken and worchen M. *waken*] walken T; a-waken F. *nyghtes*] tyme F.
185. *kyx*] kex MF. *cauht*] lauȝt F.
186. *the*] I *om.* *espirit*] spirit EITG.
187. *synnes*] synne MTG.
188. *Til*] Til þat I. *bygynne*] bigynneþ M; gynne I. *and*] & to FTG.
189. *bote*] M *om.*
190. *by-leyue*] þe leue T.
191. *Thenne*] And þanne IT. *flammeþ*] flaumeþ E; flaumiþ G; flameth F. *fader*] þe fader M; Pater G.

And melteþ myghte in-to mercy · as we may seo a wynter, 192 315

Isykles in euesynges · thorgh hete of þe sonne
Melteþ in a mynt-while · to myst and to water;
So grace of þe holy gost · melteþ al to mercy,
The grete myghte of þe trinite · to mercyable, and to none oþere. 196

As icicles are melted by the sun's heat, so the Spirit inclines the Trinity to mercy.

And as wex wiþ-oute more · vpon a warm glede
Wol brennen and blasen · beo thei to-gyderes,
And solasen hem þat mowe nat seon · syttyng in deorknesse,

As WAX laid on an ember will blaze,

So wol þe fader for-ȝyuen · folke of mylde hertes, 200
That rufulliche repenten · and restitucion maken,
In as muche as þei mowen · amenden and payen,
And yf hit sufficith nat for a-seth · þat in suche wille deyen,
[Mercy, for his mekenesse · wil make good þe remenant.] 204

so the Father forgives penitents.

And [as] þe wicke and þe warme fuyr · wol make a fayr flamme
For to murthen men with · þat in merke sytten;
So wol crist, of hus curtesye · and men crye hym mercy,
Boþe for-ȝeuen and for-ȝuten · and ȝut bydde for ous
To þe fader of heuene · for-ȝyuenesse to haue. 209

As a WICK, when lighted, burns,

so Christ forgives also.

192. *we* EIMFTG] *miswritten* wey P. *a*] in M.
193. *Isykles*] Isecheles MF. *in*] on I.
194. *mynt*] *so* PEFG; mynte IT; myte M.
195, 196. *melteþ—trinite*] þe grete myȝt of þe trinite Melteþ al to mercy IT (*as in* B-text). *to none*] noon FG.
198. *thei*] þei to M.
199. *hem*] IT *om.* *seon*] seo MG; sen E; see F; se IT. *deorknesse*] derknesse MTG; derkenesse IF; derkesse (!) E.
203. *sufficith*] suffice FT; sofice M. *a-seth*] aseth E; asseþ T; a-seeth F; a-sech (*error for* a-seth) I. *for a-seth*] i-now M. *þat*] & F. *wille* E] *badly spelt* wile P; wil MFG; a wille I; a wil T. *deyen* G] deien EM; deyn P; dyen F; deyeth I; deiȝeþ T.
204. *From* I; *also in* EMFTG; P *omits.*
205. [*as* EMFITG] P *om.* *þe* (2)] a G; EMFIT *om.*
206. *men*] E *om.* *merke* ME] merk FTG; a myrke I; meerk P.
207. *and men*] if men wil F.
208. *for-ȝuten*] forȝutte E; forȝete IMFG; forȝeten T. *bydde*] bit E.
209. *þe*] our F. *of*] in E. *for-ȝyuenesse*] and forȝeuenesse I.

But FIRE without tinder will not be of service;

Ac hewe fuyr of a flynt · four hundred wynter;
Bote þou haue tache to take hit with · tunder and broches,
Al þy labour is lost · and al þy long trauayl;
For may no fuyr flamme make · faille hit hus kynde.

so is the Spirit like Grace without Mercy.

So is [þe] holigost god · and grace with-oute mercy
To alle vnkynde creatures · as crist hym-self wittnesseþ;

Mat. xxv. 12.

Amen dico uobis, nescio vos.

316 If thou art unkind,

Beo vnkynde to þyn emcrystene · and al þat þow canst bidde,
Dele and do penaunce · day and nyght euere,

then, for all the pardons thou canst buy, the Spirit hears thee not.

And porchase al þe pardoun · of paumpelon and of rome,
And Indulgences ynowe · and be ingrat to þy kynde,
The holygost huyreþ [þe] nat · ne helpeth þe, be thow certayn.
For vnkyndenesse quencheþ hym · þat he [can] nat shyne,
Ne brenne, ne blase cleer · for blowynge of vnkyndenesse.
Seynt paul þe apostel · proueþ wher ich lye;

1 Cor. xiii. 1.

Si linguis hominum loquar, &c.

Beware, ye wise men,

For-þi beoþ war, ȝe wyse men · þat with þe worlde deleþ,
That ryche beon and reson knowen · reuleþ wel ȝoure soule.

of unkindness,

Beoþ nat vnkynde, ich consaile ȝou · to ȝoure emcristene.

210. *Ac hewe*] Hak out M. *of*] at IT.

211. *Bote*] But ȝif M. *tache*] tach EF; tasche I; tasshe T; houȝt (*for* ouȝt) G; M *om.* *tunder*] tonder MI; tendere EG. *and*] or T; & sum F.

212. *al*] MF *om.*

213. *flamme*] no flamme PE; *but* MIFTG *omit* no; *cf.* B-text. *faille*] lacke M.

214. [*þe* EMIFTG] P *om.* *god*] M *om.*

215. *wittnesseþ*] *miswritten* wittnesse P.

216. *emcrystene*] euencristene IT.

218. *paumpelon*] pampiloun IF; pampilioun T; pampilion G; þe paumpelen M. *and*] M *om.*

219. *And*] & eke F. *and*] F *om.* *ingrat*] ingratis (*sic*) IT; nygard MG.

220. *huyreþ*] hureþ EG; hereþ IM FT. [*þe* IMFTG] PE *om.* *þe*] M *om.* *be thow*] be þe M; in G.

221. *quencheþ* EMIFTG] queyncheþ P. [*can* EIFT] ne can M; P *om.*

223. *Seynt*] IT *om.* *wher*] wheþer T; where þat G; wer P.

224. *For-þi*] For-whi M; þerfore F. *with þe*] wit *with* (*sic*) F. *worlde*] wordle PG.

225. *soule*] soules MI.

226. *emcristene*] euenecristene MIGT.

For menye of [ȝow] ryche men · by my saule, ich lye nat,
ȝe brenneþ, ac ȝe blaseþ nat · and þat is a blynde bekne; lest ye burn, but blaze not.
Non omnis qui dicit [michi] domine, domine, intrabit in regnum celorum. 228 Mat. vii. 21.
Mynne ȝe nat, riche men · to which a meschaunce
þat *dives* deyed, and dampned [was] · for hus vnkyndenesse Remember Dives, who perished;
Of hus mete and of hus moneye · to men þat hit neodede?
ȝut wan he hit nat with wrang · ne with queynte sleythes, 232 † yet he won not his wealth by wrong-doing.
Bote ryȝtfulliche, as men [rat] · al hus rychesse cam hym,
And on hym-self, seith the book · sotelede hou he myghte
Most lordliche lyuen · and leet hus lycame werie
Cloþes of most cost · as clerkes bereth wittnesse;
Epulabatur splendide, & induebatur bisso & purpura. 236 † Luke xvi. 19.
And for he was a nigard · to þe neodful poure, † But he was a niggard to the poor.
For godes treitour he is tolde · for al hus trewe catel,
And dampned is and dwelleþ · with þe deuel in helle.

227. [ȝow IMFTG] PE *om.* *ryche*] riche EMFITG; ryke P; *but see* l. 225.
228. *ȝe*] E *om.* *bekne*] *sa* PMFT; bekene EG. [*michi*] *in* F. *domine* (2)] I *om.* *regnum*] regno T.
229. *Mynne*] Mene MT; Wite G. *riche*] ȝe riche M. *to*] F *om.* *which*] swich M; wich P. *a*] E *om.*
230. *dampned was* TG] dampned PEI; dampned is M; was I-dampned F; *cf.* l. 239.
231. *of*] IT *om.* *hus* (2)] G *om.*
232. *hit*] I *om.* *sleythes*] sleyȝtes IF.
233. *ryȝtfulliche*] ryȝthfulliche P. [*rat* EMIT] þat P; rede F; sayþ G.
234. *on*] *so* PEIT; how M; FG *om.* (*The word* on *is not wanted, but the mistake seems to be the author's.*) *seith*] as seith I. *sotelede* G] soutelede P; souteled E; *but* soteled F; sotiled I; sotilide T; sotilde M.
235. *leet*] ȝet T; ȝit IF; ȝut M (*wrongly*); G *om.* *hus*] on his T. *werie*] were FT.
236. *& purpura*] ITG *om.* *The quotation in* F *is*—Induebatur purpura & bisso & epulabatur cotidie splendide.
237. *nigard*] nygarde and a nything IT. *þe neodful*] reuþful E.
238. *tolde*] called I. *al*] M *om.*
239. *is*] IT *om.* *and*] a I. *in*] of G.

† Since he is damned, though he won not with guile,

Suthþe he with-oute wiles wan · and wel myghte a-temye

Lordliche for to lyuen · and likyngliche be cloþed,
And is in helle for al þat · how wole riche nouthe

† how shall niggards be excused, who have won wealth guilefully?

Excuse hem þat beþ vnkynde · and ȝut here catel wonne
With wiles and with luther wittes · and ȝut wollen nat atemye

To gon semliche ne sitte · sith holy writ techeþ,
That þat wikkedliche is wonne · to wasten hit, and to make frendes?

† Luke xvi. 9. *Facite uobis amicos de mammona iniquitatis.*

Eche a riche man, ich rede · reward her-of take,
And ȝeueþ ȝoure good to þat god · þat grace of ariseþ.

317 For ȝe þat ben vnhende to hyse · hope ȝe none oþer,
Bote to dwelle þer *dives* is · dayes with-outen ende.

Unkindness quenches the Holy Spirit, Thus is vnkyndenesse [kid] · and aquencheþ, as hit were,
The grace of þe holygost · godes owene kynde;
For þat þat kynde doþ · vnkynde for-doþ.

as thieves quench a man's life. Acorsede þeoues, vnkynde cristene men · for couetise and enuye

240. *Suthþe*] And sitthe I; And siþen T. *wiles*] *miswritten* whiles P; *see* l. 244. *atemye*] atemye *or* ateniye P; *but* a-temye MEF; a-tymye I; atemie G; ateme T.

241. *likyngliche*] likendeliche I.

243. *catel*] I *om.* *wonne*] i-wonne MIG.

244. *With wiles*] *at end of* l. 243 *in* T. *atemye*] atemye *or* ateniye P; *but* atemye EMF; atymye I; ateme TG; *as in* l. 240.

245. *ne*] ne to F; and M. *sith*] sittþ P. *writ techeþ*] scripture tellith F; writ telliþ G.

246. I *omits.* *That*] T *om.* *That—is*] Of þat is wickidliche F. *hit*] G *om.* *to* (2)] GT *om.* *to make*] maketh F. *uobis*] vos I.

247. *a*] ME *om.* *man*] IFTG *om.* *take*] to take F.

248. *And*] F *om.* *good* EMIFTG] goud P.

249. *ȝe*] þo T; I *om.* *vnhende*] vnkynde MF. *hyse*] hise IMFG; his ET.

250. *to*] þey I; ȝif þei T; ȝe M. *þer*] þer þat M. *is*] F *om.* *dayes*] dai MTG.

251. *Thus is*] & þat for F. [*kid* T] PEMFI *omit; but it is clearly required.* *and*] þat F. *aquencheþ* E] aqueyncheþ P; quencheþ MIFG; quenchid T.

253. *For*] Comunliche F. *þat* (2)] IT *om.* *for-doþ*] for-dooth it aftur F.

254. *Acorsede*] As cursede MFG; As þis cursede I; As þise curside T. *vnkynde*] vnkende P; *but see last line.* *cristene*] F *om.*

Sleeþ a man for hus meobles · with mouth oþer with handes;
For þat þe holy gost haþ to kepe · suche harlotes destruyen,
The whiohe is lyf and loue · the lye of mannes body.
For euery maner good man · may be lykned to a torche, Every good man is like a torch;
Oþer elles [to] a taper · to reuerence with þe trinite;
And ho so morþereþ a good man · me þynkeþ, [by] myn In-witt, he who murders him, quenches the light.
He for-doþ þe light þat oure lorde · lokeþ to haue worsshep of.
And ȝut in mo maneres · men offendeþ þe holy gost;
Ac þis is þe worste wise · þat eny wight myghte
Synegen a-ȝens þe *seynt espirit* · assenten to destruye
For couetyse of eny kynne þyng · þat cryst dere boughte.
How myghte he aske mercy · oþer eny mercy, hym defende, How shall the merciless expect mercy?
That wikkidliche and wilfulliche · wolde mercy anyente?
Innocence is next god · and nyght and day hit cryeþ,
'Veniaunce! veniaunce! · for-ȝeue be hit neuere,

255. *Sleeþ* EF] Sleþ ITG; Slen M; Slechþ P. *meobles* EF] mebles MIG; meblis T; noebles P (*a mere clerical error*). *mouth*] money I.

256. *suche*] *so* FG; swiche M; þo I; þe T; and suche PE; *but* and *is not wanted.*

257. *lyf—loue*] loue & life I. *lye*] *so* PEF; lie MG; ley I; leiȝe T.

258. *maner good*] good maner I. *may be*] is F. *lykned*] likned EFG; liknid T; likened MI; lycknede P; *cf.* l. 168.

259. [*to* EMFTG] PI *om.* *to—trinite*] þe trinite to honoure F.

260. *morþereþ* EMI] murþreþ T; formoþureth (*sic*) F; morþreþ G; *miswritten* morþrerþ P. *good* IMFTG] goode E; goud P. [*by* EIFG] be MT; in P; *see* B-text.

261. *He*] A I. *for-doþ*] so doþ (*wrongly*) T; bi-nymeþ M. *to—worsshep*] be wurscheped F.

262. *in*] on M.

263. *worste*] wurse F. *wight* IFT] wyȝt G; withg M; whight P; whiȝt E.

264. *Synegen*] Senegen G; Synege F; Synny E; Synnen IT; Synne M. *espirit*] spirit EITG. *assenten*] to sente F.

265. *boughte*] a-bouȝte MF.

266. *eny*] F *om.*

267. *anyente*] *so* PEITG; anentesch M; aquenche F.

268. *hit*] he T; M *om.*

That shende ous and shadde oure blod · for-shupte ous, as hit semede ;

Rev. vi. 10. *Vindica sanguinem iustorum !'*

Even Love cries out for vengeance." Thus 'veniaunce ! veniaunce !' · verray charite askeþ,
And suthen charite, þat holychurche is · chargeþ this so sore,
Leyue ich neuere þat oure lorde · atte laste ende
Wol louye þat lyf þat loue · and leel charite destruyen."

"But were I to pray for the Holy Ghost's forgiveness," said I, "should I be saved ?" "Ich pose ich hadde syneged so," quaþ ich · "and shold nouthe deye,
And now am ich sory þat ich so · þe *seynt espirit* agulte,
Confesse me and crye hus grace · god þat al made,
And myldeliche hus mercy aske · myghte ich nat be saued ?"

"Thou mightest; "ȝus," seide þe samaritan · "so þou myghtest repente,
That ryghtwisnesse þorgh repentaunce · to reuthe myghte turne.

yet how seldom is a condemned felon pardoned for his penitence ! Ac hit is bote selde seyn · ther sothnesse bereþ witt-nesse
Eny creature be coupable · by-for a kynges Iustice,
Be yraunsoned for repentaunce · þer al reson hym dampneþ.
Ther þat partye porsueþ · þe apeel is so huge,

270. *shende*] *so* PEMFG ; schent IT. *shadde*] *so* PEG ; schedde MIFT. *forshupte*] forschapt F ; fforsshepte T ; forchopte M. *semede*] semeþ MF. *sanguinem, &c.*] *domine* sanguinem *sanctorum* tuo*rum* F.

272. *charite*] þat charite P ; *but* EMIFTG *omit* þat. *holychurche*] holy F. *chargeþ*] charieþ (!) T.

273. *Leyue*] Leue EMITG ; Leeue F. *atte*] at þe EMIFTG.

274. *and leel*] leel & F. *leel*] I *om.*

275. *pose*] suppose F ; pose *þat* G. *syneged*] sineged G ; syngede F ; synned ET ; i-synned MI. *nouthe*] noght (!) I.

276. *ich* (1)] FG *om.* *am ich*] i am M. *so*] so dude PE ; *but* IMFTG *omit* dude. *espirit*] spirit EITG. *agulte*] *so* MG ; agilte I ; agilt T ; agilted F ; to agulte PE ; *but* IMFTG *omit* to ; *cf.* B-text.

277. *al*] al þing F.

278. *aske*] aske er T.

279. *ȝus*] ȝis IF.

280. *þorgh*] þoru þi M. *to* EMI FTG] *miswritten* tow P.

281. *selde* EMITG] seild P ; seelde F. *sothnesse*] southnesse P.

282. *Eny*] Euery I.

283. *yraunsoned* ET] yraunsomed IF ; raumsomed M ; yraunsende (*for* yraunsonde) P. *for*] for his IT.

284. *Ther—porsueþ*] Or þere þe partie sueth F. *apeel*] apele E ; appel T ; apel M ; apul I ; peel F. *is*] his P. *huge*] hoige F ; houge T.

May no kynge mercy graunt · til boþe men a-corden,
þat ayþer partye haue [equite] · as holy writt witnesseþ; 286
Nunquam dimittitur peccatum, &c. **319**
Thus hit fareþ by suche folke · þat folwen here owene wil,
þat vuel lyuen and leten nat · til hem for-sake synne.
Drede of desperacion · þenne dryueþ a-wey grace, 289 Despair drives away grace.
þat mercy in here mynde · may nat þenne falle;
For good hope þat hem helpe sholde · to [wanhope] turneþ;
And nat of þe [nounpower] of god · þat he nys ful of myghte 292 It is not through God's lack of power
To amenden al þat amys is · and hus mercy grettour
Than alle oure wikkede werkus · as holy writ telleþ,
Misericordia eius super omnia opera eius. (Ps. cxliv. 9, Vulg.),
Ac er hus rightwisnesse to reuthe turne · restitucion hit makeþ; but because some restitution is required.
As sorwe of herte is satisfaccion · for suche as may nat paye. 296
Ac þre þynges þer beoþ · þat doþ a man to sterte Three things drive a man out of his own house:
Out of his owene hous · as holy writ sheweþ.

285. *May*] þat may IT.

286. *ayþer*] euery T. [*equite* EITG] acquitee F; a quyte P; a quit M; *see* B-text. *witnesseþ*] *miswritten* witnesse P; *as in* l. 215. *dimittitur*] dimittatur M.

287. *In margin of* M—De disperacione.

288. *leten*] leeue F; lette T. *til*] to I. *for-sake*] for-sakeþ M.

289. *Drede*] Som drede I; & drede F. *awey*] ITG *om.*

290. *may*] ne may F.

291. *hem*] him M. *hem helpe*] helpe þenne IT; þenne helpe G. [*wanhope* EIMFTG] whamhope P (*by mistake*). *turneþ*] *here* torneþ IT; it *turneth* F.

292. [*nounpower* F] noumpower M noun-poer I; newe power (!) T; vnpower PE; *cf.* B-text. *nys*] ne is MFI. *ful—myghte*] al-my3ty F.

293. *amenden*] mende F. *amys*] mys MF.

294. *oure*] o*þ*ere I. *wikkede werkus*] werk*us* wicked F. *telleþ*] us telleth F.

295. *er*] ar IFG. *hus*] þis IM. *rightwisnesse*] ri3t F. *er—rightwisnesse*] *þer* is ri3tfulnesse E.

296. *As*] For M. *is*] of I; and M. *for*] to F. *as*] þat ITG.

297. *beoþ*] biþ G; ben EMIT; be F. *to*] MT *om.* *In margin of* M—De tribus inimicis (*against* l. 294).

298. G *omits.* *his*] is P. *hous* EMIT] hows F; *apparently miswritten* houe P; *but see* l. 301.

a shrewish wife,
That on is a wikkede wif · þat wol nat be chasted;
Hure fere fleeth fro huere · for fere of huere tounge.
rain dripping through a leaky roof,
And yf hus hous be vnheled · and reyne [on] hus bedd
He sekeþ and sekeþ · [til] he slepe drye.
and smoke that irritates his eyes.
Ac when smoke and smorþre · smyt in hus eyen,
Hit doþ hym wors þan *hus wyf · oþer wete to slepe.*
For þorw smoke and *smorþre · smerteþ hus syghte,*
Tyl he be bler-eyed *oþer blynde · and þe borre in hus*
þrote,
320
Koweþ and corseþ · þat crist ȝyue hym sorwe
That sholde brynge yn bettere wode · *oþer* blowe til hit
brente.
These þre þat ich telle of · thus beoþ to vnderstonde;
The scolding wife is the frailty of our flesh;
The wif is oure wikkede fleshe · [þat] wol nat be chasted,
For kynde clyueþ on hym euere · to contrarie þe soule.
And thauh he falle, he fynt skyles · þat frelete hit made.
And þat is lyghtliche for-ȝyue · and for-ȝute boþe
To man, þat mercy askeþ · and amende þenkeþ.
the dripping rain is like sicknesses;
Ac þe reyn þat reyneþ · þer we reste sholde,
Beoþ syknesses and *oþer* sorwes · þat we suffren [ofte],

299. *on*] IT *om.* *chasted* EMG] chastede P; chastied T; I-chasted F; chastised I.

300. *fleeth*] fli M. *fro*] I *om.* *fro huere*] hire fro T; þan her fro F.

301. *vnheled*] vnhelede P. *reyne* EFTG] regne M; ryne PI; *but see* l. 315. [*on* EMIFTG] in P. *bedde*] hed M.

302. *He*] þan he F. [*til* IFTG] er P; or E. *til he*] forte M.

303. *Ac*] And MF. *smorþre*] smorþur F; smore M; smolder IT; (*and in* l. 305). *smyt in*] smerteþ E. *eyen*] eiȝe T; eye G.

304. *wete*] whete P. *to*] for to FT.

305. *For*] T *om.* *hus*] so his F.

306. *be*] I *om.* *bler-eyed* M] blereyde P; blereiȝed T; blered IF; blered, *altered to* blereid E. *oþer*] and M. *and*] or M. *borre*] burre IFT.

307. *Koweþ*] Kowheþ EG; Coueth I; Couheþ M; Couȝiþ T; þan he cowheth F. *þat*] ȝa (*sic*) I. *crist*] god G. *hym*] hem M.

308. *brynge*] bryngge P. *blowe*] blowen it ITG.

309. *to*] IG *om.* *vnderstonde*] vnderstonnde P.

310. *The*] Oure M. [*þat* EMG] & F; PIT *om.* *chasted* G] chastede P; ychasted EF; schasted M; chastised I; chastid T; *see* l. 299.

311. *clyueþ*] cleueþ IMFT. *on*] of G.

312. *fynt*] fynd M. *skyles*] scile F. *þat*] G *om.*

313. G *omits.* *for-ȝyue—for-ȝute*] forȝete · & forgyue F.

314. *man*] þat man F.

315. *Ac*] IT *om.* *reyneþ* EIFT] ryneþ P; regneþ M; raineþ G.

316. *Beoþ*] Is F. *syknesses*] sikenes EF. *sorwes*] sorwe F. [*ofte* MFT] ouht P; out E; oghte I; ouȝt G; *cf.* B-text.

As seynt paul þe apostel · in hus pistles techeþ, 317
Virtus in infirmitate perficitur. 2 Cor. xii. 9.
And þauh men maken · muche deol in here angre,
And beo inpacient in here penaunces · pure reson knoweþ, and impatience under sickness is pardonable.
That þei han cause to contrarien · by kynde of here syknesse; 320
And lightliche oure lorde · at here lyues ende
Haþ mercy of suche men · þat vuel may suffrye.
Ac þe smoke and þe smorþre · þat smyt in oure eyen, But the smoke is like unkindness,
Þat is couetise and vnkyndenesse · which quencheþ quenching mercy.
godes mercy. 324
For vnkyndnesse is contrarie · of alle kynne reson; 321
For þer ne is syk ne sory · ne non so muche wrecche, There is no man but can, if he will,
Þat he ne may louye, and hym lyke · and lene of hus herte
Good wil, good worde · boþe wusshen and wylnen
Alle manere of men · mercy and for-ȝeuenesse, 329 love his neighbour as himself."
And louye hem yliche hym-sylf · þat hus lyf a-mende.
Ich may no lenger lette," quaþ he · and lyarde he prykede,
And wente away as þe wynde · and þer-with ich awakede. 332 The dreamer awakes.

Hic explicit passus tercius de dobet.

317. *As*] & F; I *om.* *seynt*] IT *om.* *in*] þus in F. *pistles*] pistel IMF. *Virtus*] Nam uirtus P; *but* EIMFT *omit* Nam. *in*] M *om.*

318. *And*] Ac M. *men*] þat men IFTG. *deol*] *so* PE; doel FT; dool M; deel I; del G.

319. *penaunces*] penaṇce MIF.

320. *That*] F *om.*

321. *lightliche*] holich (!) E.

322. *of*] on IFTG.

323. *smorþre*] smorthour F; smorre M; smolder IT. *smyt*] *so* ETG; smyth M; smytte I; smyȝt P; smyteth F; *see* l. 303.

324. *þat*] F *om.* *and*] F *om.* *which*] wich P; swich M; þat F.

325. *is*] is þe IT; *in* F. *of*] to FG. *kynne*] kynde I; kynes T; maner G.

326. F *omits.* *ne is*] nys IM.

327. *he*] M *om.* *louye*] loue FMT. *lene*] lene *or* leue *in the* MSS.

328. *Good* EMIFTG] Goude P. *good*] goud P; and good MG. *boþe*] MG *om.* *wusshen*] whusshen P.

329. *of*] IF *om.* E *omits from* mercy *to* hem *in* l. 330.

330. *hus lyf*] is liue & IT.

332. *þe*] ITG *om.* *and*] and rith M. *awakede*] awoke I; waknide T.

COLOPHON. *So* PG; M *omits.* *Hic*] EF *om.* *Hic explicit*] IT *om.*

PASSUS XXI. (DO-BET IV.)

Hic Incipit passus quartus de dobet.

322 The dreamer wanders wearily,

WO-werie and wetschod · wente ich forth after,
As a recheles renke · þat recchep nat of sorwe,
And ȝeode forþ lyke a lorell · al my lyf tyme,
and falls asleep. Til ich wax wery of þis worlde · and wilnede efte [to] slepe,
And lenede me til lenten · and longe tyme ich slepte.
He dreams about Palm Sunday (Mat. xxi.; Mk. xi.). Of gurles and of *gloria laus* · gretliche me dremede,
And how *osanna* by org[o]ne · olde [folk] songe.
The good Samaritan, or Piers Plowman, comes riding onwards. On was semblable to þe samaritan · and somdel to peers plouhman,
Barfot on an asse bak · bootles cam prykye,
With-oute spores oþer spere · and sprakliche he lokede,
323 As is þe kynde of a knyght · þat comeþ to be doubed,
To geten hus gilte spores · and galoches y-co[u]ped,

TITLE. *So in* PMG; Incipit passus quartus E; Incipit quar*tus* F; IT *om.*

1. *Wo-werie*] Ful weri E; Wollewerie G; *but* Wolleward IFT (*as in* B-text); Wellenward M. *wetschod* EMT] wetschode P; wete-schood F; watschoed I; wadsshod G.

2. *a*] G *om.* *recheles* EFTG] reccheles IM; *misvritten* richeles P.

3. *lyke*] y-like IT.

4. *wax*] *so* PMF; waxe I; wexe E; wex T; was G. *þis*] þe IG. *wilnede*] leste G. [*to* IMFTG] PE *om.*

5. *til*] to IFT. *lenten*] lentoun IF; lente M.

6. *me*] i M.

7. *orgone* F] orgene IT; orgne PE; organ M; origene (!) G. [*folk* FTG] folke I; men PEM; *cf.* B-text.

8. *was*] ITG *om.* *plouhman*] þe plouȝman T.

9. *cam*] gan F. *prykye*] prike TG.

10. *spores*] spore MF. *and*] ac M; IFTG *om.* *sprakliche*] so PT; spracliche MFG; sparklich EI.

11. *a*] E *om.* *comeþ*] cam G. *doubed*] *so* PE; dobbed MI; dubbed FG.

12. *To*] For to F. *hus*] him F; hise M; here IT. *gilte*] gult M; gilden E; gild G. *y-couped* IMFT] y-coped PG; ykeped E.

Then was faith in a fenestre · and cryde, "*a! filij dauid!*" — Faith cries out, proclaiming the "Son of David."

As doþ an heraud of armes · when auntres comeþ to Iustes.

Olde Iewes of ier*usalem* · for ioye þei songen,

Benedictus qui venit in nomine domini. — Mat. xxi. 9.

Þenne ich fraynede [at] faith · 'what al þat fare bymente,

And ho sholde iusten in ier*usalem*?' · "iesus," he seide, — Faith says that Jesus is coming to joust,

"And fecche þat þe feond cleymeþ · peers frut þe plouhman."

"Ys peers in þis place?" quaþ ich · and he preynkte vpon me,

"*Liberum dei arbitrium*," quaþ he · "for loue haþ vndertake

That þis *iesus* of hus gentrise · shal Iouste in peers Armes, — and will wear Piers' coat-armour.

In hus helme and [in] hus haberion · *humana natura;*

þat crist be nat knowe · for *consummatus deus,*

In peeres plates þe plouhman · this prykiere shal ryde;

For no dint shal hym dere · as *in deitate patris.*"

"Ho shal Iouste with *iesus*," quaþ ich · "Iewes, oþer scrybes?"

"Nay," quaþ Faith, "bote þe feond · and fals dom to deye. — He will joust against the foul fiend, and against

13. *Then*] And þanne IT. *a* (2)] o T.

14. *auntres*] *so* PEIMG; auntr*us* F; *but we should probably read* auntrous, *as in* T; *cf.* B-text.

15. G *omits.* *ioye*] ioie þo F. *in*, *&c.*] E *om.*

16. *fraynede*] fraynnede P. [*at* IMFT] of G; PE *om.* *what*] þat F. *bymente*] bi-menede M.

18. *fecche*] fecche awei M. *feond*] deuel G. *cleymeþ*] cleymed F.

19. *preynkte*] prenkte E; preynte MFGT; princte I. *vpon*] on I.

20. *quaþ he*] ITG *om.* *haþ*] he haþ M. *vndertake*] y-take G.

21. *þis* ME] þys G; þes P; is IT; F *om.* *of*] for FG. *gentrise* MG] gentrice IE; gentrye FT; genterise P.

22. *In*] G *om.* [*in* IMET] PFG *om.* *natura*] creatura M.

23. *þat*] *miswritten* þa P. *knowe*] i-knowe MIFTG. *for*] as M; T *om.*

24. *plates*] *so* PEIMG; plat*us* F; platis T. *this*] thes P. *prykiere*] prikere IT.

25. *For*] þat M. *dint*] dryth M; donte *or* doute I. *as*] F *om.*

26. *oþer*] or þe M; wheþ*er* G.

false doom of death.

Deþ seith he wol for-do · and a-doun brynge
Al þat lyueþ oþer lokeþ · a londe and a watere.

324 Life threatens to defeat Death,

Lyf seith þat he lyeþ · and haþ leyde hus lyf to wedde,
þat for al þat deþ can do · with-Inne þre dayes,
To walke and fecche fro þe feonde · peers frut þe plouhman,
And legge [lyt] þer hym lykeþ · and lucifer bynde,

for ever.

And [forbete and bringe adoun] · bale [and] deþ for euere ;

Hosea xiii. 14.

O mors, ero mors tua !"

Pilate comes with much people (Mat. xxvii. 19).

Thenne cam *pilatus* with muche peuple · *sedens pro tribunali,*
To seo hou douhtiliche deþ sholde do · and deme here beyer ryght.
The Iuwes and þe iustices · aȝens *iesus* þey were,
And alle þe court cryede · '*crucifige*' lowde.

One bears false witness against Jesus.

Thenne put hym [forth] a pelour · by-for pilat, and seyde,
"Thys *iesus* of oure Iuwen temple · Iapede and despisede,
To for-don hit on a day · and in þre dayes after
Edefien hit efte newe— · her he stant þat seyde hit—
And ȝut make [hit] as muche · in alle manere poyntes,

28. *for-do*] forþ M.

29. *a*] on M; o T (*twice*). *and*] or M.

30. *þat*] M *om.* *lyeþ*] lickth F. *leyde—lyf*] lif leide F.

31. *deþ*] he M. *In margin of* M —de passione christi.

32. *To walke*] *at end of* l. 31 *in* IT. *fecche*] to feche E.

33. [*hyt*] hit MG; it IFT; hym PE. *þer*] þere as F.

34. [*forbete*] *so* MI (*as in* B-text); forbite PEFTG. [*and—a-doun* MFG] adoun and brynge PET; a-downe & begge (*sic*) I. [*and* MF] PEITG *om.* *ero—tua* EF] tua ero mors P; mors tua ero M; *but* I *has* —O mors, mors tua ero, morsus; *see* Vulgate.

35. *cam*] M *om.* *peuple*] pride F.

36. *hou—do*] þe douȝtinesse of deeth F. *deme*] deyme P. *beyer*] beiere E; beyre I; boþe MF; boþis T; beye G.

37. *iustices*] Iustice T.

38. *cryede*] þo cride F. *lowde*] lowede P; longe E.

39. [*forth* IMFTG] PE *om.* *pelour*] *so* PEMIFG; pilour T. *pilat*] pilatus IG.

41. *To for-don*] For to done I. *on*] in T. *a*] o G. *in*] in þe E.

42. *Edefien hit*] Edified F. *stant —hit*] stond hit seide M.

43. *ȝut*] I ȝit F; M *om.* [*hit* MEG] it IFT; P *om.*

Bothe as longe and as large · aloft and a-grounde,
And as wyde as hit euere was · this we witnessen alle."
" *Crucifige*," quaþ a kachepol · " he can of wicche- John xix. 15.
crafte."
" *Tolle, tolle*," quaþ anoþer · and toke of kene þornes,
And by-gan of a grene þorne · a garlaunde to make, The crown of thorns.
And sette hit sore [on] hus hefd · and suthe seyde in 325
enuye,
" *Aue, rabbi*," quaþ þat ribaud · [and] reodes shotte at
hus eyen :—
And nailede hym with þre nayles · naked on þe rode, Jesus is crucified with three nails,
And with a pole poyson · putten to hus lippes,
And [beden] hym drynke, hus doþ to lette · and hus
dayes lengthen ;
And seide, "yf he sothfast beo · he wol hym-self
helpen ;
And now, yf þow be criste · godes sone of heuene, and bidden to come down from the cross.
Come a-doune of þis rode · and þenne wol we leyue
That lyf þe louyeþ · and wol nat lete þe deye."
" *Consummatum est*," quaþ Crist · and comsede for to "It is finished." John xix. 30.
sounye
Pitousliche and paal · as prison þat deyeþ ;

44. *aloft*] on lofte M. *a-grounde*] on grounde M.
45. *And*] MG *om.* *we witnessen*] we whitnessen P ; withnesseþ we M.
46. *of*] on M ; G *om.*
48. *a*] EIFG *om.* *of—þorne*] þer-of M.
49. [*on* EMIFTG] in P. *hefd*] hed GEM; heed IF; heuid T. *suthe*] F *om.* *in*] *with* F.
50. *rabbi* M] rabi PITG ; raby F. [*and* MEIFTG] a P. *reodes*] reed F ; rede T. *at*] vp to IT ; in F ; on G.
51. *naked*] naken M ; faste G. *on*] vppon ITG ; to F. *þe*] a IMT.
52. *with—pole*] a pole wiþ M. *to*] vp to T ; þey to G.
53. [*beden* IMT] bed G; bad F; bid PE ; *cf.* putten *in* l. 52. *hus* (1)] F *om.*
54. *seide*] seiden MF ; saiden I. *sothfast*] sotthfast P ; sotil I ; sotile T. *he—hym-self*] him-selfe now he wol IT.
55. *now*] craftily T ; I *om.* *yf*] ȝif þat F. *godes—heuene*] and criste goddes sone IFT ; crist goddes sone MG (*a remarkable variation, as helping out the alliteration*).
56. *þis*] þe MFT. *wol*] schal IT. *leyue*] leue EIMTG ; leeue F.
57. *lyf*] lord & lif F.
58. *sounye*] swowny E ; swowne IF ; swoune M ; swone TG.
59. *paal*] *so* PEG ; pale IMT ; al pale F. *as*] & (!) E. *prison*] prisoun dooth F ; a prison MGT. *þat*] G *om.*

The lord of lyf and of light · þo leyde hus eyen to-gederes.

The light of day withdraws. The day for drede þer-of with-drow · and deork by-cam þe sonne ;

The wal of þe temple to-cleef · euene a two peces ;

The hard roche al to-rof · and ryght derk nyght [hit] semede ;

Tho erthe quook and quashte · as hit quyke were,

Dead bodies rise. And dede men for þat deon · comen oute of deope graues,

And tolden why þat tempest · so longe tyme durede.

One of them tells of the battle between Life and Death. "For a byter bataile" · þe dede bodye seyde,

"Lyf and deþ in þis deorknesse · her on for-doþ þat oþer,

Ac shal no [wiȝt] wite witerliche · ho shal haue þe mastrye,

Er soneday, a-boute sonne-rysynge" · and sank with þat til erthe.

326 Somme seiden he was godes sone · þat so faire deyede ;

Mat. xxvii. 54.] *Vere filius dei erat iste :*

Some seiden, "he can of sorcerye · good is þat we a-saye

Wher he be ded oþer nat ded · doun er he be take."

The two thieves. Two þeoues þer wer · þat þoleden deþ þat tyme

61. *by-cam*] bygan EG.

62. *to-cleef*] *so* PE ; to-clef MITG; cleef F. *euene*] G *om.* *a two*] in to MI. *peces* EMFTG] pices P. *a—peces*] al to-gedres I.

63. M *omits.* *derk*] F *om.* [*hit* G] it IFT; PE *om.*

64. *quook*] to-quake I ; to-quaȝte T. *quashte*] quashete P (*apparently by mistake*); quasshte G ; quaste E ; quasschede F; quakede M ; quoke I ; quok T. *quyke were*] were quike G.

65. *deon*] deone MF; dene ET; deþe I ; done G.

66. *why*] wy P. *þat*] þe I. *tyme*] while M (*wrongly*) ; G *om.*

67. *For*] Al for F. *þe*] þat F. *bodye*] bodies T.

68. *her—for-doþ*] ere on fordo E (*wrongly*). *her*] þat F. *þat*] here I.

69. *Ac*] F *om.* [*wiȝt* IF] wyȝt G ; withg M ; whit P ; whiȝt E ; wy T. *wite witerliche*] withturli wite M.

70. *Er*] Or M ; Ar a I ; Er a T. *a-boute*] at F; a-boute þe MIT. *and*] he G. *sank*] schrank F. *til*] to I ; to þe T.

71. *godes*] M *om.*

72. *Some*] And some IT. *of*] MF *om.*

73. *Wher*] Wheþer MF. *doun*] a-doun G. *er*] or MF.

74. *þer*] þan *þere* F. *þer—þat*] þo ITG.

Vpon crois by-side crist · so was þe comune lawe.
Quikliche cam a cacchepol · and craked a-two here legges,
And here armes after · of euerich of þo þeoues.
Ac þer was no boye so bolde · godes body to touche, — No one breaks the legs of Christ.
For he was knyght and kynges sone · kynde for-ȝaf þat tyme
þat no boye hadde hardinesse · hym to touche in deyinge.
Ac þer cam forth a blynde knyght · with [a] kene spere y-grounde, — But a blind knight, named Longeus,
Hihte *longeus*, as þe lettere telleþ · and longe hadde lore hus sight.
By-fore pilat and oþer peuple · in þe place he houede.
Ac maugre hus meny teþ · he was mad þat tyme
To Iouste with *iesus* · this blynde Iuwe *longeus;* — jousts against Jesus,
For alle hij were vnhardy · þat houede þer oþer stode,
To touche hym oþer to tryne hym · oþer to take hym doun and graue hym,
Bote þis blynde bachelere · þat bar hym þorw þe herte; — and pierces his heart.
The blood sprang doun by þe sper · and vnsperrede þe knyghtes eyen. — The blood heals his blindness.
Tho fel þe knyght vpon knees · and cryed iesu mercy, 327

75. *crois*] þe crois MG.
76. *Quikliche—cacchepol*] A cacchepol of þo þeues cam I; A cacchepol cam T. *a-two*] on to M.
77. *And*] & eke F. *þo*] þe MG.
78. *þer*] I *om.* *no boye*] non M; beorne *þer* F (*omitting* no).
80. *boye*] bodi MG. *no—hadde*] hadde no boy IT. *hym—touche*] to touche him F. *in*] at his M. *deyinge*] deyyinge P.
81. [*a* IMT] PEFG *om.*
82. *longeus*] longis MG. *telleþ*] seith F. *and*] G *om.* *lore*] *so* PG; lorn MT; lost F.
83. *þe*] þys G; F *om.* *he*] *þere* he F.
84. *Ac*] IMFTG *om.* *maugre*] maugrey P; Mawgreith F; Malgre I. *mad*] i-mad MF.
85. *To*] For to FT; I *om.* *this*] þe FG. *Iuwe*] knizt T; knyth M. *longeus*] longis MG; at wille F.
86. *hij were*] þei weren M; þey were FG; were þey IT. *þer*] T *om.* *stode*] stoude P.
87. *to* (2)] M *om.* *tryne*] *so* PEF; trinen I; trine G; turne M; trien T. *to* (3)] MF *om.* *and*] or I. *and—hym*] in graue F; T *om.*
88. *þis*] þe M. *þat*] he M. *þorw*] to F.
89. *sprang*] þo sprang F; ran M. *þe knyghtes*] his F.
90. *fel* MFTG] feol P; felle E; fil I. *knees*] his knes MFT.

Longeus cries mercy of Christ.

"A-ȝens my wil hit was," quaþ he · "þat ich ȝow wonde made!"
He syghede and seide · "sore hit me for-þynkeþ,
Of þe dede þat ich haue don · ich do me in ȝoure grace.
My londe and my lycame · at ȝoure lykynge takeþ hit,
And haue mercy on me, ryghtful Ihesu!" [and] ryght with þat he wepte.

Then Faith reproves the Jews of cowardice,

Thenne gan faith foully · þe false Iewes to despisen,
And calde hem 'caytifs a-corsed' · for þis was a vil vilanye:—
"Veniaunce is to ȝou falle · þat makede þe blynde
Beten hym þat was ded · hit was a boyes dede!"
[Þus faith bi-gon to fare · wiþ þe false Iewes]—
"Corsede caityfs! · knyghthod was hit neuere
To bete a body ybounde · with eny briȝt wepne,
þe gree ȝut haþ he geten · for alle hus grete wondes.

saying that their chief champion had yielded himself recreant.

For ȝoure champion chiualer · chief knyght of ȝow alle
ȝelt hym recreaunt rennynge · ryght at iesus wil.
For beo þis deorknesse ydo · deþ worþ venkised,

91. *A-ȝens*] Aȝen IT; Ageyn M; Aȝe F. *was*] is T. *wonde*] wounde EIMFTG.

92. *He*] þan he F; And IT. *syghede*] siked E. *seide*] to crist seide F.

93. *þe*] o G. *don*] i-do MT; do IFG. *in*] hit in-to G.

94. *My*] Boþe my IT. *lykynge*] wille M.

95. *ryghtful*] myȝtful F. [*and* IFT] PEMG *om.* *ryght—þat*] *with* þat mone F.

96. *þe*] G *om.* *to*] *placed before* þe *in* I; F *om.*

97. *And*] ITG *om.* *calde*] callede M. *caytifs a-corsed*] cursede caitifes MF. *for*] M *om.* *vil*] fil (*sic*) EG; MF *om.* *for—vilanye*] for her vilenye F; for euere I (*which begins* l. 98 *with* For þis was a vile vilany, *and divides the lines wrongly*).

98. *is—falle*] ȝow bifalle I. *falle*] bi-falle M. *makede*] made ITG.

99. *hym*] a body F. *hym—ded*] þe dede I; þe dede þat ȝe dede (*sic*) T. *hit*] þis I.

100. *From* M; PEIFGT *omit.*

101. G *omits.* *Corsede*] Kene a-cursede F.

102. G *omits.* *To*] For to F. *briȝt* EFT] brighte I; briȝth P; brith M. *wepne*] wepenes I.

103. *geten*] gete MG; I-gete F. *wondes*] *so* PG; woundes EMIFT.

104. *champion*] *miswritten* campion P; *but observe the alliteration.*

105. *recreaunt*] creaunt I. *rennynge*] remyng MF.

106. *venkised*] *so* PM; y-venkised G; venkysched E; yvenquyst T; y-wenkused I. *deþ—venkised*] of deth he is avenged F.

And ȝe, lordlinges, han lost · for lyf shal haue þe maystrie,
And ȝoure fraunchise þat freo was · fallen is to þraldom,
And alle ȝoure children cheorles · cheuen shulle þei neuere, "Ye shall never thrive except by usury."
Ne haue lordshup in lond · noþer lond tylie,
And as barayne beo · and by vsure libbe,
The whiche is lif þat oure lorde · in alle lawes defendeþ. 328
Now beoþ ȝoure goode dayes don · as daniel of ȝow telleþ,
When crist with crois ouercam · ȝoure kyngdom shal to-cleue;
Cum uenerit sanctus sanctorum, cessabit unctio uestra." Cf. Dan. ix. 24.
What for fere of þis ferly · and of the false Iewes,
Ich drow in þat deorknesse · to *descendit ad inferna*,
And þer ich seyh sothliche · *secundum scripturas*;
Out of þe west, as it were · a wenche, as me þouhte, MISERICORDIA. From the West coast approaches Mercy.
Cam walkynge in þe way · to helleward he lokede.
Mercy hihte þat mayde · a mylde þyng with-alle,
And a ful benygne burde · and buxum of speche.
Heore sustre, as hit semede · cam softly walkynge VERITAS.

107. *ȝe*] ȝow M (*wrongly*). *lordlinges*] lordeynes T; lordyng*us* F; lordes M. *shal*] wile M.
108. *fraunchise*] *miswritten* fraunchises P. *fallen*] y-fallen IT. *to*] in-to I; in T. *þraldom*] charldom F.
109. *þei*] *miswritten* þe P.; I *om.*
110. *noþer*] ne no ITG; ne þe F. *tylie*] tulye I; telie M.
111. *as*] as þe F. *and*] as M.
112. *whiche*] wiche P. *The—lif*] Which is usure F. *lawes*] lawe F.
113. *beoþ*] buþ M; ben I; be FT. *goode*] godes G. *don*] i-do M; ydon T; do F. *of*] ofte I.
114. *with*] þorgh IT; E *om.* *to-cleue*] be cleue E. *Cum*] Dum T. *uenerit*] veniat IG. *cessabit*] cessat IT; cesset G.
115. *the*] þese F.
116. *drow*] drow me F; wiþdrogh I; wiþ-drouȝ T; wiþ-drow G. *in*] in-to M.
117. *ich seyh*] saw i F.
118. *it were*] me þouȝte T. *wenche*] weynche P. *me þouhte*] it were T.
119. *in*] by G. *he*] *so* PFG (*for* hue); heo T; sche IM; ȝo E.
120. *Mercy*] Dam mercy F.
121. *benygne*] *miswritten* benyngne P; beynde T. *burde*] bierde I; berde M; boerde F. *of*] of her F.
122. *walkynge*] after M.

From the East comes Truth.

Euene out of þe est · and westwarde he þouhte,
A comely creature and clene · treuthe [he] hihte.
For þe vertue þat here folwede · afered was he neuere.
Whan þeos maydenes metten · mercy and treuthe,

They wonder at the marvellous events.

Ayþer axed of oþer · of þis grete wonder,
Of þe deone and deorknesse · and how þe day [rowed],
And whiche a light and a leom · lay by-fore helle.
"Ich haue ferly of þis fare · in faith," seide treuthe,
"And am wendyng to wyte · what þis wonder meneþ."
"Haue no meruayle *þer*-of," quath mercy · "murthe hit by-tokneþ.

"Mary the maiden,"

A mayde þat hatte Marie · and moder with-oute felynge

329 said Mercy, "bare a child,

Of eny kynde of creature · conceyuede þorw speche
And grace of þe holygost · waxe gret with childe,
With-oute [wo*m*manes] wem · in-to þis worlde brouhte hym;
And þat my tale is trewe · ich take god to witnesse.

thirty years ago.

Sutthen þis barn was ybore · beoþ þritty wynter passed,
Deyed and deþ þolede · þis day a-boute mydday;

123. *est*] west (!) T. *he*] he (*for* hue) PFG; sche IMT; ȝo E.

124. *clene*] a clene IF. *and—hihte*] treuthe was here name T. [*he*] sheo P; sche IM; scheo F; ȝo E; heo G; *but cf.* ll. 123, 125.

125. *here folwede*] folweth here F. *he*] *so* PFT (*for* hue); sche IM; ȝo E; heo G.

127. *of* (1)] IT *om.* (*as in* B-text).

128. *deone*] doene F; dene EIT; done G. [*rowed*] rowide T; rouede IG; roued PE; reued M; romede F; *but cf.* B-text.

129. *whiche*] wiche P; swich M. *a* (2)] wich a P; *but* EIMFTG *omit* wich; *cf.* B-text; ME *om.*

131. *to*] for to F. *meneþ*] bimeneþ M.

133. *hatte*] hiȝte F; hoteþ I; hattiþ T. *felynge*] veling G; wailyng M; vilenye T.

134. *of*] I *om.* *þorw*] wiþ-oute (!) G.

135. *And*] And þoruȝ T; Þoru M. *waxe*] *so* PI; wax EMF; wex T; was·G.

136. [*wommanes* FT] womanes M; woman E; womman IG; wo*m*mén P. *worlde*] wordle PG.

137. *is*] be M. *trewe*] trywe P.

138. *ybore*] born MT; bore G.

That is þe cause of þis eclipse · þat ouer-closeþ now þe sonne, 140 — His death causes this eclipse.
In menynge þat man shal · fro meorknesse beo drawe,
The while þis light and þis leom · shal Lucifer a-blende.
For patriarkes and prophetes · han prechede her-of ofte,
That þyng þat tynt was þorw treo · treo shal hit wynne, — What was lost by a tree, a tree shall win back."
And þat þat deþ doun brouhte · deþ shal releue." 145
"That þat þou tellest," quaþ treuþe · "is bote a tale of walterot!
For adam and eue · and abraham with oþere,
Patriarkes and prophetes · þat in peyne liggen, 148
Leyf hit neuere þat ȝon lyght · hem a-lofte brynge,
Ne haue hem out of helle; · hold þy tonge, mercy, — Truth refuses to believe what Mercy says.
Hit is trufle þat þou tellest; · ich, treuthe, wot þe sothe,
That þyng þat ones was in helle · out comeþ hit neuere.
For iob þe parfit patriarke · repreoueþ þy sawes, 153
Quia in inferno nulla est redempcio." — Cf. Job vii. 9.
Thenne mercy ful myldeliche · mouþed þese wordes,
"þorgh experience," quaþ heo · "ich hope þei shulle be sauede. 330
For venym for-doþ venym · þer vecche ich euydence, — "Venom," said Mercy, "destroys venom.
That adam & eue · haue shullen bote. 157

140. *That*] And þat I. *þis*] þe MG. *eclipse*] enclips M; clips IFTG. *þat*] F *om.* *ouer-closeþ*] ouercloþeth I; ouercloside T; ouercomeþ MG. *now*] MG *om.*

142. *leom*] lowe IT; loue G. *ablende*] ableynde P; ablynde E.

144. *þyng*] IG *om.* *þat*] IT *om.* *was*] T *om.* *þorw*] þorgh a I; wiþ M. *shal*] wil F.

145. *þat* (2)] IT *om.* *deþ* (2)] lif G.

146. *þat* (2)] IMTG *om.* *walterot*] *so* PET; waltrot F; a waltrot M; walter G; walteret I.

149. *Leyf*] Lef M; Leue EIT; Leeue F; Leoue G. *neuere*] were (!) T. *ȝon*] ȝeon P; ȝone I; ȝonde M; ȝynen (!) G; ȝeond E; þat F. *ȝon lyght*] þou list (!) T. *a-lofte*] o-loft T; on lofte M.

150. *haue*] heue M. *hem*] hem ȝit F.

151. *is*] is a F; is but a M; is but IT. *trufle*] tryfle EFTG; triful M; trewful I. *treuthe*] trewely T.

152. *was*] is IFTG; comeþ M.

153. *For*] ITG *om.* *þy*] þe I. *repreoueþ—sawes*] he prouep þis sawe M.

154. *þese*] þes P.

155. *heo*] *so* PG; ȝo E; he I; sche M; ho T. *quaþ heo*] ȝit F.

156. *vecche*] *so* PE; fecche IMTG; fet F.

157—163. G *omits.*

157. *&*] & eke F. *shullen*] scholden I. *bote*] boþe (*wrongly*) M.

Of alle fretynge venymes · þe vilest is þe scorpion;
May no medecyne amende · þe place þer he stynge þ,
A dead scorpion heals the scorpion's sting.
Til he be ded, ydo *þer*-to · and þenne hit destroie þ
The ferst venemoste · thorgh vertu of hym-selue. 161
And so shal this de þ for-do · ich [dar] my lyf legge,
This death shall destroy death."
Al þat de þ and þe deuel · dude formest to eue.
Ryght as þe gylour þorw gyle · by-gylede man formest,
So shal grace þat al by-gan · make a good ende, 165
And by-gyle þe gylour · and þat is a good sleithe;
Ars ut artem falleret."
JUSTITIA. "See," said Truth, "here comes Righteousness from the North."
"Now suffre we," seide treuthe · "ich seo, as me thynke þ,
Out of þe nype of þe north · nat ful fer hennes, 168
Ryghtwisnesse come rennynge; · reste we þe whyle;
For he wot more þan we · he was er we bo þe."
"That is soth," seide mercy · "and ich seo her by southe,
PAX. "And Peace from the South," said Mercy.
Wher come þ pees pleyinge · in pacience [y]clo þed. 172
Loue heore ha þ coueyted longe · leyue ich non o þer
Bote loue haue sent heore som lettere · what þis light bymene þ
That ouere-houe þ helle þus; · he shal ous telle."

158. *Of*] For of IT. *fretynge venymes*] ffretande venym T. *vilest*] foulest M; filist E. *is*] M *om.*

159. *stynge þ*] stynke þ (l) E.

160. *be*] IT *om.* *ydo*] and i-do M; & do F. *and*] M *om.* *hit*] he IT. *destroie þ* MIF] distroye þ T; distrie þ P; destruye þ E.

161. *venemoste*] venymoste T; venymeste I; venymest M; venymousheede F; venymost þing E.

162. *for-do*] do M. [*dar* EFIT] þar P; schal M.

164. *Ryght*] And right IT. *as*] so as M.

165. *al by-gan*] bigan al IT (*which runs better*); *but see* l. 222.

166. *And*] & so F. *and*] M *om.* *a*] I *om.*

168. *nype*] *so* PEMFT. *nat*] þat is (!) E. *fer* MIFTG] ferre E; feer P.

169. *Ryghtwisnesse*] Rightwisnesse IEFT; Rythwisnesse PM; *cf.* l. 177. *come*] come þ M. *þe*] a M; *þere* T. *whyle*] wyle P; whiles I.

170. *he*] *so* PIFTG; ȝo E; sche M (*twice*); *but note that* he *here* = hue = she; *cf.* l. 178. *er*] er þan P (*but* EIMFTG *omit* þan); or EIF.

171. *and*] G *om.* *ich*] T *om.*

172. *yclo þed* EMITG] clo þed PF.

173. *heore—coueyted*] ha þ y-coueyted hire I; hadde coueitid hire T. *leyue*] & now leue F.

174. *haue—heore*] hure ha þ i-sent M. *what*] þat M. *hymene þ*] brenne þ M.

175. *he*] *so* PIFTG; ȝo E; sche M; *observe that* he = hue, *as above.* *ous*] vs soone F. *shal ous*] vs schal I.

Whenne pees, in pacience [y]cloþed · aproched ayþer oþer,

Ryghtwisnesse reuerencede pees · in heore riche clopinge, Righteousness greets Peace.

And prayede pees to tellen huere · to what place he wolde,

In heore gay garnemens · wham he gladie þouhte? 331

"My wil is to wende," quaþ Pees · "and wel-come hem alle, Peace says she is come to welcome all

þat meny day myghte ich nat seo · for meorknesse of synne. the redeemed souls.

Adam and eue · and oþer mo in helle,

Moyses and meny mo · mercy shullen synge;

And ich shal daunce þer-to · do al-so þow, suster!

For iesus iousted wel · ioye by-gynneþ to dawen;

Ad uesperum demorabitur fletus, & ad matutinum leticia. Ps. xxix. 6 (Vulg.).

Loue þat is my lemman · suche letteres me sente,

þat mercy my suster, and ich · mankynde [shulde] saue; "Mercy and Peace shall save mankind."

And þat god haþ for-gyue · and graunted to al mankynde,

Mercy, my suster, and me · to maynprise hem alle.

And crist haþ conuerted · þe kynde of ryghtwisnesse

In-to pees and pyte · of hus pure grace.

Lo, here þe patente!" quaþ pees · "*in pace in idipsum,* Ps. iv. 9 (Vulg.).

176. *Whenne*] Wenne P. *ycloþed* EMITG] cloþed PF. *ayþer*] here ayþer IT.

178. *he*] heo F; sche MI; she T; 3o E; *cf.* l. 177. *wolde*] scholde I.

179. *In*] And I. *he*] heo FG; sche MI; she T; 3o E. *gladie*] glade MFT.

180. E *omits.* *wende*] weynde P. *and wel-come*] to gladye G.

181. *ich*] IMFTG *om.*

182. *Adam*] As adam F.

184. *al-so þow*] þow also M; þou so IG.

185. *For*] For þat F. *to*] I *om.* *&*] T *om.* *&—leticia*] MF *om.*

186. *me*] he me MI; heo me TG.

187. [*shulde* M] scholde E; shullen PF; schal ITG.

188. *þat—haþ*] god hath gilt now F. *graunted—al*] graunteth for F. *al*] MG *om.*

189. *and*] & to F.

190. *crist*] þat crist I; our crist F. *conuerted*] conforted (!) E.

192. *þe*] a F.

And þat þis dede shal dure · [*dormiam et requiescam*]."

Righteousness rebukes her.

"Rauest þou?" quaþ ryghtwisnesse · "oþer þou art ryght dronke! 194

Leyuest þou þat ȝon light · vnlouke myghte helle,

And saue mannes soule? · suster, wene hit neuere!

At þe begynnynge of þe worlde · god gaf þe dom hymselue, 197

"Adam was to die if he ate of the fruit.

Þat adam and eue · and hus issue alle

Sholden deye doun-ryht · and dwelle in peyne euere,

Yf þei touchede þe treo · and of þe frut eten. 200

Adam afterwarde · a-ȝens hus defense,

Faste fret of þat frut · and for-soke, as hit were,

332 The leel loue of oure lorde · and hus lore boþe,

And folwede þat þe feonde tauhte · and hus fleshes wil,

Aȝens reson and ryghtwysnesse; · recorde þis with treuþe,

His pain shall be perpetual."

That here peyne is *per*petuel · no preyere may hem helpe. 206

For-thi let hem chewe as thei chose · and chide we nat, susteres,

For hit is a botles bale · þe byte þat þei eten."

Peace prays that there may be an end of the pain.

"And ich shal preye," quaþ pees · "here peyne mote haue ende,

Þat here wo in-to wele · wende mote atte laste. 210

193. *dure*] endure F. [*dormiam, &c.*] *from* EIMFTG; P *om.*

194. *Rauest þou*] What rauestow F; Rauestow I. *oþer*] or elles M. *art* IMFT] ert PEG. *ryght*] MG *om.*

195. *Leyuest*] Leuest EITG; Wenest M. *þou*] M *om.* *Leyuest þou*] Leuestow F. *þat*] þat þe PE; *but* IMFTG *omit* þe. *ȝon*] ȝende (*sic*) E; ȝond*ur* F; ȝoure G.

196. *And*] & also F. *wene*] lef M.

198. *eue*] eue also F. *hus—alle*] al his yssue EITG; al heore issue aft*ur* M; al her yssue F.

199. *Sholden*] Schal I. *peyne*] pyne FG. *euere*] for euere M.

200. *Yf*] ȝif þat FT; If þat I. *þe* (1)] þat ITG; a F. *þe frut*] þat fruyt T. *eten*] ȝeten M. *of—eten*] tasted of þe froyt F.

201. *Adam*] & ȝit adam F.

202. *Faste*] He G; IT *om.* *þat*] þe IG.

203. *leel*] ITG *om.* *hus*] of his G.

204. *hus*] þe M. *fleshes*] *miswritten* sheshes P.

205. *and*] i I. *recorde*] i recorde M. *þis*] it I.

207. *For-thi*] For-whi M; For G; F *om.* *chewe*] cheue IM; schewe E.

208. *hit*] his M. *a*] ITG *om.* *byte*] bitte I. *eten*] ȝeten M.

209. *quaþ*] seide F. *ende*] an ende P; *but* EIMFTG *omit* an.

210. *Þat*] And þat EIFT. *wende mote*] mote wende ITG; wende F. *atte* EG] at þe IMFT; atte þe P.

For hadde þei wist of no wo · wele hadde þei nat knowe;
For wot no [wight] what wele is · þat neuere wo suffrede,
Ne what is hot hunger · þat hadde neuere defaute.
Ho coupe kyndeliche · with colour discriue,
Yf alle þe worlde were whit · oþer swan-whit alle þynges?
Yf no nyght [ne] were · no man, as ich leyue,
Sholde wite witerly · what day were to mene
Ne hadde god suffred of som · oþer þan hym-selue,
He hadde nat wist wyterly · whepher deþ wer soure oþer sweyte.
For sholde neuere right riche man · þat lyueþ in reste and hele
Ywyte what wo is · ne were þe deþ of kynde.
So god þat al by-gan · of hus good wil
By-cam man of a mayde · mankynde to saue,
And suffrede to be solde · to seo þe sorwe of deyynge,
The whiche vnknytte[þ] alle care · and comsyng is of reste.

† Who could paint things in their natural colours, if all things in the world were white?

"For God became man, to know the sorrow of death.

211. *knowe*] i-knowe M; knowen I.
212. *wot—wight*] no wight wot IT. [*wight* IFT] wyȝt G; withg M; whit P. *what*] wat P. *neuere wo*] wo neuer E.
213. *Ne*] And T. *what*] wat P. *hadde neuere*] neuere hadde MF.
214. *Ho*] For ho F. *with*] wiþ T; wit (*for* with) P; with (*altered to* whit E; white IF; whyȝt G; whijt M. (*But* with *seems the true reading*, white *being wrongly borrowed from the next line.*)
215. *Yf*] Hif P; *but see* l. 216. *were*] where P. *oþer—whit*] as swan in M.
216. *Yf*] For ȝif F. *no nyght*] ne myȝte (!) T. [*ne* ITG] PEMF *om.*; *cf.* B-text. *as*] ITG *om.*
217. I *omits from* what *to* wyterly *in* l. 219. *wite*] i-wite M. *witerly*] whiterly P; *see* l. 218. *were*] is T.
218. *god*] M *om.* *suffred*] suffrede P; i-suffred MT.
219. *wist*] i-wist M. *whepher*] wepher PE; wher MIG. *wer*] is T.
220. *right*] F *om.* *hele*] in hele I.
221. *what*] what þat F. þe] T *om.*
222. *al by-gan*] bigan al IT.
223. *mankynde*] mankynne M.
224. *to* (1)] for to F. þe] G *om.*
225. *whiche*] wiche P. *vnknytteþ*] vnknettiþ T; vnknyȝteth (*sic*) I; vnknette M; vnknyt EF; vnknytte P; vn-knitte G; *perhaps* vnknyt *is best, but this is the contracted form of* vnknytteþ, *so that it is much the same; cf.* B-text. *and*] G *om.* *is of*] of his T.

For·til moreyne mete with ous · ich may hit wel a-vowe,
Ne wot no·wight, as ich wene · what is ynowh to mene.

God suffered Adam to know sorrow,

For-thi god of hus goodnesse · þe furst man adam, 228
He sette hym in solace furst · and in souerayne murthe,
And sutthe suffrede hym to synege · sorwe to fele,
333 To wite þer-þorw what wele was · and kyndeliche to knowe.

and afterwards took Adam's nature.

And after auntrede god hym-self · and tok adams kynde, 232
To wite what he hadde suffred · in [þre] sondry places,
Boþe in heuene and in erthe; · and now to helle he þenkeþ,
To wite what alle wo is · þat wot of alle ioye; 235

Omnia probate; quod bonum est tenete.

Man's sin and folly shall teach him what bliss is."

So shal hit fare by þis folke · here folie and here synne
Shal lere hem what loue is · and lisse with-outen ende.
For wot no wight what werre is · þer as pees regneþ,
Ne what [is] witerliche wele · til wele-a-way hym teche."

Then appeared one named Book,

Thenne was þer a wight · with two brode eyen, 240
Book hihte þat beau-pere · a bold man of speche.
"By godes body," quaþ þis book · "ich wole bere wyttnesse,

226. *mete*] mette ETG. *avowe*] afowe E.

227. *wight*] wiȝt FT; whight P; whiȝt E; withg M; wrecche G.

228. *For-thi*] For M. *goodnesse*] goudnesse P. *furst man*] forme fadur F.

229. *He*] FT *om.*

230. *suffrede*] he suffride T. *synege*] *so* PF; sinege G; synne IMT; synny E. *to* (2)] for to F.

231. *wite*] white P. *þer-þorw*] *þer*-with F. *what*] wat P. IT *have*—To wyte what wele was *þer-*þorgh · kyndeliche (kyndenesse T) to knowe. *wele*] sorwe (!) E.

232. *auntrede god*] god auntrede IT. *tok* MTG] toke EI; took F; touk P. *adams*] a mannus F.

233. *wite*] white P. *hadde*] haþ IT. [*þre* IFTG] þreo M; þe PE; *see* B-text. *suffred*] i-suffred M.

234. *he*] I *om.*

235. *alle* (1)] G *om.* *wot*] whot P.

238. *wight*] whight PE; withg M. *as*] þat M; weele of F; al G.

239. [*is* IMFTG] PE *om.* *witerliche*] whiterliche P. *wele-a-way*] weyleway I; weilawai MT; weylawey F.

240. *Thenne*] But þan F. *wight*] whight P; withg M. *two*] two ful F.

242. *þis* EMFTG] þes P; þe I. *wole*] wolde M.

Tho þis barn was ybore · þer blased a sterre, who tells of the star in the East.
þat alle þe wise of þe worlde · in o wit a-corde[de],
þat suche a barn was ybore · in bethleem þe cyte,
þat mannes soule sholde saue · and synne destruye.
And alle þe elemens," quaþ þe book · "here-of bereth witnesse;
þat he was god þat al wrouhte · þe wǒlkene furst shewede. The *air* showed God's power, when the comet shone at His birth.
[þo] þat weren in heuene · token *stella comata*,
And tenden hit as a torche · to reuerence hus burthe;
þat light folwede þe lorde · in-to þe lowe erthe.
The water witnessede þat he was god · for [he] wente on hym drye; The *water* bare witness, when He walked upon it.
Peter þe apostel · parceyuede hus gate, 331
And as he wente vpon þe water · wel hym knewe, and seide,
[Lord *c*rist, comaunde me · to come to þe on wat*ur*];
'*Domine, iube me uenire ad te* [*super aquas.*'] Mat. xiv. 28.
Loo, how þe sonne gan louke · hure light in huere selue, And now the *sun's* light fails.
When he sey hym suffry deþ · þat sonne and seo made!
Lo, þe erthe for heuynesse · þat he wolde deþ suffre, The *earth* quakes.

243. *Tho*] þo þat I. *sterre*] bold sterre F.
244. *wise*] wies E; wiȝes T. *þe*] þis M. *acordede* FG] acorded EI; acordeden M; accordit T; acorde P.
245. *ybore*] born M; yborne I.
246. *destruye*] so destroye F.
247. *þe* (1)] F *om.* *þe* (2)] þis F. *witnesse*] whitnesse P.
248. *þat*] and I. *wolkene*] welkene MFI; welkne T; wolkenes G. *shewede*] scheweden M.
249. [*þo* EIMTG] To P; For þo F. *heuene*] heuene þo F.
250. *tenden*] *so* PEIMFT; tendyn G. *hus*] þat G.
251. *þe* (1)] þat FG. *þe* (2)] þis M.
252. *witnessede* G] whitnessed P; witnesseþ ITMF. [*he* IMFT] god PEG; *cf.* B-text. *hym*] *her* F.
253. *Peter*] & seinte petur F. *þe*] M *om.* *hus*] wel his F. *gate*] grace M.
254. *vpon*] on IMFTG. *water*] wawe F.
255. *From* F; PEIMTG *omit.* [*super aquas*] *from* EMF; PIT *om.*
256. *Loo*] And lo I; And loke T. *louke*] loke E; to lowke F. *in*] and (!) M. *huere*] him M.
257. *he*] so PEIFTG; heo (*altered to* he) M; *observe* he = hue = she. *deþ*] IT *om.*
258. *deþ*] IFTG *om.*

[Quakede] as quike þyng · and al to-quashte þe roches!
Lo, helle myghte nat holde · bote openede, þo god deþ þolede,
And let out symondes sones · to se hym honge on rode,
† Luke ii. 26. *Non uisurum se mortem.*
Now shal lucifer leyue hit · thauh hym loþ þynke;
For ihesus as a gyaunt · with a gyn comeþ ȝonde,
To breken and to bete a-doun · alle þat ben a-gayns hym,
And to haue out alle · of hem þat hym likeþ.
Jesus shall rise again! And ȝut ich, book, wol beo brent · bote he arise to lyue,
And conforten al hus kyn · and out of care brynge,
And al þe Iuwene ioye · vnioynen, and vnlouken,
And bote þei reuerencen hus resurexion · and þe rode honoure,
And by-leyue on a newe lawe · beo ylost lyf and soule!"
A spirit speaks to hell. "Suffre we," saide treuthe · "[ich] huyre and seo boþe
A spirit speke to helle · and bit vnsperre þe ȝates;
Ps. xxiii. 9 (Vulg.). *Attollite portas, principes, vestras; & eleuamini, porte eternales, &c.*"
A voys loude in þat light · to Lucifer seide,

259. [*Quakede* MEIFTG] Quaquide P. *as*] as a IFGT. *quashte*] quashete P; *but* quasshte G; quasshide T; quasched F; *miswritten* quatte M; quasche E; *cf.* l. 64. *þe*] M *om.*
260. *deþ*] TG *om.* *deþ þolede*] deyde F.
261. *Non, &c.*] M *om.*
262. *Now*] And now IT. *leyue*] leue IMT; leeue F; lyue (*for* leyue) PEG. *leyue hit*] hem leeue F.
263. *ȝonde* MF] ȝont T; ȝeonde (*for* ȝonde) P; ȝende (*an error for* ȝonde) EI; ȝender (*for* ȝonder) G.
264. *alle*] al PG; *but see* l. 265. *þat*] þo T.
265. *to*] forto F. *alle—þat*] of helle · alle þo T.
266. *bote*] but ȝif M. *arise*] rise M.
267. *al hus*] his careful F. *and*] & al T.
268. *vnioynen* IE] vnioyenen P; vnioyned (*wrongly*) M; vnioyne FG.
269. *bote*] bote yf PG; *but* EIMFT *omit* yf. *hus*] þe M; þis IT. *resurexion*] risyng F. *þe*] þat G.
271. I *omits.* *we*] we þo F; M *om.* [*ich*] i MFT; we G; and PE; *cf.* B-text. *huyre—seo*] se and here F.
272. *speke*] spekeþ IT. *bit*] bitte to I. *vnsperre*] oppene G. *Attollite*] Tollite M. *principes, &c.*] IMT *om.* *vestras, &c.*] F *om.* *& —&c.*] G *om.*
273. *loude*] a-lowd F. *seide*] it seide F.

"Princes of þis palys · prest vndo þe ȝates,
For here comeþ with coroune · þe kynge of alle glorie."
Thenne syhede sataɳ · and seide to helle,
"Suche a light a-ȝeyns our leue · lazar hit fette;
Colde care and combraunce · is come to ous alle.
Yf þis kyng [come] yn · mankynde wol he fecche,
And leden hit *þer* laȝar is · and lightliche me bynde.
Patriarkes and prophetes · han parled her-of longe,
þat suche a lorde and a lyght · shal leden hem alle hennes.
Ac rys vp ragamoffyn · and reche me alle þe barres
That belial [þy bel]-syre · beot with þy damme,
And ich shal lette þis lorde · and hus light stoppe;
Ar we þorw bryghtnesse be blent · barre we þe ȝates.
Cheke we and cheyne we · and eche chyne stoppe,
þat no light leope yn · at louer ne at loupe.
And þow, Astrot, hot out · and haue oute [oure] knaues,
Coltyng and al hus kynne · oure catel to saue.
Brynston boilaunt · brennyng out-casteþ hit
Al hot [on] here heuedes · þat entren ny þe walles.

"Princes of hell, unbar the gates!"

335

Satan advises the fiends to keep the gates barred.

† "Rise up, Ragamuffin, and give me Belial's bars;

† let us stop up every chink.

† Astrot and Colting, pour out boiling brimstone on all who approach.

274. *Princes*] Princeps I. *þis*] þat G. *palys*] place IT. *vndo*] *so* PEITG; vndoþ M; vndooþ F. *þe*] þis IT; þese F.

275. *here*] here he I. *coroune*] a crowne F.

276. *syhede*] siȝte M; sede (!) E.

277. *leue*] bileue (*wrongly*) M.

278. *Colde*] IT *om. is*] *so in all.*

279. *þis*] þes PG. [*come* ITG] comeþ M; *miswritten* comen PF.

280. *hit þer*] ȝet þat T.

281. *parled*] i-parlet M. *longe*] ofte G.

283. *rys*] aris MITG. *ragamoffyn*] ragamuffyn IFT. *and*] G *om.* *reche*] areche IMTG. *alle*] G *om.*

284. [*þy* EIMFTG] þe P. *bel* IMG] bele T; beol PF. *beot*] beet IFG; beut T; bete E. *þy*] his M.

285. *þis*] þat M.

286. *Ar*] Or E; Er MT. *þorw*] with F. *barre*] go barre IT. *we*] T *om.*

287. *Cheke*] *so in all.* *we* (2)] E *om.* *eche*] eche a MIFG. *chyne*] chene M; chynne F.

288. *leope*] lepe IMTG; lippe F. *miswritten* leopen P. *ne at*] ne ȝit at þe F.

289. *And þow*] ITG *om.* *hot*] hote IT; hoot F. [*oure* IFTG] þi M; PE *om.*

290. *oure catel*] þe care (!) IT.

291. *Brynston*] *so* PE; Brymstoon F; Brymston GT; bremston M. *boilaunt*] boyland ET; buylyng FG; Boilyng M (*which has* Boilyng bremston. *brennyng*] brennande T. *hit*] M *om.*

292. [*on* MFTG] in PE. *heuedes*] hedes EMIFGT. *ny*] to M; ney E; nyȝ I; neiȝ T.

† Set the great bows and guns, and put Mahound at the mangonel."

Setteþ bowes of brake · [and] brasene gonnes,
And shoteþ out shot ynowh · hus shultrom to blende.
Sette mahon at þe mangonel · and mulle-stones þroweþ,
With crokes and with kalketrappes · a-cloye we hem echone!" 296

Lucifer says that none can prevail against Jesus.

"Lust[en]eþ," quaþ lucifer · "for ich þis lord knowe,
Boþe þis lord and þis lyght · is longe gon ich knew hym.
May no deþ þis lord dere · ne no deoueles queyntise,
And wher he wole, is hus wey; · ac war hym of þe periles; 300

"We must appeal to His justice.

Yf he reue me of my ryght · he robbeþ me by mastrie.
For by ryght and reson · þe renkes þat beon here
Body and soule beþ myne · boþe good and ille.

He said that Adam should die."

For he hym-self hit seide · þat syre is of helle, 304
That adam and eue · and al hus issue
Sholden deye with deol · and here dwelle euere,
Yf [þat] þei touchede a treo · oþer toke þer-of an appel.
Thus this lorde of light · suche a lawe made, 308
And sitthe he is so leel a lorde · ich leyue þat he wol nat
Reuen ous of oure ryght · sutthe reson hem dampned.

293. [*and* EIMFTG] a P.

294. G *omits.* *shetеþ*] schoteþ E; shetteþ M. *hus*] heore M. *shultrom*] scheltrom IT; scheltrum M; schiltrom E; scheltroun F.

295. G *omits.* *mahon*] mahoun MT; mahonde I; mahound F. M *omits last half of* l. 295, *and first half of* l. 296.

296. *with*] ITFG *om.* *a-cloye*] encloye M; & cloye IT; gloȝe, *altered to* glose (!) G. *hem*] G *om.*

297. *Lusteneþ* M] Lesteneþ I; Listeneth now F; Lusteth PE; Lustneþ G; Lestniþ T.

298. *is*] I *om.* *gon*] y-go I; a-go MF; go TG.

299. *queyntise*] pouke F.

300. *wher—is*] we wile wissen (!) T. *ac*] but MT. *periles*] perile I.

301. *reue*] bi-reueþ M; reuiþ T; robbiþ G. *ryght*] lyf (!) G. *by*] wiþ M; of his IT.

302. *reson*] by resoun IT.

303. *beþ*] þei be F.

304. *he*] IT *om.* *hit*] M *om.* *hit* *seide*] seide it IT. *syre*] seignour F. *helle*] heuene IFTG.

305. *hus*] heore M; her F. *issue*] issue aftur M.

306. *deol*] *so* PEMF; deole G; doel IT. *here*] þer E. *euere*] for euere M.

307. *Yf*] & F. [*þat* IMET] PFG *om.* *a*] þat ET. *oþer*] & FG. *an appel*] any applis T.

308. *this*] thees P. *light*] lawe & liȝt F; lif G.

309. *so—a*] a lele I.

310. *of*] al F. *sutthe*] whan M. *hem*] hym T; he F. *dampned*] dampneþ M.

And sutthe we han beo sesed · seuene þowsend wynter,
And neuere was þer-aȝeyn · and now wolde by-gynne,
He were vnwrast of hus worde · þat witnesse is of trewþe."

"That is soþ," seide satan · "bote ich me sore doute,
For þow gete hem with gyle · and hus gardyn breke,
A-geyn hus loue and hus leue · on hus londe ȝeodest,
Nat in forme of a feonde · bote in forme of an Addre,
And entisedest eue · to ete by heore on,
Ve soli!
And by-hihtest heore and hym · after to knowe,
As [two] godes, with god · boþe good and ille;
Thus with treison and with trecherie · þow troiledest hem boþe,
And dudest hem breke [here] buxomnesse · þorw false by-heste;
Thus haddest þou hem oute · and hyder atte laste.
Hit is nat greythly getyn · ther gyle is þe rote."
"And god wol nat be by-gyled" · quaþ gobelyn, "ne by-ȝ-laped;
We haue no trewe title to hem · for þi treison hit makeþ."
"For-thi ich drede me," quaþ þe deouel · "lest treuthe wol hem Fecche.

"True," said Satan, "but thou didst win by guile.

Thy words to Eve were false.
† Eccles. iv. 10.

† Thou saidst that she and Adam should be as two gods."

Goblin says their title is invalid.

Satan says,

311. *han*] hadde E. *sesed*] i-sesed M; cessid T. *han—sesed*] haue had sesoun (!) F.
312. *was*] was ȝit F.
313. *He were*] Þen were he IT. *trewþe*] *miswritten* treweþe P.
315. *gete*] gote F. *breke*] broke E.
316. *on*] in I.
317. *an Addre*] a naddere T.
318. *And*] & eke F. *entisedest*] enticest M. *eue*] dame eue F.
319. *by-hihtest*] hiȝtest F. *hym*] eke him F. *after*] afturward F.
320. [*two* ET] to (*for* two) PMFIG. *ille*] euil T.
321. *with* (2)] IMFTG *om.* *troiledest*] bi-troiledest M.
322. [*here* EIMFTG] he (*for here*) P. *false*] þi false MF. *by-heste*] behestis T.
323. *Thus*] And so IT. *þou*] IT *om.* *atte*] ate F; at þe MTG.
324. *Hit is*] Is hit M. *greythly getyn*] gete greithly F. *getyn*] gete F; y-gete IMFG.
325. *And*] Ne M; For T. *by-laped*] iaped M.
326. *We*] For we ne M. *trewe*] triwe P. *þi*] T *om.* *makeþ*] made M; makede G.
327. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *þe*] a F. *hem*] hym E.

† "God hath beguiled us in return."

And as þow by-gyledest godes ymage · in goynge of an addre,
So haþ god by-gyled ous alle · in goynge of a wye."

† Goblin says, "I have tempted Jesus in vain.

"For god haþ go," quaþ gobelyn · "in a gome lyknesse
This þritty wynter, as ich wene · and went a-bowte and prechede.
Ich haue asailid hym with synne · and som tyme ich askede
Wher he were god oþer godes sone · he gaf me short answere.
Thus haþ he troiled · and trauailed In hus tyme
Forþ like a tydy man · this two and þritty wyntere,

† I tried to prevent His martyrdom.

And whenne ich seih þat [hit] was so · ich sotelide how ich myghte
Lette hem þat louede hym nat · lest þei wolde hym martrye.

I would have lengthened His life."

Ich wolde haue lengthed hus lyf · for ich leyuede, yf he deyede,
And hus soule huder come · he sholde shende ous alle.
The body, whyle hit on bones ȝede · a-boute was hit euere
To lere men to beo leel · eche man to louen oþer;
The whiche lif and lawe · be hit longe y-used,

328. *by-gyledest*] gilest FT. *ymage*] ymages I. *of*] as FT *an addre*] a naddere T.

329. *of*] as F.

330. *god*] he M. *go*] *so in all but* G; y-go G. *quaþ*] be (!) T. *a*] I *om.* *gome*] *so* PEIFG; gomes MT.

331. *wene*] leue M. *and went*] he haþ i-go M.

332. *asailid*] a-saied M.

333. *Wher*] Wheþer MFT. *he—answere*] and schortli he me answered M.

334, 335. *One line in* IT—þus haþ he troiled forþ like (as T) a tidy man · þis tuo & þritty wynter. *troiled*] toiled M. *two* EFT] tuo I; to PMG. *wyntere*] ȝere E.

336. *whenne*] wenne P. *þat*] EIFGT *om.* [*hit* MEG] it IFT; he P.

337. *martrye*] martiry E; martre MFG; martir IT.

338. *lengthed*] i-lengþed M. *yf*] & F.

339. *And*] þat if I; þat ȝif T. *he*] hit FITG. *sholde*] wolde F.

340. *whyle*] wyle P; þe whiles T; whiles IG. *on*] one P. *ȝede*] ȝeden P.

341. *lere*] lerne MF. *men*] T *om.* *eche—to*] and eche man M; & eche a man F; and iche man to IT.

342. *whiche*] wiche P. *y-used* E] i-vsed M; yvsid T; y-vsed G; used F; auysed (*wrongly*) I; yusede P.

Hit shal vndon ous deoueles · and doun brynge ous alle."
"Now y seo wher hus soule · comeþ seilinge hider- 337
wardes
With glorie and with gret light · god hit is, ich wot wel.
Ich rede we fleo," quaþ þe feond · "faste alle hennes;
For us were betere nat beo · þan abyde in hus syghte.
For thi lesynge[s], lucifer · we loste furst our ioye,
And out of heuene hider · thi prude made ous falle;
For we [leyuede] on þy lesinges · þer losten we [oure]
blysse.
And now, for a later lesynge · þat þow lowe tyl eue,
We han lost oure lordshep · a londe and in helle;
Nunc princeps huius mundi [*eicietur foras*]."
Suþþe þat satan · myssayde þus foule
Lucifer for hus lesynges · leyue ich non oþer,
Bote oure lord atte laste · lyeres here rebuke,
And wyte hem al þe wrecchednesse · þat wrouht is on
erthe.
Beo yware, ȝe wise clerkes · and wytty men of lawe,
þat ȝe [be-leiȝe] nat [þese lewed] men · for atte laste dauid

"I see His soul sailing hitherwards," said Satan.
"Let us flee."
DE MENDACIIS. (*margin of* M.)
John xii. 31.
† This proves that God will rebuke liars at the last.

343. *ous deoueles*] deuel*us* dynt F. *doun* EIMFT] don (*for* doun) P; a-doun G.
344. *Now*] And now IT. *wher—comeþ*] his soule · come M.
345. *With*] Whit P.
346. *we*] *miswritten* wey P.
347. *us*] vs EIFTG; we M; hus P.
348. *lesynges* IMFT] lesynge PEG; *see* l. 350. *lucifer*] þow lucefer M.
349. *prude*] pride EIMFT; pryte G; *badly spelt* pruede P.
350. *For*] Whan M. *we*] he (!) T. [*leyuede*] leuede G; leued EIFT; leueden M; *miswritten* lyuede P; *but see* l. 338. *on*] F *om.* [*oure* FTG] þe M; PE *om.*; *but see* l. 348. I *omits last half of* l. 350, *and first half of* l. 351.
351. *a*] F *om.* *lowe*] louwe E; low F.
352. *We*] Whe P. *lordshep*] *miswritten* lorshep P. *a*] on M; o T; in F. *in*] eke yn G. [*eicietur, &c.*] *from* M; PEITFG *om.*
353. *Suþþe*] He seiȝ T (*wrongly*). *myssayde, &c.*] þus foule mysseide · & scheufully rebukede F. *myssayde*] misdede G.
354. *leyue ich*] i leue M; now leue. i F.
355. *Bote*] But þat F. *atte*] ate F; at þe MT. *here*] wol F.
356. *wyte* F] *miswritten* wyten P; witen M. þe] from (!) T. *wrouht is*] is i-wrout M; wroght is here ITG. *on*] in I.
357. *Beo*] Buþ M; Beth FT; Biþ G. *yware*] war FT. *wytty men*] ȝe witty IT.
358. [*be-leiȝe* T] bileue (*for* bileie) I; by-gylie PE; bi-gile MG. *þat—be-leiȝe*] Bigileth F. *nat*] non MG. [*þese lewed* F] þis lewed IT; lewed EMG; þeos P. *atte*] ate F; at þe MT.

Witnesseþ in hus wrytynge · what is lyeres mede;

† Ps. v. 7 (Vulg.). *Odisti omnes qui operantur iniquitatem, & perdes omnes qui loquntur mendacium.*

† This is a digression. A lytel ich ouer-lep · for lesynges sake, 360
þat ich ne segge as ich seih · suynge my teme!—
For eft þat light bad vnlouke · and lucifer answerede,

Ps. xxiii. 10 (Vulg.). "What lord art þu?" quaþ lucifer; · a voys a-loud seyde,
"The lord of myght and of [mayn] · þat made alle þynges. 364

"Undo these gates." Duke of þis dymme place · a-non vndo þe ȝates,
That crist mowe comen In · þe kynges sone of heuene."

The gates of hell are broken. And wiþ þat breþ helle brake · with alle beliales barres;
For eny wye oþer warde · wyde openede þe gates. 368

Mat. iv. 16. Patriarkes and prophetes · *populus in tenebris,*

John i. 36. Songen with seint Iohan · *ecce agnus dei!*
Lucifer loke ne myghte · so lyght him a-blente;
And þo þat oure lord louede · with þat lyght forth flowen. 372

Our Lord offers soul for soul. "Lo, me her," quaþ oure lorde · "lyf and soule bothe,
For alle synful soules · to saue oure beyere ryght.

338 Christ claims his own, saying, Myne þei were and of me · ich may þe bet*er* hem cleyme.

359. *Witnesseþ*] Whitnesseþ P; Witnesse I. *wrytynge*] writinges I. *&*] MF *om.* *loquntur*] *so* PTE; locuntur MFIG.

360. *ich*] þat (!) T. *ouer-lep*] ouerlepe IT; ou*ur*-lepte F.

361. *as*] nou3t as T; nat as I. *seih*] seide F; si M. *suynge*] suwyng E; sewynge MFT; suenge G.

362. *For*] And M.

363. *art* IMFT] ert PEG. *a—a-loud*] vare vaire leeue he F.

364. [*mayn* MFTG] mayne IE; man (*for* main) P.

365. *Duke*] Dukes IT. *dymme*] dyuyne (!) I; derke G. *vndo*] vndoþ IT. *þe*] þis T.

366. *mowe*] mote M.

367. *brake*] to-brac F.

368. *wye—warde*] warde oþ*ur* wy F. *openede*] open ITG.

369. *Patriarkes*] þo pa*t*riark*us* F. *populus*] wi*th* pop*u*lus F; and pop*u*lus G.

372. *And*] Al E. *louede*] loueþ M. *forth*] *placed before* with *in* I; T *om.* *flowen*] *so* PEIG; folwen F; folewen M; folewide T.

374. *synful*] cristene M. *beyere*] beiere E; beie M; bothes F; boþe IG; boþis T.

375. *þe*] *miswritten* þei P. *beter*] bet EF.

Al-þauh reson recorde · and ryght of my-selue,
That yf þei eten þe appel · alle sholden deye,
Ich by-hihte hem nat here · helle for euere.
For þe dedliche synne þat þei duden · thi deceite hit made;
With gyle þow hem gete · ageyn alle reson.
For in my paleis paradis · in *per*sone of an Addere
Falsliche [þou] fettest þere · þat me by-fel to loke,
By-glosedest hem and [by]gyledest hem · and my gardyn breke,
A-ȝeyns my loue and my leyue; · þe olde lawe techeþ,
þat gylours [be] by-gylid · and in here gyle falle.
And ho so hitteþ out a mannes eye · o*þer* elles hus for-teþ,
Oþere eny manere membre · maymeþ o*þer* hurteþ,
The same [sore] shal he haue · þat enye so smyteþ;
Dentem pro dente, & oculum pro oculo.
So lyf shal [lyf] lete · þer lyf haþ lyf anyented,
So þat lyf quyte lyf · þe olde lawe hit askeþ.
Ergo, soule shal soule quyte · and synne to synne wende,
And al þat man mys-dude · ich, man, to amenden hit;
And þat þat deþ for-dude · [my] deþ to releuen,

"Thou, Satan, didst win mankind by guile.

† The law requires an eye for an eye.

Exod. xxi. 24.

I offer soul for soul,

death for death.

376. *recorde*] recordede I.
377. *sholden*] shuln þei IT.
378. *by-hihte*] byhete I; by-het G. *helle*] helle to haue F.
379. *For*] F *om.* þe] þat MG.
381. *For*] G *om.* *an Addere*] a neddere I; a naddere T.
382. [*þou* FG] PEMIT *om.*; *but see* B-text. *by-fel*] by-feol P.
383. *By-glosedest*] Glosedest F. *bygyledest*] by-gyledist G; bigiledest MIFT; gyledest PE.
384. *leyue*] leue EIMFTG.
385. [*be* EFTG] ben M; beþ P; I *om.*; *cf.* B-text.
386. *hitteþ*] hit IFTG.
388. [*sore* EIF] sor MT; *mis-written* for P; so G. *&*] TG *om.* *smyteþ*] herteþ M.
389. [*lyf* EIFTG] lijf M; P *om.* *þer*] þat M. *haþ*] haue F. *lyf* (4)] M *om.* *anyented*] anynted E; enented M; avenked F; anentid G; amyendid (!) I.
390. *quyte*] schal quite M. *hit*] M *om.*
391. *wende*] wynde ET.
393. *þat* (2)] IT *om.* [*my* ITG] ich PE; i MF; *cf.* B-text. *to*] ys to G.

† Cf. Heb. ii. 14. Boþe aquyte and aquykye · þat was aqueynt þorw synne;
And gyle be by-gyled · thorgh grace atte laste,
† Cf. Ps. vii. 16. *Ars ut artem falleret, &c.*
So leyf hit nat, lucifer · þat ich a-ȝeyns þe lawe
Fecche here eny synful soule · souereynliche by maistrie;
Bot þorgh ryght and reson · raunson here myne lige;
Mat. v. 17. *Non ueni soluere legem, sed adimplere.*
339 So þat þorgh gyle was geten · þorwe grace is now y-wonne.
And as adam and alle · þorw a treo deyden,
Adam and alle þorgh a treo · shal turne to lyue.
Guile is beguiled. And now by-gynneþ thi gyle · a-gayn on þe turne,
And my grace to growe · ay wydder and wydder.
The biternesse þat þow hast browe · now brouk hit þy-self;
Drink that which thou hast brewed. That art doctour of deþ · drynk þat þow madest!
For ich þat am lord of lyf · loue is my drynke,
And for þat drynke to-daye · deyede, as hit semede;
Ac ich wol drynke of no dich · ne of no deop cleregie,
Bote of comune coppes · alle cristene soules;
Ac þi drynke worth deþ · and deop helle þy bolle.
I thirst still; Ich fauht so, me fursteþ ȝut · for mannes soule sake;
† John xix. 28. *Sicio.*

394. *Boþe*] And boþe IT. *aquykye*] quikie MF. *aquyte — aquykye*] quykye and quyte IT. *was aqueynt*] queynte was IT. *þorw*] *with* F.
395. *be*] I *om.* *atte* EG] ate F; at þe MIT; *miswritten* atte þe P. *Ars, &c.*] M *om.*
396. *leyf*] leue EIMFTG. *þat ich*] IT *om.* *ich*] M *om.* *lawe*] lawe i fecche IT.
397. *Feeche*] Fecche i M; *in* l. 396 *in* IT. *by*] wiþ M.
398. *reson*] þorgh resoun IT. *lige*] *so* PMTG; liege I; leege F; leche (!) E.
399. *þorgh*] wiþ I. *now*] M *om.*
400. *And as*] So þat M.
402. *thi*] þe ET. *on þe*] on þe to IT; þe to M.
403. *to*] for to F. *ay*] F *om.*
404. *The*] Þat M. *hit*] þou hit G.
405. *art* IMFT] ert PEG.
406. *þat am*] am þat MF.
407. *And*] I *om.* *deyede*] I deyede IT. *semede*] semeþ E.
408. *dich*] disshe IT; dik M; deþ (!) G. *no (2)*] I *om.*
411. *Ich fauht*] In faiþ M. *so*] þat F. *fursteþ*] þresteþ M; þorstiþ G. *sake*] I *om.* *Sicio*] IM *om.*

May no pyement ne pomade · ne presiouse drynkes — but I drink not yet.
Moyste me to þe fulle · ne my þurst slake,
Til the vendage valle · in þe vale of Iosaphat,
And drynke ryght rype most · *Resurreccio mortuorum.* — Joel iii. 12, 13.
Then shal ich come as a kyng · with coroune and with angeles,
And haue out of helle · alle menne soules.
Feondes and feondekenes · by-for me shullen stande,
And be at my byddyng · at blysse oþer at peyne. — 340
Ac to beo merciable to man · þenne my kynde askeþ; — Fiends and fiendkins shall obey me.
For we beoþ breþeren of blod · ac nat in baptisme alle.
Ac alle þat beoþ myn half-breþeren · in blod and in baptisme — My brethren shall not be condemned.
Shal neuere eft in helle come · beo he ones oute;
Tibi soli peccaui, & malum contra te feci, &c. — Ps. l. 6 (Vulg.).
Hit is nat vsed on erthe · to honge eny felones
Ofter þan ones · þauh þei weren treitours.
And yf þe kyng of þe kyngdom · come in þe tyme — A king can pardon a felon.
Ther a þeof þoly sholde · deþ oþer Iuwise,
Lawe wolde he ȝeue hym lyf · and he lokede on hym.
And ich, þat am kynge ouer kynges · shal come suche [a] tyme, — I, the King of kings,

412. *ne pomade*] G *om.* *ne* (2)] ne oþur F. M *has*—Mai no precious piment · pomadre ne no drynkes.
413. *þurst*] þrest M; þrist F; furst T. *ne—þurst*] my þrest neiþer M. *slake*] slokke G.
414. *vendage*] ventage IMT. *valle*] falle EIMFTG. *in*] on G.
416. *Then*] And þan IT. *ich*] E *om.* *a*] IT *om.*
419. *at*] in F (*last* 2 *times*).
420. *þenne*] þat T.
421. *beoþ*] F *om.* *breþeren*] broþerne P. *of*] of o IG. *ac*] but MT. *in*] in o G.
422. *þat*] þo T. *half*] halue M; hole IG; holy T; owne F; *see* l. 438. *breþeren*] broþerne P.
423. *eft*] *follows* helle *in* IT. *beo he*] ben þei M. *&—feci*] F *om.* *contra*] coram MIGT.
424. *nat*] M *om.* *vsed*] i-vsed M. *to—felones*] any felou*n* to hange F.
425. *þan*] þan it were F. *weren treitours*] tretours were F.
426. *þe* (2)] F *om.*
427. *þoly*] þole MT. *oþer*] oþer oþere T. *Iuwise* EM] *better than* Iuwes P; iewise IG; Iewesse (!) F; Iewis T.
428. *he* (1)] E *om.* *ȝeue*] ȝaf T; ȝof F. *and*] if F.
429. *kynge*] a kynge P; *but* EIMFTG *omit* a. *ouer*] of MF. [*a* IMFTG] PE *om.*

Ther þat dom to þe deoþ · [dampneþ] alle wyckede;

can pardon whom I will.

And yf lawe wol ich loke on hem · hit lyth in my grace,

Wheþer þei deye oþer deye nat · dude þei neuere so ille.

Be hit eny þyng [dere abouȝt] · þe boldness of here synne,

Ich may do mercy of my ryghtwisnesse · and alle myne wordes trewe.

No ill shall go unpunished;

For holy writ wole þat ich be awreke · of hem þat wrouhte ille;

(Cf. Pass. v. 140.)

As, *nullum malum impunitum, & nullum bonum irremuneratum.*

And so of alle wyckede · ich wolle here take veniaunce,

And ȝut my kynde, in my kene yre · shal contrarie my wil—

† Ps. xxxvii. 1 (Vulg.).

Domine, ne in furore tuo arguas me, neque in ira tua corripias me—

341 yet mercy shall be shown.

To beo merciable to menye · of my half-breþeren.

For blod may seo blood · boþe a-þurst and a-cale,

Ac blod may nat seo blod · blede, bote hym rewe.

2 Cor. xii. 4.

Audiui archana verba, que non licet homini loqui.

Ac my ryghtwisnesse and my right · shal regnen in helle,

And mercy and mankynde · by-for me in heuene.

430. [*dampneþ* EIMFTG] dampned P.

431. *And*] F *om.* *lawe wol*] G *om.* *ich*] T *om.* *hem*] him T.

432. *deye*] deyde G (*twice*). *dude*] do M. *þei*] hy E. *dude þei*] ha þei do F.

433. [*dere abouȝt* MFE] dure y-bouht P; aboght I; abouȝt TG.

434. *of*] on M. *trewe*] trywe P; turne M.

435. *For*] F *om.* *be*] F *om.* *awreke*] wreke IFTG; wroken M. *of*] on MF. *wrouhte*] don M. *ille*] euele T. *As*] FT *om.* *& nullum*] nec ullum F.

436. *of*] I *om.*

437. *And*] Ac I; But T. *contrarie*] constreyne FITG; costreyne M. *neque, &c.*] IMFTG *om.*

438. *my*] menye I. *breþeren*] broþerne P.

439. *boþe*] M *om.* *a-þurst*] a-þrest M; afurst IT.

440. *blede*] I *om.*

441. *ryghtwisnesse*] riȝtwisnesses F. *my* (2)] IMFTG *om.*

For ich were an vnkynde kynge · bote ich my kyn holpe, — I were unnatural not to help my own kin.

And nameliche at suche a neode · þat neodes help askeþ,

Non intres in iudicium cum servo tuo, domine. — Ps. cxlii. 2 (Vulg.).

Thus by lawe," quaþ oure lord · "lede ich wol fro hennes — I will release those that I love."

Alle þat ich louye · and leyuede in my comynge.

Ac for þe lesynge þat þow, lucifer · lowe til eue,

þow shalt abygge bitere," quaþ god · and bond hym with cheynes. — Christ binds Satan.

Astrot and alle oþere · hudden hem in heornes, — Ashtaroth and others hide themselves.

Thei dorst nat loken on oure lorde · þe leste of hem alle,

Bote [leten] hym leden forth which hym luste · and leue whiche hym lykede.

Mony hundrede of aungelis · harpeden þo and songen, — The angels harp and sing.

Culpat caro, purgat caro, regnat deus dei caro.

Thenne pipede pees · of poetes a note,

"*Clarior est solito · post maxima nebula phebus;*

Post inimicitias · clarior est et amor. **342**

After sharpest shoures," quaþ pees · "most sheene is þe sonne; — The sun is brightest after sharp showers.

Ys no weder warmer · þan after watery cloudes,

443. *kyn*] kynde M. *holpe* EIMF T] *miswritten* helpe (*for* holpe) P; wolde helpe G.

444. *at*] in F. *neodes*] nede M. *domine*] IMTG *om.*

445. *by*] i F. *fro*] M *om.*

446. *Alle*] þo ledis T. *þat ich*] þo þat i MF. *in*] on F.

447. *Ac*] & F. *lucifer lowe*] lowe lucefer MIFTG. *til*] to FT.

448. *abygge*] abye IFTG; a-bugge M. *bitere*] bitterly T. *hym*] I *om.* *cheynes*] a chayne G.

449. *Astrot* EIMTG] Astrott P; Astarot F. *alle*] þese F. *hudden*] *so* PE; hidden IMFT. *heornes*] *so* PF; hernes EMT; hirnes I; hernys G.

450. *on*] *in* E.

451. [*leten* IE] leet F; let TG; leot P; lette M. *which*] wich P; as F. *hym luste*] I *om.* *whiche*] wiche PM; such as F. *lykede*] likeþ M.

452. *Mony*] Many an F. *regnat—caro*] F *om.* *deus—caro*] TG *om.*

453. *Thenne*] þo M. *of*] & (!) F. *of—a*] of a poete a G; a poetes I.

454. *post—phebus*] IMFT *om.*

455. *clarior—et*] F *om.*

456. *sharpest*] scharpe E. *sharpest shoures*] schour*us* scharpest F. *most sheene*] warmest M.

457. *Ys*] þ*er* is F.

Love is dearest after strife.

Noþer loue leuere · ne leuere freondes, 458
þan after werre and wrake · whanne loue and pees beon maistres.
Was neuere werre in þis worlde · ne wykkeder enuye,
þat loue, and hym luste · to lauhynge [ne] brouhte,
[And pees þorgh pacience · alle pereles stoppede]." 462

Truth and Peace embrace.

"Treuwes," quaþ treuthe · "þou tellest soþ, by iesus!
Cluppe we in couenaunt · and ech of ous cusse oþer!"
"And leet no peuple," quaþ pees · "parceyue þat we chide! 465
For impossible is no þyng · to hym þat is al-myghty."

Righteousness and Peace kiss each other.

"þow seist soþ," quaþ ryghtwisnesse · and reuerentliche heo custe
Pees, and pees heore · *per secula seculorum.* 468

Ps. lxxxiv. 11 (Vulg.).

Misericordia & ueritas obuiauerunt sibi; Iusticia & pax osculate sunt.

Treuthe trompede þo, and song · "*Te deum laudamus.*"
And þen lutede loue · In a lowd note,

Ps. cxxxii. 1 (Vulg.).

"*Ecce quam bonum & quam iocundum est, habitare fratres in unum!*"

Tyl þe day dawede · these damseles daunsede,

The poet awakes,

That men rang to þe resurrecciouⁿ · and with þat ich awakede, 472

458. *Noþer*] Neiþer M; Ne no FTG.
459. *loue—pees*] pees and loue M.
460. *wykkeder*] wickede M.
461. *lauhynge*] lauȝing it T; lawȝyng hym E. [*ne* EFT] PMI *om.*; *but see* B-text. G *is corrupt.*
462. *From* I; *also in* TG; PEMF *omit.* *pereles* G] perelis T; *miswritten* sperewes (*for* perelles) I.
463. *Treuwes*] *so* PE; Trewes IM; Trewis TG; Trew*us* now F. *tellest*] tellest vs IT; seist F.
464. *Cluppe*] *so* PEMI; Clippe F TG. *cusse*] kus M; kisse IFT.
465. *leet*] lete E; late F; let MT; lat IG. *chide*] *so* PEMFTG; chidede I.
467. *heo*] ȝo E; sche M; hire T (*wrongly*); þey G. *custe*] kiste T; kissede FI.
468. *and—heore*] treuþe & treuþe hure G. *heore*] kist heere F. *per*] per omnia ETG.
469. *trompede*] titly trumped F. *and*] a M.
470. *þen*] louely F. *lowd*] long M. *note*] tune T. *est, &c.*] MIFTG *om.*
471. *Tyl*] & til F. *daunsede*] carolede IT.
472. *þe*] F *om.* *and*] and right IT. *awakede*] waked ITG.

And kallyd kytte my wyf · and kalote my doughter, and bids his wife Kitte and his daughter Kalote
"A-rys, and go reuerence · godes resurreccioun, 474
And creop on kneos to þe croys · and cusse hit for a 343
Iuwel,
And ryghtfullokest a relyk · non riccher on erthe. to revere and kiss the cross.
For godes blesside body · hit bar for oure bote,
And hit a-fereþ þe feonde · for such is þe myghte,
May no grysliche gost · glyde þer hit shadeweþ!" 479

Hic explicit passus quartus et ultimus de dobet.

474. *A-rys*] Ariseth F. *go*] goþ M; gawe F; go we G. *reuerence*] reuerenceþ M. *godes*] our goddus F.

475. *on—croys*] to þe cros on knes IT. *cusse*] kus M; kisse IFT; kisse we G.

476. *And*] An P; Þe M. *ryght-fullokest—riccher*] rithfulest relic · no richere non is M. *on*] yn G.

478. *hit*] he M. *a-fereþ*] aferede G. *þe* (2)] his M.

479. *May*] *Þer* may F. *grysliche*] graselese G. *glyde*] a-bide M. *shadeweþ*] schadeþ M.

COLOPHON. *So in* P; M *om.* *Hic*] EF *om.* I *has*—Explicit: Et incipit Dobest; T *has*—Explicit de do-bet: Et incipit de dobest; G *the same, prefixing* Hic.

Visio eiusdem Willelmi de Do-best.

PASSUS XXII (DO-BEST I).

Hic Incipit passus primus de dobest.

Thus ich awakede and wrot · what ich hadde dremed,
And dyhte me derly · and dude me to churche,
To huyre holliche þe masse · and be housled after.
In myddes of þe masse · þo men ȝeden to offrynge,
Ich fel eft-sones a slepe · and sodeynliche me mette,
That peers the plouhman · was peynted al blody,
And cam yn with a croys · by-fore þe comune peuple,
And ryght like in alle lymes · to oure lord ihesu;
And þenne calde ich conscience · to kenne me þe soþe.
"Is this ihesus þe Iouster?" quaþ ich · "þat Iuwes duden to deþe,
Oþer is hit peers plouhman? · ho peynted hym so rede?"
Quaþ conscience, and kneolede þo · "þese aren cristes armes,
Hus colours and hus cote-armure · and he þat comeþ so blody,

344

The poet awakes and writes his dream.

He again sleeps, and dreams of Piers the Plowman, holding a cross.

"Is this Jesus or Piers the Plowman?"

"It is Christ, wearing his own coat-armour."

TITLE. *So* PM; *so* EF, *omitting* Hic; Incipit de dobest GT; Incipit dobest I; Incipit pass*us* septimus de dowel S (*wrongly; owing to omission of* Passus xvii *to* xxi).

OBS. *Here* S *begins again.*

1. *Thus—awakede*] I awaked þus F. *what*] þat F. *dremed*] i-dremed MIT.

2. *churche*] kirke MIG.

3. *huyre*] here MIFT. *holliche*] holly IMFGT; holy S. *be*] to be IT. *housled*] yhousled E; i-hoseled M.

4. *myddes*] myddul F. *þo*] M *om.*

5. *Ich*] And i M. *fel* GT] ful M; felle EIS; fel þo F; *miswritten* feel P. *a*] on I. *me*] IS *om.*

6. *peynted*] i-peynted M. *blody*] rede blody (*sic*) S.

7. *yn*] M *om.* *þe comune*] al þe M.

8—322. S *omits.*

9. *calde*] *so* PEIMT; cald G; called F. *kenne*] telle M; knowe G.

11. *is hit*] hit is MIT. *peers*] peres þe IF.

12. *þese*] this P. *aren*] ben EM.

13. *and* (2)] ac I; but T. *so*] M *om.*

Hit is crist with his crois · conquerour of crystine."

345 "Why call Him Christ?

"Whi calle ȝe him crist · siþthen Iuwes cald hym ihesus?

Patriarkes and prophetes · propheciede by-fore,

þat alle kynne creatures · sholden kneolen and bowen,

His name is Jesus.

A-non as men nempned · þe name of God ihesu.

Ergo is no name · to þe name of ihesu,

[Ne] non so neodful to nempne · by nyghte ne by daye.

For alle deorke deoueles · dreden hit to huyre,

And synful ben solacede · and saued by þat name.

And ȝe callen hym crist · for what cause, telleþ me?

Is Christ a worthier name?"

Is Crist more of myght · and more worþiere name

Than *iesu oþer* iesus · þat al oure ioy come of?"

Conscience replies,

"Thow knowest wel," quaþ conscience · "and þow conne reson,

"One man may be both knight, king, and conqueror.

þat knyght, kyng, conquerour · may be o persone.

To be cald a knyght is fair · for men shal to hym kneole;

To be cald a kyng is fairour · for he may knyghtes make;

To be called a conqueror comes of special grace.

And to be cald conquerour · that comeþ of special grace,

Of hardynesse of heorte · and of hendeness [boþe],

To make lordes of laddes · of londe þat he wynneþ,

And fre men foule þralles · þat folwen nat hus lawes.

14. *Hit*] IT *om.* *his*] is P.

15. *Whi*] & whi F. *calle*] calde G. *siþthen*] siþthen þat PE; *but* IM FGT *omit* þat. *cald*] calde G; calden T; called EIF; calleden M.

18. *God*] G *om.*

19. *Ergo*] Ergo sire *þer* F. *of*] of þe (*sic*) I; T *om.*

20. [*Ne* IFGT] And PEM; *see* B-text. G *is corrupt.*

21. *dreden*] aren drade I. *hit—huyre*] for to heren it IT.

23. *for*] ac for F. *me*] F *om.*

24. *more* (1)] any more F. *worþiere*] wurthi F; worþy G.

25. *Than*] þan is G. *al*] M *om.* *come*] came E; cam IMFG.

26. *and*] if F. *conne*] knewe M.

27. *knyght*] a knyȝt G. *conquerour*] & conquerour F.

28. *cald*] called F; i-cald M. *is*] *miswritten* as P. *shal—kneole*] shuln knele to him T.

29. *To*] F *om.*

30. *And*] Ac IF; G *om.* *cald*] i-cald a M; called a F; cald a G. *cald conquerour*] conquerour y-called I; conquerour cald T. *that*] it F; hit G.

31. *Of*] And of IT; Boþe of F. [*boþe* T] PEMFG *om.; but the line seems incomplete without it.*

The Iuwes þat weren gentel-men · ihesu þei dispiseden, The Jews despised Jesus,
Boþe hus lore and hus lawe · now aren þei lowe cheorles. and are now under tribute.
As wide as þe worlde is · wonyeþ þer none
Bote vnder tribut and taillage · as tikes and cheorles.
And þo þat by-comen cristine · by consail of þe baptist,
Aren frankelayns and freo · þorgh fullyng þat thei toke, 346
And gentel-men with ihesu · for ihesus was yfulled, The Christians are free men.
And vp-on caluarie [on] croys · [y-crouned] kyng of Iuwes.
Hit by-comeþ for a kyng · to kepen and defende, Jesus performed the duties of a
And conquerour of hus conqueste · hus laies and hus king,
large.
So dude ihesus þe Iuwes · he Iustifiede and tauhte hem
The lawe of þe lykyng lyf · þat laste shal euere;
And fendede hem fro foule vueles · feueres and fluxes,
And fro feondes þat were in hem · and false by-leyue.
Þo was he ihesus of Iuwes cald · gentel prophete,
And kyng of here kyngdom · and corone bar of þornes. and bare a crown of thorns.
And þo conquered he on croys · as conquerour noble;
Myght no deþ hym for-do · ne adoun brynge,
þat he ne aros and regnede · and rauesshede helle; He arose, and was a conqueror.
And þo was he conquerour called · of quyke and of dede.
For he ȝaf adam and eue · and oþer mo blisse,
þat longe hadde leye by-fore · as luciferes cheorles;

35. *þei*] we (!) I.
37. *taillage*] tailage EIM; taliage F; talages G.
38. *by*] þoru M; þoruȝ T.
39. *Aren*] And arn M; Ben E. *freo*] fre men IT.
41. *And*] E *om.* [*on* MIF] with PET; in G. [*y-crouned* IF] crouned EMT; coronede P; crowned G.
42. *and*] & to IT.
43. *conqueste*] conquestes I. *laies*] *so* PMIT; lawes G; lawus F; lores E. *large*] leege F; largete G.
44. *So*] And so IT. *þe*] to þe MF. *he*] M *om.* *Iustifiede*] Iustefiede P; iusticed G. *and—hem*] hem and tauȝte MG.
45. *of*] & G. *þe lykyng*] IT *om.*; *see* B-text. *laste shal*] schal lasten F.
46. *fendede*] defended M; fenden T; fendeþ G. *and*] & eek F. *feueres—fluxes*] fluxus and feueres M.
47. *And*] F *om.* *were—hem*] in hem was IT.
48. *gentel*] & gentel F.
49. *here*] eueri G.
50. *on*] on þe M. *as*] as a MG.
52. *aros*] roos F.
53—56. G *omits.*
54. *blisse*] her blisse F.
55. *leye*] i-leie M; lif (!) T.

And tok lucifer þe loþliche · þat lorde was of helle,
And bond hym as he is bounde · with bondes of yren.
Ho was hardier þan he? · hus heorte blode he shadde,
To maken alle folk freo · þat folwen hus lawe.

He gave His lieges places in Paradise.

And sutthe he ȝaf largeliche · all hus leel lege
Places in paradis · at here partyng hennes,
He may beo wel cald conquerour · and þat is crist to mene.

And now He cometh to teach us

Ac þe cause whi he comeþ þus · with croys and hus passion,
Ys, to wissen ous þer-with · þat when we beo tempted,

347

Ther-with to fighten and fenden ous · fro fallyng in-to synne,

that he who loveth joy must suffer wo.

And seo by hus sorwe · þat ho so loueþ ioye,
To penaunce and to pouerte · he mot putte hym-selue,
And muche wo in þis worlde · wilnen and süffren.
Ac to carpe more of crist · and how he cam to þat name,

His name was Jesus at first.

Faithly for to speke · hus furste name was ihesus.
Tho he was bore in bethleem · as þe book telleþ,
And cam to take mankynde · kynges and aungeles
Reuerencede hym ryght faire · with richesse of eorthe.

Angels sung to him. Luke ii. 14.

Aungeles of heuene comen · kneolede and songen,
Gloria in excelsis deo.

Kings offered Him their gifts.

Kynges comen after · kneolede and offride

56. *loþliche*] ladde F.
57. *as*] and M. *bounde*] I-bounde F.
58. *Ho*] Who EMG. *shadde*] *so* PEMG; schedde FT; schewed I.
59. *folk*] foolk P; folkes E.
60. *ȝaf* EFG] *miswritten* ȝaue P (*but see* l. 54); gaf M; ȝeueþ I; ȝiueþ T. *lege*] leege F; lyge M; lige GT.
61. *at*] after M.
62. *beo wel*] wel be M. *wel cald*] called wel F; cald wel G.
63. *whi*] þat IT. *croys*] his cros IT. *hus*] wiþ M; F *om.*
64. *tempted*] i-tempted MIFG.
65. *fighten and*] E *om.* *fenden*] to defende M.
66. *þat*] MI *om.*
67. *mot*] moste M; miȝte T.
68. *wilnen*] willen M.
69. *Ac*] And for F. *and*] F *om.*
70. *Faithly*] Faiþfulli MF.
73. *Reuerencede*] Reuerencide P; And reuerenced I. *ryght*] ful F. *richesse*] richesses MIF. *of*] on T. *eorthe*] herte G.
74. *Aungeles*] & aungelus F. *of*] out of IT. *comen*] I *om.* *kneolede*] kneled E; knelide I; knelyng MFG; knelande T. *songen*] syngyng F.
75. *after*] afturward F. *kneoledo and*] & kneling F; knelynge & G.

Muche gold and murre · with-oute mercy askynge,
Oþer eny kynne catel · bote knewelechede hym souereyn
Boþe of sand, sonne, and see · and sitthen þei wente
In-to here kyngene kutthe · by counsail of aungeles,
And þer was þat word fulfild · the which thou of speke;
Omnia celestia, terrestria, flectantur in hoc nomine ihesu. Phil. ii. 10.
For alle þe aungeles of heuene · at hus burthe kneolede,
And al [þe] wit of þe worlde · was in þo þre kynges; These Magi offered Him
Reson and [ryghtwisnesse] · and reuthe þei offrede; reason,
Where-fore and whi · wise men þat tyme, righteousness,
Maistres and lettred men · *magi* hem calde. and ruth;
That on kynge cam with reson · keuered vnder sense; 348
The secounde kyng sitthen · sóthliche he offrede denoted by incense,
Ryghtwisnesse, vnder red gold · resones felawe.
Gold is likned to leaute · þat laste shal euere, gold,
And reson to ryche gold · to right and to treuthe.
The þridde kynge cam þo · ànd kneolede to iesu,
And presentide hym with pite · aperynge by mirre; and myrrh.
For mirre is mercy to mene · and mylde speche of tonge.
Eorthliche honeste þynges · was offred þus at ones
Þorgh þre kynde kynges · kneolyng to ihesu.

76. *Muche*] Muchel M. *Muche—murre*] Myrre & moche golde IT.

77. G *omits*. *knewelechede*] knewelecheden E; knewelichede P; knowelecheden MIT; knowlached F.

78. *sand*] land M. *sitthen*] sennes I; afterward G.

79. *Here* I *has lost* eight leaves, *down to* xxiii. 81. *kutthe*] kuþ E; kith FT; couþ M. *aungeles*] an aungel G.

80. *þat*] þe T. *which*] wich P. *the which*] þat G. *terrestria*] et terrestria MF.

82. [*þe* EMFGT] þat P. *was*] F *om*. *þo*] þis E.

83. [*ryghtwisnesse* EMF] ryghtfulnesse PGT; *but see* l. 88. *offrede*] suffreden M.

84. *Wherefore*] Werefore P; Wherfore sire F; Where G.

85. *hem*] men hem G.

86. *keuered*] ycouerid P. *sense*] cense F; sence M.

87. *he*] T *om*.

89. *likned* FG] licknede P; likened E; i-likened M; yliknid T.

91, *þo*] T *om*.

92. *And*] F *om*. *with*] M *om*. *aperynge by*] peeryng with F.

93. *to*] for to F.

94. *Eorthliche*] Erþliche EMT; Erthelyche G; Eerthlich F (*not as in* B-text). *was*] *so* PEMT; were F. *Probably* was *should have been kept in* B-text. *at ones*] to *iesus* M.

95. *þre*] þe F. *kynde*] kyne T. *to ihesu*] at ones M; *cf.* l. 94.

Jesus was not yet a king or a conqueror.

Ac for alle þese preciose presentes · oure lord [prince] ihesus 96
Was noþer kyng ne conquerour · til he comsede wexe
In þe manere of [a] man · and þat by muche sleithe,
Like a conqueror, He learnt many sleights.
As hit by-comeþ for a conquerour · to conne menye sleithes,
And menye wiles and wyt · þat wol be a ledere; 100
And so dude ihesus in hus dayes · ho so dorste tellen hit.
Som tyme he suffrede · and som tyme he hidde hym,
And som tyme he fauhte faste · and fleih oþer-while;
He wrought miracles.
And som tyme [he] gaf good · and grauntede hele, 104
Boþe lyf and lyme · as hym luste, he wrouhte;
As [kynde] is of a conquerour · so comsede ihesus,
Til he hadde alle hem · þat he for bledde.
In hus Iuuente þis *Ihesus* · at [þe] Iuwene feste 108
349 He turned water into wine, and began to DO-WELL,
Turned water in-to wyn · as holy writ telleþ,
And þer by-gan god of hus grace · gretliche to dowel.
For wyn is lykned to lawe · and lyf-holynesse;
And lawe lackede þo · for men louede nat here enemy[s];
And crist counsaileþ thus · and comaundeþ boþe 113
To lerede and to lewede · for to loue oure enemys.
at the feast in Cana,
So at þat feste furst · as ich by-fore tolde,

96. *Ac*] But T; F *om.* *þese*] þes P. [*prince* TFG] PEM *om.* *lord prince*] prince lord F.

97. *noþer*] neuere M. *wexe*] to wexe F; to waxe T.

98. [*a* EMFTG] P *om.* *by*] wiþ M. *sleithe*] slyþe EG; sleiȝte FT.

99. *a*] F *om.* *sleithes*] sleiȝtus F; sleiȝte T; sliþes G.

100. *wiles*] whiles P.

101. *And*] FG *om.* *tellen hit*] hit telle MG.

102. G *omits.* *Som*] For sum F.

103. *fleih*] fli M. *while*] wile P.

104. *And*] G *om.* [*he* MFGT] PE *om.* *hele*] hele boþe T.

105. *Boþe*] T *om.* *hym*] him-self M. *luste*] list T.

106. [*kynde* MFGT] PE *om.* *of a*] to G. *comsede*] comside þanne T.

107. *alle hem*] hem alle F.

108. *þis* EMFTG] þes P. *at*] T *om.* [*þe* MF] PEGT *om.*

109. *Turned*] *at end of* l. 108 *in* T.

110. *And*] F *om.* *grace*] goodnesse M. *gretliche*] graithely F; TG *om.* *dowel*] dwelle (!) T.

111. *lykned*] i-likened M.

112. *enemys* T] enemyus F; enmys M; enemy PEG; *but see* l. 114.

113. *counsaileþ*] consailede G. *comaundeþ*] commaundede G.

114. G *omits.* *To*] Both to F. *for*] FT *om.*

115. *So*] So þat F. *at þat*] atte G. *þat*] þe MF.

By-gan God of hus grace · and of hus goodness [to] do-wel;
And þo was he cleped and cald · nat onliche crist, bote ihesu,
A fauntekyn ful of wytt · *filius Marie.*
For by-fore hus moder Marie · made he þat wonder, — in the presence of Mary.
That sheo furst and formest · sholde fermé by-leyue,
That he thorgh grace was gete · and of no gome elles.
He wrouhte þat by no wyt · bote by worde one,
After þe kynde þat he cam of · þer comsede he dowel.
And whenne he was woxen more · in hus modres absence, — Next He wrought many miracles,
He made lame to leepe · and ȝaf light to blynd,
And fedde with two fisshes · and with fyue loues
[Sore] a-fyngred fele folke · mo þan fyf þousand.
Thus he comfortede careful · and cauhte a grettere name, — and caught a greater name,
The whiche was dobet · wher þat he wente. — viz. DO-BET.
For deue þorgh hus doynges · and dombe speke and herde,
And alle he heled and halp · þat hym of grace askyde.
Tho he was callyd in þe contreo · of þe comune peuple — Then was He called the Son of David.
For þe dedes þat he dude · *fili david, iesus!*
For dauid was þe douhtiest · of dedus in hus tyme;

116. *of hus* (2)] MFTG *om.*; *cf.* B-text. [*to* MTG] PEF *om.*
117. *And*] G *om.* *cleped* MEFT] clipede P; clipyd G.
118. *A*] And T; A fair F. *filius*] & filius F.
119. *he*] was F.
120. *sheo*] sche MFT; ȝo E; heo G. *ferme*] be ferm (!) F.
121. *was gete*] gete was F. *of*] þurw F.
122. *by* (2)] þoru M; þurw F; þoruȝ T; þurgh G.
123. *dowel*] to dowel M.
124. *whenne*] wenne P. *woxen*] I-woxe F; waxe T; wexe G. *was woxen*] wexede M. *modres*] modur F; moder G; modir T.
125. *lame*] þe lame F. *to* (2)] to þe PE; *but* MFTG *omit* þe.
126. *two* EGT] to PMF.
127. [*Sore* MFTG] So PE. *a-fyngred*] of-hungred M. *fele*] T *om.*
128. *careful*] þe careful F. *grettere*] gret M.
129. *The whiche*] Whuche name G. *whiche*] wiche P. *dobet*] a dobet F.
130. *deue*] *so* PFGT; deeue M; defe E. *speke*] *so* PEMT; spook F; spek G.
131. *he*] T *om.* *halp*] he halp F.
132. *Tho*] And þo T. *he was*] was he M. þe (1)] MFGT *om.* *contreo*] contre F; cuntre M; contreye EG; cuntray T.

350

1 Sam. xviii. 7. The buyrdes [þo] songen · *saul interfecit mille, & dauid decem milia;*

For-þi þe contreye þer ihesu cam · cald hym *fili dauid,*

None was so worthy as He to be king. Nempnede hym of nazareth · and no man so worthi

To beo caiser oþer kyng · of þe kyngdom of Iuda,

Ne ouer Iuwes Iustice · as ihesus [was], hem þouhte.

Her-of had cayfas enuye · and oþere Iuwes,

And for to do hym to deþe · day and nyght þei casten,

The Jews then crucified Him, And culled hym on croys-wyse · at caluarye, on a fryday,

And sutthen buriede hus body · and beden þat men sholde

and watched His body, Kepen hit fro nyght-commeres · with kyghtes y-armed,

For no freonde sholde hit fecche · for prophetes hem tolde

lest He should rise again. That þat blessed body · of buriels sholde aryse,

And gon in-to galile · and gladen hus apostoles,

And hus moder Marie; · thus me by-fore deuynede.

The knyghtes that kepten hit · by-knewen hem-selue,

Angels sang at His resurrection. þat aungeles [&] archaungeles · ar þe day spronge,

Comen kneolynge · to þat corps, and songen,

'*Christus rex resurgens*' · and hit aros after,

135. [*þo* EMG] þanne T; so P; *cf.* B-text. F *has*—Þe burdes seide he bar him wel · whan he beet ten þousand; *Percussit saul mille, & dauid decem milia.*

136. *cald*] þei calde M. *fili*] iesu fili M.

137. *Nempnede*] And nempnide T; Hy nempnide G. *no man*] nampned him (!) F.

138. *beo*] ha be F. *oþer*] and M. *of*] in T. *þe*] F *om.*

139. *ouer*] ouere P. [*was* MFGT] PE *om.*; *cf.* B-text.

140. *oþere*] othe as oþere (!) T.

141. *deþe* EMG] deth F; diþe P; dede T. *þei*] hy G; M *om.*

142. *culled*] culden MF; culde G; kilden T. *on* (1)] a F; in G. *a*] T *om.*

145. *For*] þat M. *freonde*] body G. *For—freonde*] Freend for noon F. *hit*] him MF; hem (!) T.

146. *buriels* E] burieles MG; birielli*us* F; burielis T; *miswritten* burielesse P. *of—sholde*] schulde · of birielli*us* F. *aryse*] rise T.

147. *and gladen*] to gladye G.

148. *thus*] so F. *me*] *so* PE; men MFTG.

149. *The*] þan þe F.

150. [*&* EFGT] and M; P *om. ar*] or EM; er T.

151. *þat corps*] þe crois F. *corps*] corp*us* E; bodi M. T *has*—Com knelyng on knes · and to þat corps sungen. *songen*] swettely songen G.

152. F *puts* christus resurgens *at end of* l. 150, *and omits this line. rex*] MG *om.*

Verrei man by-fore hem alle · and forþ with hem ȝeode.
The Iuwes preyede hem of pees · and preyede þo knyghtes
Telle þe comune, þat þer cam · a companye of hus aposteles, 155 **351**
And by-wicched hem as thei woke · and a-way stelyn hit.
Ac marie magdalene · mette [him] by þe weye,
Goynge to-ward galile · in god-hede and man-hede,
And lyues and lokynge · and heo aloud cryede, 159
In eche companye þer heo cam · '*christus resurgens.*'
Thus cam hit out þat crist ouer-cam · rekeouered, and lyuede;
Sic oportet Christum pati, & intrare gloriam suam, Luke xxiv. 46.
For þat [þat] wommen witeþ · may nat wel be consail! 163
Peter parceyuede al þis · and porsuede after,
Boþe Iames and Iohan · Ihesu to seke,
Taddee and ten mo · with thomas of ynde;
And [as] alle þese wise wyes · weren to-gederes
In an hous al by-shutt · and here dore barred, 167
Crist cam yn, and al was closed · boþe dore and ȝates,

The Jews bade the soldiers say His body was stolen.

But Mary Magdalen saw Him alive, and proclaimed it;

for what a woman knows is no secret.

His apostles were together in a closed house, when Christ came in.

153. *Verrei*] Verey E; Verai M; Verray T; Hit roos (*sic*) F.
154. *The—preyede*] Þo preide þe iew*us* F. *þo*] þe MT; to þe F.
155. *Telle*] To telle M.
156. *by-wicched* E] bi-wicchede M GT; biwichched F; *miswritten* by-wocched P. *stelyn*] stelen EMGT; þei stole F. *hit*] him M; G *om.*
157. *Ac*] But T; And F. [*him* M FGT] hem PE.
158. *Goynge*] Goande T. *toward*] in-to F. *and*] & in G.
159. *lyues*] lyuyng M. *And lyues*] Al alyue F. *lokynge*] lokande T. *heo*] sche M; scheo F; ȝo E; he G; T *om.* *heo aloud*] lowde þo scheo F.
160. *eche*] eche a MFG. *heo*] sche M; scheo F; ȝo E; he GT.
161. *rekeouered*] and recouerede M; & recou*e*ride T. *lyuede* FEMT] releuede G; leyuede P. *Sic oportet*] Oportebat F. *pati*] pati & resurgere M. *&—suam*] F *om.* *gloriam suam*] MTG *om.*
162. [*þat* EMG] PFT *om.* *may*] hit may FT.
163. *Peter*] þo petur F. *al*] MG *om.* *and*] he F. *porsuede*] pursued fast F.
164. *and*] & eke F. *to*] for to F.
165. *Taddee* EM] Tadde TF; Tadee PG. *and*] wiþ G. *with*] and G.
166. *And*] MG *om.* [*as* FMGT] PE *om.* *wyes* FGT] *badly spelt* weyes P; men M.
167. *here*] þe T. *barred*] i-barred MF.
168. *yn and*] ȝut G. *was*] T *om.* *closed*] cloos F. *dore*] deres M.

To peter and to hus aposteles · and seyde, '*pax uobis!*'
Thomas touched and knew Him. And took thomas by þe hand · and tauhte hym [to grope]
And fele with hus fyngres · hus fleshliche heorte.
Thomas touchede hit · and with hus tunge seyde,
John xx. 28. '*Dominus meus & deus meus,*
Thow art my lord, ich by-leyue · god, lord ihesu,
That deydest and deþ þoledest · and deme shalt ous alle,
And now art lyuynge and lokynge · and laste shalt euere.'
352 Christ blessed Thomas, Crist carpede þenne · and corteisliche seide,
'Thomas, for thou trowest this · and trewely by-leyuest hit,
Yblessed mote þou beo · and beo shalt for euere;
and those still more who believe without sight. And blessed moten þei beo · in body and in soule,
Þat neuere shullen seo in syht · as þou seost nouthe,
And leelly by-leyuen al this · ich loue hem and blesse hem;
John xx. 29. *Beati qui non uiderunt, & crediderunt.*'
Then He aimed at DO-BEST. And when þis dede was don · dobest he þouhte,
And ȝaf peers power · and pardon he grauntede
To alle manere of men · mercy and forȝyuenesse,
And ȝaf hym myghte to asoylye men · of alle manere synnes,

169. *to hus*] his E; oþer G.
170. [*to grope* EMFGT] þo grepe P.
171. *fleshliche*] freliche T.
172. *Thomas*] Thomas þo F. *hit*] hym E. *Dominus, &c.*] *follows* l. 176 *in* M.
173. *art* MFT] ert PEG. *god lord*] & my god F; lord god & G.
174. *That*] T *om.* *deydest*] Diȝedest T. *shalt*] schal MFT.
175. *art* MF] ert PEG; art þou T. *shalt*] schal MFG.
176. *þenne*] þo F.
177. T *omits.* *trowest*] troudest M. *trewely*] stedefastli M. *hit*] F *om.*
178. *Yblessed*] þer-for blessed F.
180. *shullen seo*] ne schullen se E; syen þis F. *seo*] se me T. *as*] þat MG. *seost*] sixt it F.
181. *by-leyuen*] lyuen T. *hem* (2)] — F *om.*
182. *don*] i-don M; I-do F; do G. *dobest*] to dobest M.
183. *and*] a M.
184. *and*] an P. *In margin of* M —de restitucione.
185. *And ȝaf*] T *om.* *asoylye*] asoyly E; asoile MG; assoile T; soile F. *to—men*] men to assoile TG. *synnes*] of synnes T.

In couenaunt þat þei come · and kneweliched to paye
To peers pardon [þe] plouhman · *Redde quod debes.* Mat. xviii. 28.
Thus haueþ peers power · heo hus pardon payed, 188 He gave His apostles power to bind and unbind.
To bynde and vnbynde · bothe here and elleswher,
And assoille of alle synnes · saue of dette one.
A-non after an hyh · vp in-to heuene 191 He ascended into heaven.
He wente, and woneþ þere · and wol come atte laste,
And rewardy [him] right wel · þat *Reddit quod debet,*
Payeþ now parfitliche · as pure treuthe wolde. 194
And what persone payeþ hit nat · punysshen he þenkeþ, He shall judge all men at Doom's-day."
And demen [hem] at domesday · boþe quyke and dede;
The gode to þe god-hede · and to grete ioye, 197
And wyckede to wonye · in wo with-outen ende."
Thus conscience of crist · and of þe croys carpede, 353
And consailede me to kneole þer-to · And þenne cam, me þouhte, 200
On *spiritus paraclitus* · to peers and to hus felawes, The Spirit descends on Piers and his fellows.
In liknesse of a lyght[n]ynge · a-lyghte on hem alle,
And made hem [conne] and knowe · alle kynne languages. 203

186. *kneweliched*] knowleched MT; knewleche G.
187. [þe T] PEMFG *omit; but see* B-text; *cf.* l. 360.
188. *haueþ*] *so* PG; haþ EMFT. *peers*] he M. *heo*] to F. *payed*] i-paied M.
189. *To*] For to F. *and*] and to M. *elleswher*] elleswer P; elles MG; ellus F; ellis T.
190. *of* (1)] men of T.
191. *after*] he sti M. *an hyh*] þan an hy F; on heiȝ T. M *adds*—Ascendit ad celos.
192. *þere*] þere now F. *atte*] at þe MFT.
193. *And*] To M. *rewardy*] reward E; rewarde MFGT. [*him* FT] hym G; hem PEM. *þat Reddit*] & redde (*sic*) T.
194. *Payeþ*] & paith F. *now*] T *om.* *parfitliche*] trewly G.
195. *what*] wat P. *hit*] G *om.* *he*] hem he E; him he T.
196. [*hem* EFG] hym PT; M *om.* *boþe—dede*] quyk & ded boþe T.
197. *þe*] FGT *om.* *god-hede*] god ȝede G.
198. *And*] Þe M; G *om.* *enae*] eny ende G.
199. *þe*] his M; T *om.* *In margin of* M—de immissione spiritus sancti.
200. *consailede*] counseiledest F. *cam—þouhte*] gan y þenke G.
201. *to* (2)] FG *om.*
202. *liknesse*] licknesse P. *a*] FT *om.* *lyghtnynge*] liȝtenynge F; liȝtnyng T; lith þyng M; lyghtynge PG; liȝtyng E; *but see* B-text. *a-lyghte*] aliȝte M; he aliȝt F; & liȝt ET.
203. *hem*] hym T. [*conne* EMG] kunne F; come PT. *and*] & eek F. *languages*] langage M.

Ich wondrede what þat was · and waggede conscience,
And was a-fered for þe lyght · for in fuyres lyknesse
Spiritus paraclitus · ouer-spradde hem alle.

"This is Christ's messenger," said Conscience.

Quaþ conscience tho, and kneolede · "this is cristes messager,
And comeþ fro þe grete god · grace is hus name.
Kneole now," quaþ conscience · "and yf þow conne synge,
Welcome hym and worshupe hym · with '*veni, creator spiritus.*'"
And ich sang þat song þo · and so dude meny hondred,
And cryden with conscience · "help ous, god of grace!"

Grace counsels Piers,

Tho by-gan grace · to go with peers the plouhman,
And consailede hym and conscience · the comune to someny—

bestowing gifts of grace

"For ich wolle dele to day · and diuyde grace
To alle kynne creatures · þat can hus fif wittes;
Tresour to lyue by · to here lyues ende,
And wepne to fight with · þat wol neuere faille.

against the power of Antichrist.

For antecrist and hise · shal al þe worlde greue,
And encombry þe, conscience · bote yf crist þe helpe.
And fele false prophetes · flaterers and glosers
Shullen come, and be curatours · ouer kynges and Erles.

For pride shall be pope.

Thanne shal pruyde be pope · and pryns of holychurche,
Couetise and vnkyndenesse · cardinales hym to lede.

204. *Ich wondrede*] Wond*ur* had i F. *þat*] he F; it T. *waggede*] waggide on T.

205. *And*] I F. *a-fered*] a-ferede P; aferde E; aferd MFTG. *for* (1)] of E. *þe*] þat G.

207. *tho*] T *om.* *is*] F *om.*

208. *þe*] T *om.*

209. *conne*] canst T.

210. *hym* (1)] M *om.*

213. *Tho*] And þanne T.

214. *hym*] E *om.* (!) *someny*] *so* PEG; somene MF; sompne T.

215. *wolle*] wolde M.

216. *can hus*] *so* PEGT; haue his F; han heore M; *perhaps* kan *should have been retained in* B-text.

217. *Tresour*] Tresoures G. *here*] oure G.

218. *fight*] warde F (*an ingenious suggestion*). *wol*] schal G. *In margin of* M—De ante*christo*.

219. *antecrist*] auntecrist PG (*here and in* l. 225). *hise*] alle hise T. *shal—worlde*] al þe world shal T. *worlde*] wordle P.

220. *encombry*] encombre MEFG; acumbre T. *yf*] T *om.* *þe* (2)] G *om.*

221. *fele*] *follows* prophetes *in* T.

222. *curatours*] creatures (!) F.

223. *Thanne*] And þanne T. *pope*] poore (!) F. *holychurche*] holinesse F.

224. *hym*] hem M.

For-þi," quaþ grace, "ar ich go · ich wole gyue 3ou tresour, 225 354
And wepne to fyghte with · whanne antecrist 3ou assaileþ."
And gaf ech man a grace · to gye with hym-self, The gifts of the Spirit;
þat ydelnesse ne encombre hem nat- · ne enuye, ne pruyde; 228
Diuisiones graciarum sunt. 1 Cor. xii. 4.
To somme men he 3af wit · [wiþ] wordes to shewe, Wit and eloquence;
To wynne with truthe · þat þe worlde askeþ,
As preostes and prechours · and prentises of lawe,
Thei to lyue leelly · by labour of tounge, 232
And by wit to wyssen oþere · as grace wolde hem teche.
And somme he kende craftes · and connynge of syghte, merchandise;
With syllynge and byggynge · here by-lyue to wynne.
And somme he lerede to laboure · a londe and a watere, handicrafts;
And lyue by þat labour · a leel lyf and [a] trewe. 237
And somme he tauhte [to] tulye · to theche and to coke,
As here wit wold · when the tyme come.
And somme to dyuyne and dyuyde · numbres to kenne, mathematics;
And [craftely] to compassen · and colours to make. 241 painting;

225. *For-þi*] For-whi M. *wole*] schal M. *tresour*] tresoures G.
226. *to*] for to F. *assaileþ*] assaile F.
227. *And*] He M. *man a*] gom T. *to gye*] T *om.* (!) *with*] wel F.
228. *ne* (1)] FGT *om.* *encombre*] han-combrie E. *hem*] him T; F *om.* *ne* (2)] neþer G.
229. *To*] T *om.* *men*] ET *om.* [*wiþ* MEFT] PG *om.*
230. *To*] For to F. *þat*] as T.
231. *preostes—prechours*] prechours & prestis T. *prentises*] princes (!) M; prentis T. *of*] of þe T.
232. *to—leelly*] lelly to lyue T. *by*] wiþ G. *of*] of heore M.
233. *by wit*] beo wys G. *wolde hem*] hem wolde EMT; wol hem G.
234. *kenþe*] kende hem PE (*but* MFT *omit* hem); 3af kynde G. *craftes*] craft T. *and*] *with* F. *syghte*] si3tus FG.
235. *syllynge*] sellyng MT. *byggynge*] buggyng M; byeng T. *by-lyue*] bileue E; by-lif T; lijflode MG.
236. *a*] on MT (*twice*).
237. *And*] To G. [*a* EMFGT] P *om.*
238. [*to* MFGT] PE *om.* *theche*] þeche E; þecche MT; *miswritten* teche PF; take G. *coke*] *so* PEMT; kooke F; loke G.
240. *And—and*] Somme diuine & somme F. *dyuyde*] to deuyde T; M *om.* *to kenne*] to telle M; T *om.*
241. *And*] To keruen & T. [*craftely* F] also M; PEGT *omit; but see* B-text. *And—to*] Some G.

foreknowledge; And somme to seo and to seye · what sholde by-falle
Bothe of wele and of wo · and be war by-fore,
astronomy; As astronomyens þorw astronomye · and philosophers wise.
strength to do justice; And somme to ryde and rekeuere · þat vnryghtfulliche was wonne;
He wissede men wynnen hit aȝeyn · þorgh wyghtnesse of handes,
355 And fecchen hit fro false men · with foleuyles lawes.
And somme he lerede to lyue · in longynge to be hennes,
prayer; truth and love. In pouerte and in pacience · to preye for alle crystyne.
And alle he lerede to beo leell · and eche a craft loue oþere,
Nother bost ne debat · beo among hem alle.
"Let none be envious," said Grace. "Thauh somme be clannere þan some · ȝe seon wel," quaþ grace,
"That alle craft and connynge · cam of my ȝyfte.
"Let none blame others. Loke þat non lacken oþer · bote louye as breþeren,
And he þat most maistries can · beo myldest of berynge.
Make conscience your king. And coroneþ conscience kyng · and makeþ craft ȝowre stywarde,
And after craftes consail · cloþeþ ȝow and fedeþ.
For ich make peers plouhman · my procuratour and my reue,

242. *and*] & somme F. *sholde*] schal M. *by-falle*] betide T.
243. *of* (2)] E *om.* *war*] i-war MTG.
244. *astronomyens*] astronom*erus* F; astrymyanes T.
245. *rekeuere*] to recou*ere* T; to rikene F. *þat—was*] what was vnriȝtful F. *wonne*] i-wonne M.
246. *He—aȝeyn*] And wisse aȝe & wynne aȝe (!) F. *wynnen hit*] to wynne G. *þorgh*] wiþ G. *wyghtnesse*] witnesse F.
247. *foleuyles*] *so* PE; foleviles G; foluyles MF; felouns T. *lawes*] lawe M.
248. *And*] G *om.* *lerede*] *written* lererede P (*but see* l. 249); lernede M; lernide T.
250. *lerede*] lernide T. *eche a*] eueri M; eche EG.
251. *Nother*] No T; ne no G. *ne*] ne no T. *debat*] baat G.
252. *clannere* E] *apparently* clannore P; clenn*er*e FT; clenner MG. *ȝe seon*] he seyþ G.
253. *cam*] it cam F; be G.
254. *lacken oþer*] oþ*ur* lacke F. *as*] alle as F; M *om.* *breþeren* ET] breþ*ur* F; broþrene P; breþerne M; breþren G.
256. *ȝowre*] M *om.*
258. *plouhman*] þe plouȝman T.

And registrer to receyuen · *redde quod debes.*
My prower and my plouhman · peers shal beo on erthe;
And for to tulye treuthe · a teome shal he haue."
Grace gaf to peers a teome · of foure grete oxen;
That on was luc, a large beest · and a louh-chered,
Marc, and matheu þe þirde · myghty beestes boþe;
And Ioyned til hem on Iohan · most gentil of alle,
The prys neet of peers plouh · passynge alle oþere.
And sutthe grace of hus goodnesse · gaf peers foure stoftes,
Al þat hus oxen ereden · thei to harwen after.
On hihte austyn · and ambrosie anoþer,
Gregori the grete clerk · and Ierom þe goode.
Theose foure, the faith to teche · folwede peers teom,
And harowede in an hand-whyle · al holy scripture,
With to eythes þat thei hadden · an olde and a newe;
Vetus testamentum et nouum.
And grace gaf to peers greynes · cardinales uertues,
And sewe hit in mannes soule · and sitthen he tolde here names.

My plowman shall be Piers."
Grace gives Piers four oxen,
356
Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John;
and four "stots,"
Austin, Ambrose, Gregory, and Jerome;
and also four seeds, viz. the cardinal virtues.

260. *prower* EG] *miswritten* power P; *but* prower E; prowour F; prouour T; puruyour M; *see* B-text. *on*] yn G.
261. *tulye*] telie MT; tilie FG. *treuthe*] trewthe wel F. *he*] i M.
262. *to*] MTG *om.* *of*] FTG *om.* *grete*] goode M. *In margin of* M—De caruca petri.
263. *That on*] Þe toon F. *on*] M *om.* *louh-chered*] louh-chyrede P; louȝ-chered ET; low-cherede F; low-chered MG.
264. *Marc*] And marchus T. *þirde*] þridde MFGT.
265. *And*] He G. *Ioyned*] enioynede M. *til*] to EFT. *on*] MF *om.*
267. *And sutthe*] Þe G. *sutthe*] E *om.* *stottes*] stonus (!) F; stokkes (!) G.
268. *Al*] And al F. *þat*] þis T. *ereden*] ere T. *thei*] for G. *to harwen*] to-harewide T.
269. *ambrosie*] *so* PE; ambrose MFGT. *anoþer*] þat oþur F.
270. *þe goode*] þat oþer G
272. *whyle*] wyle PG.
273. *eythes*] *so* PE; eiþes MF; aithes T; ayþes G. *newe*] nywe P. *Vetus*] Id est vetus TG. *Vetus, &c.*] F *om.* E *has*—Vetus testamentum was þat on · & nouum was þat oþer.
274. *to*] MGT *om.* *cardinales*] cardynal E; þe cardinal F. *uertues*] uirtutes M.
275. *And*] He G. *sewe*] sew MG; seuȝ T; sowe F. *hit*] hem FT; *yet probably* hit *is meant; and* it *should have been retained in* B-text. *soule*] soules M. *he*] TG *om.*

PRUDENCIA. The first is the Spirit of Prudence;

Spiritus prudencie · þe furste sed hihte;
þat ho so eet þat seed · ymagenye he sholde,
Er he dude eny dede · deuȳse wel þe ende;
And lerede men a ladel bygge · with a long stele,
That cast for to kele a crokke · and saue þe fatte aboue.

TEMPERANCIA the second, of Temperance;

The secunde seed highte · *spiritus temperancie;*
He þat eet of þat seed · hadde suche a kynde,
Sholde neuere mete ne myschief · make hym [to] swelle;

which protects men against all 357 excesses;

Ne sholde no scornere · out of skyle hym brynge,
Noþer wynnynge, ne welthe · of worldliche richesse,
Wast word, ne ydelnesse · ne wyckede speche meoue.
Sholde no curiouse cloþe · come on hus rygge,
Noþer mete in hus mouthe · þat maister Iohan spicede.

FORTITUDO. the third, the Spirit of Fortitude,

The þrydde seod þat peers sewe · was *spiritus fortitudinis;*
And ho so eet of þat seed · hardy was he euere
To suffren al þat god sente · syknesses and angres;
Myghte no lyere with lesynges · ne loos of worldly catell
Make hym for eny mournyng · þat he ne was mury in soule,
And bold of a-bydyng · busemares to suffren,

277. *þat*] And MG. *eet* MFG] et T; eete P; ete E. *þat*] of þat MF. *ymagenye*] ymagyne M; ymagine F G; ymagen T; ymagened E. *In margin of* E—Prudencia.

279. *lerede*] lereth F. *a—bygge*] to bigge a ladel G. *stele*] stale MF.

281. *In margin of* E—Temperancia.

282. *eet* MFG] et T; eete P; ete E. *hadde*] he hadde E.

283. *Sholde*] Schal M. [*to* MFT] PEG *om.*

284. *sholde*] schal M. *out—hym*] hȳm · out of skile F. *hym*] G *om.*

285. *Noþer*] Ne neuur FGT. *of*] ne M. *worldliche* MFT] wordliche P; wordeles G. *richesse*] ricchesses T; goodus F.

286. *ne* (1)] of MFGT; *as in* B-text. *meoue*] meue TG; mede F.

287. *Sholde*] *þer* scholde F. *on*] to T.

288. *Noþer*] Ne no TG.

289. *sewe*] sew MFG; seuȝ T. *In margin of* E—Fortitudo.

290. *eet* MFG] et T; ete PE. *he*] for F; MGT *om.*

291. *syknesses*] ſiknesse FG; boþe siknesse M. *and*] or T.

292. *lyere*] liȝeris T. *ne* MFGT] *apparently* no PE; *but see* B-text. *loos*] los MG; lȯst EFT. *worldly* F] worldlich M; wordly PG; worldis T.

293. *ne was*] nas T; was (!) G.

294. *of*] *so* PE; and MFGT. *busemares*] busmers EG; bismares MT; bismerus F. *to*] and M.

And plede with pacience · and *parce michi, domine;* — which confers patience;
And keouered hym vnder consail · of caton þe wise,
Esto forti animo · cum sis dampnatus inique. 297 — Dion. Cato; Dist. ii. 14.
The furthe seed þat peers sewe · was [*spiritus iusticie*]; — IUSTICIA. the fourth, of Justice,
And he þat eet of þat seed · sholde be [euere] trewe ·
With god, and nat a-gast · bote of gyle one.
For gyle goþ so priuely · þat good faithe oþer-whyle
May nat be aspied · þorw *spiritus iusticie.* 302
Spiritus iusticie · spareþ nat to spille — which punishes the guilty,
Hem þat beoþ gulty · and for to corecte
The kyng, and þe kyng falle · in eny þynge gulty. 305
For counteþ he no kynges wraþthe · when he in court sytteþ
To deme as a domesman; · adrad was he neuere, — and is afraid neither of duke
Noþer of duk ne of deþ · þat he ne doþ þe lawe. 308 — nor of death.
For present oþer for preyoure · oþere eny princes letteres,
He dude equyte to alle · euene-forth hus knowynge. 358
Theese foure seedes peeres sewe · and sutthen he dude hem harwen
With olde lawe and newe lawe · þat loue myghte wexe — The harrow is the law.
Amonge þese foure vertues · and vices destruyen. 313
For comunliche in contreies ··cammokes and weodes — Weeds are like vices.
Fouleþ þe frut in þe felde · þer þei growen to-gederes;

295. *plede*] pledite al T; plededе G.
296. *keouered*] keuere F.
298. *sewe*] sew MFG; seuȝ T. [*spiritus iusticie* EMFGT] P *has a blank space. In margin of* E—Iusticia.
299. *eet* MFG] et T; eete P; ete E. [*euere* M] euene PEGT; *but see* B-text. *be euere*] euermore be F. *trewe*] trywe P.
300. *god*] our god F.
301. *whyle*] wyle P.
302. *aspied*] aspiede P.
303. *spareþ*] he spareth F.
305. *and*] if F. *þe kyng*] he G. *þynge gulty*] agilt T.
306. *counteþ*] acounteþ M. *no*] non M; nouȝt T; nat þe G.
307. *adrad*] drad T.
308. *doþ*] dede T. *þe*] G *om.*
309. *present*] presentes MG. *oþer*] MG *om.* *eny*] for G. *letteres*] lettre F.
310. *dude*] dooth F. *euene-forth*] emforth FG.
311. *sewe*] sew MG; seuȝ T. *he*] TG *om.*
312. *olde*] þe olde M. *newe*] with newe P; *but* EMFGT *omit* with. *þat—myghte*] for loue schulde M.
313. *and—destruyen*] vises to distroiȝe M. *destruyen*] destroyede T.
315. *þer*] þat M.

And so doþ vices vertues · "and for-thi," quaþ peers,
"Harweþ alle þat conneþ kynde wit · by counsail of theose doctours,
And tulyeþ after here techynge · þe cardinale vertues."

Grace bids Piers to build a barn.

"Aȝeynst þat þi greynes," quaþ grace · "bygynneþ to growe,
Ordeyne þe an hous, peers · to herberghen in thi cornes."

Piers asks for wood,

"By [god], grace," quaþ peers · "ȝe mote gyue me tymber,
And ordeyne þat hous · er ȝe hennes wende."

and receives the cross of Christ.

And grace gaf hym þe croys · with þe corone of þornes,
þat crist vp-on caluarie · for mankynde on peynede;
And of hus baptisme and blod · þat he bledde on rode
He made a maner morter · and mercy hit hihte.
And þer-with grace by-gan · to make a good foundement,
And watelide hit and wallyde hit · with hus peynes and hus passion,

He builds the house of Unity.

And of alle holy writt · he made a roof after,
And cald þat hous vnite · holychurche in englishe.

And whanne þis dede was don · grace deuysede
A cart, hihte cristendome · to carien home peers sheues;

316. *vertues*] an vertues PT; *but* EMFG *omit* an; *cf.* B-text. *and*] TG *om.* *for-thi*] for-whi M; forþ-wiþ T.

317. *alle*] it alle T. *þat conneþ*] þe comune wiþ M. *conneþ*] can F. *theose*] þe G.

318. *tulyeþ*] tilieth FG; teleþ M; telliþ T. *cardinale*] cardinales MG.

319. *þat*] TG *om.* *þi*] þe M. *to*] for to FT. *growe*] ripen T; ripe G.

320. *in*] inne M; T *om.*

321. *By*] Before T. [*god* MFGT] godes PE; *see* B-text.

322. *ordeyne—hous*] þat hows ordeyne F. *er* T] or EMFG; *mis-written* her P. ȝe] þou E. *wende*] wennde P. *hennes wende*] wende hennus F.

323. *þe* (1)] þat M.

324. *Here* S *begins again.* *vpon*] on G. *on* EMSGT] one P; F *om.* *peynede*] *so* PMFS; peyned E; paynide T; pinede G.

325. *and*] in S. *bledde*] had F.

326. *made*] hadde S; had F; mad hym G. *morter*] of morter T. *and*] G *om.*

327. *And*] G *om.* *þer-with*] with S. *to make*] T *om.* *good*] G *om.*

328. *watelide*] batailed F. *peynes*] peyne ST; pyn F. *hus—and*] þe peynes of M. *hus* (2)] EFG *om.*

329. *And*] & þo F; M *om.*

330. *in*] on MSTG; an F.

331. *whanne*] wanne P. *don*] i-don M; I-do F. *grace*] grace þo F.

332. *hihte*] þat hiȝte MST. *carien home*] carte of T. *home*] hym (!) S.

And gaf hym capeles to hus cart · *con*tricion with con-
fession,
And made preosthood haiwarde · the while hym-self
wente
As wide as þe worlde is · with peers to tulye treuthe,
And þe londe of by-leyue · þe lawe of holychurche.
Now is peeres to þe plouh; · pruyde hit aspide,
And gadered hym a gret ost · greuen he þenkeþ
Conscience, and alle cristene · and cardinale uertues,
To blowen hem doun and breken hem · and bite a-two
þe rotes;
And sente forþ sourquidours · hus seriauns of armes,
And hus aspie spille-loue · on speke-vuel-by-hynde.
These to-comen to conscience · and to cristyne peuple,
And tolden hem tydynges · "þat tyne þey sholde
The seedes þat syre peers sewe · þe cardinale uertues;
And peers bern worth to-broke · and þei þat ben in
vnite
Shullen come out, and conscience · and 3owre two
capeles,
Contricion and *con*fession · and 3oure cart bi-leyue
Shal be colered so queyntely · and keouered vnder oure
sophistrie,

Piers' horses are contrition and confession.

Pride sees Piers ploughing, and prepares to attack him.

He sends out his sergeants and his spy Spill-love.

Pride's message to all Christians,

threatening to work them evil by sophistry.

333. *And*] He G. *with*] & FGT.
334. *And*] He T. *while*] wile P; whiles T.
335. *þe*] F *om.* *tulye*] tilie FGT; tily S; telie M.
336. *Not in* B-text; G *omits.* *þe* (2)] þanne T.
337. *hit*] hit haþ M.
338. *gadered*] gadereþ MS. *greuen*] to greuen F; greuen him T.
339. *and* (2)] G *om.* *cardinale*] cardynales MG.
340. *To*] T *om.* *hem* (1)] G *om.* *bite*] M *om.* *a-two* EFGT] a-to PS; on to M. *rotes*] mores T.
341—345. G *omits.*
341. *forþ*] aboute F. *sourquidours*] surquidours EMT; cirquydorus S; his surquindorus F. *seriauns*] seriauntus FT; sergauntz M.
342. *hus*] E *om.* *aspie*] spie T. *on*] and (!) M; T *om.* *vuel*] euele MT; euel F; yuel E.
343. *to-comen*] two comen F (*as in* B-text; *but the author has altered* l. 341). *to* (2)] to þe F.
344. *hem*] hym T. *þey*] he T.
345. *The*] Þo T. *syre*] T *om.* *sewe*] sew MFS; seuȝ T. *þe*] FS *om.* *cardinale*] cardinales M.
346. *to-broke*] broke T. *þei*] þo M.
347. *3owre*] hise T. *two*] to MF.
349. *colered*] coloured FST; i-colered M; colourd G. *so*] MG *om.* *keouered*] keouerede P; keuered FS TG; couered M. *oure*] 3oure S; TG *om.*

That conscience shal nat · knowe by contricion,
Noþer by confession · ho is cristyne oþer heþene,
Ne no manere marchaunt · þat with monye deleþ,
[Wheþer] he wynne with right · with wrang, oþer with vsure.

Pride and Lechery prepare to waste the world.

With suche colour and queyntise · comeþ pruyde [y]-armed,
With þe lord þat lyueþ after · þe lust of his bodye,
To wasten, in welfare · and in wickede kepynge,
Al þe worlde in a while · þorugh oure wit," quaþ pruyde.

Conscience bids men to fly to Unity or Holy-Church.

Quaþ conscience to alle crystyne tho · "my consail is, we wende
Hastiliche in-to vnite · and holde we ous þere;
Preye we þat a pees were · in peers bern þe plouhman.
For wyterly ich wot wel · we beoþ nat of strengthe
To go a-gayn pruyde · bote grace with ous were."

Common Sense bids them dig a ditch about Unity,

And þenne cam kynde wit · conscience to teche;
He criede, and comaundede · alle cristyne people
To delue and dike a deop diche · al aboute vnite,
þat holychurche stod in holynesse · as hit were a pile.
Conscience comaundede þo · alle crystyne to delue,

to serve as a moat.

And make a muche mot · þat myghte be a strengthe,
To helpe holychurche · and hem þat hit kepeþ.
Thenne alle kynne crystyne · saue comune wommen,

A list of those who repented not.

Repentede and refusede synne · saue thei one;

350. *knowe*] i-knowe M.

351. *Noþer*] Ne FT.

352. *Ne*] G *om.* *manere*] maner of T.

353. [*Wheþer* MEFSGT] Weder P. *with* (1)] wit P. *with* (2)] oþer with PE; *but* MFSGT *omit* oþer *here.*

354. *colour*] colours MFSGT. *queyntise*] queyntises FG. *y-armed* G] y-armyd ST; i-armed MF; armede PE; *see* l. 144.

355. *after* þe] in G. *lust* EMF SGT] loust P.

356. *in* (1)] on T; and to (!) M. *in* (2)] on T.

358. *my—is*] y rede G. *we*] to M.

360. *Preye*] And preye T. *a*] T *om.* þe] M *om.*

364. *He*] And TG. *comaundede*] comaunde S.

365. *To—al*] Delue & dyke depe T. *dike*] to dike G.

366. G *omits.* *in*] aboute F. *pile*] piler T.

369. *To*] For to F. *hem*] hym G.

370. *kynne*] E *om.*

371. *After this line* B-text *has one, which the* C-text MSS. *omit.* *So also after* l. 374.

And [a sisour] and a somenour · þat weren for-swore ofte,
Witynge and wilfulliche · with þe false þei helden,
And for seluere were for-swore · sothly þei wisten hit.
Ther ne was cristyne creature · þat kynde wit hadde,
þat he ne halp a quantyte · holynesse [to] wexe; 361

Some by bedes byddyng · and somme by pilgrimages,
Oþer oþere pryueie penaunces · and somme þorw pans-delynge.
And þenne water wellede · for wyckede werkes,
Egreliche ȝernynge · out of mennys eyen.
Clannesse of the comune · and clerkes clene lyuynge
Made unite holychurche · in holynesse stonde.

Many penitents assist the growth of holiness.

Men weep for their sins.

"Ich care nat," quaþ conscience · "thauh pruyde come nouthe,
The lord of lust shal beo lett · al þis lente, ich hope.
Comeþ now," quaþ conscience · "ȝe cristyne, and dyneþ,
þat han labored leelly · al þis lente tyme.
Her is bred yblessid · and godes body þer-vnder.
Grace gaf þorw godes worde · to peers plouhman power
And myghte to maken hit · and men for to eten hit,
In help of here hele · ones in a monthe,

Conscience bids all Christians to dine,

offering them the Lord's Supper once a month.

372. [*a sisour* MFSGT] assisour P; acisoure E.
373. *Witynge* S] Whitynge P; Witynge ETG; Wetynge F; Waiting M. *After* Witynge EMFG *insert* wel. *helden* EMST] helde G; heelde F; *apparently* holden P; *but see* B-text.
374. *wisten hit*] hit wisten M.
376. *halp*] helpud S. [*to* MFSGT] PE *om.*
377. *somme*] T *om.*
378. *Oþer*] *miswritten* Oþe P; Or FSGT; And M. *penaunces*] penaunse ST. *þorw*] be T; by S. *pans*] pens M.
379. *wellede*] walled vp M. *water —for*] walkide watir fro (!) T.
380. *ȝernynge*] ernyng TG; renyng EMFS. *mennys*] renkus F; mannes G.
381. *comune*] communes E.
382. *unite*] vnyte in S. *holynesse*] clennesse S. *stonde*] to stonde M; to stande G.
383. *nat*] nat now PEG; *but* MF ST *rightly omit* now.
384. *lust*] loust P. *lett*] let MTG; bete FS.
385. *now*] T *om.*
386. *labored*] i-laboured M.
387. *bred yblessid*] blessed al (!) E. *and*] E *om.* *vnder*] inne M.
388. T *has* — Grace þoruȝ good word · ȝaf piers þe plouȝman power.
389. *And*] T *om.* *to* (1)] for to FSG. *and men*] men it F. *eten*] etyn P.
390. *help*] hope MG. *a*] F *om.* *monthe* EMFS] mounthe PG; moneþ T.

Oþer as ofte as þei hadde neode · þei that hadden payed
To peers pardon [þe] plouhman · *Redde quod debes.*"
The commons wish to know if they must make restitution. "How?" quaþ alle þe comune · "consailest thou ous to ȝelde
Al þat we owen eny wyght · er we go to housele?"
"That is my consail," quath conscience · "and cardinale vertues,
[Þat iche man forȝiue oþer · & þat wile þe pater-noster];
362 Mat. vi. 12. *Et dimitte nobis debita nostra, sicut & nos [dimittimus], &c.:*
And so to beo asoilled · and sytthen beo housled." 397
A brewer refuses to do so. "Ȝe, bawe!" quaþ a brewere · "ich wol nat beo rueled,
By *iesu*! for al ȝoure iangelynge · after *spiritus iusticie,*
Ne after conscience, by crist · for ich couþe selle
He prefers selling dregs and draff. Boþe dregges and draf · and drawe at one hole 401
Thicke ale and þynne ale · and þat is my kynde,
And nat to hacke after holynesse; · hold þy tonge, conscience!
Of *spiritus iusticie* · þow spekest muche an ydel!"
Conscience warns the brewer. "Caitif," quaþ conscience · "corsede wreche! 405
Unblessed art þow, brewere · bote yf god þe helpe;
Bote þow lyue by þe lore · of *spiritus iusticie,*

391. *ofte as*] of F. · *thei—payed*] and þat þei hadden paie M.
392. [*þe* FSTG] PEM *om.*; *cf.* B-text.
393. *How*] What F. *consailest thou*] þou counseilist T; conscilest M. *ous*] vs MFSGT; E *om.* *to*] T *om.* *ȝelde*] lyuye (*over erasure*) G.
394. *er*] er þat SG.
395. *cardinale*] cardinales MG.
396. *From* T; *also in* MFSG; PE *omit.* *þat*] Or MFS; Or, *altered to* Of ȝow G. *&*] for M. *þe*] þi F. *Et*] T *om.* *sicut—&c.*] MGT *om.* [*dimittimus*] *in* F *only.*
397. *And*] T *om.* *to beo*] ben M. *asoilled*] asoillede P. *beo* (2)] to beo G; to be ES; T *om.* *to—housled*] I-howseled aftur F. *housled*] i-hoseled M; yhuselid T.
398. *Ȝe*] Ȝa T. *rueled* E] reulede P; rewled FS; rewelid T; i-ruled M; ruled G.
399. *al*] G *om.* *after*] by F.
400. *for*] while T. *couþe*] coude MF; can T.
402. *ale* (2)] TG *om.* *my*] E *om.*
403. *to*] SG *om.*
404. *muche*] mychel M; but F.
405. *quaþ*] þo quod F. *corsede*] þow cursede M; & cursede F.
406. *art* MFST] ert PEG. *art þow*] ertou G. *þe*] FT *om.*
407. *Bote*] & but F. *þe*] SGT *om.* *of*] or T.

The chef seede þat peers sewe · saued worst þow neuere.
Bote conscience þe comune fede · and cardinale vertues,
Leyf hit wel, we beon lost · boþe lyf and soule." 410
"Then is meny man ylost" · quaþ a lewede vicory ; A vicar says,
"Ich am a curatoure of holy[kirke] · and cam neuere in my tyme
Man to me, þat couthe telle · of cardinale uertues, 413
Oþer þat acountede conscience · a cockes feþer oþer an hennes !
Ich knew neuere cardinal · þat he ne cam fro þe pope, "I never knew cardinal but such as comes from the pope.
And we clerkes, when thei comeþ · for here comunes payeþ, 416
For here pelure and palfrayes mete · and pylours þat hem folwen.
The comune *clamat cotidie* · eche man to oþere, 363
'The countrey is þe corsedour · þer cardinales comeþ ynne ; The country is the worse for them.
And ther thei liggen and lengen most · lecherie þer regneþ :'— 420
For-þi," quaþ þis vicory · "by verrai god, ich wolde
þat no cardinal come · a-mong þe comune peuple,
Bote in here holinesse · [holden] hem stille I wish they would stay at Avignon!
At Auenoun, a-mong Iuwes · *cum sancto sanctus eris, &c.*, 424 Ps. xvii. 26 (Vulg.).

408. *sewe*] sew MFG ; seuȝ T. *saued*] i-saued M. *worst*] best M. *worst þow*] wurstow F.
409. *þe—fede*] be comun fode T ; be comene sed G. *cardinale*] cardinales MG.
410. *Leyf*] Leef E ; Lef MSG ; Leue T ; Leeue F. *wel*] G *om.* *lost*] I-lost F. *lyf*] body ST. *boþe—and*] þe lif bothe and þe F.
412. *a*] F *om.* [*kirke* T] churche PEFSG ; chirche M. *neuere*] non M.
413. *cardinale*] cardinales MG.
414. *Oþer þat*] Or ellus F. *þat*] þan E. *a*] at a FS ; to a T. *oþer—hennes*] FT *om.*
415. *knew*] ne knew G ; ne kneuȝ T. *he ne*] M *om.* *cam*] comeþ G.
416. *And*] þat M. *we*] T *om.*
417. *and* (1)] and heore MT. *palfrayes*] palfrey T.
418. *eche*] ech a F. *to*] til T.
419. *þer cardinales*] *þat* a cardinal T ; *þat* cardinales G.
420. *liggen*, EM] liggyn P ; lyggeþ S ; ligge T ; reygne G. *lengen*] longen M ; logge F ; ligge G ; regne T. *þer*] M *om.*
421. *For-þi*] For-whi M. *þis*] þeis P. *wolde*] vowe G.
423. *holinesse*] holinesse at hom F. [*holden* EFG] holde MS ; heolden P ; held T. *hem*] hym al S.
424. *Auenoun*] auynoun M ; auynon S ; auioun G.

Oþer in rome, as here ruwele wolde · þe relikes to kepe;
Conscience, Grace, and Piers should be in royal courts. And thow, conscience, in kynges court · and sholdest neuere [come] þennes,
And grace þat thou so gredest of · were gyour of alle clerkes,
And peers with hus newe plouh · and his olde boþe
Emperour of alle þe worlde · þat alle men were crystyne!
The pope, who should help men, slays them. Imparfit is þe pope · þat al þe peuple sholde helpe,
And soudeþ hem þat sleeþ · suche as he sholde saue;
Ac wel worthe peers plouhman · þat porsueþ god in doynge,
Mat. v. 45. *Qui pluit super iustos · & iniustos* at ones,
And sent þe sonne to saue · a corsed mannes tulthe,
As bryght as to þe beste man · oþer to þe beste woman.
Piers works for all alike, Ryght so peers plouhman · peyneþ hym to tulye
As wel for a wastour · oþer for a wenche atte stuwes,
As for hym-self and his seruauns · saue he is furst yserued;
So blessed beo peers plouhman · þat peyneþ hym to tulie,
for the traitor 364 And trauaileþ and tuleþ · for a tretour al-so sore

425. *ruwele*] rewle T; reule ES; rule MFG. *þe*] here T. *kepe*] knowe G.
426. *in*] in þe S. [*come* TG] go PEMFS; *but observe the alliteration.*
427. *þat*] so (!) F. *so*] G *om.* *gredest*] greddest T; spekest M. *were*] T *om.*
428. *and*] and *with* F. *boþe*] T *om.*
429. *Emperour*] Were emperour M. *þe*] þis M. *were crystyne*] cristene were M.
430. G *omits.* *Imparfit*] For imparfit F. *þe* (1)] þat FST. *þe* (2)] FT *om.* *peuple*] peplus F.
431. G *omits.* *And*] Þat FS. *soudeþ*] soudeþ *or* sondeþ PFS; sowdeth M; sendiþ T; sende E. *as*] þat M.
432. *Ac*] For-þy G. *plouhman*] þe plouȝman T. *porsueþ*] pursuede M. *doynge*] dede F.
433. *&*] & super E.
434. *þe*] M *om.* *corsed*] pore F. *tulthe*] tilþe MFGT; telþe S.
435. *to* (1)] EFST *om.* *man*] mannus F. *to* (2)] FS *om.* *womman*] womannus F.
436. *plouhman*] þe plouȝman T. *tulye*] tilie MFSGT.
437—439. T *omits.*
437. *oþer*] as G. *for* (2)] FS *om.* *atte*] at M; of þe FSG.
438. *and*] or for S; or F; oþer G. *seruauns*] seruaunt FG.
439. *blessed*] i-blessed M. *peyneþ*] pyneþ E. *to*] G *om.* *tulie*] tilie MFS.
440. *tuleþ*] tulieþ G; tilieth F; tyluþ S; tiliþ T; toileþ M. *al-so*] as FG.

As for a trewe tydy man · alle tymes [y]lyke. 441 and the true man.
And worsheped be [he] þat wrouhte al · boþe good and wykke,
And [suffreþ] hem þat synful beon · til tyme þat thei repenten.
And god amende þe pope · þat pileþ holichurche, 444 God amend the pope!
And cleymeþ by-fore þe kyng · to beo kepere ouere cristyne,
And counteþ noȝt þauh cristene men · be culled and robbed,
And fyndeþ folke to fighte · and cristene blod to spille, The pope spills Christian blood.
Aȝeyn þe lawe boþe old and newe · as luk bereþ witnesse, 448

Non occides: [*Et alibi*], *Michi uindictam*, [*& ego retribuam*]. Exod. xx. 13; Heb. x. 30.

Sikerliche hit semeþ, by so · hym-self hadde hus wil, He cares about little except his own will.
þat [he recheþ] right nouht · of al þe oþer remenaunt.
And crist of hus cortesye · þe cardinales saue, 451
And turne here wit to wisedom · and welþe for þe soule!
For þe comune," quaþ þis curatour · "counten ful litel The commons care little about conscience.
The consail of conscience · oþer cardinale uertues, 454

441. *trewe*] triwe P. *tydy*] tiling G. *ylyke*] y-liche STG; i-liche MF; lyke P; *cf.* B-text.

442. *And*] T *om.* [*he* MFSGT] PE *om.* *al*] G *om.* *wykke*] wicked F.

443. [*suffreþ* EMFGS] suffren P; suffre T. *hem*] T *om.* *tyme*] F *om.* *þat*] G *om.* *thei repenten*] he repente T.

444. *þe*] S *om.*

445. *ouere*] of SF.

446. *counteþ*] a-counteþ M. *þauh*] þat G. *men*] TG *om.* *culled*] killed F; kild T; quelled M. *robbed*] I-robbed FG.

447. *fyndeþ*] fynt T. *to* (1)] for to F. *and*] F *om.* *to* (2)] T *om.*

448. *Aȝeyn*] & aȝen E. *boþe*] F* *om.* *newe*] nywe P. *þe—newe*] þe olde lawe & þe newe T. *luk*] it F; T *om.* *bereþ*] bere S. [*Et alibi* FS] PEMTG *om.* [*&—retribuam* ST] PEMFG *om.*

449. *Sikerliche*] T *om.* *hym-self*] he M.

450. [*he* MSG] hym PEF. *recheþ* MSFG] rekeþ PE. *al þe*] þat G. *þat—recheþ*] And reknih T. *al*] T *om.* *þe*] þat S. *oþer*] T *om.*

451. *crist*] god M. *saue*] saued (*wrongly*) E.

452. *here*] hit (*sic*) E. *to*] into S. *and*] as E. *welþe*] wele T.

453, 454. E *transposes the last halves of the lines, putting last half of* l. 454 *in* l. 453, *and the contrary.*

453. *þe*] *þus* S; this F. *þis*] þes P. *þis curatour*] *peris* doctour T. *counten*] a-counteþ ME; counteth F.

454. *oþer*] of F; & T. *cardinale*] cardinales MG.

Bote hit soune as by syght · som what to wynnynge;
Of gile ne of gabbynge · gyueþ þei neuere tale. 456
For *spiritus prudencie* · among þe peuple, is gyle,
365 And tho faire vertues · as vices thei [hem] semeþ;
Each man beguiles the other." Eche man soteleþ [a] sleiþe · synne [for] to huyde, 459
And coloreþ hit for a connynge · and a clene lyuynge."
A lord says that he thinks it right to take all that his auditor says is his. Then louh þer a lorde · and "by this light!" seide,
"Ich halde hit right and reson · to take of my reeue
Al þat myn auditour · oþer elles my stiwarde 463
Conseileþ me by here a-counte · and my clerkes wryt-
ynge.
With *spiritus intellectus* · thei toke þe reeue-rolles,
And with *spiritus fortitudinis* · fecche hit, wol he,
nul he." 466
A king says, Then cam þer a kynge · and by hus corone seide,
"Ich am a kyng with corone · þe comune to reule,
And holychurch and clergie · fro corsede men to de-
fenden. 469
"What I want, I can lawfully take. And yf me lackeþ to lyue by · þe lawe wol þat ich take
Ther ich may haue hit hastelokest · for ich am hefd of
lawe,
And ȝe ben bote membrys · and ich a-boue alle. 472

455. *Bote*] But ȝif T; Bute if G. *hit*] þey G. *to*] *in* F.
456. *neuere*] no T.
458. *tho*] alle þo T. *thei*] to F; G *om.* [*hem* EMF] hym P; ST *om.* *as—semeþ*] vices þei hem holdem (*sic*) M.
459. [*a* EMFSGT] P *om.* *synne*] synnys G. [*for* MF] PESGT *om.*; *cf.* B-text. *huyde*] hude E; hide MFT.
460. G *omits.* *a* (1)] F *om.*
461. *louh*] *so* PM; lowh F; lowȝ E; louȝ ST; lowȝh G. *seide*] he seide M.
462. *hit*] E *om.* *to—reeue*] of my reue to take T.
463. *elles*] *miswritten* alles P. T *om.* *stiwarde*] stiþ steward T.
464. *me*] M *om.* *a-counte*] a-count*us* F.
465. *reeue*] *so* PFS; reue G; reues E; reoues M; reuis T.
466. *fecche*] fechiþ T; we fet F. *wol*] wile T; wuld S. *nul he*] nyl he M; nelle he EF; nel heo G; nulle he S; or nille T.
467. *Then*] And þen S; And þanne FT. *Then—þer*] And *þer* cam G. *corone*] croune he M.
468. *a*] EMFG *omit; see* B-text. *to*] for to F.
469. *And*] Al F. *fro corsede*] for wicked F. *to*] FG *om.*
470. *lackeþ*] lacke MF; lakke STG. *take*] take it T.
471. *haue—hastelokest*] hastlokest it haue T. *hastelokest*] hastilikest M. *hefd*] hed EMSGT; heed F.
472. *And*] For G.

Sitthen ich am ȝoure alre hefd · ich am ȝoure alre hele, I am the head.
And holychurches chef help · and chefteyn of þe comune. 474
And what ich take of ȝow two · ich take hit at techynge I act by the spirit of justice."
Of *spiritus iusticie* · for ich Iugge ȝou alle;
So ich may baldely beo housled · for ich borwe neuere,
Ne craue of my comune · bote as my kynde askeþ."
"In condicion," quaþ conscience · "þat þou conne defende, 479 366 Conscience says he must reign by reason and truth.
And reule þy reame in reson · right wel, and [in] treuthe;
þan, þat þow haue þyn askyng · as þe lawe askeþ;
Omnia sunt tua ad defendendum, sed non ad deprehendendum!" 481
The vicory hadde fer hom · and faire tok hus leue,
And ich a-wakede þer-with · and wrot as me mette. The poet awakes.

Hic explicit passus primus de dobest.

473. G *omits.* *Sitthen*] And siþen T. *alre* (1)] alþer MT; alder F. *hefd*] hed EMST; heed F. *alre* (2)] alder MF; alþer T.

474. *churches*] chirche T. *chefteyn*] cheuenteyn M; chastisoure E.

475. *at*] of MT.

476. *Iugge* MFST] Iuge PG.

477. *housled* G] houslede P; houslid ES; i-hoseled M; hoseled F; huselid T.

479—481. E *omits.*

480. *and*] G *om.* [*in* MFSTG] P *om.*

481. *þat*] schalt G; S *om.* T *has*—Trewþe wile þat þou haue þat þe lawe askiþ. *sunt tua*] tua sunt M. *tua*] mea F. *deprehendendum*] depredandum M.

482. *vicory* EG] vicori M; vikery FS; vickery P; *but see* l. 411. *fer* MSGT] ferre EF; feer P.

483. *wrot*] wrouȝt F. *me*] i M. *mette* EMSGT] þouȝte F; *miswritten* mete P.

COLOPHON. *So* PG; MT *omit.* *Hic*] FS *om.* E *has*—Explicit passus primus.

PASSUS XXIII. (DO-BEST II.)

Hic Incipit passus secundus de dobest.

367 The poet wanders about;

And as ich wente by þe waye · when ich was þus awaked,
Heuy-chered ich ȝeode · and elynge in heorte;
For ich ne wiste wher to ete · ne in what place.

and at noon meets with Need,

And [hit] neyhede ny þe noon · and with neode ich mette,
That afrontede me foule · and faitour me calde.

who says,

"Coupest þou nat excuse þe," he seide · "as dude þe kyng and oþere,
That þou toke to lyue by · to sustinaunce and cloþes,
As by techinge and tellynge · of *spiritus temperancie*,
And þat þow nome no more · þan neode þe tauhte?

"Need hath no law.

Neode haþ no lawe · ne neuere shal falle in dette
For þre þynges þat he takeþ · hus lyf for to saue;

A man may take food,

That is, mete, whanne men hym werneþ · for he no monye weldeþ,

TITLE. *So* PGM. *Hic*] E *om.* F *has*—Incipit secundus. OBS. I *only preserves fragments of* ll. 82—92; *the rest is wanting or illegible.*

1. *wente*] wende E. *by*] in M. *awaked*] awakede P; waked-G.

2. *chered* EMFG] chired P; cherid TS.

3. *in*] at T.

4. *And*] M *om.* [*hit* SM] it FT; PEG *om.* *neyhede*] neiȝhed F; neyȝhede G; neiȝed ET; nyȝede S. *ny*] ney E. *þe*] to MF; G *om.* *neode*] *so* PMG; neede F; nede EST; *here and below.*

6. *Coupest*] Canst M. *excuse—seide*] *so* EMS; he seide excuse þe P; seide he þe excuse F. *he seide*] GT *om.* *dude—kyng*] þe kyng dude M. *dude*] G *om.*

7. *sustinaunce*] sustinaunces F. *sustinaunce—cloþes*] cloþis & to sustinaunce T. *and*] & to S.

8. *As*] Was T; And GF.

9. *And*] Al G. *nome*] nyme T. *no*] E *om.*

10. *Neode*] And nede T; For nede F. *haþ*] ne haþ T; naþ G. *ne*] & S.

11. *þat*] T *om.*

12. *werneþ* EMFSGT] wyrneþ P. *for*] & T. *no—weldeþ*] naȝt no moneye G. *weldeþ*] welde M.

And wot þat non wol be hus borgh · noþer haþ wed to legge;
And he cacche in þat cas · and come þer-to by sleithe, 368
Soþeliche he syneweþ nat; · þat so wynneþ hus fode.
And þauh he come so to [a] cloþ · and can no betere or clothing, cheuesaunce,
Neode nymeþ hym a-non · vnder hus mayn-pryse.
And [ȝif] hym lust for to lape · þe lawe of kynde or a drink of water. wolde,
þat he dronk of eche a diche · er he deide for þerste.
So Neode at grete neode · may nyme as for hus owene,
With-oute consail of conscience · or cardinale uertues,
So þat he suwe and saue · *spiritus temperancie.*
For is no vertue by-fore · to *spiritus temperancie,* Temperance is greater than Justice or Fortitude.
Noþer *spiritus iusticie* · ne *spiritus fortitudinis.*
For *spiritus fortitudinis* · forfeteþ ful ofte,
He shal do more þan mesure · meny tyme and ofte,
And bete men ouere bittere · and som body to lyte,
And greue men grettour · þan good faith wolde.
And *spiritus iusticie* · shal Iugen, wol he, nul he, Justice sometimes fails.
After þe kynges counsaile · and þe comune lyke.

13. *And*] Ne T. *þat*] T *om.* *þat non*] no wiȝt F; þat no man G. *wol*] nelle E; to T. *noþer*] ne F; ne no GT; & S. *haþ wed*] wed haþ GT; haþ no wed S; wed M.

14 *he cacche*] cacche hym cloþ G.

15. *syneweþ*] sineweþ G; synweþ S; synegeth F; synneþ MET. *Soþeliche—nat*] He synneþ nouȝt soþly T.

16—19. G *omits.*

16. *to*] til M. [*a* EMFTS] P *om.*

17. T *has only*—Nede anon riȝt · nymeþ him vndir.

18. [*ȝif* F] ȝeueþ PE; ȝyueþ MS; ȝaf T (*all wrong*); *cf.* B-text. *lust* EMFS] loust P; list T. *þe*] as þe M.

19. *dronk of*] drynke at T. *a*] ST *om.* *er*] or EM; ar F; er þanne T. *deide*] deiȝe M; diȝe T. *þerste*] þrest M; þrist FT.

20. *So*] So þat F. *for*] G *om.*

21. *cardinale*] cardinales MEG.

22. M *omits.* *suwe*] *so* PF; sue S; sewe GT. *and*] or G.

23. *is*] nys M; T *om.* *by-fore*] *so* PE; to-fore M; by ȝer G; by fer F; be ver T; *cf.* B-text. *to, &c.*] so fair as temperaunce F.

25. *forfeteþ*] fforestiþ (!) T.

26. *tyme—ofte*] a tyme forsothe F.

27. G *omits.* *bete* EFST] beten M; *miswritten* bote P. *body*] bodies M. *lyte*] litel MT.

28. G *omits.* *greue*] greueþ M. *grettour*] oftere T. *wolde*] hit wolde E.

29. *Iugen*] iugge MFT; iuge G. *wol*] wil F; wile T; wulle S. *nul*] nelle E; nille T; nulle S; nyl M; nel FG. *he* (2)] T *om.*

30. *and*] if F; & as T. *lyke*] likeþ T.

Prudence may also fail.

And *spiritus prudencie* · in menye poynt shal fayle
Of þat he weneþ wolde falle · yf his wit ne were.
Wenynge is no wisedome · ne wys ymaginacion,

Man proposes, God disposes.

Homo proponit, deus disponit · god gouerneþ alle goode vertues.
Next hym is neode · for a-non he meokeþ,
And is as louh as a lomb · for lackynge of þat hym neodeþ;
For neode makeþ neody · for neode louh-herted.

369 Wise men choose neediness.

Filosofres for-soken welthe · for þei wolde be neody,
And wonede wel elyngliche · and wolden nat be riche.
And god al hus grete ioye · gostliche he lefte,

God became needy Himself.

And cam and took man-kynde · and by-cam ful neody.
He was so neody, seith þe bok · in meny sondry places,
þat he seide in hus sorwe · on þe selue rode,

Mat. viii. 20.

'Boþe fox and fowel · may fleo to hole and crepe,
And þe fisshe haþ fynnes · to flete with to reste,
þer neode haþ ynome me so · þat ich mot neode abyde,
And suffre sorwes soure · þat shal to ioye turne.'

Then be not ashamed of being needy."

For-þi beo nat a-basshed · to bydde and to beo neody,
Sithe he þat wrouhte al þe worlde · was wilfulliche neody;

31. *poynt*] poyn*tus* FS.
32. *he*] we (!) S. *wolde*] wol F. *yf his*] ȝif þat his F; ȝif þat T.
34. *deus*] & deus FST. *alle*] hem alle T.
N.B. *By a singular error, the MSS.* (PEMFSGT) *place the words* Good vertues (M *has* Of goode uertues) *at the beginning of* l. 35; *but see* B-text.
35. *hym*] hem F. *neode*] nouþe G. *Next—neode*] & nede is next hym T. *meokeþ*] mekeþ EMFSG; makiþ T.
36. *of*] T *om.* *þat hym* GMFT] hym þat PES (*wrongly*).
37. G *omits; not in* B-text. *neody*] nede T. *for—herted*] for neodes low herte M; for nede is lowe herted E; fele nedis louȝ herte T.
40. *Here* G *fails.* *al*] at M.
41. *by-cam*] bigan F. *ful*] T *om.*
42. *He—seith*] So he was nedy as sciþ T.
44. *fox*] vox M. *fowel*] foul MFST. *and*] & also to S.
45. *fynnes*] vynnes M; fyn T.
46. *þer*] þat T; M *om.* *so þat*] T *om.* *abyde* S] abide MFT; byde PE; *see* B-text.
47. *sorwes*] sorewe T. *soure*] sory somme F; ful soure T. *ioye*] blisse M..
48. *For-þi*] For þey E; For-whi M; For þei ne T. *beo*] beþ E. *abasshed*] abasshyd S; abasched EF; abashed M; abassht T; abaihsshed P. *to* (2)] þow M; ST *om.*
49. S *omits.* *þe*] þis F. *wilfulliche*] wilful in F.

Neuere non so neody · ne non so poure deyede."
When neode hadde vnder-nome me thus · a-non ich fel a sleope, — The poet again sleeps, and dreams.
And mette ful merueilousliche · þat, in a mannes forme,
Antecrist cam þenne · and al þe crop of treuthe — Antichrist overturns truth.
Turned tyte vp-so-doun · and ouer-tilte þe rote,
And made fals to springe and sprede · and [spede] menne neodes.
In eche contreie þer he cam · he cutte away treuthe,
And gert gyle growe þer · as he a god were.
Freres folweden þat feonde · for [he ȝaf] hem copes, — 370
And religiouse reuerencede hym · and rongen here belles; — Friars welcome Antichrist.
Al þe couent þo cam · to welcome [þat] tyraunt,
And alle hise as wel as hym · saue onliche fooles;
The whiche fooles weren · gladdere to deye — Only fools resist him.
þan lyue lengoure, suþe leaute · was so rebuked.
And a fals feond anticrist · ouer alle folke regnede,
That were mylde men and holye · þat no meschief dradden,
Defieden al falsnesse · and folk þat hit vsede; — Holy and true men

50. *Neuere*] Ne neuere T. *non* (2)] M *om.* *ne—poure*] ne pouerere T.

51. *hadde—thus*] me hadde þus vndernome M. *fel* FT] felle E; feol P; fil S; ful M.

52. *ful*] wel M. *a*] F *om.*

53. *þenne*] renne M. *al*] kitte al E (*where* kitte *is wrongly added above the line; see* l. 56).

54. E *omits.* *tyte*] hit MS; tit (*altered to* it) T; him F; *but* tyte *seems best.* *tilte* MFT] tilt P; tulte S.

55. *to*] T *om.* [*spede* MFST] spedde PE; *see* B-text. *menne*] menes M; men E; manis T. *neodes*] nede T.

56. *eche*] eche a F. *þer*] where T. *cutte*] kitte E; cauȝte T.

57. *gert*] garte M; gart FT. *growe*] to growe M.

58. *feonde*] frend (!) T. [*he* EMFST] *miswritten* ȝe P. *ȝaf* EST] gaf MF; ȝaue P.

59. *belles*] belle T.

60. *Al*] And al T. *couent* EMFST] couant P. *þo cam*] cam þo FS; com T. *welcome* EMFST] wolcome P. [*þat* MFST] þe PE.

62. *whiche*] wiche P. *to deye*] for to dye F; to dize þanne to lyue T.

63. *þan lyue*] *at end of* l. 62 *in* T; *see note above.* *lengoure*] lenger FT; eny lengere M.

64. *feond*] feon P; fende E; fend MT; frend F. *alle*] al þe E.

65. *That*] Whiche F; And þat T. *þat*] and MF.

are cursed by Antichrist's followers.

And what kyng comfortede hem · knowynge here gyle,
Thei corsede and here consail · were hit clerk oþer lewede.

Anticrist thus sone hadde · hundredes at hus baner,

Pride bears Antichrist's banner.

And pruyde bar þat baner · boldeliche aboute,
With a lorde þat lyueþ · after lykynge of hus body,
And cam a-ȝeyns conscience · þat keper was an gyour
Ouer kynde cristyne · and cardinale uertues.

Conscience counsels the worldly-foolish to keep within the church.

"Ich consail," quaþ conscience þo · "comeþ with me, ȝe fooles,
In-to unite holichurche · and halde we ous þere.
And crye we to kynde · þat he come and defende
Ous fooles fro þe feondes lymes · for peers loue þe plouhman.
And crye we on al þe comune · þat þei come to unite,
Ther to abyde and bykere · aȝeyns beliales children."

Nature hears Conscience, and

Kynde huyrde þo conscience · and cam out of þe planetes,

371

sends forth his messengers,

And sente forþ his [foreyours] · feuers and fluxes,
Couhes and cardiacles · [crampes] and toþ-aches,
Reumes and Radegoundes · and roynouse scabbes,

67. *what*] wat P. *comfortede hem*] *þat* hym comfortide T. *here*] T *om.*

68. *corsede*] cursede hem M.

69. *thus—hadde*] hadde þus sone T. *hundredes*] an hundrit T.

70. *þat*] þe MS. *bar—baner*] þat bane*r* bar F; it bar T. *aboute* EFST] *miswritten* abouhte P; abouȝte M.

71. *lyueþ*] lyued F. *lykynge*] þe lykyng S. *hus*] T *om.*

72. *And*] þat FST. *cam*] com S; T *om.* *an*] and MF; & EST.

73. *Ouer*] Of alle M. *cardinale*] cardinales ME.

74. *þo*] FT *om.*

75. *unite*] vnyte of ET.

76. *defende*] defende vs T; *see next line.*

77. *Ous*] *so* PS; Vs MF; T *om.* (*see* l. 76). *þe* (1)] þese F. *þe* (2)] M *om.*

78. *on*] to M.

79. *Ther*] And *þere* T; Here M. *to*] ST *om.* *abyde and*] bide & to F. *bykere*] be euere M.

80. *huyrde — conscience*] consience þo herde T.

81. *sente*] send S. [*foreyours* EF] foreyo*rus* S; foreynours M; fereours (*for* foreours) P; fero*urs* T. *fluxes*] flix*us* F.

82. *Here* I *begins, and is legible to* l. 92. *Couhes*] Cowȝes E; Kouwes M. [*crampes* MIF] crumpis T; crompus S; claumpes PE. *aches*] ache M.

83. *roynouse*] roynyssche M; ruynouse S; runyous T.

Bules and bocches · and brennyng Aguwes; · 84
Frenesyes and foule vueles · these foragers of kynde viz. diseases,
Hadden pryked and preyed · polles of people;
Largeliche a legion · lees þe lyf sone. so that many die.
Ther was—"harow and help! · her comeþ kynde, 88
With deþ þat is dredful · to vn-do ous alle!"
The lord þat lyuede after lust · þo aloud criede Lechery cries after Comfort.
After comfort, a knyght · to come and bere hus baner.
"Alarme! Alarme!" quaþ þat lorde · "eche lyf kepe hus owene." 92
Thenne mette þese men · er mynstrales myghte pipe,
And er heraudes of armes · hadden discriued lordes.
Elde þe hore · was in þe vaunt-warde, Eld (Old-age) bears Death's banner.
And bar [þe] baner by-fore deþ · by right he hit claymede.
Kynde cam after hym · with menye kynne sores, 97
As pockes and pestilences · and muche people shente;
So kynde þorgh corupcions · culde ful menye.
Deþ cam [dryuyng] after · and al to douste [paschte] Death dashes kings and popes to dust.
Kynges and knyghtes · caysers and popes; 101
Lered ne lewide · he lefte no man stande;

84. *Bules*] *so* PE; Byles IM; Belis T; Boil*us* FS. *Aguwes*] *so* PE; agues MFS; anguisshe T.

85. *vueles*] eueles IMF; yueles E. *these*] T *om.* *foragers*] for-goer*us* S; forgoers F.

86. *pryked*] prykede P; i-priked MF; y-preched (!) I. *preyed*] preyede P; y-preyed I; i-peyned M; I-paied F. *of*] of þe MFS; þe (*sic*) T.

87. *Largeliche*] þat largelich F. *lees*] *so* PI; leef (*for* lees) F; les ST; loste M. *þe*] þy E.

90. *lyuede*] lyueþ S. *lust* EMIFST] loust P. *aloud*] he loude T.

91. *to*] I *om.* *hus*] oure T.

92. *Alarme*] Asarm*us* FS (*twice*). *þat*] þe T. *lyf*] man F.

93. *þese*] þes P.

94. *er*] or EF; here S. *discriued*] discriuede P; discreued E; descriued F; descreued M; discried T.

95. *Elde*] þe was eelde (*sic*) F. *was*] he was T; F *om.* *vaunt*] auaunt MFS; vaun T.

96. [*þe* MFST] a PE.

97. *kynne*] kynnes M.

98. *pestilences—muche*] pestilence þat many T.

99. *þorgh*] with F. *culde*] kullede M; killede F; kilde ST.

100. [*dryuyng* EMFS] dremend (*for* dreuend ?) P; dryuande T. *douste*] *so* PES; doust F; duste M; dust T. [*paschte* FS] passhte T; paihste P; pacchede M; pouste (!) E.

102. *ne*] and MET. *lewide*] lewede he sparede S. *he*] T *om.*

That he hitte euene ⁊ sterede neuere after. 103
372 Many a [louely] lady · and here lemmanes knyghtes
Sounede and swelte · for sorwe of deþes dyntes.
Conscience begs Nature to cease his plagues. Conscience of hus cortesie · þo kynde he by-souhte
To cessen and to suffren · and seo wher þei wolde
Leue pruyde pryueliche · and þeo *par*fit cristene. 108
Then Fortune flatters the survivors. And kynde cessede tho · to seon þe peuple amende.
Fortune gan flaterie penne · thaym fewe þat were a-lyue,
And by-hyght [hem] long lyf · and lecherie he sente
Amonges alle manere men · wedded and vnwedded,
And gaderede a gret ost · al agéyn conscience. 113
Lechery arms himself; This lecherie leyde on · with lauhynge chere,
And with pryuey speche · and peyntede wordes,
And armede hym [in] ydelnesse · and in hy beryng.
He bar a bowe in hus honde · and manye brode arwes,
his arrows are feathered with false promises. Were fetherede with faire by-heste · and many a fals treuthe. 118
With vntidy tales · he teonede ful ofte
Conscience and hus companye · of holy churche þe techers.
Avarice attacks Conscience. Thenne cam couetise · and caste how he myghte
Ouercome conscience · and cardinale uertues, 122
And armed hym in auarice · and hungriliche lyuede.

103. F *omits.* *hitte*] hutte M. *euene*] ones E. *sterede neuere*] neu*e*re steride T.
104. [*louely* EMFST] lofly P.
105. *Sounede*] Swouneden MF; Sowunede (*sic*) S; Swonide T. *sorwe—deþes*] soreweful T. *deþes* EMFS] dyþes P.
106. *þo*] þe F. *he*] F *om.*
107. *cessen*] sesen MFS. *to*] F *om.*
109. *cessede*] sesede FS. *seon*] seo M; se EFST.
110. *flaterie*] flatere MFS; faltre (!) T. *þenne*] þo F. *thaym*] þulke E; hem MFS; þo T.
111. *by-hyght*] be-het S. [*hem* MFST] hym PE.
112. *vnwedded*] vnweddede P.
113. *al*] T *om.*
114. *This* EST] Thees P; Þus MF. *leyde* MFST] *miswritten* leyden PE. *chere* MFST] chire P; clere (*for* chere) E.
115. *And*] T *om.*
116. [*in* EMFST] with P; *but see* l. 123, *and cf.* B-text.
118. *Were*] Where P. *fetherede*] i-fyþered M; yfeþered E. *a*] T *om.*
119. *With*] Whit P.
120. *of—techers*] of al holichirche M; & al holy churche F; folk of holy churche S. *þe*] T *om.*
122. *cardinale*] cardinales ME.
123. *lyuede*] he lyuede F.

Hus wepne was al wiles · to wynne and to huyden;
With glosynges and with gabbyngs · he [gylede] þe peuple.
Symonye hym sewede · to assaile conscience,
And pressede on þe pope · and prelates thei maden,
To holde with Antecrist · here temporalite to saue;
And cam to kynges consail · as a kene baroun,
And knockede conscience · In court by-fore hem alle,
And gerte goode faith to flee · and fals to a-byde,
And baldeliche bar adoun · with meny a bryght noble
Muche of þe wit and wisdom · of westmynster halle.
He iogged til a iustice · and iousted in hus ere,
And ouertulte al hus treuthe · with 'tak-this-on-amendement.'
And to þe arches in haste · he hyede a-non after,
And turnede cyuyle in-to symonye · and suth he tok þe official;
And for a menyuer mantel · he made leel matrimonye
Departe eu deþ come · and a deuors shupte.
"Alas!" quaþ conscience, and cride · "wolde crist, of hus grace,
That couetise were cristyne · þat is so kene to fyghte,

126 Simony sends him to beguile men.

373

131 He corrupts justice, both in Westminster Hall

136 and in the Court of Arches.

He contrives divorces.

140 Conscience wishes Avarice would become a Christian.

124. *huyden*] huyde S; huden E; hide FT.
125. *With*] Whith P. *glosynges*] glosyng T. *with*] MFST *om.* *gabbyngs*] *miswritten* gabbyinges P. *he*] T *om.* [*gylede* S] gilide T; giled EF; bi-gilede M; gyleþ P.
126. *sewede* MFT] suwed E; suede S; sywede P. *assaile*] asoyle (!) E.
127. *thei*] FT *om.*
128. *with*] *with* þe F. *Antecrist*] Auntecrist P.
129. *kynges*] þe kynges T; knythtes M; knyȝtus FS (*a remarkable variation*).
130. *In*] in þe T.
132. *adoun*] doun E.
133. *þe*] S *om.* *and*] & þe ST.
134. *iogged*] iagged F; Iuggede S. *til*] to FT. *iousted*] Iustede MT; Iuggede (*repeated*) S.
135. *ouertulte*] ouertilte FT. *with*] *erased in* T. *on*] in S.
136. *to*] in-to T. *in haste*] anon F. *hyede*] ȝede T. *anon*] him F.
137. *suth*] seþþe M; sith F; siþþe ST.
138. *And*] MFS *om.* *he*] & F; T *om.*
139. *Departe*] Departed (!) E. *a*] er M. *deuors*] deuorus S; deuos MT. *shupte*] schapte MF; shiften (!) T.
140. *and*] þo & T.
141. *is*] T *om.* *to fyghte*] fiȝteþ T. *fyghte*] siȝte MF.

And bold and [abydynge · þe] while hus bagge lasteþ."
Life laughs, And þanne lowh loude lyf · and let dagge hus cloþes,
And armyd hym in haste · in harlotes wordes,
And held holynesse a Iape · and hendynesse a wastour,
And let leaute a cherl · and lyere a freo man;
and counts Conscience as folly. Conscience and consail · he countede [hit a] folye.
Thus relyede lyf · for a litel fortune,
374 And prykeþ forth with pruyde · preyseþ he no vertue,
Ne careþ nouht hou kynde slouh · and shal come atte laste,
And culle alle erthly creatures · saue concience one.
Lyf tho leep asyde · and lauhte hym a lemman,
Life takes Fortune for his mate, "Hele and ich," quaþ he · "and hihnesse of herte
Shal do þe nat drede · neiþer deþ ne elde,
And [to for-ȝete] ȝouthe · and ȝyue nauht of synne."
This likede lyf · and fortune hus lemman,
and is the father of Sloth. And geten in here glorie · a gadelyng atte laste,
On þat muche wo wrouhte · sleuthe was hus name.
Sleuthe wax wonder ȝerne · and sone was of age,
Sloth marries Despair. And wedded on wanhope · a wenche of þe stewes;

142. *And*] MFS *om.* *and*] *erased in* T. [*abydynge* FS] a-bidyngge M; bidynge ET; byddynge P. [*þe* MEF] þy P; ST *om.* *hus*] þe T.

143. *lowh* F] louh M; louȝe E; louȝ ST; *misvritten* lohw P. *loude*] T *om.*

144. MF *omit.*

145. *hendynesse*] hendenesse EMF; hyndenesse ST.

146. *cherl* MFT] cherle E; chierl P; clerke (!) S.

147. *consail*] his consail MF. *he countede*] þei acountede M. [*hit a* S] it a F; hit ME; it T; P *om.*

148. *Thus*] & þus F. *relyede*] relied EF; releuede M; reliuede (*over an erasure*) T.

149. *preyseþ*] preysed S; & preisiþ T. *no*] noȝt E.

150. *Ne*] And T. *slouh*] *so* PM; slow EFS. *slouh and*] T *om.* *atte*] at þe MFT; at S.

151. *culle*] kil F; kille T. *alle*] MS *om.*. *erthly* EFS] erþliche M; erþely T; erthyly P. *creatures*] creature T.

152. *tho*] T *om.* *tho leep*] leep þo F.

153. *quaþ*] saide MFS. *he*] sche M (*wrongly*).

154. *nat*] noþer T. *drede*] to drede MFS. *neiþer*] ne doþ noþer (*sic*) T. *deþ ne*] non M.

155. [*to* MFST] PE *om.* [*for-ȝete* EMFST] for-ȝute P.

156. *lyf*] lif wel F. *fortune—lemman*] his lemman fortune T.

157. *atte*] at þe MT; ate F; at S.

159. *Sleuthe*] þo sleuthe T. *wax*] wex T.

160. *stewes* MFT] stywes P; stiwes E; styues S.

Here syre was a sysour · þat neuere swor treuthe,
On [tomme] two-tounged · ateynt at eche enqueste.
This sleuthe was sleyh of werre · and a slynge made, — Sloth uses his sling against Conscience.
And þrew drede of dispayr · a doseyne myle a-aboute.
For care conscience [þo] · cryede vp-on elde,
And bad hym fonde to fighte · and afere wanhope.
And elde hente good hope · and hastiliche shrof hym,
And wayueþ away wanhope · and with lyf he fighteþ. — Eld fights against Life.
And lif fleyh for fere · to [fisik] after helpe,
And by-souhte hym of socour · and of [his] salue hadde, — Life flees to physicians.
And gaf hym gold good won · þat gladede here hertes,
And þei gauen hym agayn · a glasene houe.
Lyf leyuede þat leche-craft · lette sholde elde,
And to-dryue away deþ · with [dyas and] drogges.
Elde auntred hym on lyf · and atte laste he hitte — Eld kills a physician.
A fisician with a forrede hod · þat he fel in a palsye,
And þer deiede þat doctour · er thre dayes after.
"Now ich seo," saide lyf · "þat surgerye ne phisike — Life is careless,
May nat a myte availle · to medlen a-ȝens elde."

162. [*tomme* MFS] thomme T; Robert P. *two-tounged*] to-tonged MS; þe tongede F; two tunge T. *On—tounged*] O mouþe & two tungen E. *at*] in T. *enqueste*] *so* PM; a queste EFT; queste S.

163. *This* EFS] *miswritten* Thes P; þus M. *a—made*] made him a slynge MFS.

164. *þrew* MFS] þrewe P; þreuȝ T. *drede*] F *om.*

165. [*þo* MFT] PES *om.*

166. *to*] for to F. *afere*] fere a-wey S.

167. *And*] S *om.* *And elde*] Elde þo MF. *hente*] hente þo S.

168. *wayueþ*] wayuede MT; wayued S; vanned F; vanscheþ E.

169. *fleyh*] *miswritten* fleyht P (*but see* B-text); flew F; fli M; fly S; fleþ T; fleckeþ (!) E. [*fisik* EMST] phisik F; syke (*for* fysyke) P.

170. *by-souhte hym*] him bi-souȝte MFS. [*his* MFST] here PE. *hadde*] he hadde MFS.

171. *good*] goud P. *here hertes*] his herte MST.

172. *And*] T *om.* *þei gauen*] þei ȝauen E; þei gauyn P; þei geuen T; þei gaf F; he gaf MS. *hym*] T *om.* *houe*] houue MST; howue F; how E.

173. *þat*] M *om.*

174. *to-dryue*] *so* PEM; dryue FT; dreue S. [*dyas and* FS] dias and M; dyetis & T; *miswritten* dayes P; diares E. *drogges*] dragges FT; drouges S.

175. *Elde*] And elde T. *atte*] at þe MFST. *he*] T *om.* *hitte*] hutte M.

176. *with*] in T. *forrede*] furrede F; furrid T. *fel*] fil F; ful M.

177. *þat*] þe T.

And in hope of hus hele · good heorte he hente,
and rides to Revel. And rod so to reuel · a ryche place and a murye;
The companye of comfort · men cleped hit som tyme.
Eld attacked me, and made me bald. And elde hastede after hym · and ouer my hefde ȝeode,
And made me balled by-fore · and bar on þe croune;
So harde he ȝeode ouer myn hefde · hit wol be sene euere.
I reproved him. "Syre vuel-ytauht elde," quaþ ich · "vnhende go with þe!
Suþþe whanne was þe hey wey · ouer menne hefdes?
Haddest þow be hende," quaþ ich · "þow woldest haue asked leue."
"ȝe, leue lordeyn!" quaþ he · and leyde on me with age,
Then he made me deaf, beat out my teeth, And hitte me vnder þe ere · vnneþe may ich huyre.
He boffatede me a-boute þe mouthe · and bete oute my wang-teþ,
and lamed me with gout. And gyuede me wiþ goutes · ich may nat go at large.
And of þe wo þat ich was yn · my wif hadde reuthe,
And wisshede wel witerlyche · þat ich were in heuene.
370 For þe lyme [þat] she louede me fore · and leef was to feele,

180. *hele*] helpe T.
181. *so to*] so to þe F; to þe S. *a* (2)] EM *om.*
182. *cleped* EF] clepede MS; clipid P.
183. *hastede*] T *om.* *my*] myn MFST. *hefde*] heed F; hed MET; hede S. *ȝeode*] he ȝede MF.
184. *balled* EMFS] ballide PT. *by-fore*] bi-forn M. *on*] vpon MFS.
185. *ouer*] vpon S. *hefde*] hed EMST; heed F. *sene* EMFST] syne P.
186. *vuel*] euel MF; yuel E. *ytauht*] ytauhte P; ytauȝt EMT; tauȝt SF. *vuel—elde*] elde euele ytauȝt T.
187. *whanne*] wanne P. *hey*] T *om.* *menne*] menes MT; men ES; mennus F. *hefdes*] heuedis T; hedes EMS; heedus F.
188. *be hende*] hende be S. *quaþ ich*] T *om.* *asked*] askede P.
189. *ȝe leue*] ȝe ȝe lewed M.
190. *hitte*] hutte M. *vnneþe* MF] vnnyþe PT; vneþe E; onneþe S.
191. *wang-teþ*] wongteþ M; iakteþ E.
194. *wisshede*] wyschte S. *witerlyche*] whiterlyche P; withturli M.
195—198. *Erased in* T; *rewritten in late hand.*
195. [*þat* MFS] PE *om.* *she*] heo F; hue S. *fore*] *so* PEMFS; *better* for. *to*] for to F.

And a nyghtes nameliche · when we naked were,
Ich ne myghte in none manere · maken hit at heore wille,
So elde and [hue] hit hadde · a-feynted and forbete.
And as ich sat in þis sorwe · [ich] sauh how kynde passede,
And deþ drow neyghynge me · for drede gan ich quaken,
And criede carfully to kynde · [out] of kare me brynge,
"Lo, hou elde þe hore · haþ me byseye;
Awreke me, yf ȝoure wil beo · for ich wolde be hennes.'
"Yf þow wolt beo awreke · wende in-to unite,
And hold þe þare euere · til ich sende for þe,
And loke þou conne som craft · er þou come þennes."
"Consaileþ me, kynde," quaþ ich · "what crafte be best to leere?"
"Lerne to loue," quaþ kynde · "and lef alle oþer þynges."
"Hou shal ich come to catel so · to cloþe me and to feode?"
"And þow loue leelliche · lacke shal þe neuere
Wede ne worldlich mete · while þy lyf lasteþ."
And ich þorgh consail of kynde · comsede to rome

Death drew nigh me, and I begged Nature to release me.

He bade me dwell in Unity,

and learn to love,

and then I should lack nothing.

196. *nyghtes*] nyghȝtes P. *And—nameliche*] Namelich on nyȝtes M; Namelich a nyȝtus FS.
197. *ne*] MFS *om.*
198. [*hue* S] heo MF; ȝo E; he P (*for* hue, *the usual form elsewhere*). *hit*] E *om.* *hit hadde*] hadde hit S. *a-feynted* M] afeyntede P; forfeynted EFS. *forbete* EMFS] forbeete P.
199. *as*] M *om.* [*ich* E] y S; i FT; and M; P *om.* *sauh*] sawe E; saw M; sauȝ T; say FS.
200. *neyghynge*] neȝyng E; and neihede MF; nere & nyȝede S; faste to T.
201. *carfully*] T *om.* [*out* EMFST] P *om.*
202. *Lo*] & seide lo F. *haþ*] haueþ MS. *me*] S *om.* *byseye*] *so* PE; bi-seiȝe MT; be-seye S; biseie F.
203. *Awreke*] Awrekeþ M. *me*] E *om.* *ich*] wo i M.
205. *sende—þe*] for þe sende F.
206. *er*] or þat F.
207. *kynde—ich*] quod i to kynde MF.
208. *Lerne*] Lere þow T. *quaþ*] seide F. *lef*] leue T. *þynges*] T *om.*
210. *And*] As S.
211. *worldlich* ME] wordliche PF; wordly S; worþi T. *while*] *with* F. *þy*] þe M.
212. *And*] Þo F. *ich*] *placed before* comsede *in* MFS. *þorgh*] be T.

Thorgh contricion and confession · til ich cam to unite;
I found Unity besieged by seven giants and Antichrist.
And þer was conscience constable · crystine to saue.
He was byseged soþliche · with seuene grete geauntes,
That with Antecrist helden · harde aȝeyns conscience.
Sloth led the assault, with Avarice.
Sleuthe with hus slynge · an hard saut he made. 217
Proude preostes cam with hym · passend an hundred;
In paltokes and pikede shoes · and pissares longe knyues,
Thei come aȝeyns conscience · with couetise þei helden.
An Irish priest despises Conscience.
"By þe marie," quaþ a mansed preest · was of þe marche of yrelonde, 221
"Ich counte conscience no more · by so ich cacche seluer,
Than ich do to drynke · a drawt of good ale!"
And so seide syxty · of þe same countreo, 224
Oaths are shot against Conscience.
And shotten aȝeyns hym with shot · [many a schef of] oþes,
And brode-hokede arwes · godes herte and hus nailes,
And hadde almost vnite · and holychurche a-doune.
Conscience cries for help.
Conscience cride, "helpe · cleregie, oþer ich falle, 228
Thorgh imparfit preestes · and prelates of holychurche."
The friars offer him aid.
Freres herde hym crie · and comen hym to helpe,

214. *And*] MS *om.*

215. *He*] ȝo E. *He was*] And T. *byseged* EM] bisegid FS; bysegide P.

216. *Antecrist*] Aunticrist PS. *with—helden*] heelde with antecrist F.

217. *Sleuthe*] þo slewthe F. *saut* EFST] *better than* sauht P; sauȝt M; *cf.* l. 300. *he*] F *om.*

218. *preostes*] prelates M. *cam—hym*] *with* him come F. *passend*] passyng EMST. *passend—hundred*] mo þan a þousand (*as in* B-text) F.

219. *and* (1)] & in S. *pissares*] *so* PME; pisser*us* FST. *longe*] *with* longe E.

220. *Thei*] T *om.* *helden*] holden S.

221. *By þe*] *so* PEMFS; Be þe T. *marie*] mare S. *mansed*] mansede PF; mansed E (*which shows it is not* mansed); monsede S. *was*] T *om.* *was—yrelonde*] & by seint myȝhel F.

222. *counte*] acounte M. *conscience—more*] no more consience T. *by so*] so þat T.

223. *drawt*] *so* PE; drauȝt MFT; draft S.

224. *countreo*] wise F.

225. *with*] FS *om.* *shot*] schotus S. [*many—of* EF] wiþ many a schef of M; many a schef S; many shef of T; mony shef P.

226. *arwes*] harwes P; *but see* l. 117. *herte*] fleys M; blod S.

227. *adoune*] distroyed T.

228. *cleregie*] to clergie F. *oþer*] or MT; for FS.

Ac for þei coupe nat wel here craft · conscience for-soke hem.

Neode neyhede þo ner · to conscience he tolde
þat þei came for couetise · to haue cure of soules,
And for thei aren poure, paraunter · for patrimonye hem failleþ,
Thei wolle flaterie to fare wel · to folke þat ben riche.
And sitthen þei chosen chile · and c[h]aytif pouerte,
Let hem chewe as þei chosen · and charge hem with no cure.
For lommere he lyeþ · þat liflode mote begge,
Than he þat laboreþ for lyflode · and leneþ hit beggeres.
And sitthen freres for-soke · þe felicite of erthe,
Lat hem be as beggers · oþer lyue by aungeles fode."
Conscience of þis consail tho · comsede for to lauhe,
And cortesly confortid hem · and cald yn alle freres,
And seide, "sires, sothly · wel-come be ȝe alle
To unite and to holichurche · ac o þing ich ȝow preye,
Holdeþ ȝow in unite · and haueþ non enuye
To lerede ne to lewide · bote lyueþ after ȝoure reule.
And ich wol beo ȝoure borw · ȝe shulleþ haue brede and clopes,
And oþer necessaries ynowh · ȝou shal no þyng lakke,

Need warns Conscience against the friars.

"Let them chew as they have chosen!

378

Let friars be beggars."

But Conscience welcomes the friars,

and offers to find them food,

231. T *omits*. *Ac*] & F.

232. *neyhede*] neȝhed F; neȝed E; neiȝide T; nyȝȝede S. *to*] and to M; & T.

233. *soules*] soule T.

234. *for* (2)] M *om*. *poure paraunter*] perauntur poore F.

235. *flaterie*] *so* PE; flatere MFST. *to* (2)] T *om*.

236. *chile*] *so* PS; clyle (*for* chyle) E; chele MFT. *chaytif*] caytif PE; *but* chaitife M; chaitif T; cheityf S; F *has* caitevous.

237. *hem* (1)] E *om*.

238. *lommere*] *so* PE; lomere MF; loomere (*altered to* loome, *with the gloss* i. sepe) T. *he*] þey E. *mote*] schal M.

239. *Than*] þat (!) F. *for lyflode*] þerfore F. *hit*] it to FS; to M.

240. *þe*] FS *om*.

242. *þis*] his S. *tho*] MF *om*. *comsede*] becomsed F. *for*] T *om*. *lauhe*] lauȝe EST; lauȝhe F; lauo M.

246. *Holdeþ*] And holdiþ T. *haueþ*] haþ T.

248. *ich wol*] i my-self wole MF; y my silf schal S. *shulleþ*] schulle M; schal F.

249. *ȝou*] ȝe MT; þat ȝe F. *shal*] schulle M; shuln T. *no þyng*] nat F.

if they will learn to love.

With þat ȝe leue logyk · and lerneþ for to louye.
For loue lefte þei lordshupes · boþe londe and scole,
Frere fraunceis and domynyk · for loue to be holy.
And yf [ȝe] coueiteþ cure · kynde wol ȝow telle,

God made all things of a certain number.

That in mesure god made · alle manere þynges,
And sette hit at [a] sertayn · and at a syker numbre,
And nempnede hem names · and nombrede þe sterres;

Ps. cxlvi. 4 (Vulg.).

Qui numerat multitudinem stellarum.

Kings have all their soldiers numbered.

Kynges and knyghtes · þat kepen and defenden,
Hauen officers vnder hem · and ech of hem a certayn,

379

And yf þei wage men to werre · thei wryten hem in numbre;
Wol no treserour take hem wages · trauayle þei neuere so sore,
Bote hij beon nempned in þe numbre · of hem þat ben ywaged.
Alle oþere in bataille · beeþ [yholde] brybours,
Pilours and pyke-herneys · in eche parshe a-corsede.

Monks have fixed numbers in their houses.

Monekes and monyales · and alle men of religion,
Here ordre and here ruele wol · to haue a certayn numbre;

Only friars are unnumbered.

Of lered and lewede · þe lawe wole and askeþ
A certayn for a certayn · saue onliche of freres!
For-thi," quaþ conscience, "by crist · kynde wit me telleþ,

250. *logyk*] ȝour logik F. *lerneþ* EMT] lernyeþ P; lerne F. *for*] T *om.*

251. *loue*] S *om.* *lefte*] lost E. *lordshupes*] lordschip EF; lordschup S; lordschepe M.

253. [*ȝe* EMFST] he P. *cure*] any cure F.

254. *manere*] maner of T; S *om.*

255. *hit*] *so in all; cf.* B-text. [*a* EMFT] PS *om.* *a* (2)] F *om.*

256. *hem*] men F.

259. *in*] be T.

260. *Wol*] For wil F. *Wol—treserour*] Wul not tresoure S.

261. *hij beon*] hy be ES; þei ben MT; þei be F. *nempned*] named F; T *om.* *þe numbre*] nombre T. *y-waged*] wagid T.

262. *Alle*] Al þat F. *beeþ*] þei beth F. [*yholde* EST] i-holde MF; *miswritten* yolde P. *yholde brybours*] bribores I-holde F.

263. *parshe*] paresche E; a paresche F. *a-corsede*] cursed F.

264. *alle*] iche T.

266. *and*] añd of MFS. *lered—lewede*] lewide & leride T. *wole*] wolde M.

267. *of*] þe E; MFS *om.*

268. *For-thi*] For-whi M.

Hit is wickede to wage 3ou · 3e wexeþ oute of numbre:
Heuene haueþ euene numbre · And helle is with-oute numbre; 270 — Hell is without number.
For-thi ich wolde witerly · þat 3e were in registre,
And 3oure numbre vnder notarie signe · and noþer more ne lasse."
Enuye herde þis · And het freres go to scole, 273 — Envy bids the friars learn logic,
And lerne logik and lawe · and eke contemplacion,
And preche men of plato · and prouen hit by seneca,
That alle þyng vnder heuene ouhte to beo in comune. — to prove that all things should be in common.
He lyeþ, as ich leyue · þat to þe lewede so precheþ,
For god made to men a lawe · and Moyses hit tauhte, 280
Non concupisces rem proximi tui. — Exod. xx. 17.
And vuel is this yholde · in parshes of yngelonde,
For persones and parshe-preestes · þat sholde þe peuple shryue, 280 — In England, the parish-priests should confess men;
And thei beon curatours cald · to knowe and to hele,
Alle þat been here parshenes · penaunces [to enioyne],
And beo ashamede in here shryft; · ac shame makeþ hem wende, 283
And fleo to [þe] freres · as fals folke to westmynstre, — but men flee to the friars,
þat borweþ and bereþ hit thuder · And thenne byddeþ frendes

269. *3e*] for 3e M. *wexeþ* EFM] wexiþ T; wexuþ S; *misvritten* wexit P.

270. T *omits*. *haueþ*] haþ an E. *numbre* (2)] F *om*.

271. *For-thi*] For-whi M. *wolde*] wulle S. *witerly*] whiterly P; with-turli M. *were—registre*] weren i-registred M; in registre were F.

272. *notarie*] *so* PEF; notories MT; a noteryes S. *more*] mo MFST.

After l. 272, T *repeats* l. 261 *in the form*—But þei be nempnid in þe noumbre · of þeim þat ben wagit.

273. *het*] heet F; hette T; bad S. *go*] to go F.

276. *ouhte*] owe E.

277. *He*] But he F.

279. *vuel*] euele MFT; yuel E. *parshes*] *so* PE; parsches M; parisches F; parosshis T.

280. *For*] þat T. *sholde*] schul S.

281. *And*] T *om*. *cald*] i-cald M. *hele*] helpe E; holde T.

282. *penaunces*] penaunce FS. [*to enioyne* MFS] enioyne T; enioyneþ P; enioyned E.

283. *And—in*] Ac for þei schameth of F. *ac*] & T; F *om*. *wende*] to wende F.

284. [*þe* EMST] fals F; P *om*. *as*] & T. *fals*] S *om*. *folke*] folk dooth FS; folc don M.

285. *hit*] MFS *om*.

ȝeorne of for-ȝeuenesse · oþer lenger ȝeres leue.
Like cheats who flee to Westminster. Ac while he is in westmynstre · he wol be by-fore,
And maken hym myrie · with oþer menne goodes.
And so hit fareþ by muche folke · þat to freres hem shryueþ,
So executors repair to the friars. As asisours and executours · þei shal ȝeue þe freres
A parcel to preye for hem · and maken hem [murye]
With þe remenant of þe good · þat oþer men by-swonke,
And suffre þe dede in dette · to þe day of dome.
Envy hates Conscience. Enuye here-fore · hatyde conscience,
And freres to philosophie · he fond hem to scole,
381 The while couetise and vnkyndenesse · assailede conscience.
Conscience bids Peace, his porter, to bar the gates of Unity. In vnite holichurche · conscience held hym,
And made pees portor · to pynne þe ȝates.
Alle tale-tellours · and titereres in ydel,
Ypocrise and thei · an hard sawt thei ȝeuen.
Ypocrise at þe ȝate · harde gan fighte,
Hypocrisy harms many. And wondede wel wickedly · meny a wys techere,

286. *ȝeorne*] ȝerne FST; ȝorne E; ȝurne M. *of*] or T; S *om.* *leue*] lone M.

287. *while*] wile P. *in westmynstre*] at westmynstur halle F.

288. *myrie with*] wondur mery · of F. *menne*] menes M; mennus FT; men S.

289. *And*] MFS *om.* *to*] to þe F. *hem*] FT *om.*

290. *asisours* ES] asissours P; sisours MFT. *executours* EMFT] excecutours P; exceketours S. *freres*] faitoures F.

291. *parcel*] *miswritten* prarcel P. *to*] for to F. *hem*] him T. [*murye* T] mury E; murie M; merye FS; murþe P.

292. *of—good*] T *om.*

293. *þe* (1)] so þe F. *to*] til MS; ȝe til F.

294. *Enuye*] But sir enuye F; Euer enuye M. *hatyde*] hatiþ T.

295. *freres*] fals frerus F. *hem*] so F; vs T.

296. *The*] F *om.* *while*] wile P. *couetise—vnkyndenesse*] vnkyndenesse and coueitise M. *assailede conscience*] consience assaileden T.

297. *held*] hold S.

298. *þe*] wel þe F.

299. *Alle*] Of alle T. *titereres in*] titeris of T.

300. *an* EMFS] *miswritten* and P. *sawt* F] saut ST; sauȝt M; *miswritten* swat (*for* sawt) PE. *ȝeuen*] ȝouen F. *an—ȝeuen*] han hard saut made T. *ȝeuen*] ȝouen F.

301. *at þe*] ate F. *gan*] gan to F.

302. *a*] T *om.* *techere*] techeris T.

That with conscience acordede · and cardinale uertues.
Conscience calde a leche · þat couthe wel shryue, 304
To salue þo þat sik were · and þorgh synne y-wonded.
Shruft shupte sharpe salue · and made men do penaunce — Shrift salves them with penance.
For here mysdedes · that thei wrouht hadde, 307
And þat peers pardoun were ypaied · *Redde quod dedes.* — Mat. xviii. 28.
Some likede nat þis leche · and lettres þei senten, — They like not Shrift's plasters.
Yf eny surgeyn were in þe sege · þat softere couþe plastre.
Sire lyf-to-lyue-in-lecherie · lay þere and gronede; 311
For fastynge of a friday · he ferde as he wolde deye.
"Ther is a surgen in þe sege · þat softe can handle, — They ask for another leech, one Flatterer, a friar.
And more of fisik by fer · and fairer he plastreþ;
On frere flaterere · is fisician and surgien."
Quaþ contricion to conscience · "do hym come to unite, 316
For her is meny man · hurt þorgh ypocrisye." 382
"We haue no neode," quaþ conscience · "ich wote no bettere leche — Conscience says the parish-priest is the right confessor;
þan person oþer parshe-prest · penytancer oþer busshup,
Saue peers the plouhman · þat hath powere ouere alle,
And indulgence may do · bote yf dette lette." 321
"Ich may wel suffry," quaþ conscience · "sutthe ȝe desiren

303. *cardinale*] cardinales ME.
305. *þorgh*] with T. *y-wonded*] wounded F.
306. *Shruft*] Schrift M; Schrif F. *shupte*] so PE; schop MS; schoop F; shop T. *penaunce*] penaunces E.
307. *wrouht hadde*] hadde ywrouȝt T. *wrouht*] i-wrout M.
309. *senten*] sette T.
310. *were*] F *om.* *þat*] F *om.* *couþe plastre*] plaster couþe E.
311. *in*] M *om.*
312. *he*] T *om.* *wolde*] wul S. *deye*] a died F.
313—322. S *omits.*
313. *softe*] softer F; softre M.
314. *fer* MFT] ferre E; feer P.
316. *come*] to come F.
317. *is—hurt*] buþ many men i-hurt M. *meny*] many a FT. *hurt*] I-hert F.
318. *no*] a M (*see next line*).
319. *þan—oþer*] And þat is M. *busshup*] busshop M; bischop EFT.
320. *Saue*] And also M. *ouere*] of T.
321. *lette*] lette it T.
322. *suffry*] suffre MFET. *ȝe*] þat ȝe M. *desiren* MFT] disyren P.

but Flatterer may be sent for.

That frere flaterere be fet · and fysyke 3ou syke."
The frere here-of herde · and hyede faste
To a lorde for a lettere · leue to haue to curen

The friar gets a license to hear confessions.

As he a curatour were · and cam with hus letteres
Baldely to þe bushope · and hus breef hadde,
In countreyes *þer* he cam · confessions to hure;
And cam ther conscience was · and knockede atte 3ate.

Peace, the porter of Unity, parleys with Flatterer.

Pees vnpynnede þe dore · þat was portour of vnite,
And in hast he [askede] · 'what hus wil were?'
"In faith," quaþ þis frere · "for profit and for helthe,
Carpe ich wolde with contricion · and *þer*-fore cam ich hyder."
"He is syke," seide pees · "and so aren meny oþere;
Ypocrisye haþ hurt hem · ful hard is yf [þei] keuere."

Flatterer says he can make salves, and his companion tells his name.

"Ich am a surgeń," seide þe frere · "and salues can ich make,
Conscience knoweþ me wel · and what ich can don."
"Ich preye the," quaþ pees þo · "er þow passe forþere,
What hattest þow? ich praye [þe] · hele nat þy name."

2 Tim. iii. 6.

"Certes," seide his felawe · "syre *penetrans-domos*."

383

"3e, go þi gate," quaþ pees · "by god, for al þy fysike,

Peace refuses to admit him.

Bote þow conne [oþer] craft · þou comest nat here-ynne.
Ich knew such on ones · nat eyhte wynter passede,

323. *frere flatercre*] þat frere M; þe frere FS. *fet*] i-fet MF. *syke*] be sike F.

324. *frere*] fáls frere F. *hyede*] he hied F.

325. *to* (2)] T *om.*

326. *he—curatour*] a curatour he MFT. *and*] T *om.* *letteres*] *lettere* T.

327. *breef*] *so* PF; bref EMST.

329. *atte*] at þe MFT.

330. *vnpynnede*] þo vnpynned F; openide T. *þe dore*] hit MFS; it T. *þat*] MT *om.* *was portour*] porter was F.

331. *he*] T *om.* [*askede* MF] asked E; eschte S; hesshede P; hi3te T.

332. *frere*] frere þo F. *helthe*] helpe S.

333. *ich wolde*] wolde i T. *contricion*] conscience F.

334. *so*] M *om.* *aren*] beþ E.

335. *hem*] hym S. *hurt hem*] hem I-hert F; i-hurt hem M. [*þei* EMF T] þey S; *miswritten* 3e P.

336. *ich*] T *om.*

337. *what*] wot what M; what þat FS. *don* E] done P; do MF.

338. *þo*] T *om.* *forþere*] ferrer F.

339. *hattest þow*] hattestow F. [þe EF] PMST *om.* *praye þe*] þe pray F.

340. *his*] is P.

342. [*oþer* MFS] any oþer E; eny PT.

343. *on*] a wy F. *passede*] a-passad M.

Cam yn thus y-coped · at a court þere ich dwellede.
He was my lordes leche · and my ladies boþe,
And atte last þis lymytour · þo my lord was oute,
He saluede so oure wo*mm*en · til so*mm*e were with childe."
Hende-speche het pees þo · opene þe ȝates—
"Lat yn þe frere and hus felawe · and make hem faire chere.
He may seo and huyre here · so may by-falle,
That lyf þorgh hus lore · shal leue cóuetise,
And to beo a-drad of deþ · and wiþ-drawe hym fro pruyde,
And acorde with conscience · and cusse here aiþer oþere."
Thus þorgh hende-speche · entrede þe frere,
And cam to conscience · and corteisliche hym grette.
"Thou art welcome," quaþ conscience · "canst þou hele syke?"
"Here is contricion," quaþ conscience · "My cosyn, ywonded;
Conforte hym," quaþ conscience · "and take kepe to hus sores.
The plastres of þe person · and þe pouderes þeoþ to sore,

Fair-Speech prays Peace to open the gates.

Thus the friar gains admission.

Conscience asks the friar to heal Contrition.

344. *y-coped* E] i-coped MF; y-copede P.
345. *He—lordes*] And my lord (!) T.
346. *And*] T *om.* *atte* E] at þe MFST; atte þe (*wrongly*) P. *was*] whas P.
347. *til*] þat T. *were*] where P.
348. *Hende*] Hendy S. *het—þo*] þo heet pees F. *opene*] & praide open F. *ȝates*] ȝate S.
349. *Lat*] And lat PE (*but* MFST *omit* And; *cf.* B-text); Let MST; Late F. *þe*] S *om.* *chere* EMFST] chyre P.
350. *seo*] i-seo M. *huyre here*] i-here M; hem here T. *may*] it may F.
351. *leue*] leue his F.
352. *to*] T *omits; but the rest retain* to. *hym*] hem T.
353. *And*] S *om.* *here*] eþer (*sic*) E; MFST *om.*
354. *Thus*] & þus F.
355. *to*] þo to F.
356. *art* MFST] ert PE. *welcome*] wolcome P. *canst þou*] canstow F.
357. *quaþ conscience*] T *om.* *y-wonded*] y-wondyd S; ywondede P; i-wounded ME; is I-wounded F; liþ woundit T.
359. *plastres*] plastre M. *þe* (2)] MFS *om.* *to*] so MF; S *om.* *and—to*] pynen hym T.

384 The friar gives Contrition a plaster called Privy-payment.

And lat hem lygge ouer-lange · and loþ is to chaungen;
Fro lente to lente · he let hus plastres [byte]."
"That is ouerlonge," quaþ þis lymytour · "ich leyue
ich shal amende hit." 362
He goþ [&] gropeþ contrition · and gaf hym a plastre
Of "a pryue payement · and ich shal preye for 3ow,
And for hem þat 3e aren holden to · al my lyf-tyme,
And make 3ow my lady · in masse and in matynes,
As freres of oure fraternite · for a litel seluer." 367

He soon causes Contrition to cease weeping for his sins.

Thus he goþ and gadereþ · and gloseþ þer he shryueþ,
Til contrition hadde clene for-3ute · to crie and wepe
and wake 369
For hus wickede werkes · as he was woned by-fore.
For comfort of hus confessour · contricion he lefte,
That is þe souereyne salue · for alle kynne synnes.

Sloth and Pride again assault Conscience.

Anon sleuthe seih þat · and so dude pruyde, 373
And comen with a kene wil · conscience to assaile.
Conscience criede eft · "cleregie, come help me!"
And bad contricion to come · to helpe [kepe] þe 3ate.

Peace says Contrition is drowned.

"He lith [adreynt]," saide pees · "and so doþ meny
oþere; 377
The frere with hus fisik · þis folke haþ enchaunted,

360. *And*] He T. *lat*] lateth F; letteþ M; letuþ S; let T. *to*] hem to F.

361. *to*] in-to M. *let*] latte E; lateth F; letteþ M; letuþ S. [*byte* T] bite EMF; byde PS.

362. *ouerlonge*] to longe F; longe T. *þis*] M *om.* *lymytour* EFT] lymetour S; lymytur M; lymatour P. *amende hit*] hit amende MS; it mende F.

363. *He*] And T. [*&* EFS], PMT *om.*; *see* l. 368. *and*] an P. *a*] þan a F.

364. *a*] F *om.* *3ow*] 3owe P.

365. *holden*] i-holde ME.

366. *masse*] mass*us* F. *in* (2)] F *om.*

368. *þer*] whan F.

369. *hadde*] haue M. *for-3ute*] for-3ete MFST; for3it E. *wepe*] to wepe T. *and wake*] *at beginning of* l. 370 *in* T; *as in* B-text.

370. *woned*] wonede P; wont FT; i-woned M.

371. *For*] Þoru M; Þurw F. *hus*] þis MFS.

372. *kynne*] mane*r* T.

373. *Anon*] T *om.* *seih*] saw M; say FS; sey E; seþ T.

374. *assaile*] sayle F.

375. *cleregie*] to clergie to F. *me*] hym EMFS; T *om.*

376. *to* (1)] T *om.* *to* (2)] & F. [*kepe* EMST] to kepe F; P *om.*

377. [*adreynt* EMF] adraynt S; adreynched P; & dryueliþ T.

378. *enchaunted* EMF] enchauntede P.

And doþ men drynke dwale · þat men dredeþ no synne."
"By crist," quaþ conscience tho · "ich wol by-come a pilgryme,
And wenden as wide · as the worlde regneþ,
To seke peers þe plouhman · þat pruyde myghte destruye,
And [þat] freres hadden a fyndynge · þat for neode flateren,
And counterpleideþ me, conscience; · nowe kynde me a-venge,
And sende me hap and hele · til ich haue peers plouhman!"
And suthe he gradde after grace · til ich gan a-wake.

Conscience says he will become a pilgrim,
and seek Piers the Plowman.
The dr·amer awakes.

Hic explicit passus secundus de dobest.

Explicit Peeres Plouheman, scriptum per Thom. Hankastre.

379. *dwale*] *so in all.* *þat—no*] til þei forȝete T.
380. *tho*] S *om.*
381. *as*] forth also F. *worlde*] wordle P; wordl S.
382. *þe*] MFS *om.* *pruyde myghte*] myȝt pruyd S; myȝte pride F. *pruyde*] M *om.*
383. [*þat* EMFST] þe P. *flateren*] flaterede F.
384. *counterpleideþ*] countᵘrpleteth F. *kynde*] kende T; kyⁿg (!) E.
386. *suthe*] siþ EF; siþþe ST; seþþe M.
COLOPHON. *So* P; EMF *omit* Hic. S *has*—Explicit secundus & vltimus de dobest; T *has*—Explicit; E *adds*—incipit passus tercius (!).

CRITICAL NOTES.

CRITICAL NOTES.

[In the following notes a few points are discussed, particularly with reference to Dr Whitaker's edition, which could not conveniently be considered in the foot-notes to the text. His edition is frequently denoted below by the contraction "Whit."]

Passus I. This first portion of the poem is not called "Prologus," as in the A-text and B-text; see the colophon—*Explicit passus primus*—on p. 14.

It would be a long and profitless task to point out the numerous errors in Dr Whitaker's edition, which was printed from the same MS. as the present one, without any intentional alterations. The errors arose from his being unable (*at first*) to read the MS. correctly; and we find accordingly that they diminish in number as he proceeded, so that towards the end he is fairly accurate. I here give, by way of sample, the errors in his first page, which terminates with line 9.

In the Title, for *Petro* Whit. prints *Piers;* an excusable error, as the word is very faint, and requires a good light to be visible.

In l. 3, for *as* Whit. has "aȝ;" and for *vnholy*—"unholy" with a *u*, though elsewhere he sometimes follows the MS. in this respect.

In l. 4, for *Ich* (MS. Ic*h*), he prints "þt;" for *forth*, "forthe;" for *wonders*, "wondres."

In l. 6, for *Maluerne*, "Malverne" with a *v;* though elsewhere he sometimes follows the MS.

In l. 7, for *byfel*, "by fel" (two words).

In l. 8, for *and*, he has the contraction "&."

The marks of contraction in "som*e*re" (l. 1) and "M*er*ueylously" (l. 9), he attempted to preserve, but they are not well printed. In the first instance, we have "some," with a small dot over the "e"; in the second instance we have "mūeylously." His print is, like the MS. itself, devoid of punctuation.

At the bottom of every page his edition has a very full paraphrase of the text above it, which I shall cite as *Paraphrase* or "Whit. Paraph." It is in general well done, but contains some mistranslations.

At the end of his text there are a few pages of Notes, which I shall sometimes cite as "Whit. Notes" or "Whit. Note." Most of these are very unhappy in their suggestions.

I do not undertake to correct all the errors in "Whit. Paraph." or "Whit.

Notes," but shall call attention to a few that seem to require present consideration. The discussion of some of them is reserved.

I may further observe, that it is impossible to point out the exceedingly numerous variations between the C-text and the two preceding it. The numbers **A 1**, **B 1**, &c., denote the pages of these texts, thus enabling the reader to compare them for himself. *Observe, however, the obelus* (†) in marginal notes to ll. 6, 16, &c., as this *indicates new matter.*

5. *cellis.* "The alliteration requires that the word *cellis* ... be spelt *sellis.* It is pure Saxon, from *Sellic,* wonderful;" Whit. Note. The MSS. spell it with *c* or *s* indifferently, just as we find *celle* or *selle* in Chaucer's Prologue, l. 172; and it can be nothing but the Lat. *cella.* Cf. "*Selle,* stodyynge howse. *Cella;*" Prompt. Parv. The poet, on the look-out for wonders, applied at various cells for information.

16. *waitede;* Whit. "wattede," with the note—"S. *waδ,* the act of wandering." But as the MS. has *waitede,* this explanation falls through. The sense is *watched,* or *looked about me.*

33. *cheuede.* The MS. really has "cheffede," though *cheffede* is clearly meant. But Whit. prints *chessede,* with the note—"*chessede the better,* made the better choice; but the printed copies read *cheveden,* throve." By the "printed copies" the editions by Crowley and Owen Rogers are meant, as no others then existed. Of course *chessede* cannot be rightly construed as being the past tense of the strong verb *chesen,* to choose.

76. *eren,* ears. Whit. *eyen,* a misprint.

92. *strayues;* Whit. *strayes.* In all such cases, the correction has the authority of the MS. itself, or else is explained in the foot-notes. Here, for instance, *strayues* is found not only in P., but in three other MSS.; see foot-note.

107—123. This passage is an expansion of four lines in the B-text; viz. B. x. 280—283. The true form of it is shewn in the Ilchester MS., quoted in the foot-note, with a few words supplied by guess. The form in the text can hardly be genuine, as the alliteration almost vanishes. It is a singular fact that this passage is the *only one* which bears even the least trace of having been rewritten by another person than the author. For this reason, I attribute the form of it in the text to a pure accident; and suppose that the original copy was accidentally defaced here, so that the scribes had to reproduce it from memory or from what they could decipher. Hence some lines are more correct than others, and the general sense is fairly well preserved.

It will be observed that MS. F has a different version of lines 117—126.

134. *cauȝt,* MS. *chaut,* bad spelling for *cauht* = *caught.* Whit. *chant,* corrected to *chaut* in Errata.

140. *muche.* Miswritten *meche* in P. I may here observe, once for all, that the scribe of P. continually writes *e* for *o;* hence his *meche* really stands for *moche.* Whit. Paraph. has "the *submitted* power of the people;" as if *meche* = *meke* = *meek.* But see the various readings. Indeed, we find the entry "*Meche,* much" in Whit. Glos.

181. *hure wey roume*, i. e. make their way roomy, make way for them. The reading *ronne* (Whit.) is a misprint.

200. *cracchen* (MS. *chracchen*, as noted), to scratch. The reading *cranchen* (Whit.) is a misprint. Hence the remark "Cranch, to grind the teeth" (Whit. Glos.) is superfluous.

PASSUS II. 18. "*And brynge forth youre bylyve.* The text is evidently corrupted; it may be reduced to sense by reading—*And bring forth for you bylyve.*[1] MS. B.[2] reads—

> For he highte ȝow þe erþe to helpe ȝowe eche one
> Of wollen of lynnen of lyvelode at need—

and this sense I have adopted in the Paraphrase." Whit. Note.

"Wherefore also he commanded the elements to produce for you the necessaries of life." Whit. Paraph. But the reading is quite right as it stands; for *bylyue* = A.S. *bigleofa*, sustenance.

22. *rekene;* Whit. *reherce;* a misprint, due to the *reherce* which occurs later in the same line.

25. *þorw.* So in MS.; Whit. *yorowe.*

70. *halsede.* The reading *hanslede* seems a mere error of the scribe. I know of no authority for *hansle* in this sense.

79. *teche;* Whit. *tethe'*, which he explains by "tether, fasten." But there is no mark of contraction in the MS., which agrees with others in reading *teche.*

86. *graunty:* Whit. *gramity.* His Glossary has—"*Gramity*, grief or anger." There is no such word.

102. *Dauid by hus daies;* "Dauid, sitting at his high table;" Whit. Paraph. But *by hus daies*, like the *in his dayes* of the B-text, means *in his time.*

114. "Why would the wretched Lucifer leap aloft on the side of the north *rather than* sit on the south?" Whit. Paraph. "My commentary is justified by MS. B. [Phillipps 8252] which reads *rather than;*" Whit. Note. This is undoubtedly correct; see the foot-note.

124. "He was, MS. For this nonsense we must read *Hyndes*, i. e. labourers on holidays, and when idle, court heat; but when employed in labour, defy the cold." Whit. Note. This explanation is quite correct in idea, but the word meant is clearly *Hewes*, which means the same thing as *Hyndes.*

162. *comseþ*; Whit. *coniseþ.* "*Conise*, to teach; to cause to con or know;" Whit. Glos. There is no such word. On the other hand, Whit. also gives "*Comse*, to commence;" which is right.

a myghte; Whit. *Almyghte*, printed in red letters; a word probably coined to help to explain the preceding *coniseþ.*

164. *let hus;* Whit. *leth us;* a printer's error, and corrected in Errata.

[1] i. e. quickly, soon. [2] i. e. MS. Phillipps 8252.

175. *ȝe;* Whit. *þe.* Probably a printer's error, as the Paraph. has "ye go hence."

PASSUS III. 10. *Hue.* "*He* and *hue* are frequently confounded in the MS.;" Whit. Note, correctly.

18. *layn nat,* conceal (it) not. "*Layne,* to forbear;" Whit. Glos. The latter is hardly accurate.

61. *Forgoers.* The reading *Vorgheours* (P.) is probably a mere error, as all the B-text MSS. have *Forgoeres,* i. e. goers before. The explanation "*Vorgeurs,* vergers" (Whit. Glos.) may be doubted.

69. *liere;* Whit. *here.* "*Then leep here forth;* so MS. A; but MS. B and printed copies *lyer,* which gives the true sense;" Whit. Note. I am obliged to note this, because I deny that our MS. has *here;* it is written *liere* plainly enough.

73. *vnfeelde,* unfolded. Whit. has *unseeled,* with the explanation "unsealed." This is not the reading of the MS., nor can it be right. See l. 114.

89. *cheste.* Whit. *Thefte.* "On looking more attentively at the MS. I find the word is *Cheste,* i. e. debate, and with this the printed ed. agrees. *Theft* is mentioned below" [l. 92]; Whit. Note.

116. The reading *tuemede* is clearly a mere error for *tuenede,* as the substantive *tene* is elsewhere spelt *tuene* in the MS. "Then Theology *departed;*" Whit. Paraph. "*Tweme,* to depart. Perhaps mis-spelt for *twene* or *twine;*" Whit. Glos. The two last remarks are wrong, as is easily proved by observing the various readings.

145. *moillere;* Whit. *moillexe;* a misprint; see l. 120.

150. *en-ioynen;* "enjoin it;" Whit. Paraph. But Whit. Note says—"Perhaps it may mean join them together"—which alone is right.

185. *permuten;* Whit. *punniten,* explained by "punish." I know of no such verb as *punnite.*

196. *tome,* i. e. leisure; Whit. *time,* wrongly.

200. *bote;* Whit. *lute,* explained by "let alone;" wrongly.

211. *Go;* Whit. *To;* but such is not the reading of the MS.

217. *dene;* MS. *duene,* meaning *din,* not *doom,* as explained by Whit. Yet *dome* is certainly another reading; see B-text. Whit. Glos. has—"*Duene,* probably from S. *dwinan,* tabescere. Chaucer has *dwined* in the same sense. Hence the modern *dwindle.*" To what passage this refers I am unable to say; it is due to some mistake.

236. *gommes,* gums; Whit. *gomes,* explained by "sorts of men." This error is corrected in Whit. Note.

PASSUS IV. 61. *scaþe,* harm; Whit. *scape,* explained by "sin."

68. *grauynge;* Whit. *guvynge.* Yet his paraphrase has "engraving."

86. *parcel-mele,* by small portions at a time, by retail; not "mixed meal," as in Paraph. This error is, however, corrected in Whit. Note.

125. *askes;* so in MS.; Whit. *ashes.*

179. *nauht;* so in MS.; Whit. *nuah.*

208. *Vnsyttynge;* so in MS. (rightly); Whit. *Unfyttynge.*

224. *knowep.* The reading *knowest þou* (as in I and F) is better than that in the text, as it agrees better with the reading *þi* in l. 225.

241. *werdes;* so in MS.; Whit. *wordes.* "The reading of MS. B. [Phillipps 8252], viz. *hus weirdis*, throws full light on this otherwise unintelligible passage. *Weirdis* are fates, as the weird sisters are the Parcæ;" Whit. Note. The note is right, but the difficulty would not have arisen had the MS. been rightly read.

244. *ys þat;* Whit. *þis þat*, with the remark, in the Notes, that "this reading is plainly corrupted." It must have been a misprint, which he did not recognize as such.

282. *nedes;* according to Whit. Note, it is miswritten *neder.* Yet the MS. has *nedes* quite plainly.

292. *and* is miswritten *a* in P., and also in E. and S. Whit. also proposes to read *and*, which he states to be the reading of MS. Phillipps 8252. He explains it correctly thus—"Mede and reward are two different things, but men judge that both are earned by some service or other, whether good or bad [rather, whether secretly or otherwise];" Whit. Note. See l. 335.

319. *ys;* Whit. omits, probably by accident.

326. *vp-on;* so MS.; Whit. *on.*

331. *So þat god geueþ no þyng · þat synne ne ys þe glose.* "A different sense, and most probably the true one, is given by MS. B. [Phillipps 8252] —*So god geveth a þyng þat sinne is þe glose*—that is, conditionally; with a clause of revocation." Whit. Note. A little reflection will shew that the *two* negatives in our text really destroy each other, so that the sense in the two MSS. is not "different," but the same.

347. This line, and the quotation above it, are omitted in Whit.; probably by accident. They are to be found in the MS.

355. *suweþ*; so in MS.; Whit. *shewep.*

367. *cacche;* so in MS.; Whit. *tacche.* "To tack two together without cause;" Whit. Paraph. This cannot be right; note the alliteration.

393. *pecunie*, money; MS. *peccunie;* Whit. *pectinne.* Whit. proposes to read *penninge*, which he explains by "penny." No alteration is needed.

462. *acchett;* so MS.; Whit. *attchett.*

PASSUS V. 23. *peitrel;* so MS.; Whit. *pettrel.*

35. *þei wolle;* Whit. *þeir wol*, but corrected to *þei wolle* in Errata.

55. Whit. notes that MS. Phillipps 8252 also reads *badly*, which is undoubtedly right.

58. *hewes;* MS. *hywes.* "To kill my *sheep;*" Whit. Paraph. "I understood the word to mean *ewes*, but in MS. B. [Phil. 8252] the word is *Hynyn*, hinds, or herdmen;" Whit. Note. "For *sheep* read *hinds;*" Whit. Errata.

65. *moche;* Whit. *mocke;* prob. a misprint.

73. *myd;* so in MS.; Whit. *wyd.*

111. *whucche;* MS. *wucche;* Whit. *wurche.* It merely means a hutch or box, A.S. *hwæcce.*

112. *cherissing;* MS. indistinct; Whit. *chēssing.* But he notes that MS. Phillipps 8252 has *cherishinge:* there can be no doubt about the reading.

113. The sense is—And till the holiness of ribalds be most observed upon a high holiday. *Ferye* is the Lat. *feria;* and *an* = on, as usual. Whitaker's note is preposterous. He says, "The Saxon *fere* is a carriage, and the verb is *feran* or *ferian,* so that I have no doubt that the meaning is—Until the pretended sanctity of harlots be carted aloft." In his Glossary he has "*Ferye,* to carry," without any explanation as to how *ferye* can be used as a *past participle.*

182. *manslauht;* so in MS.; Whit. *manslaugh.*

189. *vnsittynge;* so in MS.; Whit. *unsemyng.* Cf. Critical Note above to iv. 208.

191. *legge;* so in MS.; Whit. *laye.*

196. *awakede;* Whit. *awakeden,* but corrected in Errata.

Passus VI. 1. *god wot;* so Whit., and rightly. Yet the MS. really has *wot god,* as noted in the foot-note.

13. *coke;* so in MS.; Whit. *loke.*

25. *a;* Whit. omits. It is, in the MS., squeezed in between the words *as* and *workeman,* as if it had been omitted at first.

59. *it;* "*it* is an error of the transcriber; MS. B. [Phillipps 8252] has *þei;*" Whit. Note. It is no error, but the usual idiom.

111. In the margin of the MS. is written "*sermo;*" this denotes the beginning of the account of Reason's sermon.

132. *wyuen;* Whit. *wynen.* The MS. may be read either way; but Whit. notes that MS. B. [Phil. 8252] has *wyvyn,* and proposes to alter his reading to *wyuen.* The reading *wyfen* in E is equally conclusive. See also the B-text.

138. *wynnynge.* Whit. Paraph. has "whining," but this is corrected in his note, where he says, "perhaps the meaning may be—Let no attention to gain (winning) bring your children to loss in their best interests." This is nearer the mark, but he does not clearly say whether *for-wene* is one word or two. It is a verb implying "spoil."

146. Whit. notes that MS. B. [Phil. 8252] reads *slowyd.*

186. Whit. Paraph. wrongly takes *on* as a preposition, but this is corrected in his note, where he says—"That *one* understanding and *one* will keep watch and ward for all alike." There is no doubt that *on* = *one* here.

197. *man;* Whit. omits; but it is in the MS.

Passus VII. 36, 37. Whit. omits the last half of l. 36 and the first half of l. 37, clearly owing to the recurrence of the word *my-self.*

60. *be.* "The word *be* is evidently omitted;" Whit. Note.

103. MS. P. has "*Confessio ire. confessio ire;*" the words of the title

being thus repeated, not only here, but wherever else the titles of the seven sins occur.

130. *haue;* so in MS.; Whit. omits.

133. "And made battles out of squabbles;" Whit. Paraph. "Jowtes" is explained by "jolts" in Whit. Glos. But the real meaning of *joutes* is a kind of pottage; see "*Jowtys*, potage" in Prompt. Parv.

149. Whit. notes that this line is miswritten in our MS., and that the MS. B. [Phil. 8252] has the reading "hore," which he follows in his paraphrase, correctly.

152. *felle;* Whit. *folle.* Indeed, the MS. looks more like *folle* than *felle;* but the other MSS. are clear enough, and Whit. notes that *felle* is the reading of his MS. B.

154. The variation in F is curious. The chief addition is in the two lines—

> & ȝit [*read* ȝif] I spak no speche · it swal so my breste,
> þat I chewed it as a cowe · þat code [i. e. *cud*] chewith ofte.

These are much in the author's manner, and look as if they are genuine. In fact, the former line is merely B. v. 119 in another shape; and the latter has a slight resemblance to C. ii. 191. The notion of comparing Wrath's silent broodings over his supposed wrongs to a cow's chewing of the cud is excellent.

179—194. Designedly omitted by Whitaker. His note says—"eighteen lines are here omitted," &c. He should have said—"*sixteen* lines."

226. *and podyng;* Whit. *apoding.* "Oriel MS. reads *and pudding*, which is right;" Whit. Note. The real reading of our MS. is *apodyng*, miswritten for *& podyng.* This should have been stated in my footnote.

312. *lacke*, fail; so MS.; Whit. *lache*, by a misprint.

314. *beggen;* Whit. *begger*, wrongly.

322. *reddere;* so MS.; Whit. *reddite.*

335. *fonk*, spark; Whit. *fouk.* "*Fouke*, Fr. fouke of fuyer, spark of fire;" Whit. Glos. What the *French* word here referred to is I hardly know; it is of more importance to observe that the O.E. *fonk* is merely the Dutch *vonk.*

342. *hauest*, so in MS.; Whit. omits.

370. *portours;* Whit. *porcours;* "pig-drivers," Whit. Paraph. The MSS. read *portours, porteres, porters*, &c.

398—402. Designedly omitted by Whitaker, who refers the reader to Crowley.

411. *liftynge;* Whit. *lysting*, which is left unexplained.

412—414. Designedly omitted by Whitaker.

PASSUS VIII. 2. *sitte;* Whit. *sute.* Whit. almost always prints *ut* for *itt.* So, in l. 174, for *sitten* he has *suten.*

7. *Rascled;* Whit. *Rastled.*

8. *renk;* Whit. *reuk*, here and elsewhere. "Rouke or Reuke, a man.

S.;" Whit. Glos. By "S." he means Anglo-Saxon. But the A.S. form is *rine*.

23. Accidentally omitted in Whitaker.

36. *yf.* The alliteration shews that this word is to be pronounced *yif.*

58. *flatte;* so in MS.; Whit. *slatte.* "*Slatt,* i. e. splashed;" Whit. Paraph. "*Slatte,* to splash. *Lancashire;*" Whit. Glos. But the alliteration is decisive against all this, on the one hand; and, on the other, the MSS. all have *flatte.*

87. *As god wole;* in MS. P. only. It is written in red ink, and added at the end of the line, after *brynge.*

92. *kenne;* Whit. *kennes,* but corrected in Errata.

137. *secte;* Whit. *seete,* perhaps a misprint, as in l. 141 it is *secte.*

141. *was;* so in MS.; Whit. omits.

155. *A;* Whit. *I;* perhaps a misprint. For *clene* (l. 156) he has *dere.*

161. *paynym;* "an error of the transcriber. MS. B. reads *Palmere;*" Whit. Note. It is no error, but a very curious variation between MSS. of the B-type and the C-type.

185. *seruen;* so in Whit. The MS. accidentally has *seren.*

254. *yn in;* so in MS.; Whit. *yn.* It means—"to enter in this way."

255. *sytte;* Whit. omits.

265. *deuh.* Most MSS. read *dewe* or *dew;* so also in B-text. Whit. proposes to read *deuel,* i. e. devil; but no MS. has such a reading.

305. *care;* Whit. *can,* wrongly.

Passus IX. 52. *disours,* storytellers; Whit. *dicours,* explained *dicers;* wrongly.

68. *maugre;* Whit. *in angre.* The *m* happens to be written a little way off the *a* in the MS.

90. *worching;* "the sense evidently requires, that for *worching* be read *wording;*" Whit. Note. This is an excellent suggestion, and I have no doubt it is correct. My only reason for not introducing it into the text is that all the MSS. agree in the mistake.

127. *þe deuel haue þat recche;* Whit. *þe devel have þe retche;* "the devil may take the wretch for me;" Whit. Paraph. The sense is somewhat different, viz. the devil take him who cares (recks). Here *þe* is evidently an error for *þat,* the reading of all other MSS., and *recche* is the 3 p. s. pr. subjunctive mood.

153. *fecchen;* Whit. *setthen,* wrongly.

156. *þo;* Whit. omits, probably by accident.

158. In this line, he omits the word *of.*

185. *hem;* Whit. omits.

188. *he botnede,* he bettered. Strictly speaking, the *n* belongs to the intransitive form; but the B-text has *were botnede,* which exhibits the same error in another form. "I once thought the letter *n* in this word redundant, and that it was *botede.* I am now persuaded that it means *buttoned* (!), that

is, bound up, or cured of their pretended ailments;" Whit. Note. This is out of the question; the O.E. *botoun* was generally used to signify the bud of a flower; and I suspect the verb *to button* is comparatively modern.

216. *final;* Whit. *smal.* He misread it.

261. *here bylyue byswynken,* toil for their livelihood. Whit. says—"either *he* is redundant, or must be read *hem;*" note. But *he* is for "*here,*" a not uncommon error with scribes, who, after writing "*he,*" forgot to make the little curl above. Whit. was puzzled by the word *bylyue,* which he took to mean *early;* cf. note to Pass. ii. 18, above.

262. *þorgh;* Whit. *porgh,* a misprint.

328. *Coket.* The *C* is rather small; hence Whit. misread it *soket.*

351. The MSS. seem, in general, to have *.vm.,* not *viii.* It is hardly possible to say what is meant.

353. *deþ—derthe.* "The words appear to be inverted; after *dearth* shall come *death.* I leave the enigma to more sagacious guessers;" Whit. Note. Whatever difficulty there may be in the passage, this line, at any rate, is clear; and it is right as it stands. It is well known that the plague called "the Death" was *followed* by a famine, owing to the very cause which the poet specifies, viz. a want of labourers and consequent insubordination amongst them. The prophecy was doubtless written *after the event.*

PASSUS X. 1. *sente;* omitted by Whit. in his text, but added in his Errata. It probably "dropped out" at press.

3. *a culpa;* so in MS.; Whit. omits *a.* See l. 23.

88. *ich wot;* Whit. *wit wot,* corrected in Errata.

147. *ys;* so in MS; Whit. omits; but he has *ys is* in l. 146.

182. *falle;* Whit. *shall falle.* There is no *shall* in the MS.

247. Whit. notes that the reading of his MS. B. is also *Comynge.*

277. *þo.* Whit. proposes to read *lo;* I do not know why.

300. *which;* Whit. *with.* But the MS. has *wich,* the scribe's usual spelling of *which.*

305. *dyuinede;* Whit. *dymnede,* which he explains by "dreamed;" I do not know why.

PASSUS XI. 40. *sittеþ;* Whit. *suteþ;* as usual.

76. *þridde,* third; Whit. *pridde,* a printer's error; yet it is repeated in l. 102.

90. *þat ȝe;* Whit. *þaty e* (*sic*); a misprint.

94. *adoune;* so in MS.; Whit. *down.*

96. It means—"such men think that, because of their muck (i. e. wealth) and their moveable property," &c. Not as in Whit. Paraph.—"Lords regard such men as no better than dung or cattle."

101. *diuinede;* Whit. *dimnede,* which he translates by "determined;" see note to x. 305 above.

173. *in þe herte;* though the MS. omits *in,* there is a small blank space left for it.

189. *to hepe;* so in MS. (correctly); Whit. *to kepe.* This mistake is the same as that remarked upon in my edition of Chaucer's Astrolabe, p. xxviii. l. 10.

212. *Caym;* Whit. *Cayin.* But what would then become of Wycliffe's joke about C. A. I. M meaning Carmelites, Augustines, Jacobins, and Minorites? See P. Pl. Crede, note to l. 486. Besides, the MSS. all have *Caym.*

233. The sense is—"here the son paid the penalty of his grandfather's offences." Whit. Paraph. has—"the sins of the ancestor bought (punishment for) the son;" which reverses the cases of the substantives. In his Note he says—"I can assign no other sense to this difficult passage." Yet *abie* is a common word in Early English, and still commoner is its corrupted form *abide* in the phrase "thou shalt dear *abide* it." Cf. the Lat. quotation at l. 235.

266. *knyght;* Whit. *kyght,* a misprint.

275. *cheste,* i. e. strife. Whit. Paraph. "chests;" but in his note he says —"Perhaps the word is here meant to be equivocal; *chests* or *quarrels,* which last is the oldest sense." That is, he withdraws his first explanation.

286. *lykynge,* pleasant. Whit. Paraph. "sticking." Whit. note has—"The comparison being with birdlime, proves the meaning to be what I have assigned to it, i. e. licking or sticking fast." No example, however, is added of *lick* in the sense of *sticking fast.*

304. Whit. gives two wrong explanations of this line, one in the Paraph., and one in the Notes. He did not see that *my friend* is in the vocative case.

306. *lene;* so in MS.; Whit. *lere.*

307. *ȝeme,* to take care of; Whit. *ȝeine,* which he translates by *gain;* wrongly.

Passus XII. 26. *seith;* Whit. omits. It is in the MS.

38. *ballede,* i. e. bald. Whit. Paraph. has "worthy of a ballad."

69. *deleþ,* distributes, gives away. Whit. has *nedeþ,* by some mistake.

76. *nǫu,* i. e. now; Whit. *non.*

79. *hit,* so in MS.; Whit. *lut.*

95. *comsynges,* i. e. commencings, beginnings; Whit. *conisynges,* wrongly.

97. *of scripture* must be governed by *comsynges;* "he knows the beginnings (sources) of Dowell, Dobet, and Dobest (for he is known as a doctor), and of scripture," &c. The passage is the same in all the MSS.; but the truth is, that the author has revised the passage very unskilfully. The B-text is better and clearer in every way. Whit. supposes a line to have been lost; but that will not much mend matters.

101. *þat þat;* so in MS.; Whit. *þat.*

104. *to gyfte,* as a gift; so in MS.; Whit *to gyste;* Whit. Paraph. "for his performance;" which probably was obtained by putting *gyste* = *geste,* i. e. a tale.

151. Whit. omits the first *and;* but it is in the MS.

158—160. Whit. Paraph. is all wrong here.

163. *þanne;* MS. The. "*The* is evidently *tho*, i. e. then;" Whit. Note. No doubt this is the right account of the false reading *The. shewede*, Whit. *she wede;* a misprint.

167. *worth;* so in Whit.; but MS. has *warth.* However, *worth* is right.

210. *lettrure;* so in MS.; Whit. *lettere.*

224. *ne þy connynge, scripture;* "or thy learned scriptures;" Whit. Paraph. But *scripture* is here in the vocative case.

230. *of þis molde*, i. e. of this world; as usual. Whit. Paraph. has "of this stamp" [mould]; wrongly.

232. *At;* Whit. *Act;* prob. a misprint.

233. *mot;* Whit. *not;* but corrected in Errata.

245. *holychurche* should rather be *holy kirke;* unfortunately MS. I (which commonly has this spelling) is imperfect here. Our author uses *both* forms, viz. *chirche* and *kirke;* see xiii. 51.

248. *culorum;* so in MS.; Whit. *culor*, on which he has most extraordinary remarks. Thus—"the keelers in this case" is his translation in Paraph., and his Note says—"The *culor* of this cause may however mean the figure or type, but I prefer the other interpretation." It is right as it stands, being a contraction for *in secula seculorum*, a common ending of prayers, and hence, any tag-end or sequel.

257. *seynt;* Whit. omits, by mistake.

273. *pyne;* Whit. *þyne;* corrected in Errata.

291, 292. Whit. omits these two lines; but they are represented in his Paraphrase. In his Notes, however, he makes an alteration, shewing that he was completely puzzled. It is easy to see what happened. He no doubt transcribed the lines, and paraphrased them; but the printer omitted them in the text, owing to the repetition of the word *by-leyue*, at the end of lines 290 and 292. Hence his bewilderment.

PASSUS XIII. 32. *vndertoke*, reproved; *vndernome* occurs with the same sense. Whit. Paraph. has "attempted."

36. *þow;* Whit. *yow.* But *yow* is the accus. case.

52. *vnderfong*, received; Whit. Paraph. has "undertook for me."

73. *werkes;* Whit. omits; but it is added in the Errata.

88. The inverted commas (") shew the *beginning* of the speech of Recklessness; the *end* is at P. xiv. l. 128, on p. 238, 18 pages further on.

116. *loue we as;* MS. *loue as;* Whit. *loves*, corrected to *love as* in Errata.

121. *lome*, often; Whit. *loine*, wrongly. His Paraph. has "long since," which points to Fr. *loin* as being the word he was thinking of.

132. *secte*, sect, company; Whit. *sette* (wrongly), which he translates "seat."

180. *ne spik on strawe curne*, nor any spike (shoot) form a kernel (or

grain) upon the top of the straw; not as in Whit. Paraph. "nor spike corn (produce corn) upon the straw." *Spik* is the sb., and *curne* the verb.

204—207. The only incomplete passage in this text. Line 206 is from the Ilchester MS., and is incomplete because the rats have eaten the end of it. The missing portion must have been like what I have suggested in the foot-note. The sense is—"For Christ said to his saints, that for His sake suffered poverty, penance, and persecution of body, (they) shall have the more honour for their reward, and be esteemed more worthy than angels; in their affliction He greeted them on this wise, viz. your sorrow shall be turned into joy." It deserves to be particularly noted that, in our author, as in Hampole, the word *anger* means *affliction* or *distress*, and just answers to the Latin *tristitia*. In l. 207, Whit. misprints *grate* for *grette*, but explains it rightly.

209. *wyrdes*, fates. Whit. Paraph. has "words," but this is corrected in the Notes, with the remark that Gawain Douglas has *wyrdes* in the same sense.

221. *As;* so MS.; Whit. *Ac. pere-Ionettes;* Whit. *pere-ronettes*, wrongly; Whit. Paraph. "pear-rennets." See the articles on *Hastiveau, Hastivel* in Cotgrave's French Dictionary, which will be quoted hereafter.

229. *as;* so MS.; Whit. *us. wose*, i. e. ooze, mud; Whit. Paraph. "old walls;" but corrected in Notes.

Passus XIV. l. 5. *ȝut men rat þat*, i. e. Yet people read that. Whit. notes that his MS. B. [Phil. 8252] has—

"But men seye that Abraham and Iob were ful riche."

26. *lacke*, i. e. blame; not "desire," as in Whit. Par.

34—37. Whit. omits. See the foot-note.

104. *auaunced;* MS. *amanced*, wrongly. Whit. has *amanced*, but in his Paraph. has "advanced," which shews that he got at the right reading by collation with his other MSS.

118. *þat lettere;* MS. *þe letteres;* Whit. *þe lettere*, an emendation probably suggested by collation.

121. *god;* Whit. omits. Hence the extraordinary entry in his Glossary —"*Goky-by*, a fool's fellow." But see l. 120.

169. *Dompynges;* Whit. *Dom þynges*, paraphrased by "dumb things" (!).

171, 172. I shall only remark here that Whitaker's explanations of *caukede* by *screamed*, and *strenede* by *strained*, are both utterly wrong.

241. *a-shamed;* MS. *a-shamede;* Whit. *a-shemede.* Whit. also omits the word *vp* in this line, though it is in the MS.

Passus XV. l. 21. It means—"And for holy church (to be) a help to whores." *Horen* is the gen. pl. There is no difficulty at all, though Whit. wanted to read *horie helpers*, and to explain it by "hoary-headed helpers of holy church." Fortunately, no MS. differs from the text.

25. *wokie*, so in MS. A difficult word, but the same form occurs again elsewhere, viz. in xvii. 332, where it seems to answer to Sc. *wauk*, O.E. *walke*,

to full cloth. Whit. proposes the meanings (1) moisten; (2) irrigate; (3) *whicke* = *quick*, "a word still used in Lancashire for weeding fallow-lands." The last of these is out of the question.

41. *hym-self;* Whit. *hym.* But *self* is in the MS.

96. *a shewere of blisse*, lit. a shewer (discloser) of bliss; though O.E. *shewere* also means *a mirror*. Whit. Par. has—"when a shower of glory shone," &c.; but showers do not *shine*. MS. G. reads *as he were* (!), evidently miscopied.

97. *with;* Whit. *mith*, no doubt a misprint.

106. *swimmen;* MS. "swimen;" not "swumen," as in Whit. See l. 108.

112. *synegy;* so in MS.; Whit. *syngeþ*.

131. "Where ignorant thieves are hung, look how they (who can read, and so obtain benefit of clergy) are saved!" Not as in Whit. Paraph. "while ignorant thieves have been tucked up, howsoever their souls were saved."

150. *tulde;* so in MS.; Whit. *culde*. His Paraph. has "*could not*, i. e. could not (be plunged so) deep." But *tulde* simply means *dwelt;* lit. had his *tilt* or *tent*.

157. *Quare placuit, quia;* so in MS.; Whit has—"Quasi placuit, quare."

173. Whit. suggests that *is* after *That* is redundant; but it is because he wholly misapprehends the passage.

195. Whit. omits this line, yet it appears in his Paraph.

PASSUS XVI. 2. *feye*, fated to die, half dead. It is quite correct. Whit. proposes to read *freye*, i. e. free, at large, as he explains it. But the old spelling of *free* would be *fre*, not *freye*.

4. *meteles;* so in MS.; Whit. *metele*, wrongly; for *meteles* is in the *singular* number.

13. Whit. omits this line, and his Paraph. is wrong in consequence.

48. *myswonne*, won amiss, gained by cheating; Whit. Paraph. "mislike;" wrongly.

55. *mette;* so in MS.; Whit. *meite*. It means *mate*.

84. *þolede*, suffered; Whit. *polede*, a misprint.

100. *mortreuus*, i. e. *mortrews* (see Chaucer's Prologue); Whit. *mortreinus*, corrected in Errata to *mortuis*, which is still wrong.

121. *preynte*, winked, made a sign; Whit. Par. "pressed;" wrongly.

122. *wil;* Whit. *wel*, but corrected in Errata.

127. *uocabitur;* so in MS.; Whit. *habebitur*.

139. *By-for*, so in MS., but not plainly written; Whit. *Ey for*.

155. "I might, if I wished, win all France;" not as in Whit. Par. "Fair words such as *I wish* and *I will*, had won all France."

156. "Without destruction of men;" not as in Whit. Par. "without any speech [bruit?] of burning towns" (!).

163. *burne*, man; Whit. *barne*, wrongly.

171. *disours*, tale-teller's; not "dicer's," as in Whit. Par. Cf. ix. 52.

207. *Iogelen*, juggle; MS. Iogelyn; Whit. iãgelyn.

219. *founde ich*, if I found; not "I have discovered," as in Whit. Par.

257. *ondyng*, smelling. Whit. Note says, "I am compelled to leave it in uncertainty;" but his Glos. gives the correct meaning.

292. *lo;* so in MS.; Whit. *to*.

301. *wroþer-hele*, misfortune; not "too angry an hell," as in Whit. Par.

307. *hem;* Whit. *hen*, but corrected in Errata.

PASSUS XVII. 12. *muche;* preserved in MS.; Whit. omits.

15. *A-furst and a-fyngred*, athirst and ahungered; Whit. Par. has—"*frost*-bitten, and with blains on their *fingers*" (!).

19. *myghtest;* Whit. *myghtes*. Whit. Par. "For thou Almighty hast made," &c., which is quite wrong; so also is his Note.

20. For *and lyue*, Whit. would read *þat lyue*. Not so; the MSS. are right.

23. *mercy;* Whit. *money;* but Par. "mercy," correctly.

25. *clanse*, cleanse; the sentence means—"to cleanse our souls with." Whit. has *clause;* and Whit. Par. "that we may close with our own souls;" wrongly.

36. *Chartere;* Whit. *sharter*. Cf. note above to ix. 328.

50. *can;* retained in MS.; Whit. omits.

55. *illorum;* Whit. *morum*, corrected in Errata.

59. *mancion*, mansion, dwelling; not "mention," as in Whit. Par.

73. *rentes;* Whit. *rente*, wrongly.

76. *whitel*, blanket; not "knife," as in Whit. Par.

78. *weylawey;* Whit. *weylaweþ*, corrected in Errata.

139. *altoun;* MS. *haultone;* but all other MSS. omit the aspirate. Whit. Note says—"Halton in Cheshire, formerly infamous to a proverb, as an haunt of robbers;" an assertion of which he offers no proof. But it means Alton in Hampshire, as will be shewn at length hereafter.

143. *nyghtes*. The alliteration shews that this is right, and not *myghtes*, as in MS. P. Besides, the reference is to a poor traveller, who knows not whom he may meet in the dark.

171. *uoise*, voice; Whit. *noise*, wrongly; see foot-note.

191. *chepe*, i. e. buy, barter for; Whit. *chesse* (wrongly), which he explains by "chuse."

197. *feye*, dying, dead. Whit. proposes to read *fere* or *ferre;* his Par. has —"leave the flesh far away." Cf. note above to xvi. 2.

226. *swelleþ;* Whit. *dwelleþ*, wrongly.

250. *more*, root; not "moor, i. e. soil," as in Whit. Par.

265. *a;* appears in MS.; Whit. omits.

311. *to;* appears in MS.; Whit. omits.

332. *wokeþ;* so in MS.; Whit. *worketh*.

340. *sitteþ;* Whit. *suteþ;* he often puts *ut* for *itt.*

350. Whit. Note says—"I am now persuaded that the word *walketh* ought to end the sentence, and that the next line is to be connected with what follows." This hardly seems to go so well.

354. *secte;* Whit. *seate,* wrongly; cf. note above to xiii. 132.

365. *knowen;* for this word, Whit. prints *answer;* but, oddly enough, his Paraph. has "know."

PASSUS XVIII. l. 37. *seyde,* said; Whit. *deyde,* which he explains by "did."

44. *for;* appears in MS.; Whit. omits.

71. *purnele,* i. e. Purnel, a common name for a concubine. There is no need, with Whit., to alter it to *purple.*

78. *þese;* it should have been noted that the MS. has *þes.* Whit. prints *þei,* which is false grammar.

95. *lyft,* sky; Whit. *lyst,* which he explains by "the catalogues of the heavenly bodies" (!).

101. *notye,* use; not "note down in their accounts," as in Whit. Par.

118. *ouerhuppe,* lit. hop over, i. e. omit; Whit. *overshuppe,* which he explains by "overskip."

212. It means—"How those accursed Christians worshipped wealth and riches;" Whit. Par. has a singular interpretation, but he corrects it in the Notes.

218. Whitaker's suggestion that the misreading *To* at the beginning of this line in P. was due to the *To* in the line above, is doubtless correct.

226. *preye;* Whit. *yreye,* a misprint. So is his *and* for *ȝe* (l. 227), and *þe* for *ȝe* (l. 228).

258. Whit. has two misprints in this line; he omits *a,* and prints *as* for the second *in.*

261. Whit. omits *of* before *damaske,* but it is in the MS.

277. Here Whit. has an odd mistake. He misprints *forbusur* for *forbusne,* and explains it by *furbisher!* It means an *example.* In his Glossary he strangely mixes up the right and wrong explanations; he has—"*Forbusus, Forbusur* [neither of which forms occur], *Forbusene,* appear to mean an example or illustration; perhaps it may only mean furbisher."

312. *lore,* teaching; Whit. *love,* wrongly.

320. *lytulum and lytulum;* written *lytulhum and lytulum,* by mistake. Upon this error, however, Whit. built up the following most amazing explanation, which is found in his paraphrase, at p. 303. I do not at all understand how he makes it out, but here it is. "Bishops and priests should try if they can also teach them little hum, *i. e.* I Hu M and Little um, *i. e.* Xum—Jesus Christ his Son." This extraordinary guess can seldom have been surpassed.

PASSUS XIX. 3. *me;* Whit. *em,* a misprint.

5. *Herber*, herbarium or herb-garden; not "harbour," as in Whit. Par.

13. *hym;* Whit. *þem*, wrongly.

18. *ȝe fowche;* MS. *ȝe foweche;* Whit. *ȝef owiche*, a misprint.

31. *hem;* Whit. *þem*, wrongly.

44. *ronges*, rounds; not "shafts" or "upright posts," as in Whit. Par. and Glos.

64. *sonner*, sooner; Whit. *somme;* but corrected in Errata.

67. *by;* Whit. *dy;* a misprint.

75. *crop*, top, not "fruit," as in Whit. Par. *treo;* Whit. *tres*, wrongly.

108. *crie;* Whit. *trie*, wrongly.

119. *shoriere*, shorer or prop; Whit. *shouer*, which he explains by "shower" (!).

126. *Iouken;* so in MS. and in B-text; Whit. *rouken*.

137. *ar*, ere; Whit. *as*, wrongly. But his Par. has "before."

140. *yseye*, seen; not "I say," as in Whit. Par.

165. *ȝorn*, lit. ran; *ȝorn in*, ran amongst, pervaded; cf. *porsuede* in the line following. It cannot mean "yearned" (as in Whit. Par.), because *yearn* is a weak verb. Cf. note below to xxii. 380.

193. *surlepes*, separate; miswritten *surlepees* in MS. Whit. Par. has the very extraordinary suggestion that *surlepes* = *sur le þes* = *sur le thèse*, i. e. "subjects of disputation in the schools" (!). Fortunately, his Note says he has "no high opinion" of this explanation.

PASSUS XX. 1. *spire;* MS. *spirr;* Whit. *spur*.

12. *pece;* Whit. *peece*. *roche;* Whit. *rocke*.

16. Whit. suggests the reading I have given.

34. Whit. omits *her*, but it is in the MS.

42. *in o;* so in MS.; Whit. *mo*, whence the error in his Par.—"in more lords."

66. *perceyuede;* misprinted *preyvede* in Whit.

112, 113. Whit. omits from *and ȝut* in l. 112 to *fust* in l. 113, no doubt owing to the recurrence of the word *fust*.

118—120. Here again Whit. omits three lines, owing to the recurrence of the word *bytokneþ*.

151. *hit;* occurs in MS.; Whit. omits.

169. Whit. omits *a*, and misprints *wike* for *weke*.

188, 189. Whit. omits from *bygynne* in l. 188 to *gost* in l. 189, owing to the repetition of *holy gost*.

211. *þou;* Whit. *you*, wrongly: for *you* is never a nom. case in Langland.

240. MS. has *a-teniye*, both here and in l. 244. In l. 240 Whit. prints *atemye*, but in l. 244 *a-teniye;* in the Errata, he proposes to read *attennye*.

243. *hem;* Whit. *hew;* a misprint, corrected in Errata.

275. *nouthe*, now; Whit. *nauthe*, which he explains by *not*, thus reversing the sense.

296. *paye;* Whit. *praye*, wrongly.

307. *Koweþ*, cougheth; Whit. has *Knoweþ*, but it is corrected in Errata and Notes.

PASSUS XXI. 1. *wetschod;* MS. *wetschode;* Whit. *weitschode.*

2. *renke;* Whit. *reuke*, wrongly.

12. *ycouped;* MS. *ycoped;* Whit. *ytoped*, which he explains by "topped"

36. *here beyer ryght*, i. e. the rights of both of them; *beyer* means *of both*, and is the gen. pl. Whit. seems to have supposed it to be another form of *buyer;* at any rate, he explains it by "their undertaker or champion" (!). See, however, the note to l. 374, below.

82. *lore* = *lorn*, lost; Whit. *lose*, wrongly.

105. *rennyng*, running, viz. in his course; an allusion to the running a tilt in a tournament; it does not mean "running away," as suggested in Whit. Par.

128. *roued* or *rowed*, dawned; Whit. *roned*, which he explains by—"was foul with rain."

144. A cross is here drawn in the margin of the MS., evidently with reference to "the tree" mentioned.

202. *as hit;* Whit. *it hit;* corrected in Errata.

250. *tenden*, lighted, kindled; not "tended," as in Whit. Par.

287. *chyne*, chink; still the MS. has not *chync*, as Whit. prints it.

289. "And thou, Astrot, hoot out;" not "burning Astarte," which is the sense Whit. gives to *Astrot hot.* In his Notes, he gives another interpretation; but that also is incorrect.

347. *syghte;* Whit. misprints *lyghte.*

374. *beyere*, gen. pl. of both, as in l. 36. Whit. proposes to read *breþere;* but see the various readings in the foot-note.

418. *Feondes and feondekenes*, fiends and fiendkins (i.e. little fiends); not "Fiends and their *kin*," as in Whit. Par.

435. *aworeke;* Whit. *a worcke;* but corrected in Errata.

459, 460. Whit. omits from *and wrake* in l. 459 to *werre* in l. 460; clearly owing to the recurrence of *werre.*

470. *lowd;* but Whit. says—"undoubtedly *low.*" Why so?

PASSUS XXII. 15. Whit. has four misprints in this line, viz. *call* for *calle*, *syþen* for *siþthen*, *Iewes* for *Iuwes*, and *calde* for *cald.*

38. *þo* occurs in the MS.; Whit. omits it.

86. *sense*, incense; not "sense," as in Whit. Par.

123. *he* occurs twice in this line in the MS.; Whit. omits it the second time.

149. *by-knewen*, confessed; Whit. has *by-knowen*, which he explains by "divined."

159. *lyues*, alive; the old gen. used adverbially; Whit. has *lynes*, which he explains by "in his own lineaments" (!).

162. *may nat wel be consail*, i. e. may not well be counsel, cannot be easily

kept a secret; not "may not well be accepted as established truth," as in Whit. Par. Women are as truthful as men, but—they cannot keep a secret. And this is why (says Langland) Christ appeared to Mary Magdalene, viz. in order to ensure a wide publication of the fact of the resurrection.

195. *payeþ*; Whit. *prayeþ*, but corrected in the Errata.

219. *encombry*; Whit. *emcombry*, wrongly.

234. *syllynge and byggynge*, selling and buying; not as in Whit. Par.—"by building and ceiling houses" (!). Whit. was evidently thinking of O.E. *bigge*, to build; but how *syllynge* = *ceiling* is less clear.

238. *theche and to coke*, thatch and cock (put hay into cocks); or else, thatch and cook. Either meaning will serve, but other passages shew the former to be more likely; cf. vi. 13. For *theche*, MS. has *teche*, by a clerical error. Whit. prints *leche*, and his Par. has—"to hedge and ditch;" but which is "hedge" and which is "ditch" he does not tell us.

284. *Ne sholde no*; Whit. *No sholde ne*, but corrected in Errata.

293. *ne was*; Whit. *was ne*, wrongly.

359. *þere*; Whit. *here*, wrongly.

380. *ȝernynge*, running; Whit. Par. "bursting," which looks as if he connected it with *yearn*. Cf. note above to xix. 165.

Passus XXIII. l. 82. *crampes*; MS. *claumpes*; Whit. *clamupes*, a misprint.

100. *douste*; so in MS.; Whit. *dust*.

143. *let dagge hus cloþes*, had his clothes *dagged*, i. e. cut or slit at the edges; not as in Whit. Par.—"caused his clothes to fall down."

169. *helpe*; so in MS.; Whit. *helþe*, wrongly.

172. *houe*, hood; not as in Whit. Par. "phial." It was a proverbial phrase. See Chaucer, ed. Morris, vol. iv. p. 256, l. 726; and vol. v. p. 20, l. 469, where *hoxen* is, as I suppose, a misreading for *howue*; since Tyrwhitt prints *hove*.

193—198. Designedly omitted by Whitaker.

210. *þe*; so in MS.; Whit. *age*, a strange error.

225. *many*; Whit. *more*, wrongly.

336. *salues*, salves; Whit *saules*; yet he explains it correctly.

Richard the Redeles.

Richard the redeles.

[*Prologus.*]

And as I passid in my preiere · þer prestis were at messe, [Fol. 107 b.] As I passed through Bristol,
In a blessid borugh · þat bristow is named,
In a temple of þe trinite · þe toune euen amyddis,
That cristis chirche is cleped · amonge þe comune peple, near Christ Church,
Sodeynly þer sourdid · selcouþe þingis, strange events arose.
A grett wondir to wyse men · as it well myȝth,
And dowtes ffor to deme · ffor drede comynge after.
So sore were þe sawis · of bothe two sidis, It was said that, whilst Richard was warring in Ireland,
Of Richard þat Regned · so Riche and so noble,
That whyle he werrid be west · on þe wilde yrisshe,
Henrri was entrid · on the est half, Henry entered England in the East.
Whom all þe londe loued · in lengþe and in brede,
And ros with him rapely · to riȝtyn his wronge,
ffor he shullde hem serue · of þe same after.

In these foot-notes, the reader will find the rejected readings of the MS., corrections in which have been but very sparingly made.

Besides these, all the more important parallel passages from the "Vision" *are cited, with proper references. Thus, at l.* 12, *a quotation is given from l.* 261 *of* Passus iv. *of the* C-text, *as denoted by* C. 4. 261. *The* C-text *has been chosen for reference (where possible) because the reader has it in his hand, and has only to turn back till he finds the passage cited.*

10. *whyle;* MS. wyle.

12. *Cf.* He had be lord of þat *londe · in lengthe and in brede;* C. 4. 261.

13. *Cf.* Two *rysen rapliche* · and rounede to-geders; C. 7. 383. For *ros*, the MS. has *rosse*.

These tales greatly troubled me.

Thus tales me troblid · ffor þey trewe were,
And amarride my mynde rith moche · and my wittis eke :
ffor it passid my parceit · and my *p*reifis also,
How so wondirffull werkis · wolde haue an ende.

Some men began to repent, and thought it a pity that Reason had not reformed misrule.

But in sothe whan þey sembled · some dede repente,
As knowyn is in cumpas · of Cristen londis,
That rewthe was, if reson · ne had reffo*ur*med
The myssecheff & þe mysserule · þ*at* me*n* þo in endurid.
I had pete of his passion · þ*at* prince was of Walis,
And eke oure crouned kynge · till crist woll no leng*er* ;

I kept my allegiance to Richard.

And as a lord to his liage · þou3 I lite hade,
All my*n* hoole herte was his · while he in helthe regnid.

Not knowing what would happen,

And ffor I wuste not witt*er*ly · what shulde ffall,
Whedir god wolde 3eue him grace · sone to amende,
To be oure gioure a3eyn · or graunte it ano*þer*,

I began to write a poem of advice to the king,

This made me to muse · many tyme and ofte,
For to written him a writte · to wissen him bett*er*,
And to meuve him of mysserewle · his mynde to reffresshe,
ffor to preise þe prynce · þ*at* p*ar*adise made,

recommending him to have patience.

To ffullfill him w*ith* ffeith · and ffortune aboue,
And not to grucchen a grott · a3eine godis sonde,
But mekely to suffre · what so him sente were.

[Fol. 108.]

If my advice will do him good,

And 3if him list to loke · a leef o*þer* tweyne,
That made is to mende him · of his myssededis,
And to kepe him in confforte · in crist and nou3t ellis,

15. *were ;* MS. *where.*

22. *endurid ;* no doubt a corruption of *durede*, the true old form.

27. *wuste ;* MS. *wost ;* but see Pass. i. ll. 49 and 64, below.

30. *Cf. Musynge* on þis meteles · a myle-wey ich 3eode.
And *meny tymes* this meteles · *made me* to studie ; C. 10. 296.

35. *Cf.* On *god*, whenne me greued ouht · and *grucched of hus sonde ;* C. 7. 111.

37. *Cf.* First I lerned to lye · *a leef other tweyne ;* B. 5. 203.

I wolde be gladde þat his gost · myȝte glade be my wordis, — I shall rejoice at it.
And grame if it greued him · be god þat me bouȝte!
Ther nys no gouernour on þe grounde · ne sholde gye him þe better— — There is no king upon earth but might profit by my words, if he could read English.
And euery Cristen kyng · þat ony [croune] bereth,
So he were lerned on þe langage · my lyff durst I wedde—
ȝif he waite well þe wordis, and so werche þerafter;
ffor all is tresour of þe trinite · þat turneth men to gode.
And as my body & my beste · ou[ȝ]te to be my liegis, — It is my duty to advise my lord.
So rithffully be reson · my rede shulde also,
ffor to conceill, and I couthe · my kyng and þe lordis;
And þer-ffor I ffondyd · with all my ffyue wyttis
To traueile on þis tretis · to teche men þer-after
To be war of wylffulnesse · lest wondris arise.
And if it happe to ȝoure honde · beholde þe book onys, — If, my liege, my book reaches your hand, deign to read it.
And redeth on him redely · rewis an hundrid,
And if ȝe sauere sum dell · se it fforth ouere,
ffor reson is no repreff · be the rode of chester!
And if ȝe ffynde ffables · or ffoly þer amonge, — If you find fables or folly in it, correct them.
Or ony ffantasie yffeyned · þat no ffrute is in,
Lete ȝoure conceill corette it · and clerkis to-gedyr,
And amende þat ys amysse · and make it more better:
ffor ȝit it is secrette · and so it shall lenger, — It still remains unpublished.

43. *croune;* MS. *grounde*, an obvious error, copied from l. 42.

44. *Cf.* Ich dorst haue *leid my lyue* · and no lasse *wedde;* C. 4. 260.

46. *Cf.* Ther treuthe is, þe trone · þat *trinite* ynne sitteþ . . Than treuthe & trewe loue · ys no *tresour* bettere; C. 2. 134—136.

48. *Cf.* —*bi Reson*, And *Rihtfuliche*, &c.; A. 1. 92, 93; *also*, For *ryhtfulliche reson;* C. 2. 50.

49. *couthe;* MS. *couȝthe*.

50. For *ffondyd*, MS. had *ffordyd*, but it has been altered to *ffondyd*. Mr Wright prints *ffordyd*, but see B. 15. 327; and cf. C. 2. 15.

55. *Cf.* ȝut *sauereþ* me nat þi sawe; C. 11. 107.

56. *Cf. bi þe Rode of chestre;* B. 5. 467.

Tyll wyser wittis · han waytid it ouere,
That it be lore laweffull · and lusty to here.
ffor witterly, my will is · þat it well liked
I hope it may profit the young. 3ou and all 3ouris · and yonge men leueste,
To be-nyme hem her noyes · þat neweth hem ofte.
ffor and þey mvse þeron · to þe myddwardis,
They shall [fynde] ffele ffawtis · ffoure score and odde,
That yough[th]e weneth alwey · þat it be witte euere.
If older men read it, it will not harm them. And thou3 þat elde opyn it · oþer-while amonge,
And poure on it preuyly · and preue it well after,
And constrewe ich clause · with þe culorum,
It shulde not apeire hem a peere · a prynce þou3 he were,
Ne harme noþer hurte · þe hyghest of þe rewme,
[Fol. 108 b.] But to holde him in hele · and helpe all his ffrendis.
If any word makes my sovereign wrath, I pray him to believe that I mean no ill. And if ony word write be · þat wrothe make myghte
My souereyne, þat suget · I shulde to be,
I put me in his power · and preie him, of grace,
To take þe entent of my troupe · þat thou3te non ylle.
ffor to wrath no wyght · be my wyll neuere,
As my soule be saff · ffrom synne at myn ende.
þe story is of non estate · þat stryuen with her lustus,
But þo þat ffolwyn her fflessh · and here ffrelle þou3tis;
So if my conceyll be clere · I can saie no more,
Let him that is grieved learn to mend his ways. But ho be greued in his gost · gouerne him better,
And blame not þe berne · þat the book made,
But þe wickyd will · and þe werkis after.

68. The word *fynde* has obviously been omitted here; it is not in the MS.

72. *Cf.* þe *culorum* of þis *clause*; A. 3. 264; C. 12. 248.

78. *Cf.* Thenne knelede ich on my knees · and criede hure *of grace*,
And *preide hure* pytously;
C. 2. 76, 77.

[*Passus Primus.*]

Now, Richard þe redeles · reweth on 3ou self, Richard, void of counsel, take pity on yourself!
þat lawelesse leddyn 3oure lyf · and 3oure peple ofte;
ffor þoru þe wyles and wronge · and wast in 3oure tyme,
3e were lyghtlich y-lyfte · ffrom þat 3ou leef þou3te,
And ffrom 3oure willffull werkis · 3oure will was chaungid, Your will has been turned from good.
And rafte was 3oure riott · and rest, ffor 3oure daiez
Weren wikkid þoru 3oure cursid counceill · 3oure karis weren newed,
And coueitise hath crasid · 3oure croune ffor euere!
Radix omnium malorum cupiditas. 1 Tim. vi. 10.
Of alegeaunce now lerneth · a lesson oþer tweyne Learn how allegiance is confirmed;
Wher-by it standith · and stablithe moste—
By drede, or be dyntis · or domes vntrewe,
Or by creaunce of coyne · ffor castes of gile,
By pillynge of 3oure peple · 3oure prynces to plese; not by pillage of your people, or,
Or þat 3oure wylle were wrou3te · þou3 wisdom it nolde;— taxes imposed in time of peace,
Or be tallage of 3oure townes · without ony werre,
By rewthles routus · þat ryffled euere,
By preysinge of polaxis · þat no pete hadde,
Or be dette ffor þi dees · deme as þou ffyndist;

Pass. i. 4. *y-lyfte;* so in MS. Mr Wright prints *y-lyste.*

9. *Cf.* Furst I *leornede* to lyȝe · *a lessun or tweyne;* A. 5. 117.

11. *drede;* MS. dride, *but altered to* drede.

15. *townes;* MS. towunes *or* townnes.

16. *routus;* MS. routus, *altered to* routes, *unnecessarily.*

17. *Cf.* Or Poule þe apostle · *þat no pitee hadde;* B. 10. 424; C. 12. 268.

but by law and love.

Or be ledinge of lawe · *with* loue well ytemprid.
Though þis be derklich endited · ffor a dull nolle,
Miche nede is it not · to mwse þ*er*-on,
ffor as mad as I am · þou3 I litill kunne,
[Fol. 109.] I cowde it discryue · in a ffewe wordys;
Allegiance without loue is of no avail. ffor legiance *with*out loue · litill þinge availith.
But graceles gostis · gylours of hem-self,
That neu*er*e had harnesse · ne hayle schouris,
But walwed in her willis · ffor-weyned in here youthe;
Your courtiers cared only for ease, þey sawe no man*er*e si3th · saff solas and ese,
And cowde no mysse amende · whan mysscheff was vp,
But sorwed ffor her lustus · of lordsch[i]pe þey hadde,
but never wept one tear for their sins. And neu*er*e ffor her trespas · oo tere wolde þey lete!
3e come to 3oure kyngdom · er 3e 3oure-self knewe,
Crouned *with* a croune · þ*at* kyng vnd*er* heuene
Mi3te not a bett*er* · haue bou3te, as I trowe;
Your crown, at your accession, was one of splendour. So ffull was it ffilled · *with* vertuous stones,
With perlis of pris · to punnysshe þe wrongis,
With rubies rede · þe ri3th for to deme,
With gemmes and Iuellis · Ioyned to-gedir,
And pees amonge þe peple · ffor peyne of þi lawis.
It was of gold and diamonds, It was ffull goodeliche ygraue · *with* gold al aboute;
The braunchis aboue · boren grett charge;
With diamauntis derne · y-doutid of all
That wrou[3]te ony wrake · *with*in or *with*oute;

19. *Cf.* And *ledeþ þe lawe* as hure lust · and *louedayes* makeþ; C. 4. 196.

24. *Cf.* Lawe *with-outen loue* · leye þere a bene! B. 11. 165.

25. *gostis;* so in MS.; printed *gestis* by Mr Wright.

27. *Cf.* And lete no wynnynge *forwene* hem · *þe while þei ben 3onge;* C. 6. 138.

29. *Cf.* þi *myschief is vppe;* B. 4. 72.

30. *lustus;* altered to *lustes* in MS.

33—37. *Cf.* And *coroned with a corone* · þe *kynge hath no betere;* . . . And þer-on *rede rubies* · and oþer *riche stones;* C. 3. 11, 13.

40. *aboute;* MS. *abou3te*, both here and in ii. 2, 15, and 102. *Cf. gold al a-boute;* C. 3. 158.

42, 45. *Cf.* And *diamantz* of derrest pris · and double manere *safferes;* B. 2. 13; *see the whole passage. y-doutid;* written *y-douutid* in MS.; so in l. 46 the MS. has *Y-pouudride.*

With lewte and loue · yloke to þi peeris,
And sapheris swete · þ*at* sou3te all wrongis,
Ypoudride wyth pete · þ*er* it be ou3te,
And traylid with trouþe · and treste al aboute;
ffor ony cristen kynge · a croune well ymakyd.

adorned with sapphires, and powdered over with pity.

But where þis croune bicome · a clerk were þ*at* wuste;
But so as I can · declare it I thenke,
And nempne no name; · but þo þ*at* nest were,
ffull p*reuyly* þey pluckud · þy power awey,
And reden w*ith* realte · 3oure rewme þoru-oute,
And as tyrauntis, of tiliers · token what hem liste,
And paide hem on her pannes · whan her penyes lacked.

Where it is now, who can tell?

Thy courtiers plucked away thy power.

ffor no*n* of 3oure peple · durste pleyne of here wrongis,
ffor drede of 3oure dukys · & of here double harmes.

Thy people dared not complain.

Men my3tten as well haue huntyd · an hare w*ith* a tabre,
As aske ony mendis · ffor þ*at* þei mysdede,
Or of ony of her men · þou3 me*n* wulde plete,
ffor all was ffelawis and ffelawschepe · þ*at* 3e w*ith* fferde,
And no soule p*er*sone · to punnyshe þe wrongis;
And þ*at* maddid þi me*n* · as þei nede muste.
ffor wo, þey ne wuste · to whom ffor to pleyne.
ffor, as it is said · by elderne dawis,
'þ*er* gromes and the goodmen · beth all eliche grette,
Woll wo beth þe wones · and all þ*at* woneth þ*er*-in!'

[Fol. 109 b.] Men might as well have hunted a hare with a tabor, as have sought redress.

This maddened thy people.

Where all men are equal, wo be to the realm!

44. *Cf.* Ac *loue* and louhnesse · and *leaute* to-gederes; C. 4. 447.

46. See note to l. 42, above.

49. *Cf.* I *ne wot where þei bicome;* B. 5. 651.

51. *nest;* MS. *nest* or *neft.* Mr Wright prints *neft*, but leaves it unexplained, there being no such word; *nest* is *nighest.*

53. *reden;* so in MS., though afterwards altered to *ryden.* Yet *reden* may stand, as it occurs in the Lansdowne MS. of Chaucer; Prol. l. 825. See also C. 2. 91.

55. *Cf.* the account of how "Pees" came by his "*panne* blody;" C. 5. 74.

56. *Cf.* For *pore men der nat pleyne* · ne here pleinte shewe; C. 4. 214; *see the whole passage.*

Þey ladde 3ou *with* loue · *þat* 3oure lawe dradde,
To deme 3oure dukys myssdedis · so derne þei were.
Thus was your crown cracked. Thus was 3oure croune crasid · till he was cast newe,
Þoru *par*tinge of 3oure powere · to 3oure *par*agals.
Thus lacchide þey *with* laughinge · and lourid longe after,
But ffrist sawe they it not · ne youre-self no*þer*;
All was well done, as you thought. ffor all was wisliche ywrou3te · as 3oure witte demed,
And no ffautis y-ffounde · till ffortune aperid.
But had 3oure croune be kepte · *þat* comons it wiste,
Þer nadde morder ne myssceff · be amonge þe grette.
Thus 3oure cautell to the comoune · hath combred 3ou all,
That, but if god helpe · 3oure heruest is ynne.
Blame not your council, but yourself. Wyteth it not 3oure counceill · but wyteth it more 3oure-self,
The ffortune *þat* ffallyn is · to ffeitheles peple;
Take good heed of my words. And wayte well my wordis · and wrappe hem to-gedir,
And constrwe [þoru] clergie · þe clause in þin herte,
Of maters *þat* I thenke · to meve ffor the best
ffor kyngis and kayseris · comynge here-after.
In your council, the men whom you chose were all too young. Whane 3e were sette in 3oure se · as a sir aughte,
Ther Carpinge comynliche · of conceill arisith,
The cheuyteyns cheef · *þat* 3e chesse eu*ere*,
Weren all to yonge of 3eris · to yeme swyche a rewme;

72. *Cf.* Þere was *laughyng* and *louryng*; B. 5. 344.

75. *fautis*; MS. *fauutis*.

77. *nadde*; glossed in the MS. by *had nat*.

78. *cautell*; glossed in the MS. by *crafte*.

80. *Wyteth*; misspelt *Wytteth* (alt. to *Wyteth*) the first time, and *wyteh* the second time, in the MS.

83. The word *þoru* (= through) must be supplied; *cf.* *Clerkus* þat were confessours · couplede hem to-gederes *To construe this clause*; C. 5. 146, 147.

84. *Cf.* I dorste *meue* no *matere*; C. 11. 118.

85. *Kayseris*; badly spelt *Kayseceris* in the MS., with the gloss *lordes, rulers*; cf. *Kynges* and knyghtes · *caysers* and popes; C. 23. 101.

86. *sir*; glossed in the MS. by *lorde*.

89. *yeme*; glossed in the MS. by *guyde or rule*.

Oþer hobbis 3e hadden · of hurlewaynis kynne,
Reffusynge the reule · of realles kynde. [Fol. 110.]
And whane 3oure counceill I-knewe · 3e come so at ones,
ffor to leue on her lore · and be led be hem,
ffor drede þat they had · of demynge þer-after,
And ffor curinge of hem-self · cried on 3ou euere,
ffor to hente hele · of her owen greues,
More þan ffor wurschepe · þat þey to 3ou owed,
Þey made 3ou to leue · þat regne 3e ne my3te,
Withoute busshinge adoune · of all 3oure best ffrendis,
Be a ffals colour · her caris to wayve,
And to holde hem in hele · if it happe my3te.
ffor trostiþ rith treuly · and in no tale better,
All þat þey moued · or mynged in þat mater,
Was to be sure of hem-self · and siris to ben y-callid;
ffor þat was all her werchinge · in worde and in dede.
But had 3e do duly · and as a duke oughte,
Þe ffrist þat 3ou fformed · to þat ffals dede,
He shulde have hadde hongynge · on hie on þe fforckis,
Þou3 3oure brother y-born · had be þe same.
Than wolde oþer boynardis · haue ben abasshyd,
To haue meved 3ou to ony maters · þat myss[c]heff had ben ynne.
But ffor 3e cleued to knavis · In þis cas I avowe,
Þat boldid þi burnes · to belde vppon sorowe,
And stirid 3ou stouttely · till 3e stombled all.

When they knew you would be led by them, they thought only of their own grievances.

They told you to set aside all your true friends.

But they only cared for themselves.

Had you done what you ought, you would have hung up the first deceiver on the gallows.

But your fondness for knaves emboldened them.

95. *cyringe;* MS. somewhat indistinct. Mr. Wright prints *caringe.*
98. *myȝte;* MS. *myste.*
103. *þat;* Mr. Wright prints *the.*
111. *maters;* printed *mals* by Mr Wright, owing to the indistinctness of the mark of contraction; but see l. 84, above; and also l. 103.
113. *burnes;* glossed by *barons* in the MS.

Passus secundus.

But most I marvel at the liveries which you granted;

But moche now me merueilith · and well may I in sothe,
Of ȝoure large leue*re*y · to leodis aboute,
That ȝe so goodliche ȝaf · but if gile letted,
As hertis y-heedyd · and hornyd of kynde,

the badges of the "white hart" were seen everywhere.

So ryff as þey ronne · ȝoure rewme þoru-oute,
That no*n* at ȝoure nede · ȝoure name wolde nempne
In ffersnesse ne in ffoltheed · but ffaste ffle away-ward,
And some stode astonyed · and stared ffor drëde,
ffor eye of the Egle · þ*at* oure helpe brouȝte.

But the moulting-time of the harts was drawing nigh.

And also in sothe · þe seson was paste
ffor hertis y-heedid · so hy and so noble
To make ony myrthe · ffor mowtynge þ*at* nyghed.

[Fol. 110 *b*.]

That bawtid ȝoure bestis · of here bolde chere;
þey seuerid and sondrid · ffor som*e*re hem ffaylid,

They fled, but preserved their horns.

And fflowen in-to fforest · and ffeldis aboute,
All þe hoole herde · þ*at* helde so to-gedir;
But ȝet þey had hornes · half a ȝere af*ter*.

I will consider how the king's badges became so numerous,

Now liste me to lerne · ho me lere coude,
What kynnes conceyll · þ*at* þe kyng had,
Or meued him most · to merke his liegis,
Or serue hem w*ith* signes · þ*at* swarmed so thikke

Pass. ii. 2. *aboute;* MS. *abouȝte;* cf. note above to i. 40. So also in l. 15.

4. *As;* misprinted *And* by Mr Wright.

5. *ronne;* printed *roune* by Mr Wright.

9. *brouȝte;* written *brouute* in the MS.

16. *to-* in *to-gedir* is supplied in the MS. in a later hand.

17. *a* is supplied in the MS. in a later hand; cf. "half a ȝere" in C. 3. 238.

þoru-oute his lond · in lengþe and in brede,
þat ho so had hobblid · þoru holtes and tounes,
Or y-passid þe patthis · *þer* the prynce dwellyd,
Of hertis or hyndis · on hassellis brestis,
Or some lordis leu*ere* · *þat* þe lawe stried,
He shulde haue y-mette · mo þan y-nowe.
ffor þey acombrede þe contre · and many curse seruid,
And carped to þe comounes · *with* þe kyngys mouþe,
Or *with* þe lordis · *þer* þey be-lefte were,
That no renke shulde rise · reson to schewe.
þey plucked the plomayle · ffrom þe pore skynnes,
And schewed her signes · ffor men shulde drede
To axe ony mendis · ffor her mys-dedis.
Thus leu*erez* ou*ere*-loked · 3oure liegis ichone;
ffor þo *þat* had hertis · on hie on her brestis
ffor the more p*ar*tie · I may well avowe,
þey bare hem the bolder · ffor her gay broches,
And busshid *with* her brestis · and bare adoune the pou*ere*,
Lieges *þat* loued 3ou þe lesse · ffor her yuell dedis.
So, trouthe to telle · as toune men said,
ffor on *þat* 3e merkyd · 3e myssed ten schore
Of homeliche hertis · *þat* þe harme hente.
Thane was it ffoly · in ffeith, as me thynketh,
To sette siluer in signes · *þat* of nou3t serued.
I not what 3ou eylid · but if it ese were;
ffor ffrist at 3oure anoyntynge · alle were 3oure owene,
Bothe hertis and hyndis · and helde of no*n* o*þer*;
No lede of 3oure lond · but as a liege aughte,
Tyl 3e, of 3oure dulnesse · deseue*r*aunce made,

that every one saw more than enough of them.

They cumbered the country.

They plucked the feathers off the poor people.

Those that bare the White-Hart badge oppressed the poor.

For one *hart* that you marked on a badge, you lost tenscore of faithful *hearts*.

At your accession, all was your own.

[Fol. 111.]

22. See Prol. l. 12.
25. *Of;* MS. *Or* (wrongly).
28. *seruid;* glossed *deserved* in the MS.; correctly.
35. *ichone;* MS. *ichonne*.
37. *Cf. ich may it wel avowe;* C. 4. 315.
45. *Cf.* Bere no *suluer* ouer see · þat kynges *sygne* shewe*þ;* C. 5. 126.
46. *Cf.* Ich *wot* wel, quath hunger · *what* syknesse *3ow aile þ;* C. 9. 271.
50. *Tyl;* MS. *Ty*, altered to *Tyl*.

Your badges spoilt the broth, and upset the pot. Luke xi. 17.

Þoru 3oure side signes · þat shente all þe browet,
And cast adoun þe crokk · þe Colys amyd.
Omne regnum in se diuisum desolabitur; luce xj°. c°.
3it am I lewde · and litill good schewe,
To coueyte knowliche · of kyngis wittis,

I cannot tell what induced you to do this.

Or wilne to witte · how was þe mevynge,
That [ladde] 3ou to lykynge · 3oure liegis to merke,
Þat loued 3ou full lelly · or leuerez beganne,
And as redy to ride · or renne at 3oure heste,
As wyghte myghte wilne · wonnynge vppon erthe,
Tyll leuerez hem lette · and lordyns wrongis,
As 3oure-self ffonde well · whane ffortuné 3ou ffolwyd.

When you wished to trust your limbs, they failed you.

ffor whan 3e list to lene · to 3oure owen lymmes,
Þey were so ffeble and ffeynte · ffor ffaute of 3oure lawe,
And so ffeble and wayke · wexe in þe hammes,
Þat þey had no myghte · to amende 3oure greues,
Ne to bere byrthen · 3oure banere to helpe.
But it longith to no liegeman · his lord to anoye,
Noþer in werk ne in word · but if his witt ffayle.

Then said Reason to me, "Never displease your judge and lord."

"No, redely," quod reson · "þat reule I alowe;
Displese not þi demer · in dede ne in wordis,
But if þe liste ffor to lede · þi lyf in dissese.
But 3if god haue grauntyd þe · grace ffor to knowe
Ony manere mysscheff · þat my3tte be amendyd,

Be content to point out what is amiss."

Schewe þat to þi souereyne · to schelde him ffrom harmes;
ffor, and he be blessid · þe better þe be-tydyth
In tyme ffor to telle him · ffor þi trewe herte."

52. *Cf.* Þat cast for to kele a *crokke* · and saue þe fatte aboue; C. 20. 280.

56. Here *ladde* seems required.

57. MS. *begynne*, altered to *beganne*. Cf. And to *loue* me *lelly*; B. 1. 78.

58. *Cf.* 3emen · to *rennen* and to *ryde*; C. 4. 271.

61. *ffolwyd*; the word *ffayled* is written above, and is perhaps a better reading.

63. *faute*; spelt *fauȝte* in the MS.

68. *Cf.* As *in workes* and *in wordes*; C. 3. 94.

69. *Cf.* Forþy, *reson, redelyche*; C. 5. 184.

Now, ffor to telle trouthe · þus þan me thynketh,
That no manere meyntenour · shulde merkis bere,
Ne haue lordis leuere · þe lawe to apeire,
Neiþer bragger ne boster · ffor no bremme wordis,
But ho so had kunnynge · and conscience bothe,
To stonde vnstombled · and stronge in his wittis,
Lele in his leuynge · leuyd be his owen,
þat no manere mede · shulde make him wrye,
ffor to trien a trouthe · be-twynne two sidis,
And lette ffor no lordschep · þe lawe to susteyne,
Whane þe pore pleyned · that put were to wrongis.
And I were of conceill · by crist þat me bouȝte,
He shuld haue a signe · and sum-what be ȝere,
ffor to kepe his contre · in quiete and in reste.
This were a good grounde · so me god helpe!
And a trewe tente · to take and to ȝeue,
And ony lord of this londe · þat leuerez vsith.
But how the gayes han y-gon · god wotte þe sothe
Amonge myȝtfull men · alle these many ȝeris;
And, whedir þe grounde of ȝifte · were good oþer ille,
Trouthe haþe determyned · þe tente to þe ende,
And reson hath rehersid · þe resceyte of all.
ȝit, I trowe, ȝoure entente · at þe ffrist tyme,
Was, as I wene, ȝif I well thenke · in multitude of peple,
That ȝe were þe more myȝtier · ffor the many signes
þat ȝe and ȝoure seruauntis · aboute so thikke sowid;
And þat þey were more tristi · and trewer þan oþer,
To loue ȝou ffor þe leuere · þat legeaunce stroied;

My opinion is, that no 'maintainer' should wear a badge, or any livery;

[Fol. 111 b.]

they should be reserved for true and good men.

A good judge ought to have a badge and a good salary.

God alone knows whether the reason for giving badges has been a good or bad one!

No doubt you wished the wearers of your badge to be very numerous,

and to be attached to yourself;

80. *Cf.* —*braggynge · abosted*, &c.; C. 9. 152.
82. *Cf.* to *stomble*, yf he *stande*; C. 11. 35.
93. *And*; read *To* or *For*?
94. A *d* is written over *g* in *gayes*, as if to alter it to *dayes*; but the alliteration requires *gayes*; see Note.
96. *ȝifte*; printed *ȝiste* by Mr Wright.
97. *Cf.* Til *trewþe hadde ytermenyd* · here trespas *to þe ende*; C. 2. 93.
102. *aboute*; badly spelt *abouȝte* in the MS. *sowid*; glossed by *shewed* in the MS.; wrongly.

Or ellis ffor a skylle · þat skathed 3oure-self,
þat comounes of contre · in costis aboute
and that all men might know them to be *yours*. Sholde knowe be hir quentise · þat þe kyng loued hem
ffor her priuy prynte · passinge anoþer.
3if þat was 3oure purpos · it passith my wittis
I praise not your discretion. To deme discrecioun · of 3oure well-doynge!
þus were 3e disceyued · þoru 3oure duble hertis,
þat neuere weren to truste · so god saue my soule!
Had the good Greyhound been cherished, you would have had Harts enough at your service. But had þe good greehonde · be not agreued,
But cherischid as a cheffeteyne · and cheff of 3oure lese,
3e hadde had hertis ynowe at 3oure wille · to go and to ride.
And also in serteyne · þe soþe ffor to telle,
[Fol. 112.] I wondir not hyly · þou3 heed-dere þou ffailid;
ffor litill on 3oure lyf · þe list ffor to rewe
On the lean-ribbed deer you had small pity. On rascaile þat rorid · with ribbis so lene,
ffor ffaute of her ffode · þat fflater[er]is stelen,
And euere with here wylis & wast · ofte þey hem anoyed,
þat pouerte hem prickid · ffull preuyliche to pleyne,
But where, þey ne wyste · ne ho it wolde amende!
You vexed them, and nearly skinned them; þus 3e derid hem vnduly · with droppis of anger,
And stonyed hem with stormes · þat stynted neuere,
But plucked and pulled hem · anon to þe skynnes,
þat the ffresinge ffrost · ffreted to here hertis.
so that when the chief deer failed, none of the leaner ones stood by you. So whanne 3oure hauntelere dere · were all ytakyn,
Was non of þe rasskayle · aredy ffull growe,
To bere ony bremme heed · as a best aughte,
So wyntris wedir · hem wessh with þe snowis,
With many derke mystis · þat maddid her eyne.

106. *in;* Mr Wright prints *and*, but MS. has *had* altered to *in*. For *aboute*, the MS. has the false spelling *aboute*. Cf. Yf þei knew eny *countreie* · oþer *costes aboute;* C. 11. 12.

120. *ffaute;* misspelt *ffauȝte* in the MS., as in l. 63.

128. *were;* MS. *where*, badly; see *were* in ll. 101, 103.

ffor well mowe ȝe wyttyn · & so mowe we all,
Þat harde is þe somer · þer sonne schyneth neu*e*re.
ȝe ffostrid and ffodid · a ffewe of þe best,
And leyde on hem lordschipe · aleyne vppon o*þ*er,
And bereued þe raskall · *þat* rith wolde þei hadde,
And knewe not þe caris · ne cursis *þat* walkyd;
But mesure is a meri mene · þouȝ men moche yerne:—

You fostered a few of the best, and gave them lordships.

Deus exaudit clamorem pauperum, et iudicat Causam eorum; dauid in psalmis.

Cf. Ps. x. 17, 18. (Vulg.)

Þus be þe rotus · ȝoure raskall endurid,
Tyll þe blessid bredd · brodid his wyngis,
To couere hem ffrom colde · as his kynde wolde.
Rith as þe hóus-hennes · vppon londe hacchen,
And cherichen her chekonys · ffro chele of þe wynter,
Ryth so þe hende Egle · þe heyere of hem all,
Hasteth him in heruest · to houyn his bryddis,
And besieth him besely · to breden hem ffeedrin,
Tyll her ffre ffedris · be ffulliche y-pynned,
Þat þey heue wynge at her wyll · to wonne vppon hille,
ffor venym on þe valeye · hadde ffoule with hem ffare,
Tyll trouthe þe triacle · telde somme her sothes.
Thus baterid þis bred · on busshes aboute,
And gaderid gomes on grene · *þer* as þey walkyd,
Þat all þe schroff and schroup · sondrid ffrom o*þ*er.
He mellid so þe matall · with þe hand-molde,
That [þey] lost [of þeir] lemes · þe leuest *þat* þey had.
Thus ffoulyd this ffaukyn · on ffyldis aboute,
And cauȝte of the kytes · a cartfull at ones,

As the hens cherish their chickens, so the Eagle is busy about his brood till their wings are grown.

[Fol. 112 *b*.] The Eagle caused *Bushy*, *Green*, and *Scrope* to lose their heads.

139. *Mesure is* medcyne · *þouȝ þow moche ȝerne;* B. 1. 35; C. 2. 33.
142. Cf. *as hus kynde wolde;* C. 4. 129; and 9. 161.
144. *cherichen;* glossed *cherissheth. chele;* glossed *colde.*
145. *heyere;* MS. *Eyere;* but see iii. 74.
151. *Cf.* For *treuthe* telleþ þat loue · ys *tryacle* for synne; C. 2. 147.
152. *aboute;* MS. *abouȝte.* So also in ll. 157, 182, 186.
156. Supply *þey* and *of þeir.* They lost the liefest of their limbs; i. e. their *heads.*
158. *kytes;* MS. *kuyttis,* with *kytes* written above; see l. 161.

That rentis and robis · *with* raveyn eu*er*e lau3te.
3it was not þe ffawcon · ffull ffed at his likynge,
ffor it cam him not of kynde · kytes to loue.
Than bated he boldeliche · as a brid wolde,
To plewme on his pray · þe pol ffro þe nekk;
But þe blernyed boynard · *þat* his bagg stall,
Where purraile-*is pulter* · *was pynnyd ffull ofte,*
Made þe ffawcon *to ffloter* · *and fflussh ffor anger,*
That þe boy hadd be bounde · *þat* þe bagge kepte.
But sone *þer*-after · in a schorte tyme,
As ffortune ffolwith · ech ffode till his ende,
This lorell *þat* ladde · þis loby awey
Ou*er*e ffrithe and fforde · ffor his ffals dedis,
Lyghte on þe lordschepe · *þat* to þe brid longid,
And was ffelliche ylau3te · and luggid ffull ylle,
And brou3te to þe brydd · and his blames rehersid
Pr*e*uyly at þe p*ar*lement · amonge all þe peple.
Thus hawkyd þis Egle · and houed aboue,
Þat, as god wolde · *þat* gou*er*neth all þingis,
Ther nas kyte ne krowe · *þat* kareyne hantid,
þat he ne *with* his lynage · ne louyd ffull sone.
ffor wher so þey fferde · be ffryth or be wones,
Was no*n* of hem all · *þat* him hide my3th,
But cam *with* him a reclayme · ffro costis aboute,
And ffell *with* her ffetheris · fflat vppon þe erthe,
As madde of her mynde · and m*er*cy be-sou3te,
þey my3te not aschonne · þe sorowe þey had
s*er*ued.
So lymed leues · were leyde all aboute,
And panteris pr*e*uyliche · pight vppon þe grounde,

The Eagle tried to pull the head from the neck of his prey.

Bagot escaped for a time, but was caught at last.

At last the Eagle subdued all the kites and crows;

who besought his pardon and mercy.

Many traps were set for them.

159. *raveyn;* so I read it. Mr Wright prints *rabeyn*, as it may also be read. *lau3te;* glossed *caught.*

170. *ladde;* MS. *hadde;* but observe the alliteration and the sense.

180. *wones;* Mr Wright prints *woves*, but in his glossary says "*qu.* wones." *Cf.* Lorde, who shal *wonye* in þi *wones?* B. 3. 234. And see Pass. iii. 220, below.

183. *Cf.* platte hure to þe erthe; C. 7. 3.

185. *serued;* glossed *deserved.*

187. Here follow the catchwords—*With* grennes of good here.

With grennes of good heere · þat god him-self made, [Fol. 113.]
þat where so þey walkid · þey waltrid doun*n*wardis; 189
And eu*er*e houed þe Egle · on hie on þe skyes, The Eagle hovered above and saw all.
And kenned clerliche · as his kynde axith,
Alle þe p*r*euy poyntis · þat þe pies wrouȝth. 192

188. *grennes;* glossed *greyhoundes.* This is entirely wrong; for a *gren* is a *gin* or snare; and "a gren of good heere" is a snare made of fine hair. Observe the context.

191. *Cf.* riȝte *as kynde axeth;* B. 2. 27.

Passus Tercius.

I leave the Eagle, and consider the Harts.

Now leue we þis beu brid · till I restore,
ffor mat*er* þat my mynde · is meued in now,
That whi þe hie hertis · her hele so mysside,
þat pasture axid · rith to here pure wombis;
I wolle schewe as I sawe · till I se bett*er*,
And if I walke out of the wey · I wolle me repente.

The worst deeds are those done against nature.

Now herkeneth, hende men · how þat me thynkyth,
Sauy*n*ge souereynes · and sages avise,
þat þe moste myscheff · vppon molde on
Is demed þe dede · y-do aȝeins kynde.

I will apply this.

ȝit clereth þis clause · no þinge my wittis,
W*ith*-out more mat*er* · what it mene wolde.

When harts come to be a century old,

I mene of þe hertis · þat hautesse of ȝeris,
þat pasture prikkyth · and her pr*e*uy age;
Whan þey han hoblid on þe holte · an hundrid of ȝeris,

and grow feeble, they instinctively strive to catch adders.

That þey ffeblen in ffleissh · in ffelle, and in bones,
Her kynde is to keue*re* · if þey cacche myȝth
Adders þat harmen · alle hende bestis;
þoru busschis and bromes · þis beste, of his kynde,
Secheth and sercheth · þo schrewed wormes,
þat steleth on þe stedis · to stynge hem to deth;

When the hart finds the adder, he feeds on his venom,

And whanne it happeth þe herte · to hente þe edder,
He putyth him to peyne · as his pr*a*y asketh,
And ffedith him on þe venym · his ffelle to anewe,

Pass. iii. 9. *Cf.* *þe moste myschif on molde* · Mounteþ vp· faste; C. 1. 65.

18. *harmen;* MS *armen*, with *k* supplied above the line.

23. *Cf.* *as* þe worlde *askeþ;* C. 1. 21.

To leue at more lykynge · a longe tyme after. renews his skin, and prolongs his life.
This is clergie, hir kynde · coltis nat to greue,
Ne to hurlle with haras · no hors well atamed,
Ne to stryue with swan · þouȝ it sholle werre, 28 It is against nature for harts to attack a Horse, a Swan, or a Bear.
Ne to bayten on the bere · ne bynde him noþer,
Ne to wilne to woo · þat were hem ny sibbe,
Ne to liste ffor to loke · þat her alie bledde;
This was aȝeins kynde · as clerkis me tolde: 32

Propter ingratitudinem liber homo reuocatur in seruitutem, ut in stimulo compunccionis, et in lege Ciuili.

And þerffor þe hertis · here hele so myssid, [Fol. 113 b.] Thus it was that they missed their safety.
And myȝte nat passe þe poynte · of her prime age.
Now constrew ho so kunne · I can saie no more,
But ffare I wolle to þe ffowle · þat I beffore tolde. 36

Off all billid breddis · þat þe bough spareth, I praise most the partridge.
þe propirte of partriche · to preise me lustiþ,
Þat in þe somer seson · whane sittinge nyeth,
Þat ich ffoule with his ffere · ffolwith his kynde, 40
Þis brid be a bank · bildith his nest, This bird tries to hatch her eggs.
And heipeth his eiren · and hetith hem after.
And whane þe dame hath ydo · þat to þe dede longith,
And hopith ffor to hacche · or heruest begynne, 44
Thanne cometh þer a congioun · with a grey cote,
As not of his nolle · as he þe nest made,
Anoþer proud partriche · and precyth to þe nest, But another partridge comes
And preuylich pirith · till þe dame passe, 48 and takes her place,
And sesith on hir sete · with hir softe plumes,

25. *Cf. a longe tyme after;* C. 8. 203.

26. *nat* is supplied above the line; it is clearly wanted.

27. *no;* MS. *ne.*

32. *homo;* MS. h°; Mr Wright prints *hic,* wrongly; see the Preface. *seruitutem;* MS. seruititem, by a mere slip.

34. *Cf.* Whoso *passeþ* þat *poynt;* C. 2. 98.

39. *Cf.* In a *somer sesoun;* C. 1. 1.

41. *Cf.* Briddes I bihelde · þat in buskes made nestes; B. 11. 336; and compare the whole passage in B. 11. 318—353 with the context.

42. *eiren;* MS. *heires,* which is obviously a blunder; for see l. 50, below. *Heires* = heirs; but *eiren* = eggs.

49. *sete;* MS. *Cete,* altered to *sete.*

And houeth þe eyren · *þat* þe hue laide,
and sits on the eggs till they are hatched.
And *with* hir corps keue*re*th hem · till *þat* þey kenne,
And ffostrith and ffodith · till ffedris schewe,
And cotis of kynde · hem keue*re* all aboute.
But as sone as þey styffe · and *þat* þey steppe kunne,
Then comes back their own mother, and they at once desert the intruder.
þan cometh and crieth · her owen kynde dame,
And þey ffolwith þe vois · at þe ffrist note,
And leueth þe lurker · *þat* hem er ladde,
ffor þe schrewe schrapid · to selde ffor her wombis,
þat her lendys were lene · and leued *with* hunger.
But þan þe dewe dame · dineth hem swythe,
And ffostrith hem fforthe · till þey ffle kunne.
What does this mean?
"What is þis to mene, man?" · maiste þou axe,
"ffor it is derklich endited · ffor a dull panne;
Wherffore I wilne · ȝif it þi will were,
þe *par*triche *propur*tes · by whom *þat* þou menest?"
Ah! Hick Heavyhead! your wits are dull!
A! hicke heuyheed! · hard is þi nolle
To cacche ony kunnynge · but cautell bigynne!
Herdist þou not *with* ecris · how *þat* I er tellde,
[Fol. 114.]
How þe egle in þe est · entrid his owene,
The Eagle in like manner came back to his own young ones,
And cried and clepid · after his owen kynde briddis,
þat weren anoyed in his nest · and norished ffull ille,
And well ny yworewid · *with* a wronge leder?
But þe nedy nestlingis · whan þey þe note herde
and the young ones followed him.
Of þe hende Egle · þe heyer of hem all,
þei busked ffro þe busches · and breris *þat* hem noyed,
And burnisched her beekis · and bent to-him-wardis,
And ffolowid him ffersly · to ffighte ffor þe wrongis;
They complained how they had been ill-used for 22 years.
þey bablid *with* her billis · how þei bete were,
And tenyd *with* twiggis · two and twenty ȝeris.
Thus lafte þey þe leder · *þat* hem wrong ladde,
And tymed no twynte · but tolled her cornes,

53. *aboute*; MS. *abouȝte*.
59. *leued*; altered to *lyued*.
62. *Cf. what is þis to mene*; B. 1. 11.
74. *hende*; MS. *ende*, altered to *hende*.
78. *Cf.* And so I *babeled* or bedes; B. 5. 8.

And gaderid þe grotus · *with* gyle, as I trowe.
Þan ffolwid þey her ffre ffader · as good ffeith wolde, — They followed their true father.
That he hem ffede shulde · and ffostre fforther,
And bringe hem out of bondage · *þat* þey were brou3th inne.

THE SWAN. (Thomas, Duke of Gloucester).

Thanne sighed þe swymmers · ffor the swan ffailid,
And ffolwid þis ffaucoun · þoru ffeldus and tounes,
With many ffaire ffowle · þou3 þey ffeynte were,
And heuy ffor þe hurte · þat þe hors hadde.

THE HORSE. (The Earl of Arundel).

3it þey fferkyd hem fforth · as ffaste as þey my3te,
To haue þe Egles helpe · of harme þat þey hadde;
ffor he was heed of hem all · and hieste of kynde,
To kepe þe Croune · as cronecle tellith.

THE BEARE. (The Earl of Warwick).

He blythid þe beere · and his bond braste,
And lete him go at large · to lepe where he wolde.
But þo all þe berlingis · brast out at ones,
As ffayne as þe ffoule · þat fflieth on þe skyes
þat bosse was vnbounde · and brou3te to his owene.

The Bear's children complained of *Green*.

þey gaderid hem to-gedir · on a grette route,
To helpe þe heeris · þat had many wrongis;
þey gaglide fforth on þe grene · ffor þey greued were,
þat her ffrendis were ffalle · þoru ffelouns castis.

They cursed the Earl Marshal.

They mornyd ffor þe morthir · of manffull kny3tis,
That many a styff storme · *with*-stode ffor þe comunes; [Fol. 114 *b*.]
þe[y] monside þe marchall · ffor his myssedede,
þat euell coude his Craft · whan he cloped þe stede.

86. In the margin is written—"ye Swan."

88. *ffowle;* MS. *ffoole*, with *ffowle* written above.

89. *hurte;* MS. *hirte*, with *u* above the *i*. In the margin—"ye Horse."

94. *bond;* MS. *broud* or *brond;* Mr Wright prints *broud*, but surely it is merely *bond*, misspelt *brond* owing to the influence of the following word *braste*. In the margin — "The Beare."

97. *As fayne as;* MS. *As fayne was;* but I venture on the correction on the strength of the parallel passage —þanne was I *also fayne · as foule* of faire morwe; B. 10. 153; C. 12. 103.

98. *brou3te;* MS. *brounte*.

99. *route;* MS. *rou3te*.

105. *monside;* MS. *monside* or *mouside*. Mr Wright prints *monside*, but does not explain it; *monside* (i. e. cursed) is only another spelling of *mansed*, which see in C. 3. 41.

106. *cloþed;* so in MS. Mr Wright prints *cloped*, which he explains by *clipped*.

And euere as þey ffolwide · þis ffaucoun aboute,
At iche mevinge ffotte · venyauñce þey asked
On all þat assentid · to þat synfull dede.

Let us return to Richard.

Arere now to Richard · and reste here awhile,
ffor a preuy poynt · þat persith my wittis.

I speak of the faults that so much harmed the young lords.

Of ffautis I ffynde · þat ffrist dede engendre
Cursidnesse and combraunce · amonge þe yonge lordis,
And þe wikkid werchinge · þat walmed in her daies,
And ȝit woll here-after · but wisdome it lette.
That were a lord of lond · þat lawe hathe in honde,
þat to lyghtliche leueth · or lewte apere,
þe tale of a trifflour · in turmentours wede,
That neuere reed good rewle · ne resons bookis!

They cared for nothing but dress.

ffor ben þey rayed arith · þey recchith no fforther,
But studieth all in stroutynge · and stireth amys euere;
ffor all his witte in his wede · ys wrappid ffor sothe,
More þan in mater to amende · þe peple þat ben mys-led.

In my opinion, fashionable men are evil counsellors,

ffor I say ffor my-self · and schewe, as me thynchith,
That ho is riall of his ray · that light reede him ffol-with;
ȝit swiche ffresshe ffoodis · beth ffeet in-to chambris,

respected only by fools.

And ffor her dignesse endauntid · of dullisshe nollis,
And, if þou well waite · of no wight ellis:

Matt. xi. 8.

Qui mollibus vestiuntur in domibus regum sunt: in Euangelio.

See what comes of these beguilers!

þan waite mo wayes · how þe while turneth
With gyuleris, Ioyffull · ffor here gery Iaces,
And ffor her wedis so wyde · wise beth y-holde;
þey casteth hem to creauñce · þe courte ffor to plese,

They hope to be exalted for their finery;

And hopen to be hied · in hast, yif þey myȝthe,
þoru swiche stif stroutynge · þat stroyeth þe rewme;

107. *aboute;* MS. *abouȝte.*
112. *fautis;* MS. *fauutis.*
121. *stroutynge;* MS. *stroutynge,* here and in l. 134; but see l. 189, and Chaucer, C. T. 3315.
124. Cf. *Ich seye it for my-selue;* C. 5. 134. *thynchith;* MS. thynthith; but this writing of *c* like *t* is common enough.
126. *Cf.* and *brouȝte* hir *in-to chaumbre;* B. 3. 10.

But here wey is all wronge · þer wisdom is ynned,
[For] þey lepith als lygh[t]ly · at þe longe goynge,
Out of þe domes carte · as he þat þroff neuere.
ffor þey kepeth no coyne · þat cometh to here houdis,
But chaunchyth it ffor cheynes · þat in chepe hangith,
And settith all her siluer · in semitis and hornes,
And ffor-doth þe coyne · and many oþer craftis,
And makeþ þe peple ffor pens lac · iñ pointe ffor to wepe;
And ȝit þey beth ytake fforth · and her tale leued,
And ffor her newe nysete · nexte to þe lordis.
Now, be þe lawe of lydfford · in londe [&] in water
þilke lewde ladde · ouȝte euyll to þryue,
þat hongith on his hippis · more þan he wynneth,
And douteth no dette · so dukis hem preiseȝ
But beggith and borwith · of burgeis in tounes
ffurris of ffoyne · and oþer ffelle-ware,
And not þe better of a bene · þouȝ þey boru euere.
And, but if þe slevis · slide on þe erthe,
þei woll be wroth as þe wynde · and warie hem þat it made;
And [but] ȝif it were elbowis · adoun to the helis,
Or passinge þe knee · it was not acouñted.
And if pernell preisid · þe plytis bihynde,
The costis were acouñtid · paye whan he myȝth.
þe leesinge so likyde · ladies and oþer,
That þey Ioied of þe Iette · and gyside hem þer-vnder;
And if ffelice ffonde ony ffaute · þenne of þe makynge,

but they come to a bad end.

[Fol. 115.]

They exchange their coin for chains,

and make money scarce.

By Lidford law, such men ought to thrive ill.

Except their sleeves touch the ground, they are very wroth.

If Pernel praises the plaits, all is well.

If Felice finds

136. *For;* MS. *But*, wrongly repeated.
140. *semitis;* or *seimtis*, or *seitutis;* indistinct and uncertain.
142. *peple;* miswritten *pephe.*
145. *ȝ;* MS. *ne*, which seems to have been written over an erasure; *ȝ* is better.
148. *douteth;* MS. *douȝteth.*
150. *ware;* misspelt *whare* in MS.
153. *Cf.* As *wroth as þe wynd;* C. 4. 486.
154. Supply *but;* as in l. 152.
156. *Cf.* He preide *purnele* · here porfil to leue; C. 6. 129. Observe that *felice* is mentioned only three lines lower down, in C. 6. 132; whilst she is mentioned here also, four lines lower. *plytis;* glossed by *pleytes.*

fault, all must be remade.

Yt was y-sent sone · to shape of þe newe.
But now *per* is a gyse · þe queyntest of all
A wondir coriouse crafte · y-come now of late,

KERVINGE OF CLOTHES.

That men clepith kerving · þe clothe all to pecis,
Þat seuene goode sowers · sixe wekes after
Moun not sett þe seemes · ne sewe hem aȝeyn.
But *per* is a proffit in *þat* pride · *þat* I preise euere,

The piecing of the cloth costs twenty times as much as the stuff.

ffor þei ffor þe pesinge paieth · pens ten duble
That þe clothe costened · þe craft is so dere.
Now if I sothe shall saie · and shonne side tales,
Per is as moche good witte · in swyche gomes nollis,
As þou shuldist mete of a myst · ffro morwe tyll euen!

[Fol. 115 *b*.]

ȝit blame I no burne · to be, as him ouȝte,
In comliche clothinge · as his statt axith;

Men who think of nothing but dress and new fashions ought not to be trusted.

But to ledyn her lust · all here lyff-daies
In quentise of clothinge · ffor to queme sir pride,
And euere-more stroutynge · and no store kepe,
And iche day a newe deuyse · it dullith my wittis
Þat ony lord of a lond · shulde leue swiche þingis,
Or clepe to his conceill · swiche manere cotis,
That loueth more her lustis · þan þe lore of oure lord.
And if a lord his leuere · lyste ffor to ȝeue,

Men do not gain liveries for their good deeds, but for bragging.

Ther may no gome ffor goodnesse · gette *per*-of but lite,
ffor curtesie, ffor comlynesse · ne ffor his kynde herte,
But rather ffor his rancour · and rennynge ouere peple,
ffor braggynge and ffor bostynge · and beringe vppon oilles,
ffor cursidnes of conscience · and comynge to þe assises.
This makyth men mysdo · more þan ouȝte ellis,
And to stroute and to stare · and stryue aȝeyn vertu.

This dress is the source of all evil.

So [be] clergie, þe cause · comsith in grette,
Of all manere mysscheff · *þat* men here vsyn.

167. *a proffit*: MS. *aprffith* (*sic*), with *a profett* written above it.

172. *Cf.* Þow myȝt bet *mete þe myst*; C. 1. 163.

176. *Cf.* In cuntinaunce *of clothinge* · *queinteliche* de-gyset; A. pr. 24.

182. *leuere*: MS. *leuere*, altered to *lyuerey*. It is a trisyllable word.

188. *Cf.* And *maketh men mys-do* · meny score tymes; C. 4. 159.

ffor wolde þey blame þe burnes · *þat* brou3te newe gysis,
And dryue out þe dagges · and all þe duche cotis, — If lords would set aside the Dutch coats,
And sette hem a-side · and scorte of hem telle,
And lete hem pleye in þe porche · and presse non ynnere,
Ne no proude peniles · *with* his peynte sleve;
And eke rep*reue* robbers · and riffleris ō̄f peple, — and reprove robbers,
fflater[er]is and ffals me*n* · *þat* no ffeith vseth,
And alle deabolik doeris · dispise hem ichone,
And coile out þe kny3tys · *þat* knowe well hem-self, — and choose good knights and cherish them,
Þat were sad of her sawis · and suffre well coude,
And had traueilid in her tyme · and temprid hem-self,
And cherliche cheriche hem · as cheff in þe halle,
ffor to ordeyne officeris · and all o*þer* thyngis;
Me*n* shuld wete in a while · *þat* þe world wolde amende, — the world would mend.
So vertue wolde fflowe · whan vicis were ebbid.
But now to þe mat*er* · *þat* I be-ffore meved, — [Fol. 116.]
Of þe gomes so gay · *þat* grace hadde affendid,
And how stille *þat* steddeffaste stode · amonge þis reccheles peple,
þat had awilled his wyll · as wisdom him taughte:
ffor he drough him to an herne · at þe halle ende, — Wit stood at the lower end of the hall in homely garb,
Well homelich yhelid · in an holsum*e* gyse,
Not ou*er*elonge, but ordeyned · in þe olde schappe,
With grette browis y-bente · and a berde eke,
And y-wounde in his wedis · as þe wedir axith;
He wondrid in his wittis · as he well my3the, — wondering at the vast households.
Þat þe hie housinge · herborowe ne myghte
Halfdell þe houshould · but hales hem helped;
But ffor crafte *þat* he coude · caste þenne or be-þenke,
He my3te not wonne in þe wones · ffor witt *þat* he vsid;

193. *Cf.* let *dagge* hus clo*þ*es; C. 23. 143.
194. *scorte;* so in MS.; glossed by *scorne.*
201. *coude;* MS. *couude.* So also in l. 219.
216. *well;* MS. *will,* altered to *well.*
217. *housinge;* MS. *houusinge.*
220. *Cf.* Lorde, who shal *wonye in* þi *wones;* B. 3. 234.

WYTT WAS BANYSSHED OUTE OF THE COURTE.

But, aroutyd ffor his ray · and rebuked ofte,
He had leue of þe lord · and of ladies alle,
ffor his good gouernaunce · to go or he drank!
þer was non of þe mene · þat þey ne merueilid moche,
How he cam to þe courte · and was not y-knowe;

As soon as men knew that his name was Wit,

But als sone as þey wiste · þat witt was his name,
And þat þe kyng knewe him not · ne non of his knyȝtis,
He was halowid and y-huntid · and y-hote trusse,

they bade him begone!

And his dwellinge ydemed · a bowe-drawte ffrom hem,
And ich man y-charchid · to schoppe at his croune,
ȝif he nyhed hem ony nere · þan þey had him nempned.
þe portir with his pikis · þo put him vttere,
And warned him þe wickett · while þe wacche durid:

The sleeve-wearers wanted to slay him,

"Lete sle him!" quod þe sleues · þat slode vppon þe erthe,
And alle þe berdles burnes · bayed on him euere,

and scorned him for his old clothes.

And schorned him, ffor his slaueyn · was of þe olde schappe.
þus malaperte was myȝtffull · and maister of hous,
And euere wandrid wisdom · without þe ȝatis.

Wit threatened them with punishment.

"By him þat wrouȝte þis world!" · quod wisdom in wrath,
"But ȝif ȝe woll sumtyme · I walke in amonge ȝou,

[Fol. 116 b.]

I shall fforbede ȝou burnes · þe best on þis erthe,
þat is, gouernance of gettinge · and grace þat him ffollwith;
ffor these two trewly · twynned ȝet neuere."

Thus the foolish lords lost favour.

And so it ffell on hem, in ffeith · ffor ffautis þat þey vsid,
þat her grace was a-goo · ffor grucchinge chere,

221. *aroutyd;* MS. *arouutyd.*

228. *Cf.* Ouer-al houted out · *and yhote trusse;* C. 3. 228. For *y-hote,* MS. has *y-hotte,* with the gloss *bydden* above it.

241. *burnes;* MS. *burnesse,* which is merely a bad spelling of the same word. Other instances of confusion between the endings *-es* and *-esse* are occasionally found in the MS. Thus we have *rosse* for *ros* in Prol. 13.

244. *ffautis;* MS. *ffauȝtis.*

ffor þe wronge *þat* þey wrouȝte · to wisdom affore.
ffor tristith, als trewly · as tyllinge us helpeth,
þat iche rewme vndir roff · of þe reyne-bowe
Sholde stable and stonde · be þese þre degres:
By gouernaunce of grete · and of good age;
By styffnesse and strengthe · of steeris well y-yokyd,
þat beth myȝthffull men · of þe mydill age;
And be laboreris of lond · *þat* lyfflode ne ffayle.
Thanne wolde [right dome] reule · if reson were amongis us,
That ich leode lokide · what longid to his age,
And neuere ffor to passe more · oo poynt fforþer,
To vsurpe þe service · *þat to sages bilongith,*
To be-come conselleris · er þey kunne rede,
In schenshepe of souereynes · and shame at þe last.
ffor it ffallith as well to ffodis · of xxiiij ȝeris,
Or yonge men of yistirday · to ȝeue good redis,
As be-cometh a kow · to hoppe in a cage!
It is not vnknowen · to kunnynge leodis,
That rewlers of rewmes · around all þe erthe
Were not yffoundid · at þe ffrist tyme
To leue al at likynge · and lust of þe world,
But to laboure on þe lawe · as lewde men on plowes,
And to merke meyntenourz · with maces ichonne,
And to strie strouters · *þat* sterede aȝeine rithis,
And alle þe myssedoers · *þat* þey myȝte ffynde,
To put hem in preson · a peere þouȝ he were;

Every kingdom depends on 3 sorts of men.
1. Counsellors.
2. Warriors.
3. Labourers.
AGAYNSTE YONNGE COUNSAYLOURS.
Youths of 24 years can no more advise than a cow can hop in a cage.
Rulers should uphold the law,
and imprison wrong-doers,

248. *Cf.* þe richest *rewme* · þat *reyne* ouer houeth; B. 3. 207.

249. *Cf.* gan *stable and stynte;* B. 1. 120.

250. Before l. 250 is prefixed the figure 1; before l. 251, the figure 2; and before l. 253, the figure 3. These refer to the "thre degres," viz. 1. *Oratores* (here Counsellors); 2. *Bellatores* (Warriors); and 3. *Laboratores* (Labourers); according to the old threefold division. In l. 253, *be* = *by*.

253. *Cf.* And lerne to *labore with londe · lest lyflode hym faile;* C. 9. 295.

254. We must supply *right dome*, i. e. just judgment, or some such words. In the margin is written—"Agaynste yonnge Counsaylours."

260. The abbreviation *xxiiij* is to be read *four and twenty*, not *twenty-four*. Cf. l. 79, above.

And [not] to rewle as reremys · and rest on þe daies,
not waste money in wine and dances. And spende of þe spicerie · more þan it nedid,
Bothe wexe and wyn · in wast all aboute,
With deyntes y-doublid · and daunsinge to pipis,
In myrthe *with* moppis · myrrours of synne.
Rejoice in season. [Fol. 117.] 3it fforbede I no burne · to be blithe *sum* while;
But all thinge hath tyme · ffor to tempre glees:
ffor caste all þe countis · *þat* þe kyng holdith,
And loke how þese lordis · loggen hem-self,
NOTA. NOTA. NOTA. OVER-WATCHYNGE. And eu*ere* shall þou ffynde · as ffer as þou walkiste,
That wisdom and ou*ere*-wacche · wonneth ffer asundre;
But whane þe gou*ernaunce* goth þus · *with* þo þe hous gie shulde,
Despising of the law will not long thrive. And letith lyghte of þe lawe · and lesse of þe peple,
And herkeneth all to hono*ur* · and to ese eke,
And *þat* ich wyght *with* his witte · waite on him eu*ere*,
To do hem reuerence aright · þou3 þe rigge brest,
þis warmnesse in welth · *with* wy vppon erthe
My3te not longe dure · as *doctourz us tellith.*
For evil-doers to come to no mishap would be a wonder indeed! ffor ho so þus leued · *his lyff to the ende,*
Eu*ere* wrappid in welle · and *with no wo mette,*
My3te seie *þat* he sawe · *þat seie was neuere,*
þat heuene were vnhonge · out of þe hookis,
And were boun at his bidding · 3if it be my3te!
Clerks find it so in no books. But clerkis kne[w] I no*n* 3ete · *þat* so coude rede
In bokis y-bounde · þou3 3e brou3te alle
þat ony wy welldith · wonnynge vppon erthe;
ffor in well and in woo · þe werld eu*ere* turneth,
KEW-KAW. 3it *þer* is kew-kaw · þou3 he come late,

274. *aboute;* MS. *abou3te.*

282. *That;* MS. *What*, probably by mistake. In the margin is "nota, nota, nota" in the same hand-writing as the text; another hand has added —"Over-watchynge."

284. *Cf.* And *let lyght of þe lawe · and lasse of þe* knyght; C. 9. 165.

288. *wy;* glossed by *man;* correctly. So also in l. 297.

290. *leued;* MS. *leued*, altered to *lyved.*

295. *knew;* MS. *kne. coude;* MS. *couude.*

299. In the margin—"kew kaw;" to which substantive *he* obviously refers.

A new þing þat noyeth · nedy men and oþer,
Whanne realles remeveth · and ridith þoru tounes,
And carieth ouere contre · þer comunes dwelleth,
To preson þe pillourz · þat ouere þe pore renneth;
For þat were euene in her weye · if þey well ride.
But ȝit þer is a ffoule ffaute · þat I ffynde ofte;
þey prien affter presentis · or pleyntis-ben y-clepid,
And abateth all þe billis · of þo þat nouȝth bringith;
And ho so grucche or grone · aȝeins her grette willes,
May lese her lyff lyghtly · and no lesse weddis.
Thus is the lawe louyd · þoru myȝhty lordis willys,
þat meyneteyne myssdoers · more þan oþer peple.
ffor mayntenaunce many day · well more is þe reuthe!
Hath y-had mo men · at mete and at melis,
þan ony cristen kynge · þat ȝe knewe euere;
ffor, as reson and rith · rehersid to me ones,
Tho ben men of this molde · þat most harme worchen.
ffor chyders of chester · were chose many daies
To ben of conceill ffor causis · þat in þe court hangid,
And pledid pipoudris · alle manere pleyntis.
þey cared ffor no coyffes · þat men of court vsyn,
But meved many maters · þat man neuer thouȝte,
And ffeyned ffalshed · till þey a ffyne had,
And knewe no manere cause · as comunes tolde.
þei had non oþer signe · to schewe þe lawe
But a preuy pallette · her pannes to kepe,
To hille here lewde heed · in stede of an houe.
They constrewed quarellis · to quenche þe peple,
And pletid with pollaxis · and poyntis of swerdis,

At last comes a reverse of fortune,

and robbers go to prison.

TAKYNGE OF PRESENTES.

Thus is the law brought low.

MAYNTENAUNCE.

[Fol. 117b.]

Chiders from Chester were chosen as pleaders in the law-courts.

They cared only to exact fines.

They wore head-pieces instead of coifs.

They pleaded chiefly with axes and swords.

305. *ffaute*; MS. *ffauȝte*.

306. In the margin—"Takynge of *presentes*."

309. *Cf.* Ich dorst haue leid *my lyue · and no lasse wedde*; C. 4. 260.

310. In the margin—"mayntenaunce."

311. *Cf.* To *meyntene myssdoers* · Mede þei take; B. 3. 246.

316. *Cf.* For þise aren *men on þis molde · þat moste harme worcheth*; B. 3. 80.

317. *were*; MS. *where*.

326. *houe*. Mr Wright prints *hone*, but does not explain it. See "*houes* of silke" in C. 1. 159.

And at the dome-ȝeuynge · drowe out þe bladis,
And lente men leuere · of her longe battis.
They lacked alle vertues · þat a Iuge shulde haue;
Whoever complained of them to the king — ffor, er a tale were ytolde · þey wolde trie þe harmes,
Without ony answere · but ho his lyf hatid.
And ho so pleyned to þe prince · þat pees shulde kepe,
Of these mystirmen · medlers of wrongis,
He was lyghtliche y-lauȝte · and y-luggyd of many,
was threatened with death. — And y-Mummyd on þe mouthe · and manaced to þe deth.
They leid on þi leigis, Richard · lasshis y-now,
And drede neuere a dele · þe dome of þe lawe.
No one dared to rebuke them. — þer nas Rial of þe rewme · þat hem durste rebuke,
Ne Iuge, ne Iusticé · þat Iewis durste hem deme
ffor oute þat þei toke · or trespassid to þe peple.
This was a wondir world · ho so well lokyd,
Upstarts surpassed lords in power. — þat gromes ouere-grewe · so many grette maistris;
ffor þis was þe rewle in þis rewme · while þey here regnyd.
Þouȝ I satte seuenenyght · and slepte ffull selde,
[I miȝte not reche redili · to rekene þe nombre]
More wrongs happened than I can tell of. — Of many mo wrongis · þan I write coude;
ffor selde were þe sergiauntis · souȝte ffor to plete,
[Fol. 118.] — Or ony prentise of courte · preied of his wittis,
þe while þe degonys domes · weren so endauntid.
But the Lord of Heaven saw these men's misdeeds. — Tille oure sire in his see · aboue þe vijne sterris,
Sawe þe many mysscheuys · þat þese men dede,
And no mendis ymade · but menteyned euere
Of him þat was hiest · y-holde for to kepe

330. *leuere*; MS. *leuere*, altered to *leuerey*. It is a trisyllable word, equivalent here to *delivery*, in the sense of *delivering a blow*; see l. 182.

336. *lyghliche* in MS. *Cf.* Lorkynge þorw lones · *to-logged of menye*; C. 3. 226.

347. A line lost; supplied by guess.

348. *coude*; MS. *Couude*.

349. MS. *serigauntis*.

351. *degonys*; MS. *dogonys*; see l. 362, below.

352. *Cf.* by *the seuen sterres*; C. 18. 98.

354. *menteyned*; MS. *menteyne it*, absurdly.

His liegis in lawe · and so her loue gette.
He sente ffor his seruantis · þat sembled many,
Of baronys and baccheleris · with many briȝth helmes,
With þe comunes [of] þe contres · þey cam all at ones;
And as a duke douȝty · in dedis of armes,
In full reall aray · he rood vppon hem euere,
Tyll degon and dobyn · þat mennys doris brastyn,
And were y-dubbid of a duke · ffor her while domes,
Awakyd ffor wecchis · and wast þat þey vsid,
And ffor her breme blastis · buffettis henten.
Þan gan it to calme · and clere all aboute,
Þat iche man myȝte · ho so mynde hadde,
Se, be þe sonne · þat so briȝte schewed,
Þe mone at þe mydday · meve, and þe sterris,
ffolwinge ffelouns · ffor her ffalse dedis,
Devourours of vetaile · þat ffouȝten er þei paide.

He assembled His servants, barons, bachelors, and commons;

in royal array He rode against them,

till they received severe buffets.

Then came a peaceful and clear calm.

364. MS. wrongly inserts *And* at the beginning of this line.
366. *aboute*; MS. *aboutȝte*.

Passus quartus.

Whose household was ever larger than Richard's?

For where was euere ony cristen kynge · þat 3e euere knewe,
þat helde swiche an household · be þe half-delle
As Richard in þis rewme · þoru myserule of oþer,

Not all his fines, forfeitures,

þat alle his ffynys ffor ffautis · ne his ffee ffermes,
Ne ffor-ffeyturis ffele · þat ffelle in his daies,
Ne þe nownagis · þat newed him euere,
As marche and moubray · and many mo oþer,

law-fees,

Ne alle þe issues of court · þat to þe kyng longid,
Ne sellynge, þat sowkid · siluer rith ffaste,
Ne alle the prophete of þe lond · þat the prince owed,

and custom of wools,

Whane þe countis were caste · with þe custum of wullus,

could repay the poor for his exactions.

Myȝte not areche · ne his rent noþer,
To paie þe pore peple · þat his puruyours toke,

[Fol. 118 b.]

Without preiere at a parlement · a poundage biside,
And a fifteneth · and a dyme eke,
And with-all þe custum of þe cloþe · þat cometh to ffayres?

But for credit, he and his would have been overwhelmed with debt.

And 3et, ne had creaunce Icome · at þe last ende,
With þe comunes curse · þat cleued on hem euere,
þey had be drawe to þe deuyll · ffor dette þat þey owed.
And whanne þe reot and þe reeuell · þe rent þus passid,
And no þing y-lafte · but þe bare baggis,

Pass. iv. 4. *ffautis*; MS. *ffauȝtis*.

Þan ffelle it afforse · to ffille hem aȝeyne,
And ffeyned sum ffolie · þat ffailid hem neuer,
And cast it be colis · with her conceill at euene,
To haue preuy parlement · for profit of hem-self,
And lete write writtis · all in wex closid,
ffor peeris and prelatis · þat þei apere shuld,
And sente side sondis · to schreuys aboute,
To chese swiche cheualleris · as þe charge wold,
To schewe ffor þe schire · in company with þe grete.
And whanne it drowe to þe day · of þe dede-doynge,
þat souereynes were semblid · and þe schire-knyȝtis,
Than, as her fforme is, ffrist · þey begynne to declare
þe cause of her comynge · and þan þe kyngis will.
Comliche a clerk þan · comsid þe wordis,
And pronouncid þe poyntis · aparte to hem alle,
And meved ffor mony · more than ffor out ellis,
In glosinge of grette · lest greyues arise.
And whanne þe tale was tolde · anon to þe ende,
A-morwe thei must, affore mete · mete to-gedir,
þe knyȝtis of þe comunete · and carpe of þe maters,
With Citiseyns of shiris · y-sent ffor þe same,
To reherse þe articlis · and graunte all her askynge.
But ȝit ffor þe manere · to make men blynde,
Somme argued aȝein rith · þen a good while,
And said, "we beth seruantis · and sallery ffongen,
And y-sent ffro þe shiris · to shewe what hem greueth,
And to parle ffor her prophete · and passe no ffurthere,
And to graunte of her gold · to þe grett wattis
By no manere wronge way · but if werre were;
And if we ben ffals · to þo us here ffyndyth,
Euyll be we worthy · to welden oure hire."

When all else failed, they exacted money wrongfully,

and made the sheriffs return members of parliament who could be won over.

Then a clerk arose and asked for money to be granted,

and said they must meet next day to give their answer.

The members pretended they would never grant money wrongfully; [Fol. 119.]

for they knew their duty.

25. *profit.* The spelling in the MS. is indeed odd, being *pproffitt.*
28. *aboute;* MS. *aboute.*
35. Cf. *Corteysliche* þe knyȝt þen · *comsede þese wordes;* C. 9. 32.
46. MS. *sallere,* altered to *sallery,* with the gloss *wages.* The word meant is *salarye,* for which see C. 8.
39. *ffongen;* glossed by *taken.*
48. *parle;* glossed by *speake.*

Some members were ciphers.

Þan satte sum*m*e · as siphre doth in awgrym,
Þat noteth a place · and no þing availith;
And some had ysoupid · w*ith* Symond ou*er*e eue*n*,
And schewed ffor þe shire · and here schew lost;

Some were tale-bearers.

And so*m*me were tituleris · and to þe kyng wente,
And fformed him of foos · þat good ffrendis weren,
Þat bablid ffor þe best · and no blame serued
Of kynge ne conceyll · ne of þe comunes no*þer*,
Ho so toke good kepe · to þe *culorum*.

Some slumbered.

And so*m*me slombrid and slepte · and said but a lite;

Some talked nonsense.

And so*m*me mafflid w*ith* þe mouþ · and nyst what þey mente;
And so*m*me had hire · and helde þ*er*-w*ith* eu*er*e,
And wolde no fforther affoot · ffor ffer of her maistris;

Some were so stupid that they lost themselves in the argument.

And some were so soleyne · and sad of her wittis,
Þat er they come to þe clos · acombrid þey were,
Þat þei þe conclucioun þan · constrewe ne couþe,
No burne of þe benche · of borowe no*þer* ellis,
So blynde and so ballid · and bare was þe reson.

Some were for dashing on at full sail.

And so*m*me were so ffers · at þe ffrist come,
Þat they bente on a bonet · and bare a topte saile
Affor þe wynde ffresshely · to make a good ffare.

But the lords blamed the skipper, and bade him mind his course.

Þan lay þe lordis a-lee · w*ith* laste and w*ith* charge,
And bare aboute þe barge · and blamed þe maist*er*,
Þat knewe not þe kynde cours · þat to þe crafte longid,
And warned him wisely · of þe wedir-side.

The mast bent.

Thanne þe maste in þe myddis · at þe monþe ende,
Bowid ffor brestynge · and brou3te hem to lond;

Had they not struck sail,

ffor ne had þei striked a strake · and sterid hem þe bett*er*,
And abated a bonet · or þe blast come,

61. For *culorum*, see C. 4. 436.
65. *Cf.* That I ne my3te *ferther a-foot*; B. 5. 6.
70. *Cf.* And brynge forth *ballede resones*; C. 12. 38.
72. *bonet*; *bouet* in Mr Wright's edition. It is the name of a small sail. See l. 81, below.
75. *aboute*; MS. *abou3te*.

þey had be þrowe ou*er*e þe borde · backeward*e* ichonne. they would have been blown overboard.

And some were acombrid · w*ith* þe conceill be-ffore, [Fol. 119 *b*.]

And wiste well y-now · how it sholde ende, 84 Some knew how it would end.

Or some of þe semble · shulde repente.

Some helde w*ith* þe mo · how it eu*er*e wente,

And so*m*me dede rith so · and wolld go no fforþ*er*.

Some p*ar*led as perte · as prouyd well aft*er*, 88 Some talked only of the money which the king owed them.

And clappid more ffor þe coyne · þ*at* þe kyng oweth he*m*

Tha*n*ne ffor comfforte of þe comyne · þ*at* her cost paied,

And were be-hote hansell · if þey helpe wold.

To be seruyd sekirly · of þe same siluer*e*. 92 Some feared the lords, and forsook Do-well.

And some dradde dukis · and do-well ffor-soke;

* * * * * * * *

89. *oweth;* MS. *owen*, an obvious error for *oweth* or *owed;* the true *past* tense, however, would be *ouȝte*.

93. The poem terminates abruptly with the eleventh line on fol. 119 *b*. The rest of the page is blank.

NOTES TO "RICHARD THE REDELES."

NOTES TO THE PROLOGUE.

The parallel passages occurring in the "Vision" have been already cited in the foot-notes.

2. *bristow*, Bristol. It was from Bristol that Richard set sail for Ireland, and it was at Bristol that Henry gave one of the first proofs of his power, in the execution of Lord Scrope and others; see note to Pass. ii. l. 152.

3, 4. An allusion to the Church of the Holy Trinity, or Christ Church, described in Barrett's Bristol, p. 464. It was in the very centre of the old town, at one of the corners where the four principal streets, High Street, Broad Street, Corn Street, and Wine Street met. See a plan of Bristol in 1479 in Ricart's Kalendar, edited by Miss Smith for the Camden Society, p. 10.

10. *wilde yrisshe.* This was a common phrase, and occurs several times in a poem entitled—"Of the commoditees of Irelonde, and policye and kepynge therof, and conquerynge of *wylde Iryshe.*" See Political Poems, ed. Wright, ii. 185.

Compare also the following account:—

"For in the county of Hibernia and of Ireland are two races speaking two languages, the one speak bastard English, and dwell in the good towns, &c.; the other are a wild people, who speak a strange language, and are called Crichemons, which have neither town, house, castle, nor dwelling, and dwell always in the woods, and on the mountains of the country, and have many chiefs among themselves, of whom the most powerful go barefoot and without breeches, and ride horses without saddles." French Chron. of the Betrayal and Death of Richard II. ed. B. Williams, p. 171. See also Spenser's View of the State of Ireland; and A. Borde's Introduction of Knowledge, ed. Furnivall, pp. 132, 334.

11. *on the est half*, on the Eastern side of England, viz. near Ravenspurgh in Yorkshire, where Henry landed on the 4th of July, 1399. A fresh proof, were any needed, of the absurdity of Froissart's statement as to the landing of Henry at Plymouth. Richard returned from Ireland to England about the 25th of July, landing (as it would appear) at Harlech. See note

to Shakespeare's Rich. II., ed. Clark and Wright, Act iii. Sc. 2. The French Chronicle edited by Mr B. Williams gives this date as August 13, which seems far more likely; for else we have to suppose that Henry took several weeks to find Richard, which is improbable.

5. *sourdid*, arose; from O.F. *sourdre*, Lat. *surgere*; it occurs in Chaucer.

8. "So violent (or angry) were the sayings on both sides." No doubt much partisanship was displayed at the time, and great differences of opinion arose; cf. note to l. 2.

14. *serue* commonly means to *deserve*; but here it is, "that he should serve them the same," viz. by righting *their* wrongs.

17. Observe the author's uncertainty as to the end of it all; cf. ll. 24, 27.

19. "Some repented;" i. e. those who had applauded Henry's acts at Bristol began to turn again to Richard. L. 21 means that they expressed their opinion "that it was a pity the king's reason had not enabled him to reform the misrule from which the country suffered."

22. *in endurid*, continued in. The true reading would be *in durede; endurid* is a mere gloss upon *durede*, and makes the line halt.

33. *preise*, praise. I think *preie* (pray) would be better.

37. "And if it please him to peruse a leaf or two (of this treatise), that is written to amend him."

41. *grame*, be sorry, be vexed.

42. The sense passes on to l. 45, ll. 43 and 44 being parenthetical. "Every prince might learn from my words; yea, every Christian king that wears a crown might do so, if he only could read English."

47. *my beste*, i. e. the best I have.

49. *and I couthe*, i. e. if I could, if I knew how.

53. *ȝoure*, i. e. the *king's* hand. Sovereigns were addressed as *ye*; equals as *thou*. So *ȝe* is used below; and hence also the use of the *plural* imperative *redeth*.

54. *rewis an hundrid*, a hundred rows or lines.

61. "For at present it is secret, and so it shall remain some time longer, till wiser men have looked it over." The author's intention was to get some friend to correct it before it should be presented to the king. But the course of events defeated his wishes.

66. "To take away their *ennui*, that so often bores them." For young people to be soon "bored" is nothing new.

69. "Since youth always supposes it [i. e. fault-finding, criticism] to be (a proof of) wisdom."

72. *with the culorum*, with the sequel thereof. *Culorum* is short for *seculorum* in the phrase *in secula seculorum*, a common ending of a prayer or sermon; cf. iv. 61.

73. "It would not hurt them a whit." *A peere* means *a pear*, i. e. to the extent of the value of a pear; just as we say not worth a *kerse*, i. e. a blade of grass; for which phrase see B. 10. 17. The expression "not worth a pere" occurs in Morte Arthure, Bk. xv. Cap. vi; Globe edition, p. 377.

80. *be*, the subjunctive or imperative mood; "may it never be my will." So *ho be* is "whosoever may be," in l. 85.

82. Probably a direct allusion to the "Vision;" particularly to the strife between Poverty and the Seven Deadly Sins in C. Pass. xvii.

NOTES TO PASSUS I.

1. *Richard the redeles*, i. e. devoid of counsel. Such is also the true meaning of the title *Unready* as applied to Æthelred; see Freeman, Old Eng. Hist. for Children, p. 190. Cf. note above to Prol. l. 53.

2. *leddyn*, for *ledden*, 2 p. pl.; used with a double meaning; viz. *led* your life and *ruled* your people.

4. *y-lyfte*, lifted, removed. Mr Wright prints *y-lyste*, with the explanation "listed, taken;" which I do not understand, unless it means that *listed* is put for *enlisted*. But this would hardly be the language of the fourteenth century.

11. An enumeration of things that do *not* promote allegiance amongst subjects, viz. dread or awe, blows, unjust judgments, bad coinage, pillage of the people, self-will of the king, taxes imposed in time of peace and exacted by ruthless plunderers.

17. Here *preysing* obviously means *appraising*, as in C. 7. 384; *of* means *by means of;* and *polaxis* is put for the men who used them, viz. the king's officers; see Pass. iii. 328. They appraised the goods of the king's subjects at whatever value was most convenient.

18. "Or whether by the debts thou contractest in dice-playing, judge as thou findest it." The verb *deme* governs l. 10 and all that follows. The change from *you* to *thou* is remarkable, and probably due to the mention of dice-playing, which is charged upon the king as being a *personal* vice.

19. "Or by right guidance of the law, justly tempered with love." Cf. l. 24 below.

25. *gostis*, spirits. An allusion to the king's favourites, such as De Vere and De la Pole.

26. "That never wore armour, nor (felt) showers of hail."

30. "They mourned over the pleasures of lordship which they once had; but never let fall one tear for their sins."

42. *y-doutid of*, feared by. See the parallel passages in A. 2. 10—14; B. 2. 10—17; C. 3. 11—16. In l. 44, *yloke* means *locked, joined.*

47. *traylid*, fenced round; cf. *trellis*. *treste*, trust.

51. *nest*, nighest. The allusion is probably to the extreme intimacy between the king and his favourites, the "graceless ghosts" mentioned in l. 25 above.

54. *of tiliers*, from husbandmen. See the parallel passage, C. 5 45—65.

57. De Vere was Duke of Ireland, and De la Pole Earl of Suffolk.

58. We find in Hazlitt's English Proverbs the four following—"Drumming is not the way to catch a hare;"—"It is a mad hare that will be

caught with a tabor;"—"Men catch not a hare with the sound of a drum;" and—"You may catch a hare with a tabor as soon." It must have been a common phrase. Strutt gives a drawing of a hare beating a tabor, copied from a MS., and adds that a hare beating a tambourine was actually exhibited at Sadler's Wells "not many years back." See Strutt, Sports and Pastimes, 2nd ed. 1810, p. 220; and cf. Ben Jonson's Bartholomew Fair, A. v. sc. 3.

66. This saying was attributed to Beda.

"Hwan þu sixst on leode [*seest among the people*]
King þat is wilful,
. . . . . .
þral vnbuhsum, [*disobedient*]
Aþelyng bryþeling, [i. e. *a noble a wretch*]
. . . . . .
Al so seyde Bede,
Wo þere þeode."—An Old Eng. Miscel. ed. Morris, p. 185.

77. The "murder" was that of the Duke of Gloucester, who was put to death at Calais in 1397, probably by the king's order. The "mischief" or evil fortune was that of the dukes of Norfolk and Hereford, whom Richard had banished, of the Archbishop of Canterbury (Thomas Arundel), and of the Earls of Arundel and Warwick.

79. *is ynne;* i. e. is already gathered. In other words, "you need not expect further help."

80. "Blame not your council, but rather yourself for it, viz. for the fact that ill fortune has befallen the faithless."

90. *hobbis*, clowns. So also *hoball*, a clownish lout, in Roister Doister, iii. 3. 18; *hobbadehoy*, &c. Mr Wright gives the following note on *Hurlewayn*. "The only other instance of this word that I have observed in Early English poetry, occurs in the prologue to the Tale of Beryn, printed at the end of Urry's Chaucer.

'As Hurlewaynes meyne in every hegge that rapes.'

"*Hurlewaynes meyné* is the *Maisnie Hellequin* of old French popular superstition, in Latin *familia Harlequini*. The name is spelt in different ways, Hellequin, Herlequin, Henequin, &c. The legend was, that Charles the Fifth of France, and his men, who fell all in a great battle, were condemned for their crimes to wander over the world on horseback, constantly employed in fighting battles. Some derived the name from that of the Emperor; Charles quint, Charlequin, Herlequin, Hellequin. Of course this derivation is wrong, and the legend a fabrication of later date, to explain it. See Grimm's Mythologie, p. 527; Le Roux de Lincy's Livre des Legendes, p. 148—150, 240—245; and Michel's Benôit, vol. ii. p. 336, where in a note is given a most extraordinary story about them. See also Paulin Paris's Catalogue of the French Manuscripts of the Bibliothéque du Roi, vol. i. p. 322—325."

A similar phrase is *Kaymes kin*, i. e. Cain's kin, concerning which see Havelok, l. 2045 and the note.

96. "To get a remedy of their own grievances."

99, 100. *busshinge*, pushing, butting. *colour*, pretence, as in Acts xxvii. 30. *wayve*, remove.

107, 108. *ȝou formed*, instigated you. *ffforckis*, gallows.

110. Halliwell gives "*Boinard*, a low person, a term of reproach," with a reference to Wright's Anecdota Literaria, p. 9. This merely shews that it occurs in l. 288 of the story called "Dame Siriz," which is there printed at length. The line runs—"Be stille, boinard;" which is equivalent to "hold your tongue, stupid!"

113. *belde*, grow strong, wax bold; *to belde vppon sorowe*, to strengthen themselves at the expense of those on whom they brought misery.

NOTES TO PASSUS II.

2. The key to the whole passage at the beginning of this Passus is to observe that the author is inveighing against the king's servants, and in particular against their wearing of badges. *Livery* (*leuerey* in line 2, *leuere* in l. 26) is used here in the particular sense of *uniform*, though it also meant a grant or allowance to servants of a more general kind; as when, for instance, Spenser defines it as an "allowaunce of horse-meate, as they commonly use the woord in stabling, as to keepe horses at liverye;" View of the State of Ireland, Globe edition, p. 623. The author complains that the king had *marked* his servants (l. 20) with badges or "signes" (l. 21), which were made of silver (l. 45) and which bore the image of a *hart* (l. 4). The whole passage is aptly illustrated by the following remarks. "The *White Hart* was the favourite badge of Richard II. At a tournament held in Smithfield in 1390, in honour of the Count of St Pol, Count of Luxemburg, and the Count of Ostrevant, eldest son of Albert, Count of Holland and Zealand, who had been elected members of the garter, 'all the kynges house were of one sute; theyr cotys, theyr armys, theyr sheldes, and theyr trappours were browdrid all with *whyte hertys*, with crownes of gold about their neck, and cheynes of gold hanging thereon, which *hertys* was the *kynges leverye* that he gaf to *lordes, ladyes, knyghtes, and squyers*, to knowe his household people from others;' Caxton's Chronicle at the end of Polychronicon, lib. ult. chap. vi."—The History of Signboards, by Larwood and Hotten, p. 112. This tournament is described by Froissart, Chron. Bk. iv. c. 23. Richard probably took this badge from the cognisance of his mother, the "fair maid of Kent," which was a white hind. See Mrs Palliser's Historic Devices, p. 363.

Lingard's remarks are also very applicable here. Speaking of the Statutes passed at the beginning of the reign of Henry IV., he says—"A fourth forbade, under the heaviest penalties, any person besides the king to give liveries to his retainers. These badges had long been one of the principal expedients by which the great lords were enabled to increase their power, and to maintain their quarrels. Whoever wore the livery was bound in honour to espouse the cause of the donor; and it was worn not only by those who had received fees, or were engaged in actual services, but by as many as were willing to accept it as an honour, or in token of friendship, or

with a view to future emolument." Lingard's reference is to Rot. Parl. iii. 428, 442; Stat. 1 Hen. IV. c. 10, 14.

Richard's badges or cognisances were the white hart kneeling, collared and chained, Or; the sun in splendour; the pod of the *planta genistæ*, or broom; and branches of rosemary. The white falcon has also been attributed to him, but Mr B. Williams supposes this to have really belonged to Queen Isabel, as it certainly was her device. See Williment's Regal Heraldry, pp. 20, 23.

7. *ffoltheed*, folly. See *folte*, a fool, in Prompt. Parv.

9. *eye*, awe, dread. That the *Eagle* means Bolingbroke is placed beyond all doubt by Pass. iii. l. 69. An eagle was one of the numerous badges of his grandfather Edward III.

12. *ffor mowtynge*, because of the moulting season that was drawing near. The moulting time for a hart is when it sheds its horns, i. e. the spring, as Lord Surrey says, in his well-known sonnet on Spring—

"The hart hath hong his olde hed on the pale."

But the author merely means that the horns were past their prime; the summer was indeed over (l. 14), yet the harts contrived to retain their horns for another half-year (l. 17); i. e. till the next spring.

13. *bawtid*, probably only a variation of *batid*, i. e. abated, diminished the courage of. Cf. "Batyn, or abaten of weyte or mesure. *Subtraho;*" Prompt. Parv.

25. The simple correction *Of* for *Or* at once gives good sense. The *Of* became *Or*, because it had *Or* both above and below it. It means "whoever went much about would soon see more than enough of harts and hinds on retainers' breasts, or else the livery of some lord who destroyed the law." *Hassell* I suppose to be some kind of retainer. The only word I can find like it is the Low Lat. *haistaldi*, i. e. "qui in prædiis dominorum mansiones habent et glebæ sunt addicti; idem q. *Coloni*, *Hospites*, *Manentes*, *Rustici*, &c;"—Du Cange.

28. *servid*, deserved; so also in iv. 59.

32. *plomayle*, plumage.

36. *hertis*, harts, i. e. on the *signes* or badges. But in l. 43, it has both meanings, viz. *harts* and *hearts*. "For every *hart* which you marked on a badge, you lost ten score of loyal *hearts*." I believe there is also a play upon the word *mark*, which sometimes signifies to *hit*, *succeed in hitting* (as in Pass. iii. 268), and is here opposed to *miss*. This smart saying is attributed to the *townmen*, as being sharper than *countrymen*.

51. *side* may mean *long*, *large*, or fixed on the side; it is not easy to determine which. These badges "spoilt all the broth, and upset the pot among the coals."

57. *or leverez beganne*, before these liveries came into use.

62. *lymmes*, limbs; i. e. the commons.

78. *meyntenoir*, a technical term for one who abets another in wrong-doing, and supports him in defeating justice; see C. 4. 288.

83. *leuynge*, living. *leuyd be*, believed by, trusted by.

89. *He*, such a one; referring to *ho so* in l. 81.

92. *tente*, intent, purpose; but (both here and in l. 97) it is used rather with the sense of *argument, ground, reason. to take and to ȝeue*, for granting and giving. Observe that *to take* commonly means to *bestow*, as in C. 2. 52, &c.

93. This line is unconnected with the context. Perhaps for *And* we may read *For*. But, more probably, a line has been lost before it.

94. *gayes*, ornaments; a *gay* signifies anything gaudy or gay, as a highly coloured child's picture, or a fine piece of clothing. See Nares' Glossary, ed. Halliwell and Wright. It here refers to the badges and privileges already spoken of.

96. This means, that Truth has decided whether the ground of giving these badges was good or bad.

107. *quentise*, quaintness of dress, uniform.

113. *greehonde*, greyhound. Mr Wright suggests the Earl of Dorset (John Beaufort), as the badge of the Beauforts was a greyhound. But he was of no great mark, and the usual badge of the Beauforts was a golden portcullis; see Mrs Palliser's Historic Devices, p. 378. My first notion was to suppose that the person meant was no less a person than John Beaufort's father, the celebrated John of Gaunt. This would fit well with the meaning of *lese*, a leash; since a leash signifies three. The three, in this view, would be the Dukes of Lancaster, York, and Gloucester, the only sons of Edward III. who survived him. Though our author certainly wrote the fable of the "cat and rattons" (B. Prol.; C. Pass. i.) against Lancaster, this feeling had long passed away, and his son was now in the highest favour. This guess of mine, unfortunately, receives *no* support from what we know of the badges of John of Gaunt, since the greyhound is not amongst them. In this difficulty, Mr G. E. Adams, Somerset Herald, has kindly suggested the solution—"Why should not the greyhound stand for Ralph Neville, created Earl of Westmoreland by Richard II., and of his Privy Council, Constable of the Tower of London, &c.? He was one of those who greatly contributed to raise Henry to the throne. In Surtees' Durham, vol. i. plate 8, are two seals of the Earls of Westmoreland supported by *greyhounds*. The supporters granted to Elizabeth Widville were a lion (of March), and a *greyhound*; which latter Sandford says was in allusion to the supporters of the Nevilles, from whom Edward's mother was descended."

117. *heed-dere*, head-deer, principal deer, i. e. chief men; cf. l. 128

118. "For little, during your life, it pleased you to have pity on the inferior sort of deer." A *rascal* was a lean deer, fit neither for hunting nor eating. So also in l. 129.

123. "But where (to complain) they knew not."

128. *hauntelere dere*, antlered deer; cf. l. 117.

139. "Moderation is a good mean, though men desire a great deal." "Mesure is a mery mene" was a proverb, and is quoted by Skelton in his

Magnificence, l. 385. Mr Dyce says—"Heywood in his Epigrammes vpon Prouerbs has ten on 'Measure is a mery meane';" and Mr Hazlitt quotes from Heywood's Proverbs, ed. 1562, the couplet—

"Measure is a merry mean, as this doth shew,
Not too high for the pye, nor too low for the crow."

140. *be the rotus endurid*, lived upon roots.

145. *heyere*, exalter; from *hey*, high. See iii. 74.

147. *ffeedrin*, feathers, a Southern form; but in the next line we find *ffedris*.

148. *y-pynned*, furnished with *pens* or *quills*.

150. "For poison, in the valley, would have suited them ill." Here *venym* probably means merely *close air;* and hence, metaphorically, various slanders and false reports. See the line following.

151. "Till Truth, the remedy (for slander), told her true tales to some."

152—154. A clear allusion to *Bushy*, *Green*, and *Scrope*. "Thus this bird battered the *Bushes* around, and gathered up men as they walked on the *Green*, till all the 'scruff' and *Scrope* parted asunder." *Scruff* means *rubbish*, or a very common kind of fuel. Blount gives "*Scruff*, a kind of fuel which poor people, when firing is dear, gather up at ebbing water in the bottom of the Thames at London, and consists of coal, little sticks, cockle-shels, and the like." Halliwell also gives "*Shruff*, light rubbish wood; any short dry stuff used for fuel." *Schroup* is merely a slightly disguised spelling of *Scrope*. The author intimates that *scruff* and *scrope* were much the same thing, and proceeds to say—"He so mixed the metal with the hand-mould, (i. e. so moulded events) that they lost, of their limbs, the dearest that they had," i. e. their heads. Sir John Bushy was speaker of the House of Commons in 1394. Sir Henry Green was son of the Sir Henry Green, who had been Justice of the King's Bench in the reign of Edward III. Bolingbroke had been joined by the Duke of York, whom Richard had left behind as Regent of England during his own absence in Ireland, and their united forces appeared before Bristol on Monday the 28th of July, or, in the words of Holinshed—"the foresayd Dukes with their power, wente towardes Bristow, where at their comming, they shewed themselues before the towne and Castell, beeing an huge multitude of people. There were enclosed within the Castell, the Lord Wil. *Scrope* Erle of Wiltshire, and Treasorer of Englande, Sir Henry *Greene*, and Sir John *Busshy* knightes, who prepared to make resistance, but when it would not preuayle, they were taken, and brought forth bound as prisoners into the Campe, before the Duke of Lancaster;" p. 1106. They were tried and beheaded the following day, Tuesday, July 29. See another allusion to Bushy in Pass. iii. 75, and to Green in Pass. iii. 101. And see, in particular, the curious song on King Richard's Ministers, in Mr Wright's edition of "Political Poems," which contains such expressions as—

"There is a *busch* that is forgrowe,
Crop it welle, and holde it lowe,
Or elles hit wolle be wilde;

The long gras that is so *grene*
Hit most be mowe, and raked clene,
Forgrowe hit hath the fellde." . . .

"Thorw the *busch* a *swan* was sclayn." . . .

"The *grene* gras, that was so long,
Hit hath sclayn a *stede* strong." . . .

"The *stedes colt* is ronnon away." . . .

"A eron [i. e. *ern*, eagle] is up, and toke his flyt,
In the no[r]th contre he is li3t,
Thus here 3e alle men saye;
The *stede colt* with hym he brynges." . . .

And again, in the same volume—

"Scrope, Bagge, Ver, Dumus, tormentorum parat humus;" p. 367.

Also, the expression, "Aquila dux," descriptive of Henry, p. 368; with many other allusions of a similar kind.

157. *ffoulyd*, went a-fowling, i. e bird-catching. The *Falcon* here is the same as the *Eagle* (see l. 176), i. e. Henry; but there may be an allusion to his junction with the Duke of York, whose badge was a *falcon* and fetterlock. It was also a badge of Edward III.

159. *robis*, robes, rich clothing.

162. *bated*, strove to fly, fluttered. Nares says—"a term in falconry; to flutter the wings as preparing for flight, particularly at the sight of prey; probably for *battre*, Fr.

'That with the wind
Bated, like eagles having newly bathed;' 1 Hen. IV. 4. i.

[where it means fluttered to shake off the wet]. The true meaning of the word is beautifully exemplified in the following passage of Bacon: 'wherein (viz. in matters of business) I would to God that I were hooded, that I saw less; or that I could perform more; for now I am like a hawk that *bates*, when I see occasion of service; but cannot fly because I am tyed to another's fist;' *Letter* ii."

163. *plewme*, to pluck off the feathers of the prey; see Nares. This the Eagle did so fiercely as to sever the poll (or head) from the neck. Cf. note to l. 152.

164. *bler-nyed*, for *blear-eyed*. So also *pink nyez* for small eyes, quoted from Laneham in Nares, s. v. *Pink eyne*. *boynard;* see i. 110. The line means "the blear-eyed scoundrel who stole his bag;" where *his* refers to the "pray," i. e. to Scrope, then treasurer of England. There is here an allusion to Sir William Bagot, Sheriff of Leicestershire, 6 and 7 Richard II. The account in the present poem certainly implies that Bagot set out with Lord Scrope and the rest for Bristol, though he saved his life by leaving them and escaping to Ireland before Henry's arrival there; cf. Shakespeare's Rich. II. Act ii. sc. 2. He was, however, caught at last, and severely reproved. He seems to have diverted attention from himself by accusing the Duke of Aumerle, against whom a "bill" drawn up by Bagot was read in

Parliament on Thursday, Oct. 16. Bagot survived till the year 1407. This furnishes a key to this somewhat difficult passage, in which the author partly reverts to the events *before* Scrope's execution, and of which the general sense is:—"The eagle was striving to seize his prey (Lord Scrope), that he might rend his head off; but the blear-eyed scoundrel (Bagot) who had stolen the treasurer's bag, in which the spoils of the poor were often fastened tightly, made the falcon angry, and anxious that Bagot should be bound. But soon after, this wretch (*lorell*, viz. Bagot) who had led away this looby (Scrope) all the way over forest and ford, fell into the domain belonging to Henry, and was caught and brought before him and publicly reproved." In the Political Poems, ed. Wright, are several allusions to Bagot under the name of the "bagge." The animosity of the poor against the four may be gathered from Holinshed, who says (p. 1102)—"The common brute ranne, that the kyng had sette to ferme the realme of England vnto Sir William Scrope Earl of Wiltshire, and then treasourer of Englande, to Sir John Bushy, Syr John Bagot, and sir Henry Greene Knights."

165. "Wherein the very rags of the poor were often penned or fastened." *Purraile-is* is the gen. case of O.Eng. *poraille*, poor people. *Pulter* probably answers to the Swed. *paltor*, rags, and the Scottish *peltrie;* we still use the adjective *paltry*, from the same root.

169. *ffode*, man, person; cf. *ffodis* in Pass. ii. l. 260.

179. *louyd* = *lowyd*, i. e. lowered, put down; as in iii. 313, q. v.

182. *reclayme*, a call to return, a term in falconry. See Strutt's Sports and Pastimes.

186. *lymed leues*, leaves covered with bird-lime.

187. *panteris*, snares for birds; see Prompt. Parv.

188. *grennis*, gins or springes made of fine hair.

NOTES TO PASSUS III.

1. *beu brid*, fine bird; i. e. Henry. *restore* governs *that whi* in l. 3; it means "establish that reason why;" i. e. make good my assertions.

10. *azeins kinde*, contrary to nature's laws.

13. *hertis*, harts; referring back to ii. 4.

17. *Her kynde*, their natural habit. *to keuere*, to recover; i. e. to regain the strength which they had when in their prime. The story of the hart, in the old Bestiaries, is that, when he grows old, he seeks out an adder and swallows it; but, the adder's poison causing him to burn, he rushes to the water and drinks plentifully, so rendering the venom harmless; after which he sheds his horns, and renews his strength. See An Old Eng. Miscellany, ed. Morris, pp. 10 and 205; Wright's Popular Treatises on Science, p. 86; Altenglische Sprachproben, ed. Mätzner, i. 55; and the *Physiologus* of Thetbaldus, in Latin verse, printed among the works of Hildebert (fol. Paris, 1708, p. 1174). Mr Wright quotes, from the prose Latin Bestiarius, the

following. "*De cervo.* Dicuntur etiam nongentos vivere annos, atque cum infirmitate vel senectute deficere senserint, spiritu narium serpentes de cavernis suis extrahunt, et superata eorum pernicie veneni pabulo reparantur;" MS. Reg. 12. C. 19.

The story also occurs in Pliny; see Holland's translation, Book viii. c. 33. Hence the device of a stag, attacked by serpents, fleeing to a fountain; see Mrs. Palliser's Historic Badges, p. 46.

23. *peyne*, death. *as his pray asketh*, as his prey (i. e. the necessity of swallowing his prey) requires.

26. "Now this is the nature of learning," i. e. the natural thing for learned men to do. An awkward expression, and I suspect the reading is corrupt; I would read—"This is *clerlie* hir kynde," i. e. this is evidently their natural habit; see note to l. 190 below. At any rate, the sense is that the harts should have attacked venomous adders, and not colts, horses, swans, or bears.

The *horse* is Richard Fitz-alan, earl of Arundel, beheaded on Tower-hill A.D. 1397; the *colt*, his son Thomas, who fled to join Henry, and was one of the small company who landed with him at Ravenspurgh; the *swan*, Thomas, duke of Gloucester, Richard's uncle, so treacherously murdered by his orders at Calais, about the same time that Arundel was beheaded; and the *bear*, Thomas Beauchamp, earl of Warwick, seized with Arundel by Richard's orders, and banished by him for life to the Isle of Man, though afterwards released by Henry. They were named from their badges, the *white horse* being that of Arundel, the *swan* that of the Duke of Gloucester, which he had adopted from his father Edward III., who sometimes used it; and the *black bear* that of the Earl of Warwick. See "Political Songs," ed. Wright, vol. i. p. 419.

27. *hurlle with haras*, persecute with annoyance.

28. *sholle werre*, shall war, i. e. attack.

38. Mr Wright quotes the story of the partridge from the Latin Bestiary, MS. Reg. 12. C. 19, fol. 53.—"*De perdice.* Phisiologus dicit satis astutum esse perdicem, quia aliena ova diripit. . . . Adeo autem fraudulenta, ut alterius perdicis ova diripiens fovet. Sed fraus fructum non habet. Nam pulli, cum vocem propriæ genitricis audierunt, naturali quodam instinctu hanc quæ eos fovit relinquunt, et ad eam quæ eos genuit revertuntur." See also Wright's Popular Treatises on Science, p. 108. The notion that one partridge will steal and hatch the eggs of another seems to have been known even to the Orientals; hence the expression in Jeremiah xvii. 11—"As the partridge sitteth on eggs, and hatcheth them not."

42. *eiren*, eggs. So in Wyclif's Works, ed. Arnold, iii. 157, and not "heirs," as the editor explains it. See l. 50 below.

45. *congioun.* Mr Wright prints *cougioun.* Halliwell gives "*Conjoun*, a coward," without reference or authority. But in the Chester Plays, ed. Wright, we find "thou caitiffe, thou *congeon!*" p. 40; "that vile *counjon*," p. 177; "suche a *congeon*," p. 178; and a soldier appointed to slay the

Innocents says, "With this speare I thinke to assaie To kille manye a smalle *congion*," p. 179.

46. *not of his nolle*, smooth (lit. closely cropped) of his head; cf. *notheed* in Chaucer; and see l. 66. *as he the nest made*, as if he had made the nest himself. The forms *his* and *he* should obviously be *hir* and *hue* (she).

50. *hue*, she; *þe hue*, the "she"-bird.

51. *kenne*, generate, come to life; cf. *kindle*.

58. *schrapid*, scraped up the ground (for food for them).

59. *leued*, i. e. they lived.

79. *two and twenty;* from 1377 to 1399.

81. *tymed*, (perhaps) delayed, put off for a time; but this is improbable. It is much more likely to be an error for *tyned*, i. e. lost. *no twynte*, not a jot. Mr Wright cites a passage from the Prol. to Beryn—"So he that payd for all in-feer had not a *twynt;*" Urry's Chaucer, p. 598.

86. *swan;* the Duke of Gloucester, as before. So the *hors* is again the Earl of Arundel, in l. 89.

90. *fferkyd hem forth*, proceeded.

94. *beere*, the Bear, the Earl of Warwick, whom Henry released. "When the Duke of Lancaster had imprisoned him [Richard] and those of his council in the Tower, the first thing he did was to recal the Earl of Warwick from his banishment, and to give him his liberty;" Froissart's Chronicles, bk. iv. c. 114. But it appears that Henry, with his usual promptness, had already taken upon himself to set Warwick at liberty, though he did not obtain the consent of parliament till afterwards. In fact, Warwick met Richard at Newcastle-under-Lyne about the 25th of August; see The French Chronicle, ed. B. Williams, p. 212; note 2.

98. *bosse*, lit. an excrescence, hump. The reason for such an appellation does not appear, unless it merely means "that great one." Cf. *boss*, a large marble; *bocyn*, to swell out, cited in note to l. 121 below.

101. "They cackled or complained against the *green;*" i. e. Sir Henry Green, as before.

105. *mouside*, cursed; either miswritten for *mansid*, or else another spelling of it.

106. "Who ill knew his business, when he bandaged (lit. clothed) the Steed:" The Earl-marshal was Thomas De Mowbray, duke of Norfolk, son-in-law to the Earl of Arundel. The latter was executed by Richard's orders; and, as Froissart tells us, the Earl-marshal actually bandaged his father-in-law's eyes at the execution; see Froissart, bk. iv. c. 92. Such was, at any rate, the common story, as given also by Walsingham. But Lingard (referring to Rot. Parl. iii. 374—377, 435) shews that it cannot be true, as the Earl-marshal was not present, the lord Morley being his lieutenant on the occasion. This is why the poet says Mowbray knew his craft ill; for the office of a marshal (lit. servant of the horse) is to attend to the wants of a horse, not to bandage its eyes. For *cloped*, Mr Wright prints *cloped*, which he explains by *clipped*. But there is no fault in clipping a horse.

114. *walmed*, boiled up; A.S. *wylm*, a boiling.

116. *That were*, That would be, indeed! Ironical.

121. *stroutynge*, exactly the modern "swelling about." Cf. "*Stroutyn*, or bocyn out. *Turgeo;*" Prompt. Parv.

126. *ffeet;* for *fet*, fetched.

127. *endauntid*, feared, reverenced.

128. "And, if you take notice, by nobody else."

129. "Then observe in more ways how the time goes."

130. *gery*, changeable, ever-changing, as in Chaucer; see also Dyce's ed. of Skelton, ii. 206. *Iaces*, fringes or ribands. Cf. "*Jace*, a kind of fringe. *Devon;*" Halliwell. A hawk's *jesses* were thin strips of leather, silk, or riband.

132. *creaunce*, credit. The line probably means—"They go upon credit."

133. *hied*, sped. Cf. *hie*, haste.

136. "For they leap as lightly out of the doom-cart, at their long journey, as a wretch that never was successful." The "longe goynge" here signifies death upon the gallows.

139. *chaunchyth*, for *chaungyth*, change; so also *y-charchid* for *y-chargid* in l. 230. *cheynes*, chains of gold, ornaments that are exposed for sale in Cheapside.

140. *seimtis* or *semitis*, perhaps samites. *Samite* was a rich silk, into which silver was sometimes interwoven. The line perhaps means—"And use all their silver for interweaving with samites or for ornamenting drinking-horns."

141. *for-doth*, spoil, clip. Hence the *pens-lac*, or lack of money, in l. 142.

145. *Lidford*, in Devon. The proverb, as given by Fuller, is—

> "First hang and draw,
> Then hear the cause by Lydford law."

A curious vindication of this kind of justice, commencing with the lines

> "I oft have heard of Lydford law,
> How in the morn they hang and draw,
> And sit in judgment after"—

is ascribed to Wm. Browne, the author of Britannia's Pastorals. It is printed entire in Chambers' Book of Days, ii. 327, with the explanation that —"Lydford itself is the chief town of the Stannaries, and the proverb probably was levelled at the summary decisions of the Stannary courts which, under a Charter of Edward I., had sole jurisdiction of all cases in which the natives were concerned, that did not affect land, life, or limb."

150. *ffoyne*, marten. *ffelle-ware*, skin-ware, fur.

152. The whole passage is best illustrated from Chaucer's Persones Tale, where we read—"As to the firste synne, that is in superfluite of clotheynge, which that makid is so dere, to harm of the poeple, not oonly the cost of embrowdyng, the deguyse, endentyng or barryng, owndyng, palyng or bendyng, and semblable waste of cloth in vanite; but ther is also costlewe furring in here gownes, so mochil pounsing of chiseles to make holes, so

moche *daggyng* [see l. 193] of scheris; with the superfluite in lengthe of the forsaide gownes, traylinge in the donge and in the myre, on hors and eck on foote, as wel of man as of womman, that al thilke traylyng is verraily (as in effect) wasted, consumed, thredbare, and rotyn with donge, rather than it is yeven to the pore, &c.;" Chaucer's Works, ed. Morris, iii. 296. See also a note in Dyce's ed. of Skelton, ii. 248.

156. *pernell*, Purnel (short for Petronilla), a common female name, particularly used of a woman of loose character. Another such name was *Felice*, which is used in l. 160; observe the foot-note.

158. *leesinge*, probably gleaning; because the sleeves, trailing on the ground, gleaned all that was on it.

159. *Iette*, another spelling (as Tyrwhitt notes) of *get*, used by Chaucer (Prol. l. 684) to mean *fashion*. Tyrwhitt quotes an apposite passage from Occleve's De Regimine Principum—

"Also ther is another *newe getle*,
All foule waste of cloth and excessif."

168. "For they pay for the piecing together of it twenty times the cost of the cloth itself; so dear is the workmanship."

186. *oilles*. The meaning seems uncertain; the word is very plainly written in the MS.

190. "So, as we learn, the cause begins amongst the great," &c. Very awkward; and probably, just as in l. 26 above, *clergie* is miswritten for *clerlie*. We then should have—"So evidently the cause of all evil begins amongst the great;" which is doubtless the sense intended.

200. *coile*, choose, *cull*.

209. *þat steddeffaste*, that steadfast one. The poet does not *at first* say whom he means; but he is really drawing a picture of "Wit," i. e. Wisdom, who is supposed to come to the king's court, and look about him with wonder at all that goes on there. Hence *awilled his wyll* in l. 210 must mean—"controlled his will," or "gained mastery over his will," and could rule himself wisely. The key is given in ll. 226, 238.

217. *housinge*, building. In the next line, *hales* are *tents*; see *Hale* in Halliwell.

221. *aroutyd*, driven out of the assembly. *ray*, array.

228. *halowid*, hallooed at. *yhote trusse*, bidden to pack off.

230. *schoppe*, for *choppe*, i. e. *chop*, hit. Cf.

"And gunne *choppen* al aboute
Every man vpon the *crowne*;"
Chaucer; Hous of Fame, iii. 734, 735.

236. *slaueyn*, mantle; see Halliwell.

242. *gouernance of gettinge*, i. e. a just mode of getting money, by imposing moderate taxes; a proceeding which will win *grace*, i. e. favour. In l. 250 it means government, counsel.

259. *schenshepe*, for *schendship*, i. e. ruin.

265. "Were not created (or elected) at the first."

268. "To mark 'maintainers' with maces;" i. e. to beat them; in contradistinction to the marking with badges mentioned above.

272. The word *not* has been dropped, making nonsense of the whole. Restore it, and we have—"And not to rule like bats (awake only at night), and rest all day," &c. See l. 277.

276. *moppis*, fools, apes; cf. *moppe*, foolish; Seven Sages, ed. Weber, l. 1414.

282. *ouere-wacche*, the being awake too late at night.

284. *letith lyghte of*, despises. The nominative is *the king*, understood.

287. "To do them right reverence, though his back break," viz. with stooping. We ought to read *hem* for *him* in l. 286, or else *him* for *hem* here.

288. "This glow of wealth may not last long with any mortal wight."

299. *kew-kaw*, a sudden change, a subversion; see *kew* in Jamieson.

302. *carieth*, another form of *caireth*, wander; see C. 1. 31.

303. "To imprison the robbers that over-run the poor."

307. "And put down (refuse) all the complaints."

310. *louyd*, for *lowyd*, i. e. brought low; as in ii. 179. Compare all this with C. 4. 156—319.

315. "For, as reason and justice once told me." The use of *me* here is most important, for the author immediately goes on to cite a line from Piers the Plowman, thus directly implying that he wrote that poem also.

317. *chiders of chester*, wranglers from Chester, who took part with the king. Lingard says that the king's body-guard of archers had been "levied in the county of Chester." In fact, one of Richard's titles was *Earl of Chester*, a title which he received from Edward III.; and he afterwards created himself *prince of Chester*. He had the special reason for assuming this title, that he wished to ingratiate himself with the people of that county. This we are expressly told in the following note, printed in Polit. Poems, ed. Wright, i. 461. "Anno regis Ricardi xxj. incipiente, rex assumpsit sibi nomen principis Cestriæ, *ob amorem populi Cestriæ*, in parliamento, ubi novi domini creantur, scilicet Henricus comes Derby in ducem Herefordiæ," &c. In MS. Harl. 1989, a rising of *Cheshire men* in favour of Richard is recorded as taking place immediately after his return from Ireland; see Appendix C to the Chronicque de la Traison et Mort de Richart, ed. Williams. Walsingham (ed. Riley, ii. 225) refers to the "satis feralis turba Cestrensium, armata securibus, gladiis, arcubus et sagittis."

319. *pipoudris*, i. e. in the court of Pie-Poudre; the summary court formerly held at fairs, and so called from the dusty feet (*pieds poudreux*) of those present.

320. *coyffes*, coifs such as were worn by the sergeants-at-law; cf. B. prol. 210; and see *houe*, i. e. a hood, in l. 326.

325. *pallette*, a leathern head-piece, which served them instead of a coif or hood, and helped to keep their brain-pans safe; see note in Way's Prompt. Parv. p. 378. To *hille* is to cover.

330. "And gave men the free experience of their long staves." To *lend leverè* is to *deliver blows;* see Wm. of Palerne, ed. Skeat; ll. 1233, 3822.

341. *Iustice*, a justice, i. e. an administrator of justice; but *Iewis* (Lat. *judicium*) is justice itself, i. e. the sentence of the law.

347. Here a line has evidently dropped out; we want one like the one supplied by guess.

350. "Or any apprentice of the court asked to employ his wits."

351. *Degon* is clearly a term of contempt; see note to l. 362 below. The word *endauntid*, feared, has already occurred, l. 127 above.

352. "Till our Lord, in His seat above the seven stars," i. e. the seven stars known as Charles's wain.

354. *meynteyned of him*, upheld or abetted by him. The MS. reading (see foot-note) is an obvious error.

357. *He*, i. e. the Lord. His servants, "the barons and bachelors in bright helms," are the angels, accompanied by whom "He rode in full royal array." A striking and curious passage.

362. *degon and dobyn*, evidently Diggon and Dobbin, both common names for country bumpkins, here used in contempt of the upstarts who used to burst in men's doors and rob them. Spenser introduces *Diggon* and *Hobbinol* into his Shepherdes Kalender for September.

363. *while domys*, occasional (or temporary) sentences.

364. *Awakyd*, awoke to a sense of their folly, on account of their night-wakes and wastefulness. *wecches*, wakes, revels.

366. *it*, viz. the sky, the heavens.

NOTES TO PASSUS IV.

Lines 1—16 form one long interrogatory sentence.

6. *nownagis*, nonages, minorities; *newed*, renewed, i. e. renewed his funds. It is clear from this that, when a nobleman succeeded to a title while in his minority, the king had a share of the estate.

7. *marche and moubray*. Mr Wright says the reference is to—"Roger de Mortimer, fourth Earl of March, who was committed in ward to the Earl of Arundel. John de Mowbray and Thomas de Mowbray both succeeded to the title while in their minority in this reign."

10, 11. *prophete*, profit; as in l. 48. *countis*, accounts. *wullus*, wools.

12. "Might not go far enough, even with the addition of his rent, to repay the poor for that which his purveyors took from them."

15. *fifteneth*, fifteenth. *dyme*, a tenth; Lat. *decima*.

> "To paye the *Fiftene* ayenst our ease,
> Beside the lordys rente of our londe;
> Thus be we shepe shorne, we may not chese," &c.
> God Spede the Plough; pr. with Pierce the Ploughmans Crede, ed. Skeat, p. 70.

The whole of the poem called "God Spede the Plough" illustrates the present poem.

The tenths and fifteenths were granted by distinct classes. See Hallam, Middle Ages, iii. 54; 7th ed. Lingard says—"Richard had previously demanded an aid of the commons; and on the fourth day (i. e. Jan. 31, 1398) they voted him, with the assent of the lords, *a tenth and a half, and a fifteenth and a half;* and in addition, as if they sought to make him independent of parliament, granted him the tax on wool, wool-fells, and hides, not for a short and determinate period as usual, but for the whole term of his natural life. (Rot. Parl. iii. 368)." This is clearly the very occasion to which our author is referring.

17. *creaunce*, the credit-system. It means that the court-revellers spent so much that they would have been utterly ruined by debt if they had not paid some of it by promises only.

20. *reot*, riot; the expenses of revelry.

24—30. This probably has a special reference to the compliant parliament which met in Sept. 1397, concerning which Fabyan complains that the king would not be controlled in the election of sheriffs, and that "where before times the king of England used to send commissioners unto burgesses of cities and towns, to choose for their free liberty such knights of the shire as they thought most useful for the common weal of the said shire and land, now King Richard would appoint the persons, and will them for to choose such as then he named." Lines 28—30 particularly refer to these sheriffs.

24. *colis*, falsehoods, deceits, stratagems. Very rare; but it occurs in Gascoigne's Steel Glas, l. 1114—

"Nor colour crafte by swearing precious *coles*."

See Specimens of English, A.D. 1394—1579; ed. Skeat, p. 323. Cf. *col-fox* crafty fox, in Chaucer; and see note by M. R. in Notes and Queries, Fourth Series, iv. 358.

38. "In deceiving the great, lest grievances arise."

45. "Some argued *against* the king's right of taxation; but this was merely a blind."

49. *wattis*, wights, people. In the Coventry Mysteries (ed. Halliwell, p. 294), a messenger, speaking of Christ just after His capture, says—

"ȝe xal fynde hym a strawnge *watt*."

And in the Towneley Mysteries (Surtees Society), p. 8, Cain's serving lad says of himself—

"Gedlinges, I am a fulle gret *wat*."

53. "Some sat, like a cipher in arithmetic, that marks a place, though of no intrinsic value." So also in Crowley's Select Works, ed. J. M. Cowper, p. 73.

"And at the last thou shalt be founde
To occupye a place only
As do in A[u]g[r]ime ziphres roundc,
And to hynder learnyng greatlye."

The old copy of Crowley, having the misspelling *Agime* for *Augrime*, looks hardly explicable at first sight; and Mr Cowper does not explain it.

55. *Symond*, Simon. I have no doubt that "to sup with Simon" means here to sup with ecclesiastics, to share in the revels which some churchmen indulged in. *Simon* means Simon Peter, and is used elsewhere by the author as a general name for the clergy; see C. 10. 257, and cf. Mark xiv. 37.

57. *tituleris*, tattlers, tale-bearers. "These went to the king, and informed him of foes, who were really friends and spoke for the best, and deserved no blame at all."

63. *mafflid*, mumbled, spoke indistinctly.

66. This alludes to the logic-splitters.

72. *bente on a bonet*, spread an extra sail. To *bend* a sail is to fasten it to its yard or stay. A *bonnet* is an addition to a sail, or an additional part laced to the foot of a sail. *topte sail*, a top-sail.

74. *laste*, burden; cf. G. *last*, a load. *charge*, a heavy weight. It seems to refer to the trimming of the vessel.

75. If *bare aboute* is the modern *put about*, it means "altered the course of;" an explanation which suits well with l. 76.

77. This seems to mean that the lords lay comfortably sheltered on the lee-side, and warned the steersman as to what was going on on the weather-side; doing so, probably, by guess. Yet the line is rather obscure. The result was that the mast bent, and nearly broke (l. 79); and if they had not taken in the additional sails in time, they would have fallen overboard owing to the lurching of the vessel.

86. *the mo*, the majority.

89. *clappid*, clattered, spoke loudly. Some, instead of looking after the money due to the commons, asked for what the king owed *themselves*, and so far succeeded that they were promised an earnest of money (*hansell*) if they would help the king; for they should be helped to some of the same silver as he received himself.

93. "And some forsook well-doing, because they feared the great." An obvious allusion to the author's poem of Do-well.

It is reasonable to suppose that the present poem was never finished. The course of events at the time was so rapid as soon to supersede all conjecture and good advice.

The Crowned King.

[This piece has been inserted because it is an early specimen of the several poems that have been written in imitation of Piers the Plowman. The first 27 lines were printed by Percy in his "Reliques;" but the *whole* poem is now printed for the first time. As it has no title, I have given it that of *The Crowned King*, because this expression occurs *four* times; see ll. 1, 35, 51, 141; note especially l. 35. Short as it is, we can decide with sufficient accuracy many points in connection with it. The general form of it, especially that part where the dream begins, is enough to shew that it is, as above-said, an imitation of Piers the Plowman; and this will appear more clearly if the passages mentioned in the foot-notes be examined. The language is somewhat simpler and later, and the author has caught the manner of his original but imperfectly, so that the result is, as a whole, weaker and milder. In this respect, it supplies a most useful contrast to the poem of "Richard the Redeless," in which the exact style and spirit of Piers the Plowman is perfectly maintained throughout. The happiest imitations are perhaps to be found in ll. 61—72, 81—83, 86—89, 111, 118, 124, 131, 132, and especially l. 134, which is perfect. Instead of *metels* (a dream) we find the later form *metyng*. In l. 116, the alliteration breaks down badly; the writer had no business to link *speche* with *small* (thus alliterating *sp* with *sm*), and then leave out the chief-letter. The unique copy here printed is to be found in MS. Douce 95, the writing being of the middle of the fifteenth century. The MS. contains several other pieces, and on leaf 12 the date 1439 is mentioned. If we accept the various indications of date afforded by the allusions in it—and we in fairness ought to do so, because otherwise the whole poem becomes meaningless—we may very easily determine all that is necessary to be known about it. It really amounts to a letter of advice addressed to a youthful yet not incompetent king, who can be no other than Henry V. Such a line as l. 77—

Thi peres in parlement · pull hem to-geders—

is quite inapplicable to Henry VI., who succeeded to the throne as a mere infant, and would have been entirely superfluous if addressed to Henry IV.; whilst the language is too late for the first few years of Richard II., and the writing too early for Edward IV. As addressed to Henry V., however, the poem is at once intelligible, and has adequate reasons for existence. I have little hesitation in fixing the date of composition as being probably the month of June, 1415. The author says he had just been with some friends on

Corpus Christi Eve, i. e. on the Wednesday after Trinity Sunday, which answered, in 1415, to the 29th of May. He plainly speaks of an imminent war, to be waged against a foreign country, in which there were castles to be won by adventurers (l. 97). This is an evident allusion to the coming campaign in France, and it is worthy of note that the expedition set sail from Southampton (cf. l. 20) in the month of August. Henry had declared for war some time before. Fabian gives June 18 as the date when Henry rode through London to go to Southampton, and Walsingham gives June 24 as the date when he was expected to arrive there. The "subsidie" mentioned in l. 36 is the very large grant which Henry had obtained (Nov. 19, 1414) of no less than two tenths and two fifteenths; for though no war was then declared, it was doubtless well understood that it was to come. The suggestion in ll. 95 and 96, that all prisoners should be for the benefit of their captors, is exactly parallel to the arrangement that "all prisoners were to belong to their captors," to which Lingard draws special attention, with a reference to Rymer, ix. 223—239, as having been made on this very occasion. The knowledge that the king was coming to Southampton would naturally suggest a poem of the present form to a poet resident there; and its brevity may have been intended to give it a better chance of attention. All who remember the story of Henry and Chief Justice Gascoigne will see the application of l. 53, and those following; whilst l. 75 well expresses the favour in which the young king was held. Neither are the exhortations (ll. 122—124) to a display of personal prowess out of place; for it was now twelve years since the battle of Shrewsbury (July 21, 1403), and there was little to shew that Henry would again display such bravery as he then exhibited. Further points I leave to the reader's consideration, with the remark that, when read in the light thus thrown upon it, the poem is not without interest, and very fairly expresses the public opinion of the time.]

[*Douce MS.* 95; *leaf* 4.]

Christ, the Crowned King of heaven, all praise be to Thee!

Crist, crowned kyng · that on cros didest,
And art comfort of all care · þow kynd go out of cours,
With thi halwes in heuen · heried mote thu be,
And thy worshipfull werkes · worshiped eu*ere*,
That suche sondry signes · shewest vnto man,

Thou shewest men, in dreams, what care or comfort is to come.

In dremyng, in drecchyng · & in derk swevenes,
Wher*with* that thei ben ware · & witterly knowen
Of care and of comfort · þ*at* comyng is here-after!
This i sey be my-self · (so saue me our lord!)
Be a metyng that y met · in a morowe slepe,

I dreamt, one morning, a strange dream.

Hevy & hidows · y hight you forsoth,
And the most m*er*veylous · that y met eu*ere*.

12. Cf. B. prol. 11; C. 1. 9.

And ye like to lere · & listen a while, — If ye like to listen, I will describe the dream.
As y may in my mynde · this metyng reherce,
Sekerly and shortly · þe soth y shall you shewe
Of this dredefull dreme · deme as you likes! 16

Ones y me ordeyned · as y haue ofte doon, — One Corpus Christi even, I went, with some friends, 6 or 7 miles out of Southampton.
With frendes and felawes · fremde men and other,
And caught me in a company · on Corpus *Christi* even,
Six other vij myle · oute of Suthampton, 20
To take melodye and mirthes · among my makes,
With redyng of romaunces · and reuelyng among.
The dym of the derkenesse · drowe into the west, — The night receded, and dawn began.
And began for to spryng · in the grey day; 24
Than lift y vp my lyddes · & loked in the sky,
And knewe by the kendo cours · hit clered in þe Est.
Blyve y busked me doun · And to bed went, — I hastened to bed, to take a nap.
For to comfort my kynde · And cacche a slepe. 28
Swythe y swyed in a sweem · *þat* y swet after, — I fell into a trance.
So my spirit in a spaas · so sore was y-set.
Me thought that y houed · an high on an hill — Methought I looked from a hill into a deep dale, wherein were many people.
And loked doun on a dale · deppest of othre; 32
Ther y sawe in my sight · a selcouthe peple,
The multitude was so moche · it myght not be noumbred.
Me thought y herd a crowned kyng · of his comunes axe — A Crowned King asked his commons for a subsidy for his wars. [leaf 4, back]
A soleyn subsidie · to susteyne his werres, 36
To be rered in the reaume · as reson requyred
Of suche as were seemly · to suffre the charge;
That they that rekened were riche · be reson and skyle
Shuld pay a *par*cell · for here pou*er*e neighbowres; 40

13. *lere*] *a better spelling than* leer, *as in the* MS.; *see* l. 113.
18. *fremde men*] *written* frende men; *but* fremde *must be meant.*
31. *an*] *the second stroke of the* n *is missing.*
31—34. Cf. B. prol. 13—18; C. 1. 14—20.
34. *noumbred*] written *noumbrerd.*
35. Cf. B. prol. 112; C. 1. 139.

This ordenaunce he made · in ease of his peple.

A Clerk kneeled down and addressed him.

With that a Clerke kneled a-doun · & carped these wordes;

"Liege lord, yif it you like · to listen a while,

Sum sawes of Salomon · y shall you shew sone,

"I beseech my liege to hear my plain tale."

Besechyng you of your souerainte · that y myght be suffred

To shewe you my sentence · in singuler noumbre;

To peynte it with pluralitee · my prose wolde faile,

To pike a thonke with plesaunce · my profit were but simple."

The King bade him rise, and say on.

Than the kyng of his curtesie · comaunded hym to ryse,

To stonde and sey what hym semed · and knele no lenger.

"Sir Crowned King,

Than he seid, "sir crowned kyng · thou knowest well þy-self,

Thi-self hast lyfe, lyme · and lawes for to keep.

Yif þou be chief Iustice · Iustifie the truthe,

rule ever with reason.

And rule the be resoun · and vp-right sitte;

For that is a poynt principall · preve it who so will,

To be dred for thy domes · and dowted for thy myght.

For every man who is wise shows his merits by his deeds.

For ther is neither lered ne lewed · þat lyveth vpon erthe,

That wyssheth after worshipe · his wit is full feble,

But yif he wite be his werkes · he hath well deserued,

And of his well doyng his dedes · to deme the same.

Be assured that the love of your liegemen is a treasure.

The loue of thi liegemen · that to thi lawe are bounde,

Take hit for a tresour · of hem that are true,

That may the more availl · in a myle-wey

42. Cf. B. prol. 123, 124; C. 1. 147, 148.

44. Cf. B. 3. 93, 94; C. 4. 121, 122.

53. Cf. B. 4. 136—142; C. 5. 133—139.

56. *and dowted*] *written* an dowte.

61. Cf. B. 4. 148; C. 5. 145. *liegemen*] *written* liegmen.

Thanne moche of thy mukke · þat manhode loueþ neuere. 64

The playnt of the pouere peple · put þou not behynde, Never put aside their complaints.
For they swope and swete · and swynke for thy fode;
Moche worshipe they wynne the · in this worlde riche,
Of thy gliteryng gold · and of thy gay wedes, 68 They win for you gold and rich robes;
Thy proude pelure and palle · with preciouse stones,
Grete Castels and stronge · and styff-walled Townes; [leaf 5]
And yit the most preciouse plente · þat apparaill passeth, and plenteous crops from the soil.
Thi pouere peple with here ploughe · pike oute of the erthe. 72

And they yeve here goodes · to gouerne hem euen;
And yit the peple beñ well a-paid · to plese þe Allone, Thou art beloved by high and low.
Suche loue is on the leid · of lordes and of lower,
And grete is thi grace · that god hath the lent. 76

Thi peres in parlement · pull hem to-geders, Govern well thy peers.
Worche after wysdom · &-worshipe will folowe.
For as a lord is a lord · and ledeth the peple,
So shuld prowesse in þi persone · passe oþer mennes wittes; 80

The wittyest and wylyest · and worthiest in Armes, A lord must never deal wrongfully.
All is but wast wele · and he wronge vse,
And vnsemely for a souerain · (so saue me our lord!)
And hevy for his name · that hyndren will ever. 84

Sir, þou most be worldly wys · & ware þe be-tymes, Beware of flatterers,
And kepe the fro glosyng · of gylers mowthes,
That speken to the spiritually · with spiritual tonges,
Momelyn with here mouthes moche · and malys in hert, who have malice in their hearts.
And of a mys menyng · maketh a faire tale; 89
Vnder flateryng and fair speche · falsehede foloweth,
And yif they myght with here moustres · to marre þe for euere

66. *they*] *miswritten* the; *but see* l. 67.
88. Cf. B. 5. 21; C. 6. 124.
91. *moustres*] moustres *or* monstres *in the* MS; *see* C. 7. 260.

With disceit of here derknesse; · þe deuell hem a-
drenche! 92

Be kind to the clergy; cherish thy warriors.

Be kende to thi clergi · and comfort þe pouere;
Cherissh thy champyons · and chief men of Armes;
And suche as presoners mowe pike · with poyntes of
werre,
Lete hem welde that they wynne · & worþyly hem
þonke. 96

Give thy men the towns which they win.

And suche as castels mowe cacche · or eny clos tounes,
Geve hem as gladly · than shalt þou gete hertes.
For god in his gospell · asketh no thyng elles
But oonly loue for love · and let hym be levest. 100

Let thy marshal be renowned for strength.

Also he that is stronge · strokes for to dele,
Make hym thy marchall · and maner his maistre,
That for his doughtýnesse · men mowe hym drede,
[leaf 5, back] And for his wysdom and witte · the better to be ware.

Comfort thy trusty knights.

Knyghtes of thy counseill · connyng in armes, 105
That been seker at asay · and sober to thy frendes,
Suche thou shuldest comfort · be cours of thy kende,
That lede here lyves · in labour for thy loue. · 108
Loke þou haue suche a man · that loueth not to lye,
A faithfull Philosofre · þat flater woll never;

A councillor who is like a weathercock will not amend thee.

For he that fareth as a faane · folowyng þy wille,
Worche þou well or woo · he woll þe not amende. 112
Lere lettrewre in þy youthe · as a lord befalleth,
Whan þou to parlement shall passe · þere lordes shull
pere;
For to her of thy wysdom · þey woll awayte after,
And though her speche be but small · þe more be here
þoughtes. 116

In parliament, borrow not ideas from others.

For yif þou haue no science · to shewe of thy-self,
But as a Brokour to go Borowe · pore mennes wittes,
That were most myscheef · þat myght a lord befalle,

96. *welde*] *miswritten* wilde.
97. Cf. C. 4. 251—253.
105. *connyng*] *miswritten* comyng.
118. *Brokour*] *miswritten* Brogour; *see* B. 2. 65.

Ther as wyse men haue wrapped · her wittes togidre.

Sir, they it come to þe of kynde · a kyng to be called, Exercise thy knighthood and martial valour.
Yit must þou knowe of corage · what knyghthood befalleþ;
For he þat Armes shall haunte · in youþe he must begynne,
Of all Artes vnder heven · vse is a maistre.

Sir, more-ouere be not gredy · gyftes to grype; Be not greedy to receive gifts.
Rather þou shalt yeve hem · þat fele hem agreved:
So shall thy hawtesse · highlich be honoured,
And prudence in thy principaltee · y-preised for euere,
For an ensample y shall you shewe · that soth is knowe.

A kyng shuld not of curtesie · couetouse be holde; A king should never be covetous nor let dross be his master.
For there as couetyse is knowe · in A kynges brest,
Ther is corage out of kende · when mukke is his maistre.
The condicion of a kyng · shuld comfort his peple;
For suche laykes ben to love · þere leedes laghen alle.
My liege lord, of this mater · y meve you no more, I say no more.
But euere in your mynde · haue hym þat you made;
And taketh a siker ensample · þat crist hym-self sheweth,
Of all the seyntes in heven · that for hym deth suffred; [leaf 6] Remember how Christ's saints suffered, and now dwell with that Crowned King for ever."
For his loue thei were so large · her lyves they lost,
And for loue of that lord · a-loft now they dwelle
With that crowned kyng · that on cros dyed;
Ther crist in his kyngdom · comfort vs euere,
And of his high grace · graunte vnto vs alle
Prosperite and pees; · pursue we therafter!"

Explicit.

126. Cf. B. 3. 208—211; C. 4. 266—269.
142. Cf. B. prol. 105; C. 1. 133.

GLOSSARIAL INDEX, WITH NOTES,

TO THE POEM OF

THE CROWNED KING.

A-DOUN, *adv.* down, 42. P. Pl.

A-drenche, *subj. pr.* drown, 92; þe deuell hem a-drenche, i.e. may the devil drown (or overwhelm) them. A.S. *adrencan*, to drown.

Agreved, *pp.* aggrieved, 126.

An, *prep.* on, 31. Written without a second stroke to the *n*; cf. *an hiegh* = on high; P. Pl. B. *pr.* 13.

Allone, *adj.* alone, 74.

A-loft, *adv.* i.e. in heaven, 140.

Among, *adv.* at the same time, as well, 22.

And, *conj.* if, 13, 82.

A-paid, *pp.* pleased, satisfied, 74. O.Fr. *apaier*, to appease, from Lat. *pacare*. P. Pl.

Apparaill, *sb.* apparel, rich clothing, 71.

As gladly, i.e. as gladly as you may, with all readiness, 98.

Asay, *sb.* assay, trial, 106.

Awayte, *vb.* wait, 115. P. Pl.

Axe, *vb.* ask, 35. A.S. *ácsian*, *áxian*. P. Pl.

Be, by; be cours of thy kende, by course of thy nature, in accordance with thy nature, 107; with reference to, 9, 10.

Befalle, *vb.* befal, 119; *pr. s.* Befalleth, becomes, is suitable to, 113, 122.

Be-tymes, *adv.* betimes, early, in good time, 85.

Blyve, *adv.* quickly, soon, 27. *See* Bi-liue in Gl. to Will. of Palerne.

Borowe, *vb.* borrow, 118. *See* Go.

Brokour, *sb.* broker, i.e. one that sells other men's things, 118. In the MS. it is miswritten *Brogour*. See footnote.

Busked, *pt. s.* 1 *p.* got (myself) ready; busked me doun, i.e. prepared myself for sleep, and lay down, 27. P. Pl.

Cacche, *vb.* catch; cacche a slepe = take a nap, 28; take, win, 97.

Carped, *pt. s.* spoke, 42. P. Pl.

Charge, *sb.* burden, expense, 38.

Clered, *pt. s.* grew clear, 26.

Clos, *adj.* enclosed, walled, 97.

Comunes, *sb. pl.* commons, 35. P. Pl.

Connyng, *adj.* cunning, skilled, 105.

Corage, *sb.* disposition; ther is corage out of kende = there is his

disposition unnatural, 132; of corage = by your disposition, 122. See *Courage* in Cotgrave.

Corpus Christi even, the eve of Corpus Christi day, 19. Corpus Christi day is the Thursday after Trinity Sunday. In 1415, Corpus Christi eve fell on Wednesday, May 29; in 1414, on June 6.

Couetouse, *adj.* covetous, 130.

Couetyse, *sb.* covetousness, 131. P. Pl.

Cros, *sb.* cross, 1, 141.

Crowned, *pp.* crowned, 1, 35, 51.

Curtesie, *sb.* courtesy; of curtesie, on account of his courtesy, 130. P. Pl.

Dele, *vb.* deal, give, 101. P. Pl.

Deme, *vb.* to judge of, 60; *imp. s.* judge, 16. P. Pl.

Deppest, *adj.* deepest; deppest of othre = deeper than any other, 32.

Derknesse, *sb.* darkness, mystification, 92.

Deuell, *sb.* devil, 92.

Didest, 2 *p. s. pr.* diedest, didst die, 1.

Disceit, *sb.* deceit, 92.

Domes, *sb. pl.* judgments, 56. P. Pl.

Doughtynesse, *sb.* sturdy valour, 103.

Dowted, *pp.* feared, 56.

Drecchyng, *sb.* trouble of mind caused by dreams, 6. *See* Chaucer, Nonne Prestes Tale, 67.

Dred, *pp.* dreaded, feared, 56.

Drowe, *pt. s.* drew, 23.

Dyed, *pt. s.* died, 141.

Dym, *sb.* dimness, duskiness, 23.

Ensample, *sb.* example, 129, 137. P. Pl.

Faane, *sb.* vane, weathercock, 111.

Falsehede, *sb.* falsehood, 90. P. Pl.

Fareth, *pr. s.* acts, proceeds, conducts himself, 111.

Felawes, *sb. pl.* fellows, companions, 18. P. Pl.

Folowyng, *pres. part.* following, 111.

Fremde, *adj.* lit. foreign; hence, chance acquaintances, companions to whom one is not related, 18. The MS. has *frende*, owing to the previous occurrence of *frendes* in the same line, but the error is obvious. The phrase *fremde oper sibbe* means whether unrelated or related, and is sometimes found; see Stratmann's Glossary.

Gete, *vb.* get, gain, win, 98.

Geve, *imp. s.* give, 98. *See* Yeve.

Glosyng, *sb.* flattery, 86.

Go borowe, i.e. go and borrow, 118.

Grype, *vb.* to grip, seize, grasp, receive greedily, 126. P. Pl.

Gylers, *sb. pl. gen.* beguilers', of guileful men, 86. P. Pl.

Halwes, *sb. pl.* saints, 3. Chaucer.

Haunte, *vb.* exercise constantly, 123.

Hawtesse, *sb.* loftiness (of character), 127.

Hem, *pron.* them, 73.

Here, *pron. poss.* their, 73.

Heried, *pp.* praised, 3; heried mote thu be, praised mayst thou be. A.S. *hérian*, to praise.

Hertes, *sb. pl.* hearts; gete hertes, i.e. win hearts, 98.

Hidows, *adj.* hideous, 11.

Highlich, *adv.* highly, greatly, 127.

Hight, 1 *p. s. pr.* I promise, 11. Cf. "I hete þe for soþe," Will. of Palerne, 572.

Holde, *pp.* held, esteemed, considered (to be), 130. P. Pl.

Houed, 1 *p. s. pr.* halted, 31. Lit. hovered about; it implies motion within a very limited space. P. Pl.

Iustifie, *imp. s.* uphold with justice, prove to be right, maintain uprightly, 53.

Kende, *adj.* natural, 26; kind, 93. This form occurs in Will. of Palerne.

Kende, *sb.* nature; be cours of thy kende, in accordance with thy nature, 107; ther is corage out of kende, there his disposition is turned aside from its true nature, 132.

Knowe, *pp.* known (to be), 129, 131; Knowen, 7. P. Pl.

Kynde, *sb.* nature; natural want, 28; of kynde, by thy nature, 121; þow kynd go out of cours, though nature depart from her usual course, 2. P. Pl.

Laghen, *pr. pl.* laugh, 134.

Large, *adj.* liberal, 139.

Laykes, *sb. pl.* games, 134. The line means—"Those games are most liked, in which all the people who join can laugh." P. Pl.

Leedes, *sb. pl.* people, 134. P. Pl.

Leid, *pp.* laid, 75.

Lent, *pp.* given, 76. P. Pl.

Lere, *vb.* to learn, 13; *imp. s.* Lere, 113; *pp.* Lered, learned, 57. P. Pl.

Lettrewre, *sb.* letters, learning, 113. P. Pl.

Levest, *adj.* dearest, 100.

Lewed, *adj.* ignorant, 57. P. Pl.

Liegemen, *sb. pl.* lieges, 61.

Lift, 1 *p. s. pt. s.* lifted, 25.

Like, *pr. s. subj.* please; if it you like, if it may please you, 43; *pr. s.* Likes, pleases, 16. P. Pl.

Love; to love (*gerund*), to be loved, 134. *See* Laykes.

Lower, *adj. pl. as sb.* lower people, poor people, 75.

Lyddes, *sb. pl.* eyelids, 25.

Lyme, *sb.* limb, 52. Probably alluding to the king's power over life and limb.

Maistre, *sb.* master, 124, 132.

Makes, *sb. pl.* mates, fellows, comrades, 21. P. Pl.

Malys, *sb.* malice, 88.

Maner, *sb.* lit. manner, 102. The line is obscure, but it may mean—"and let use be his master," or, "let habit guide him;" the sense "use," and Lat. *consuetudo* are given in Prompt. Parv.

Marre, *vb.* mar, ruin, 91.

Marchall, *sb.* marshal, 102. P. Pl.

Mater, *sb.* matter, subject, 135. P. Pl.

Menyng, *sb.* meaning, 89.

Met, 1 *p. s. pt.* dreamt, 10, 12. P. Pl.

Metyng, *sb.* dream, 10, 14. In P. Pl. the form is *metels*.

Meve, 1 *p. s. pr.* move, 135. The line means — "as regards this matter, I invite your attention no further."

Moche, *adj. as sb.* much, a great deal, 64.

Momelyn, *pr. pl.* mumble, talk ambiguously, 88. P. Pl.

Morowe, *sb. as adj.* morowe slepe = morning sleep, sleep in the early time of morning, 10.

Most, *adj.* the greatest, 119.

Mote, *pr. s. subj.* 2 *p.* mayest, 3.

Moustres, *sb. pl.* shewings, false pretences, 91. P. Pl. Cf. the modern word *muster*.

Mowe, *pr. pl.* may, 97, 103. P. Pl.

Mukke, *sb.* dirt; *but here used for* dross, wealth, 64, 132. P. Pl.

Myle-wey, *sb.* the distance of a mile; in a myle-wey, i.e. in the long run, 63. P. Pl.

Mynde, *sb.* memory, remembrance, 136.

Mys, *adj.* wrong, 89.

Myscheef, *sb.* evil fortune, mishap, 119. P. Pl.

Noumbred, *pp.* numbered, 34.

Ones, *adv.* once, 17.

Palle, *sb.* rich cloth, 69.

Parcell, *sb.* part, portion, 40. P. Pl.

Passe, *vb.* to surpass, 80; go, 114; *pr. s.* Passeth, surpasses, 71. P. Pl.

Pelure, *sb.* expensive fur, 69.

Pere, *vb.* appear, 114.

Peres, *sb. pl.* peers, 77.

Peynte, *vb.* paint, describe, 47. P. Pl.

Philosofre, *sb.* philosopher, adviser, 110.

Pike, *vb.* to pick; pike a thonke, pick a thank, earn thanks, 48; pike presoners, spoil prisoners, 95; *pr. pl.* pick, i.e. dig, plough up, 72. In l. 95 it clearly means to take spoils from the prisoners whom they capture; see l. 96 following.

Plesaunce, *sb.* pleasant talk, rhetoric, ornamented discourse, 48.

Pluralitee, *sb.* variety, 47.

Pouere, *adj.* poor, 40, 72.

Preve, *imp. s.* 3 *p.* prove, i. e. test, 55. P. Pl.

Prose, *sb.* prose, unornamented style of writing, 47.

Principaltee, *sb.* rule, sovereignty, government, 128.

Prowesse, *sb.* worthiness, 80.

Poyntes, *sb.* points; poyntes of werre, martial exploits, 95.

Reaume, *sb.* kingdom, 37.

Redyng, *sb.* reading, 22.

Rekened, *pp.* considered (to be), 39.

Rered, *pp.* raised, 37.

Reuelyng, *sb.* revelling, 22.

Romaunces, *sb. pl.* romances, tales, 22. Bp. Percy draws special attention to this mention of the 'redyng of romaunces.'

Salomon, Solomon, 44.

Sawes, *sb. pl.* sayings, proverbs, 44. P. Pl.

Seemly, *adj.* suitable, fit, 38.

Seker, *adj.* to be depended upon, trusty, 106; Siker, sure, trustworthy, 137. P. Pl.

Sekerly, *adv.* truly, 15.

Selcouthe, *adj.* strange, 33. P. Pl.

Sey, *vb.* to say, 50; 1 *p. s. pr.* Sey, 9.

Semed, *pt. s.* appeared right; him semed, i.e. appeared best to him, was his opinion, 50.

Siker. *See* Seker.

Singuler, *adj.* simple, plain; singuler noumbre, simple fashion, 46.

Skyle, *sb.* right, justice, 39.

Soleyn, *adj.* customary, usual, 36. Perhaps it means *annual*.

Soth, *sb.* truth, 15.

Soth, *adj.* true; soth is knowe, is known to be true, 129.

Souerain, *sb.* sovereign, 83.

Souerainte, *sb.* sovereign grace, 45.

Spaas, *sb.* space, short space of time, 30.

Spryng, *vb.* rise, dawn, 24. We must understand *it;* the line means —and it began to dawn in the gray east.

Stonde, *vb.* stand, 50.

Subsidie, *sb.* subsidy, tax, 36.

Suthampton, Southampton, 20.

Sweem, *sb.* swoon, 29. Halliwell gives "*Sweem*, to swoon. Somerset." Cf. *Swym* = swoon, Morte Arthure, 4246.

Swevenes, *sb. pl.* dreams, 6. P. Pl.

Swet, 1 *p. s. pt.* sweated, 29.

Swope, *pr. pl.* sweep, i. e. labour, 66. Cf. *swope*, to sweep; Ayenbite, p. 109.

Swyed, 1 *p. s. pt.* fell exhausted, sank down through dizziness, 29. The very phrase *sweys in swoghe* = sink down in a swoon, occurs in Morte Arthure, ed. Brock, 1467. Halliwell gives—"*Swee*, a giddiness in the head. North."

Swynke, *pr. pl.* toil, 66. P. Pl.

Swythe, *adv.* quickly, soon, 29. P. Pl.

Taketh, *imp. pl.* take, observe, accept, 137. The plural is used to shew respect, in the royal style.

The, *pron.* thee, 63.

Ther, *adv.* where, 142.

Ther as, *adv.* where that, 120.

They, *conj.* though, 121.

Thonke, *sb.* thank, expression of thanks, 48. *See* Pike.

þonke, *imp. s.* thank, 96.

Tresour, *sb.* treasure, 62. P. Pl.

Vnsemely, *adj.* unfit, 83. P. Pl.

Vp-right, *adj.* rigidly just, 54.

Ware, *adj.* aware, 7, 104. P. Pl.

Ware, *vb.;* ware þe = (thou must) guard thyself, 85.

Wast, *adj.* waste, 82.

Wedes, *sb. pl.* robes, 68. P. Pl.

Welde, *vb.* wield, have power over, dispose of, enjoy fully, 96. Badly spelt *wilde* in the MS.

Wele, *sb.* wealth; wast wele = idle prosperity, unprofitable self-success, 82.

Werres, *sb. pl.* wars, 36.

Wit, *sb.* wisdom, 58; *pl.* Wittes, wits, 120.

Wite, *vb.* wit, know, be well aware, be conscious, 59.

Witterly, *adv.* evidently, 7. P. Pl.

Worche, *imp. s.* work, 78, 112.

Wrapped, *pp.* wrapped, 120.

Wylyest, *adj.* most cunning, cleverest, 81.

Wynne, *pr. pl.* win, conquer, 96.

Wyssheth, *pr. s.* wish; wyssheth after, i. e. wish for, desire, 58.

Yeve, *vb.* to give, 126; *pr. pl.* Yeve, 73.

Y-preised, *pp.* praised, 128.

Y-set, *pp.* set, placed, 30.

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS.

CORRECTIONS FOR

"PIERCE THE PLOUGHMANS CREDE."

P. iii. l. 14; *for* 1832 *read* 1842.

P. iii. l. 2 *from bottom;* Mr Wright is mistaken in one point; the British Museum MS. is not on *paper*, but on *vellum*.

P. vi. l. 17; *for* speciments *read* specimens.

P. xx. A better meaning of *mete* is *scanty, insufficient.* The explanation of *hokshynes* has been entirely altered; see below.

P. 2, l. 26. The word indistinctly printed is "holden."

P. 13, l. 352. Perhaps *trofle* is the better spelling, after all; cf. O.Fr. *truffe*.

P. 14, l. 366; and P. 22, l. 573. *For* God lene *read* God leue [i. e. permit].

P. 29, l. 786. *For* mene-mong corn *read* mene mong-corn.

P. 34, l. 8 *from bottom.* For *jongleurs* read *jougleurs.*

P. 35, note to l. 65. The Pied Friars (Fratres de Pica) had but one house, viz. at Norwich.

The expression *Freres Pye* occurs in Walsingham, ed. Riley, i. 182. The order was dissolved, and they were obliged to join one of the four principal orders; we may infer that they joined the Carmelites. See Notes and Queries; 4 S. ii. 496.

P. 38, note to l. 180. See also *Ragman* in Halliwell's Dictionary.

P. 40, footnote. *Neres* means *kidneys;* cf. G. *Niere.*

P. 41, line 1. This explanation is quite wrong. L. 230 means, "it was good enough in its ground or texture to bear being dyed in grain," i. e. of a fast colour. See Smith's Student's Manual of the English Language, p. 55; cf. Collier's Eccl. Hist. i. 612.

P. 46, note to l. 425. *read* "his hose overhung his gaiters (*hokschynes* = *hoskins*), and so got bedaubed with mud."

P. 46, note to l. 428. *Mete* means *tight, scanty, insufficient.*

P. 47, *last line but one.* Add ; after "Menours."

P. 48, note to l. 516. *Read* "næs þær duru," &c. ; also "þyrl" for "thyrl."

P. 53, l. 744. The line means—"Now must each cobbler set his son to school." The note is wrong.

P. 54, l. 782. Cf. "But, Jak, thouȝ thi questions semen to thee wyse,
ȝet liȝtly a lewid man maye *leyen hem a water*;"
Reply of Frier Dawe Topias; *Pol. Poems*, ii. 43.

GLOSSARY. Cloutede, patched; without reference to the *cleat;* see Gloss. to Will. of Palerne.

Hokschynes, gaiters, 426. It is certainly the Ayrshire *hoeshins* or *hushions*, Ross. *hóggers;* another form of *hoskins*, the dimin. of *hose.* The *hoeshins* are of various sorts; some are made of old stockings with the feet cut off. For the change of *ks* and *sk*, cf. *axe* with *ask.*

Under "Lene," strike out the references to ll. 366, 753.

Insert—Leue, *in phr.* god leue = may God grant, 366, 753. Cf. G. *erlauben;* see my article in Notes and Queries, 4 S. ii. 126.

Strike out "Menemong;" and insert—Mong-corn, mixed corn, 786. See *Muncorn* in Halliwell. Cf. A.S. *mengan*, to mix.

"Mete" means scanty, insufficient; see the note on p. xx; and compare the following quotation, sent me by Mr Wedgwood—

"There 's no room at my side, Margaret,
My coffin 's made so *meet*."

Add—Stareþ, sparkle, shine, 553.

For "Trefle" *read* "Trofle," as it seems the better spelling.

Tymen, think (them) fit, 742. See *Beteem* in Wedgwood.

Add—Wayten, look out, watch, 469.

P. 73. The poem, with the burden "London," &c., is printed in Reliq. Antiq. i. 205. In l. 30 of God spede the Plough, "a styk of a bough" means a tally; see note to Piers Plowman, iv. 48 (Clar. Press Series).

00043478

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 18 July, 2018